

*Spiritual  
Man  
Book 2*

Dr Johann Melchizedek Peter

# *Forward*

This book has been made possible through transcribing of a series of messages that I taught on 'The Spiritual Man 2' which was like the continuation and further development of the book by Watchman Nee 'The Spiritual Man' which I called 'The Spiritual Man 1.' Many years ago in the early days of my ministry training in the Baptist Seminary, I was in Perlis Baptist Church doing a three day fast without food and without water. During this fast I had a vision of a very tall building being constructed in a valley between two mountains. I know later that the building represented the church and the two mountains represented the first coming and the second coming of Christ. About half way up this building, I saw a group of people that look like ministers of the past, some of whom I recognized. Among them were people like Watchman Nee, John Sung, etc. plus many other ministers. I did not understand this for some time but eventually I came to understand that I was to continue and complete the work of these ministers in preparing the church for the second coming of Jesus.

Thus through the years, I have accumulated a lot of resources and teachings that continued upon the work of many ministers and giants of the faith in Christian history. By the grace of God, I was enabled to understand and absorb many of the teachings and theologies of past generals in our Lord Jesus and summarize them and re-articulate them in a clearer manner plus added to the revelations that they have passed down to us in this end time generation. I am grateful for these generals of our Lord Jesus Christ who have been faithful to pass down their teachings and revelations to us. Many are Western theologians like Finnis Dake, Charles G. Finney, etc. but also Asian ones like Watchman Nee.

I have always seen that like many of his contemporaries like R A Torrey, A. W. Tozer, etc., Watchman Nee did not speak or teach much about the impact of the baptism of the Holy Spirit and if brief mentions were done, it has always been in the negative sense. Unlike them who only saw the infancies of the Pentecostal revivals and the Charismatic move, with its various extremes in practices and in doctrine, we have over one hundred years of history and teachings compiled to make a good and better evaluation of the theologies that have been brought forth since the Pentecostal movement in 1906. We have pointed to the many swings and re-balances of theology, teachings and doctrines and in the light of these, have also done a further work on basic text books like Watchman Nee's *Spiritual Man*. This book is in a full sense, a re-evaluation of his concepts and a revision of what our understanding of the spirit, soul and body of humans should be like in the light of all our understanding in Christian experience is now and also in the latest research and analysis of the Bible in relation to our understanding of what is truly our spirit, soul and body and our progress towards becoming the glorious church of Christ.

I would like to thank Sister Grace who helped to transcribed the messages, Sister Sarah who helped to edit it into readable form and also Brother Yap for his illustrations and diagrams. They have helped to make this book possible through their diligent work. This book has a transcribed format and so may sound more like it is spoken then directly written. May the Lord keep your spirit, soul and body blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ (1 Thessalonians 5:23).

Dr Johann Melchizedek Peter

# Contents

1. Reclassification of the Spirit, Soul and Body .....	<a href="#">4</a>
2. Defining the Heart of Man .....	<a href="#">31</a>
3. Dianoia and The Heart .....	<a href="#">59</a>
4. The Conscience .....	<a href="#">87</a>
5. Phroneo and Nous .....	<a href="#">113</a>
6. Spiritual Will versus Soul Will .....	<a href="#">138</a>
7. Inward Witness .....	<a href="#">166</a>
8. Defining the Soul .....	<a href="#">193</a>
9. Voice of Spirit Man .....	<a href="#">218</a>
10. Resetting the Body of Sin .....	<a href="#">247</a>
11. Holiness of Mind .....	<a href="#">279</a>
12. Heavenly Man .....	<a href="#">308</a>
13. Heavenly Qualities .....	<a href="#">332</a>
14. Renewing of the Mind - Part 1 .....	<a href="#">357</a>
15. Renewing of the Mind - Part 2 .....	<a href="#">384</a>
16. The Heart and the Mind .....	<a href="#">409</a>
17. The Soul and Emotions .....	<a href="#">439</a>
18. The Will of the Soul .....	<a href="#">467</a>
19. 4 Phases of Will .....	<a href="#">495</a>
20. To Will and To Do .....	<a href="#">521</a>
21. Will is Desire .....	<a href="#">550</a>
22. The Will of the Body .....	<a href="#">574</a>
23. The Heavenly Man .....	<a href="#">597</a>
24. Four Dimensions of Love .....	<a href="#">617</a>
25. Heavenly Faith .....	<a href="#">650</a>
26. New Definition of Faith .....	<a href="#">673</a>
27. New Jerusalem Glory .....	<a href="#">703</a>
28. New Heaven - Transfiguration DNA .....	<a href="#">735</a>

## Chapter 1...

### Reclassification of The Spirit, Soul and Body

This book is *The Spiritual Man – Book II* and I am supposed to finish it to conclude Watchman Nee’s ministry who wrote the book *The Spiritual Man – Book I*. Of all his teachings, I think *The Spiritual Man* is one of his best writings. Many people all over the world have been referring to that book, although he had a lot of other good books and revelations. The areas that he never touched on were baptism in the Spirit, speaking in tongues and gifts of the Holy Spirit. He focused mainly on the Christian life, which is good.

In fact, before the Charismatic Movement, what else can a Christian focus on? Think about that, Christian character, Christian walk, prayer and all these things that we focus on. Then after the Charismatic Movement, we can add a lot more and with more things, unfortunately, sometimes we forget the fundamentals, which is the Christian walk and our Christian character. We must not neglect those things while we develop the other gifts. At the same time, we need the gifts of the Holy Spirit to evangelise the world, so we must be balanced on both sides.

#### *Spiritual Man Book I*

Firstly, we will look at Watchman Nee’s classification. The original diagram that was in *The Spiritual Man – Book I*, where Watchman Nee identified the inner circle as the *Spirit Man*, the middle circle as the *Soul*, and the external circle as the (physical) *Body*. This is Watchman Nee’s division of *Spirit*, *Soul* and *Body*. He did not say much about the physical body, except that as far as he was concerned, the physical body is bad. Remember that God did say “*Love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, with all thy soul, and with all thy body*” (all thy strength actually, which implies the body, which is the Greek word ‘*ischus*’). So, there is something about the body that we need to touch on also because our body is the temple of the Holy Spirit.

In reading Watchman Nee’s other book called *The Release of the Spirit* (that is, to try to release your spirituality in God), many people get confused because in attempting to release the spirit, it looks almost like everything of the soul is bad and everything of the body is bad.

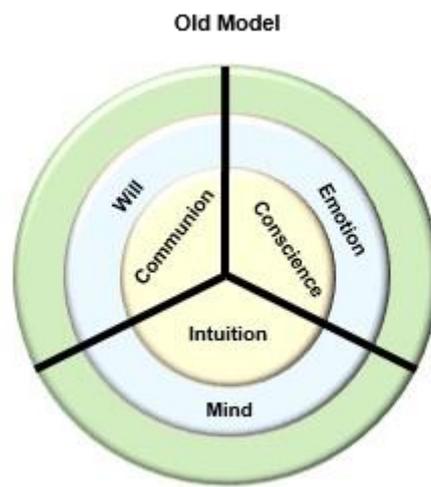
The only thing that is good, is the spirit man, everything else is evil. Watchman Nee sometimes differentiated between the 'soul man' and the 'spirit man', implying that the soul man is also bad. Thus, *The Release of the Spirit* is mainly focusing on releasing in the spirit where people find it difficult to discern between what is of themselves and what is of God because when God moves, He still works through our souls.

I bring you back to the fact that God says, "*Love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, with all thy soul, with all thy mind, and with all thy strength*". All thy heart and all thy soul, if your soul is evil, why should God want you to love Him with all your soul? So, there are some areas that must be fine-tuned in *The Spiritual Man – Book I*.

In the early days of ministry when I was in Perlis Baptist Church (which was in Kangar, Perlis), I had a 3 day fast and it was a total fast, 3 days without food and water. A group of young people were also fasting together with me; however, I was the only one really fasting and they were praying for me. I was the only one who took on a total 3 days fast. In the middle of that fast, I had sort of a dream-vision where it was at night, it was dark, and I saw a vision of two mountains and in the middle, there was this big, huge valley where a building was being constructed. Only the pillars of the building were completed but they were huge. In some areas, you could drive three or four cars through and in other areas six cars and that was just the pillars. The walls and the rest of the building were still not up yet. I was on the ground floor, looking up at the building when about halfway up I saw a group of people waving to me. I had read enough books and seen enough book covers to know that I recognised some of those people as Watchman Nee, John Sung and several others. I did not understand what it meant at the time. Later, after coming out from that vision, through the years, I realised that I was supposed to continue and complete their work. Thus, why this ministry is completing the work they started. What they had taught is good, however, we need to bring this teaching forward into the Charismatic and into this end time era. That is why the writing of *The Spiritual Man – Book II* completes this part of the call, which is where I want to build upon, their foundations.

When we examine a good teaching, the first thing we must ask is, how did Watchman Nee come to his conclusions? What did he discover to cause him to draw this diagram the way he did? He started out by writing out every relevant word from the Bible, like in a Concordance

style. He wrote the word “mind” and then he looked at everything about the word “mind”. Or he looked at the word “soul”, then he looked at every single verse where the word “soul” occurs, and then he examined, what is the soul. He discovered that the soul can feel, so he put *Emotions* there. He discovered that the soul can think, so he put must be the *Mind*. He discovered that the soul can choose, so he put the *Will* there. Then he went on to look at the word “spirit” and he tried to look at every verse where the word “spirit” is, and he concluded that “spirit” is a place where the *Conscience* is, where the *Intuition* is, where the *Communion* is. He didn’t do anything about the *Body*.



### *Looking at the Original Research*

I did the same thing. A good scientist goes back to the original research to see whether they had interpreted the data correctly. So, you do not just take another scientist’s data, you do not take another scientist’s conclusions. Instead look at how he did his experiment, then copy the same experiment to see if you can achieve the same result. Well, I did the whole listing and I found that Watchman Nee missed something, that when you do a search on the word “soul”, you find that these three qualities are correct. But then, you find that when you do a search on the word “spirit”, that it comes out with more than what he found. Sometimes the spirit looks bad too.

So, when you look at the word “spirit”, there are some places that seem to show that the spirit has got emotions. Then the question that I ask is, “Where is the emotion of the spirit”? Is it in *Intuition*? That means it is a good emotion, however, let us look at the same data that Watchman Nee had and relook at his data to see whether it could be interpreted any differently. So, when you look at the word “spirit” in your Concordance, you see here in

Genesis 41:8, “*Now it came to pass in the morning that his spirit was troubled*”. You say, “Wait a minute, how come Pharaoh, in the time of Joseph, his spirit can be troubled”? So, we have many questions here. First, he was not born again.

In fact, nobody was born again in the Old Testament. If they are not born again, how come they have a spirit? Of course, they have a spirit. James 2:26 says, without the spirit, the body is dead. The only difference is their spirit is not connected to God, their spirit is separated from God. They are fallen but they still have a spirit.

This type of revelation takes research. You must have a very keen eye to look at the data carefully. Don't just accept what someone else said, go back to the Word. We always say, “Go back to the Word, go back to the Word”. But when you go back to the Word, what do you do, going back to the Word? You study the same scriptures and see whether they tell you the same thing.

Of course, if you have a question such as, “Why should I accept the tripartite view of man”? you could look at Plato's view. Plato's view is tripartite. “How about Aristotle's view, that man is only soul and body”? Well, the Bible answers that question for you. In 1Thessalonians 5:23, “*May God preserve your spirit, soul and body*”. That settles it. We are tripartite, that means we have got three sections. If you do not believe that, then you do not believe the Bible. We have a spirit, soul and body. Now, spirit, soul and body are a condition of all men, even fallen men. The reasons why you see people outside walking around is because their spirit is alive and that is why their body is alive, according to the book of James. It is the spirit that gives life to the soul and the body. The only difference is, we need to be born again to come to know our Lord Jesus Christ, and Jesus gives us the new birth.

Pharaoh's spirit was troubled. The spirit is the old familiar word “*ruach*” (some spelling is without the “c” but it is pronounced with a “c”, so remember, what we call the Romanisation of the Hebrew word or Greek word is based on enunciation). It is still the same word that means “spirit”. How can Pharaoh's spirit have emotions? He was troubled. Troubled is an emotional feeling, a sense.

## *The Spirit of Man*

Let us go to Exodus 6:9, “*So Moses spoke thus to the children of Israel; but they did not heed Moses, because of anguish of spirit and cruel bondage*”. They were anguished. They were feeling an exasperation; their exasperation is a type of emotion. The Bible seems to show that the spirit contains emotions.

Now, let us look at Exodus 35:21, (so you know that by the time I make the conclusion, we’ve done a very thorough study), “*Then everyone came whose heart was stirred (and this was an offering that Moses collected), and everyone whose spirit was willing...*”. Can you see the word “willing” there? And, of course, the word “spirit” is again the translation “*ruach*”. How come the spirit has a will? I thought it is the soul that is willing. Why didn’t the Bible say that their soul was willing? Why say their spirit was willing? The word “*ruach*” is the correct translation for the word “spirit”.

Of course, you might say, “Oh, maybe in the Old Testament, they used the word ‘*ruach*’ for soul”. No, no, no, you cannot get away with that. They have a Hebrew word for “soul”, which is the word “*nephesh*”. The Bible is very thorough, so that you have no room to run in drawing your conclusion and in what you want to think about, regarding what is right and wrong. There is a place that talks about the will, it seems to be inside the *Spirit* section.

Here is the interesting thing. In Numbers 5:14 it is talking about a couple and what happens if one of them got jealous. But in talking about jealousy, which is a bad, negative, human emotion, it used the word “spirit”, “*if the spirit of jealousy comes upon him and he becomes jealous of his wife, who has defiled herself; or if the spirit of jealousy comes upon him and he becomes jealous of his wife, although she has not defiled herself ....*”. You see, the question is, “Why use ‘spirit’ instead of ‘*nephesh*’ for emotion”?

That is the question, that if you read Watchman Nee’s book, and you go back through the bible, you have more questions. You say, “Is that conclusion correct”? That the spirit can be bad, soul can be bad, body can be bad. In fact, all three parts can be bad, and all three parts can be good. That is what the Bible shows.

You cannot always think that you know that the spirit is good, because the spirit might be influenced by an evil spirit. After all, we call it “evil spirit”, “disembodied spirit”, they are

bad. It is important for us to understand that. And humans who do not know God, sometimes their spirits can become very, very bad. I have seen some of them in the spiritual world, especially those that bind themselves together with demons and they are yielded to demonic power. Their spirits are exactly like demons. They are the ones that when God cast Satan and his fallen angels into the lake of fire, these humans who are so evil in the spirit world will also join them. No redemption for them. They will never ever have any redemption. So, spirit can become that evil. Now, they didn't become evil overnight. Through a process of free choice, they became very bad. Where do you think the spirit and the soul of the Pharaoh who opposed Moses is today? You think he is in heaven or even in the paradise section of the lower parts of heaven? No, he is in hell and he will be thrown into the lake of fire, which was not made for humans but humans who have become exactly like demons will be thrown inside there.

#### *A Warning*

This is a warning to us all. In this end time, where we ask this question, "What happens to the apostate church"? They all will end up in hell. Now, evil doesn't necessary look the kind of evil that we think is. Evil can outwardly seem to be okay.

I have got a few people in mind. Long ago in America, there was this guy called David Koresh. He was in Waco, Texas and he led a cult, and the cult had anti-Biblical teachings, all kinds of wrong stuff were going on. In the end, he got killed together with all the other people. I remember him because in my previous Bible school I taught some courses at "Mission College", based in Malaysia, that was about this state, to be able to recognize good and evil. I forgot what the main topic was, but being the style that I teach is, I don't just tell you, I let you go and examine the data. I made all the students listen to one of David Koresh's teachings, with me present of course. I said, "Listen to what he is saying." I did not make them listen for hours, just a short session of about 20 minutes to half an hour. There was some record of him talking to his cult members, and after he had spoken, I switched it off and I said, "He doesn't sound evil, he sounds like a nice man, very soft spoken". But everything he said was from the devil.

What do you think the apostate church will be like? Some people have a wrong image of the Antichrist. You think the Antichrist will be coming with two horns, with some bright smoke all around him, and if you look very carefully, there is a pitchfork and a tail coming out from

him. In fact, the Antichrist will be a man of peace. He will be so likeable, very good at speaking, to convert people to his viewpoints. He will try to use logic, and the only way you can challenge his logic is if you are good at logic too, otherwise you are carried away. It is just like an atheist who is good at arguing. Atheism can confuse a lot of Christians. The average Christians are frightened because they don't know how to reply. But if you are very sound in your faith, you will be able to answer everything. Not all of us are called to be apologists, into the Apologetics Ministry, but some of us (like Paul the Apostle) are called to defend the faith, where we love to debate. So, I love to debate with anyone with any other views, to show that our Christ is Lord and Jesus is God, and that Christianity is the way, the truth and the life.

There are a lot of evil things that are obviously happening in the earth today, people killing and beheading, those are so obvious. People can recognize that type of evil, the Hitler-type of evil, but they cannot see evil when evil comes as a 'wolf in sheep's clothing'. We can analyse both. The thing about it is you don't just listen to what a person says, you also listen to the conclusions and the directions. Remember what Jesus said? If a person prophesies and shows a sign, and the sign comes to pass, and then the person turns around and says, "let us worship idols", you say "don't go there". In the end, the only way is the Word of God.

#### *Conclusion on the Spirit*

So, the spirit can become very bad, that is my conclusion. We need to nurture this born-again spirit that we have. Remember that Judas Iscariot was originally called to be an apostle, he had an office (in Acts 1, it says lest somebody takes his office). So, he had an office. He did not become evil immediately, no human becomes evil overnight. There is always a series of small decisions that you take, that slowly change your character, until one day there's a straw that breaks the camel's back, and you tip over and never get back again, especially in this end time.

In Psalm 31:5, it says, "*Into Your hand I commit my spirit...*". That again tells me that the spirit can choose, "*I commit my spirit*". Psalm 32:2, "*Blessed is the man to whom the Lord does not impute iniquity, and in whose spirit, there is no deceit*". Have you noticed what the psalm is trying to say? It implies that the man is blessed to whom the Lord has forgiven his sins. And it says, "*in whose spirit there is no deceit*", which implies that in some people, their spirit is deceitful. Not just their soul is deceitful, their mind, but their spirit is deceitful,

whereas some people are pure. People who are pure might make a thousand mistakes, but their hearts are pure. You can be pure and still make mistakes, but it is different from someone who is deceitful where everything they do is based on deception. Out of deceitfulness comes deception, it comes from the spirit. An interesting thing to think about is that deception is from the spirit and not from the soul. Now, the person must have absorbed something wrong, some part of the understanding in their spirit is wrong, that is why deception has come in.

### *Visions and Dreams*

It is interesting to review the book, *The Spiritual Man*. I thank God and salute Watchman Nee. I met him several times in heavenly visions, and just to show that it took a long time to progress to this level, that was not the only time that I saw Watchman Nee in a vision. In the years of my early ministry, I had a few encounters with Watchman Nee. Most of them were in dreams, but the dreams were so real, they felt like visions. One dream I had that I remember (I never forgot because I love to study, and I love to have good marks, I do not like to fail), this particular dream I could never forget. I was in a classroom and in this classroom Watchman Nee was my teacher. We all had to submit our papers to him. I finished my paper and I submitted it to him. Then when we were handed back all our marked papers, with the corrections in red, I saw all red on my paper! There were so many corrections. Watchman Nee did all the corrections. In my dream, I was “*huh*”? Then I woke up and I was still saying “*huh*”? I felt like I had so much more to learn. So, just to let you know, I have not reached this position without many years, it took time. In my early Christian years, I am grateful for all those teachers that went before us. That is why I encourage Christians to read books but read good books. And if I recommend a book, I’ll tell you what the bones are because some books have got bones. But there are a lot of good books on Christian character too.

It took me many years to relook as I began to experience a lot for myself. I began to experience some of the things that Watchman Nee talked about, including the release of the spirit, about how the spirit works. Then Jesus appeared to me in 1986 and taught me about the anointing of God. And then through the years I have been sensing in my body, I could sense spiritual sensations. I said to myself, “*Hey*, how does this happen”. I need a new theology to explain what I am experiencing. Just like, if you have received speaking in tongues when you were baptised in the Spirit, it takes a long time for you to access speaking in tongues as a vehicle of the spiritual dimension because it is like foolishness, until you

know what the Bible says. Without proper teaching, we will never use our tools or the gifts that God has given us. Studying the Bible properly is very important to understanding God's Word, where we can divide the Word and explain the Word.

### *Studying the Bible*

In the diagram, we need to understand spirit, soul and body because we all are spirit, soul and body. We must understand more.

Look at Psalm 34:18, "*The LORD is near to those who have a broken heart, and saves such as have a contrite spirit*". The word "contrite", if you check up the Hebrew, it means "broken", a broken spirit. Of course, it implies humility. Now, based on Psalm 34:18, which part of the *Spirit* quality is he talking about? Is contriteness talking about *Conscience*? No. *Intuition*? No. *Communion*? Maybe, but "communion" is supposed to be "worship". Can you see that you cannot squeeze everything into here? This diagram needs to be improved.

Then you have Psalm 51:10-11, "... *renew a steadfast spirit within me. Do not cast me away from Your presence, and do not take Your Holy Spirit from me.*" "*Renew a steadfast spirit*", in other words, energise, make me steadier, the spirit is not so steady. Which part of these qualities of the *Spirit Man* shows us that we are not so steady? It looks more like the *Soul* area.

There are many, many verses but look at Proverbs 11:13, "*A talebearer reveals secrets, but he who is of a faithful spirit conceals a matter*". Now, faithfulness is a quality which is good, but it is a quality of the *Spirit*. Faithfulness is not talking about *Intuition*. Faithfulness is not talking about *Communion*. Faithfulness, maybe *Conscience*, but conscience is about right and wrong. By the way the fruit of the Spirit, how to fit in the fruit of the Spirit here? Where does love fit in? Love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faithfulness, meekness, temperance, how does it all fit here?

Studying the Bible is training. In training, you must not only know what the conclusion is but you must know how to reach that conclusion. If this is a Math's class and I teach you how to do Math's, it is not the answer you want. It is about how to get that answer that brings understanding. So, you are learning how to also check the data. When any man or woman of God says something, the first thing to look at is, "How did you reach the conclusion"? On

what basis or research did you conclude this? What verses are you using? Or what experience are you using to come to that conclusion? Are those experiences that you choose valid or invalid? You must not only look at the results, you must look at the tools that a person uses, the methods that he uses.

### *Spiritual Training*

In university, they teach you that when you are doing your Bachelor's degree, you are already learning via tools. A university is a place where everybody is taught to question things, you question everything under the sun. And you are trying to learn some knowledge when you are doing a Bachelor's. Then you go for a Master's where you must be a specialist in a certain area, that is why they give you the Master's. Then by the time you do your PhD, you must add some new knowledge to what is there. You cannot just take any knowledge and come with some conclusion. You must add to the research, add to the knowledge of whatever field you are doing, then you qualify for a PhD. That is the university standard of a PhD.

It is important, as we do spiritual training, that not only you know the conclusion but how we reached that conclusion. When you go to church, they will tell you what to believe. You just read the creed and they tell you what to believe. It is not good enough. You must be taught to question why you believe. You must be taught how the pastor reached a conclusion. This is because the only way you can improve on something and improve above and beyond your teachers is to understand their methodology. And if you could improve on their methodology, you can surpass them. That is what Bible Study is for, to train each person to surpass.

### *Accuracy Affects Outcome*

So, *faithful spirit*, it tells us something else that the diagram doesn't cover. But here is another interesting Proverb. Proverbs 15:4, "*A wholesome tongue is a tree of life, but perverseness in it breaks the spirit*". As if the spirit can be broken, a very funny verse here.

And then you have the other one in Proverbs 15:13, "*A merry heart makes a cheerful countenance, but by sorrow of the heart the spirit is broken*". Again, it is referring to a "broken spirit". Can you "break the spirit"? Can the spirit be broken? The diagram from Watchman Nee however, doesn't allow me to "break the spirit". He said, *Spirit* is good, *Soul* is bad, *Body* (flesh) is bad, so go for the *Spirit*. Not good enough. I used the same data that he had, the only difference is that you need to know the background.

How old was Watchman Nee when he wrote *The Spiritual Man*? It was one of the first books he wrote, and he was about in his twenties (between twenty-one to twenty-three). He had the gift of a teacher which helped him, but he also had an analytical mind, just like the Apostle Paul (it helps to have an analytical mind). But that tells us something. Most twenty somethings do not look at their data deeply enough. If we look at 30 verses and conclude, we will not achieve a precise conclusion, however, if we looked at 100 verses, then we might come to a different conclusion. Can you see the difference? It is important, the data you collect.

In the business world, your decision is only as good as the data you have at hand because the business world functions, based on knowledge and data. Think about it, the decision that you make in your life is only as good as the database you have. Let us say you have a financial problem and you go the traditional way of solving your problem. You think, “Okay, there are these three solutions to this problem” but because your database is very small, you might not realise that there are actually ten solutions. If you can only see three solutions, it is easier to give up. Your choices are limited to where you view every financial situation as an idea that someone, somewhere has solved for you. Just like today’s scientists and engineers who are encountering problems. Some people, when they encounter a problem, they just give up, whereas others think of a new way to solve it because their database is bigger, they have more information to work with.

#### *Vision leads to Invention*

Long ago, humans wanted to fly. Guess what, ‘*Monkey see, monkey do*’. They thought they could fly like birds but no, we are not birds. We don’t have the muscular power that birds have, nor are our bones hollow and light. We were not made to fly. Then they learned to glide. That is an improvement but then when they started inventing engines, somebody had a bright idea to put an engine with a plane that can glide and take off. In early part of the 20th century, the Wright brothers flew for the first time in a plane they designed themselves. Even though they only flew for a few minutes, it was a momentous achievement. From there, increasing the plane dynamics, increasing the petrol, increasing the engine power, they began to fly longer and further until today’s planes can fly great distances. The problem of flight was solved!

Today, there is enough knowledge to build more technologically advanced planes, however, the problem is a shortage of money. What people can invent, might be so costly to construct, that they never are accomplished. We now have the knowledge to build a lot of things and I have a few ideas about doing different things in different ways. There is some knowledge not applied yet, like for example, when they first flew the planes, they explained how the planes fly, by low pressure / high pressure and the shape of the wings so there is lift. Today, they discovered that this is not accurate. The explanation is, the Coanda principle, which means that the air will take the shape of whatever the plane is, and the low pressure / high pressure is not the cause, it is the effect, it is the result. If they use the same principles to build a submarine, do you know that submarines will be almost noiseless?

Today, they have invented flying machines based on the Coanda principle, that is, for example, it could be a square object but still fly very well. When you go to a tap and the tap water is flowing, if you go near the water and put something in the water stream, let us say you put something curved, do you notice that the tap water will flow with the curve? It is like it is sticky and it sticks to the object. This discovery found that air acts in this way, the same as water. It will take the shape of whatever it encounters. The high pressure / low pressure is a secondary effect, not the main effect. That is why some of the planes are just flat winged, but they still fly. The pressure differential does not mean as much.

Many of these things can be found on the internet, based on the Coanda principle, where they pump the air out, and the object is circular like a flying saucer, so instead of thrust throwing the air out and then what you call, Newton's Law, you know, action with the opposite reaction, when you throw the force out, it pushes it upwards. The Coanda principle makes the air move this way, around it. Today's engines are still not fully using this idea, we still have a lot of improvements to make. Currently, they are just using Newton's Third Law of Motion, 'Law of Action and Reaction'. Jet engines are just that, the 'Law of Action and Reaction'. They are not fully tapping into the Coanda principle.

### *Wait on God*

Your decision making is as good as the amount of knowledge you gather. Now, remember that this principle helps your natural life also. The next time you have a problem that you cannot solve, remember all you need is more knowledge, which is why prayer is good because sometimes it takes time to get the knowledge. The world has got so much knowledge

that it can get confusing, choosing which way to go. Too much data can also paralyse people into inaction. Let us say you are a CEO in a company, you have data coming from 10,000 sources, how are you going to decide which is best? You need time to sieve through and to classify it, which can be very overwhelming. What is needed is a quick way to isolate which data is more important, this is why we write computer programs. The problem is of sorting out the data, so it is only as good as the program and people still can make mistakes.

In the end, our Almighty God is the only One who is unlimited. He will point you to the right knowledge all the time. That is why in your natural life, in your spiritual life, your decision making is only as good as your data, which is why God tells you sometimes to “wait”, because you don’t have all the data yet. You’ve got to wait on God and sometimes God urges you to make a certain decision before you know all the data. That is a step of faith. Then later, you discover that God knew everything, and you were just in time, which is why you must learn the methodology. You need to take things step by step, so that you learn the methodology in any area. Use what you can with the spiritual knowledge you have, but remember that until it comes to perfection, there are things that can still be perfected, things that we can perfect in God.

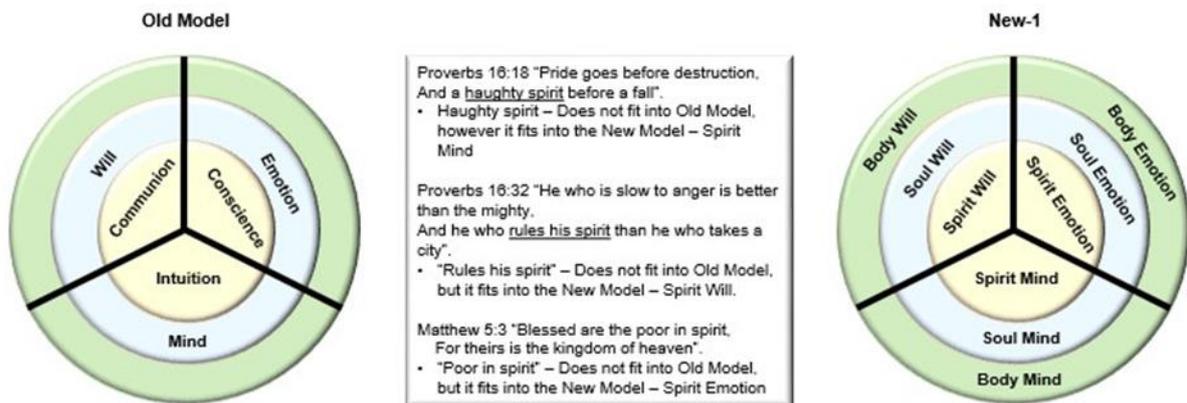


Diagram 2

Proverbs 16:18 tells us, “*Pride goes before destruction, And a haughty spirit before a fall*”. That is where the English proverb comes from, ‘*Pride comes before a fall*’. But here, it mentions the spirit again. There are so many other verses, like in Proverbs 16:32, “*He who is slow to anger is better than the mighty, And he who rules his spirit than he who takes a city*”. This is talking about being good tempered. It is better to be good tempered than to rule a city. If you cannot control your temper, it is like you cannot rule a city. This also, does not fit that diagram.

### *More Verses on Spirit*

Let us now go to the New Testament because we have been in the Old Testament all the time. Jesus says in Matthew 5:3, “*Blessed are the poor in spirit...*”. Tell me where it fits? Which part of the spirit is He talking about? We know that “poor in spirit” implies those who are in need. Spirit in need, which part? Or do we talk about humility here? Okay, where does humility fit in? There does not seem to be any place for humility either. Humility is a quality of the spirit. By the way, one of the fruit of the Spirit is meekness (which is close to humility). It does not fit in this model. This is only one verse, Matthew 5:3 (in The Beatitudes). What about Galatians 5:22-23, which most of us have memorised from the Old King James version, “*Love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness, temperance .....*”, where to fit them all in?

Some more verses that we want to look at here is in Matthew 26:41, “*Watch and pray, lest you enter into temptation. The spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak*”. The spirit is willing – *huh*, I thought that is the soul. Jesus says, “the spirit”. The spirit has got a will. Didn’t it say that about the soul? Don’t you dare challenge Jesus! Jesus didn’t say “the soul is willing”. No, no, no, He says here “the spirit is willing”. You say, “I didn’t know my spirit can choose”. Oh yes, the spirit can choose. The will is also in the spirit.

This one, we can fit in. Mark 2:8, *But immediately, when Jesus perceived in His spirit that they reasoned thus within themselves, He said to them, “Why do you reason about these things in your hearts”?* So, Jesus perceived something, He sensed something in His spirit. Jesus sensed that they were thinking in a certain way. Now, which part of Him sensed? *Intuition?* But *Intuition*, according to our definition, now remember, Watchman Nee wrote this in Chinese and Chinese to English is never quite 100% accurate. What is the Chinese word for “intuition”? “Direct instinct”. So “intuition” is like “instinct”. Is there any other Chinese word for “intuition”, like an “inner knowing”? So maybe it came from that Chinese word, which means intuition / instinct. “Instinct” is different. Did Jesus say in Mark 2:8, “His *instinct* tells Him”? No, because Jesus knew every word that they were thinking. You must say this is totally different.

### *Critiquing the Old Diagram*

Can you see that we are getting stuck with this diagram? We need to improve on it. So, I have proven to you that to help people accept something new, you must prove that the old is not good enough. I have just proven that the old is not good enough to explain your whole Bible. I could give you verse after verse and this diagram keeps breaking down, yet I am using the same data that Watchman Nee used, the same scripture verses.

He went through, looking at the word “soul”. I would say that he did a good job with what he had because no one had come up with a diagram before him but as we examine his diagram we realise that it needs to be improved upon because somehow in translating over to the English, I would say that *Intuition* is something like the *Mind* (an inner knowing). Except that it is a spiritual level knowing.

*Communion*, what do we mean by communion? When you read Watchman Nee’s *The Spiritual Man – Book I*, what do you understand to be communion? I read his whole book, backwards and forwards, I did not see him explaining much. He focused a lot about the mind and the soul, he did not explain the other things a lot. He seemed to take for granted that we all know what communion is but no, we don’t. What is the Chinese word for “communion”? The old word for “communion” comes from the word “fellowship”, which is the Greek word “*koinonia*”. But what does “*koinonia*” tell me? *Communion* is probably talking about “worship”, “a sense of God”. So here, I would like to improve on that.

You see, *Intuition*, which I would like to make equal to the *Mind*, except this is the *Spirit Mind*, this is the *Soul Mind*. *Communion* then, since he was talking about some sort of relationship with God and based on the verse in 1 Corinthians 14:14-15 where Paul says, “If I pray in a tongue, my spirit prays, but my soul is without understanding, so I will pray with my spirit, and I will pray with my understanding”, is saying something about the spirit again. That verse is taken from 1 Corinthians 14:14-15 which says, “I will pray with my spirit”. Now, there are two ways you can look at it, either the soul chooses to allow the spirit to pray, (since this diagram tells me the will is in the soul, that the soul decides, “spirit, you cannot pray”), or the spirit has a will that say, “I will pray”, which is separate from the will of the soul.

Now there is *Conscience*. What is conscience? I put *Communion* here, I erased that word and put *Will* there. When you come to worship, you choose to worship. Worship is a choice. God can never force us to worship. Worship leads to communion because worship is a choice. If at any time, you are forced to worship God, then it is no more worship. It is just like God is playing a tape and we are the tape recorder. But for worship to be worship, free choice must be intact, and for communion to be communion, free choice must be intact. *Conscience* is a sense of right and wrong. How do you know something is right and wrong in your conscience? It feels wrong, it feels right, it feels bad. You are not relying on your mind, you are relying on “a feeling”. But it’s not supposed to be a feeling of your soul or your body, but it is an inner feeling that belongs to your spirit. So, I have just renamed it here, instead of calling it *Conscience*, I call it the *Spirit Feelings* or *Emotions*. This one, instead of calling it *Intuition*, I call it the *Spirit Mind*. And this one, instead of calling it *Communion*, I call it the *Spirit Will*.

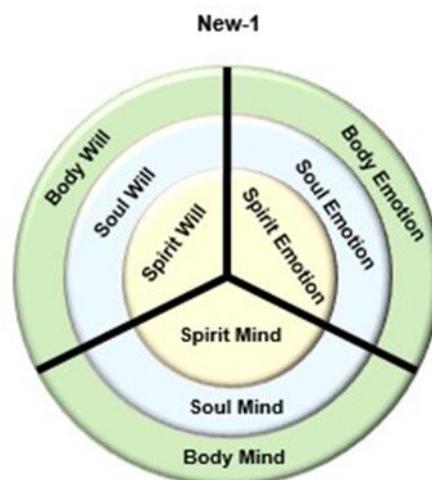


Diagram 3

### A New Diagram

Then we bring you to the other diagram, the new one that I made. This one looks very different. It explains every single verse, none excluded. An Old Testament verse I have been dealing with, how Pharaoh was troubled. Yes, his spirit was troubled, because the spirit has got emotions, the soul has got emotions. The spirit has a mind, the soul has a mind. The spirit has a will, Jesus says “*The spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh (the body) is weak*”. You need the soul to choose because the flesh wants to choose to sleep, the spirit wants to choose to pray, but the soul must choose one or the other. If the soul chooses to go with the spirit, you win.

This diagram is simpler, and English-speaking, so I make it in English. Let us see how accurate it is with the Bible. Now, we will continue on the verses, in the progress of getting all the verses out. The next time you think about spirit, soul and body, erase the old diagram from your memory and replace it with this one so that your understanding will be different. What we are doing is like moving from black and white TV to colour TV, from an old locomotive when it was first invented to a modern car that can do more things.

Let me focus on the New Testament first, since we are on the New Testament. It immediately explains verses where Jesus says in Matthew 26:41, "... *The spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh (the will of the flesh) is weak*". And He says unto them, "*Watch and pray...*". Jesus wants the soul now to respond, to decide. It also explains Mark 2:8 (that we have touched on), "*But immediately, when Jesus perceived in His spirit...*". You see, His spirit has a mind, His 'spirit mind' perceived what they were thinking. Not His 'soul mind', His 'spirit mind' perceived, His spirit knew. A mind can know things.

Then you have verses that, before, were very difficult to understand. Like, for example, in Ephesians 4:23 (a verse that most of you know), "*and be renewed in the spirit of your mind*", there is no way you can understand that with the old diagram. In the old diagram, maybe it means that your 'soul mind' must become 'spiritual mind' but now straightaway it talks about the spirit part of your mind, "*let this part be renewed*".

Then in Philippians, on the word "will" here. In Philippians, Paul talks about God's ability to work in our lives. Philippians 2:13, "*for it is God who works in you both to will and to do for His good pleasure*". We all know that verse. Now, if God is the one who energises your will, to make you will, you are no more responsible for your choice if you have only got one will. Based on the old diagram, the will is in your soul. If God is the one who makes me will, I am not responsible, He is making me choose. I'm like a robot where He presses the button and I turn right, He presses another button and I turn left, He presses another button and I turn around. I cannot be responsible for my actions anymore because something is making my decisions for me.

Based on the old diagram, the theology is wrong because if God is the one making me "will to do", how then can He make me accountable for my actions, when I am not in control of my will? I can only be accountable for what I choose, apart from God. I cannot be

accountable for what I did not choose. There are some areas where you do not choose, like you cannot choose to make your heart beat. If your heart depends on your choice, when you forget to tell your heart to beat, you die. Some things must be automatic, which is why your body has its own will.

What does Philippians 2:13 say? It says God energises your spirit to will. It is God who wills, but you still have got your soul will. If He energises this, this becomes very strong and that is a good thing. That one might be strong, but this one becomes stronger. The moment this is stronger, it makes it easier to choose. Isn't it easier to choose to want to pray when you are amid Christians? However, when you are in the midst of non-Christians, every day they have got activities, eat this *lah*, do this *lah*, do that *lah*, and die in *la la land* because you are surrounded by them, giving you the wrong choices, which is why God tells us to be careful with who we fellowship with. "*Do not sit in the seat of the scornful nor stand in the path of sinners*". Philippians 2:13 becomes theologically correct then, God energises the will. He makes your spirit, will. And the more you let Him energise your spirit, the more your soul finds it easier to choose.

### *Three Minds, Three Wills, Three Emotions*

Romans 7 tells us this, you have got three minds, three wills, three sets of emotions. That is why Romans 7 looks the way it does. Paul talks about the Christian life and note when he uses the word "I", which part of him is he using, either spirit, soul or body. In verses 7 & 8 he says, (having said that we have been delivered from the law, etc), "*What shall we say then? Is the law sin? Certainly not! On the contrary, I would not have known sin except through the law. For I would not have known covetousness unless the law had said, 'You shall not covet.'* But sin, taking opportunity by the commandment, produced in me all manner of evil desire...". He says sin produces all manner of evil desire, so sin strengthens the body. Sin is always in the flesh.

Verse 9, "*I was alive once without the law, (obviously talking about the spirit man) but when the commandment came, sin revived and I died*". Which part died? Because he still sounds very alive. Which part died? The Spirit part died, it becomes weakened, the flesh comes alive. Verses 10 & 11, "*And the commandment, which was to bring life, I found to bring death. For sin, taking occasion by the commandment, deceived me, and by it killed me*". Now the "me" was the spirit. Verse 12, "*Therefore the law is holy, and the commandment holy and*

*just and good*". He says the commandment is still good, but when the commandment came, the body (the flesh) revived.

And then he continues (verses 13 & 14), *"Has then what is good become death to me? Certainly not! But sin, that it might appear sin, was producing death in me through what is good, so that sin through the commandment might become exceedingly sinful. For we know that the law is spiritual, but I am carnal, sold under sin"*. Now the word "carnal" by the way is the word "flesh". He is talking about the flesh versus the spirit.

Verse 15, *"For what I am doing, I do not understand"* (The body is doing something, but the mind does not understand, the spirit is already dead). And he continues, *"for what I will to do"*, (*I will*, who is doing the *I will*? The spirit. *I will* – the spirit wants to do) *"that I do not practice"*, (ends up, these two not getting along. *I will*, these two, flesh, the spirit is willing, the flesh is weak), soul also goes along with them. Because he is saying one part of him is in bondage, *"I am in bondage"*. Which part of him? The soul is bound, the soul has become *"sarx"*, which is "flesh", translated "carnal". Soul is going along with the body. And he says, *"but what I hate, that I do"*. The spirit still does not like what the flesh does.

Verse 16, *"If then, I do what I will not to do..."*. The "I" (the soul) choose to do, "what I will", here does not want to do. There are two wills fighting. Not just one will, there are two wills fighting, the soul chooses to do, the spirit doesn't want to do, *"I choose"*, *"no, I choose"*, these two are battling to win.

You can only explain Romans when you see this diagram. The battle of the wills, the will of the flesh, the will of the soul and the will of the spirit. The flesh won, at first.

And then he says (verse 17), *"But now, it is no longer I who do it, (alright, he says "I am no longer doing it") but sin that dwells in me"*. Sin dwells here, is located inside the flesh (the body). Sin is using this, 'Body Mind', 'Body Emotions' and 'Body Will'.

Verse 18, *"For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh) ..., (and he says) for to will is present..., (he can will) but how to perform..., (but how to perform this will, cannot do) I do not find"* (I do not find the energy). You see, the problem is the energy in the spirit was lacking.

Then he says (verse 19), *“For the good that I will to do...”*. You see, he still has got the will, he comes back to ‘this will’. He says here, *“to will is present”*, but I cannot do it. So, for a moment, he is talking about this ‘spirit will’. ‘This will’ can will, but no strength because sold out by this ‘body will’. The sin is still pulling it aside. Then in verse 19 he returns, ‘this will’ is still there, *“For the good that I will to do, I do not do...”*. ‘This will’ he wants to do, “I” will not do. The two wills fighting inside. Verse 20, *“Now if I do what I will not to do, it is no longer I who do it...”*. In the end, Paul wins. In the end, these three fight, *boom, boom, boom* and Paul wins. So, he asks “How”?

### *The Law of Sin vs The Law of God*

And then he says in verse 21, *“I find then a law, that evil is present with me, the one who wills to do good”*. ‘The one’, he has the will. Can you see? If you interpret this based on the old diagram, ‘the will’ belongs to the soul. Now in this new diagram, you put ‘the will’ in the spirit. The spirit wills, still wills to do. He says in verse 21, *“I find then a law, that evil is present with me (body will), the one who wills to do good (spirit will)”*.

Verse 22, *“For I delight in the law of God according to the inward man”*. This whole thing, this is the inward man. Verse 23, *“But I see another law in my members, warring against the law of my mind, and bringing me into captivity to the law of sin which is in my members”*. Here, in the outer circle.

Verse 24, *“O wretched man that I am! Who will deliver me from this body of death”*? This body that is so strong, is killing me. Verse 25, *“I thank God, through Jesus Christ our Lord”*! Christ now comes here. Remember, the Bible didn’t have chapters or verses when it was written. Chapter 7 must flow straight into chapter 8. So, he says *“Ya! Christ, He comes here”*. *“So then, (now, here’s the other part) with the mind I myself serve the law of God, (now, this mind must serve the law of God) but with the flesh the law of sin”*. The law of sin is still in here.

Then he goes on. Romans 8:1-2, *“There is therefore now no condemnation to those who are in Christ Jesus, who do not walk according to the flesh, but according to the Spirit. For the law of the Spirit of life (life flows here) in Christ Jesus has made me free from the law of sin*

*and death*". This law, so this life here, makes me free from this law, at least something is happening here.

Then he says (verses 3 & 4), "*For what the law could not do in that it was weak through the flesh, God did by sending His Own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, on account of sin: He condemned sin in the flesh, that the righteous requirement of the law might be fulfilled in us who do not walk according to the flesh but according to the Spirit*". The Holy Spirit lives within us.

Verse 5, "*For those who live according to the flesh set their minds on the things of the flesh, (so this one goes to this side), but those who live according to the Spirit, the things of the Spirit*". Then he says (verse 6), "*For to be carnally minded ("carnal" means "flesh", to allow the flesh mind to rule, you will die) is death, but to be spiritually minded (to let the spirit mind rule, you will live) is life and peace*". That is the battle he talks about.

Now in verse 10, he says: "*And if Christ is in you, the body is dead...*". What does this mean, that 'the body is dead'? Christ is in us, but we are still alive. So, how is your body dead? Which part of you is dead? God did something to this, '*Body Mind*', '*Body Will*' and '*Body Emotions*'. That is why I left the '*Body Mind*', '*Body Will*' and '*Body Emotions*', remember, the body has a will of its own, so God did something, something died in your body. You might not have discovered it yet, but something happened to your body on the day you accepted Christ. Some part of it was changed. (We will talk more about this in a later chapter). Something died.

### *The Three Minds*

Now I throw in more verses. James 1:8 says a double-minded man is unstable in all his ways. Doesn't the word "double" mean "two-minded"? How can you be double-minded if there is only one mind? In the old diagram by Watchman Nee, you have only got one mind, the *Soul Mind*. But in the new diagram, there is a possibility of being double minded because of the *Spirit Mind* and the *Soul Mind*, you must choose one. Single minded, not double minded. Single minded, that is the key.

Once upon a time, long, long ago, in the Garden of Eden, before the fall of man, we didn't have such a thing as three wills, three minds and three emotions. We never had that. Our *Body Mind*, our *Soul Mind* and our *Spirit Mind* were all one, aligning with the *Spirit Mind*.

Our *Body Emotions*, our *Soul Emotions* and our *Spirit Emotions* were all one, controlled by the *Spirit Emotions*. We do not have three wills, we have only one will. It flows so easily. What our spirit chooses is what our soul chooses is what our body chooses. But when Adam fell, disruption entered, and we ended up with three minds instead of one.

### *One Leader*

Now, from where we are, we must get back to all this, to unity. When you have ‘three minds’, there can only be one ‘Red Indian Chief’. When three people come together, one must definitely be the leader. You can call him chairman, coordinator, whatever. Must be one. The only difference is you choose a good one who will listen to all. Even a democratic leader is still a leader because a country must have a leader. When we practice democracy, we still need a leader. The only thing is we want the leader to listen to us also, to know our needs. Jesus is a leader. Jesus listens to everything. He knows everything.

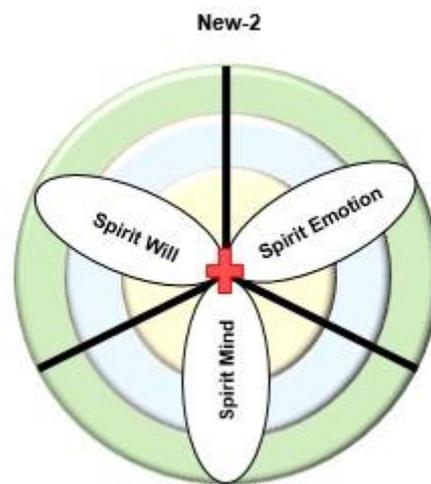
Now you understand the Christian life is seeking to function as one life, function as one emotion, function as one will, that is to reach back to perfection that God created. The next time that you sense your spirit or your will (there is a stronger and a weaker), when God energises it, to make it easier to choose what is right. It is God who energises, in Philippians 2:13, the Greek word says it is God who energises in you “*to will and to do*”. The word is “*energes*”, God energises you so that you can choose. He makes the will of the spirit stronger. Now your Christian life becomes very easy. Keep feeding your spirit and the will of the spirit will dominate.

Have you ever seen children playing? Some children are weak willed, some are strong willed. Do you know, if you leave children to themselves, you will find one or two will dominate? The strong one, either in the physical body stronger (or sometimes not necessarily physical body, the will or the strength of the soul) or we call it “the spirit” is leader. That is how when a group of people become gangsters, one will evolve to be a leader, not necessarily the strongest, or could be the smartest, or in this evil world, the most manipulative. Because one will always evolve to dominate the others and there can only be one leader.

### *Energising the Spirit and Training the Body*

So, you learn, and once you see this diagram, you learn that your spirit actually has emotions, your spirit can sense, it can sense love, it can sense right and wrong, it can sense peace. And

then you know the direction that you are going. Your spirit has a mind of its own. What about thoughts? Sometimes your thoughts come from your spirit, some people do not realise that. Sometimes your thoughts come from your soul. Sometimes your thoughts come from your body. When you go down and you smell some food that you like, your body makes you think about that food. So, sometimes thoughts can be produced by your body but now when you see this diagram, you become more aware that after the fall, there is this division, but God is bringing it altogether. Then when you want to choose something, sometimes you feel that the body is already making you choose. You need energy 'to will' correctly and as you pray and get energised, the will of the spirit, which produces a desire in you, comes out stronger. The Greek word here in Philippians 2:13 is the word, which some translations put as the 'desires of the spirit in you'. This begins to take more and more precedence until (because of the strength of this desire) you yield.



*Diagram 4*

Why does a person want to fast? Because your spiritual desires are stronger than your desire for food. When your spiritual desires dominate you, the body gets dominated. Why do some people find it difficult to fast? Because their appetites are just overpowering, like an addiction to food. Sometimes people don't fast because they have been taught wrongly (in their mind). You see, we have a series on *Fasting*. In this series, I covered the scientific fact for fasting and the spiritual reason for fasting. You think that every time you go without food, your gastric juice is going to kill you but then you learn that your gastric juice can be trained because it is all secreted by your own training.

If Pavlov can train a dog, so that every time he rings the bell, the dog gets ready for food, how much more do you think you can train your body? You all know who Pavlov is, right? He trains the dog and whenever he wants to feed the dog, he rings the bell, then the dog hears

the bell, food comes. Rings the bell, food comes. After some time, he doesn't give the dog any food, rings the bell, the dog gets ready for food because the body can be trained.

I am on a no breakfast fast. They tell you breakfast is the most important meal of the day. I will say having good nutrition is most important. Who told you that you must eat three meals a day? Did the Bible say that? Who told you that? Our culture! Long before we developed eating habits and even named it as breakfast, lunch and dinner, people only ate when they were hungry. Now we eat for culture. Train your body back and eat only when you are hungry.

Now when I say I have no breakfast today, I do know that it is important to have proper nutrition. In the morning, when I get up, I get my protein drink, I take my vitamins, one cup, that is it. I can last until dinner or lunch or whatever time I take a meal. After many years, my body doesn't argue with me anymore.

However, if every morning you are used to one of those heavy breakfasts that I see in the spirit some of my congregation go to after an all-night prayer, then retrain your body. Their breakfast is sumptuous, they have this 'buffet' at 6:15 in the morning, which I always tell people, my stomach hasn't woken up yet. It usually consists of, Nasi lemak with five things on it, followed by fried kway teow, if your body is so trained, remember Pavlov's dog!

Every time 6.15 comes around, your stomach behaves like Pavlov's dog. Retrain it. Dogs can be trained, stomachs can be trained. However, do not do this overnight. Pavlov's dog was not trained overnight. As you train yourself, you can flow better. It is the same to train yourself in all night prayer, same when you train yourself to pray in tongues, same when you train yourself to desire to worship God. You can train your body, but let your spirit be energised first. If your spirit is weak, your body will win every time.

Jesus says (Matthew 26:41), "... *The spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak*". What He means is not the flesh is weak, it is already so strong. So, you are yielding to the flesh because you want to yield. That is why Jesus says in Matthew 5:3, "*Blessed are the poor in spirit...*". What He means is the flesh wants to do its own thing, but your spirit is hungry, and you yield to it. When your spirit grows stronger than your flesh, it is easy. Feed your spirit, do not look for overnight solutions.

Every day just do a little bit and the secret of the Christian life within you, will conquer day by day. Is Jesus telling us this in Mathew 26:41? You know what Jesus' big secret is? Each day's evil is sufficient for itself, that's it! Every day, just win. You win for that day so that it becomes your 'spiritual day'. You have won, and the rest of the week just flows. Keep winning, one day at a time until after one year of winning every day, it becomes a habit. It is just retraining. So just do one day at a time. Build a memorial to God.

### *Building Memorials*

On one of the Sundays, Cornelius appeared and was trying to impart an understanding to people to build a memorial. If ever in your visions you see someone like a Roman soldier but with a very devout look, that is Cornelius. He only had one message the Lord sent him to give, "build memorials for God". And so, that message was sent to Clement in Australia. Clement was saying, "I am working, I've got this, I've got a child, my wife". And then, you know what, in his time with the Lord, the Lord said, "Even if it is for a few minutes". He was told to have a certain memorial regularly, even if it is only for a few minutes.

When God says, "build a memorial", some of us are thinking, I must get up at 4:00 am and pray from 4:00 to 6:00 am. Just thinking about it, you got so tired and you must sleep for another hour. Instead, start with 15 minutes. Maybe you get up 15 minutes earlier, then you have your 15 minutes memorial. You see, memorials are not necessarily long. Who says the minimum length of time for a memorial is 2 hours? Who told you that? It could be 5 minutes. Maybe your memorial is your 5 minutes every day doing a certain thing like lifting your hands and worshipping God. Whatever your memorial is, it builds something strong into your Christian life. It will change who you are. Remember 2 Corinthians 3:18, "glory to glory, faith to faith". It is a daily process.

### *Reverse Aging*

Do you know that every day your cells are dying and being replaced every day? If at the end of 10 years, the replacement is as good as the cells that die, you never age. You know why you age? It is because the cells that are replaced are not as good as the cells that died. So, *B* replaces *A*, then *B* is not as good as *A*, so it looks and feels worse. Then *C* replaces *B* and *C* is worse than *B*, and of course *B* is worse than *A*, so it is really downhill from there. By the time you reach *Z*, your half-dead!

It is like an olden day's photocopy where the copy of a copy of a copy becomes so degraded that it is barely recognisable from the original. However, if *B* is better than *A*, and *C* is more energetic than *B*, and *D* is greater than *C*, you are growing younger. Do you know that your cells are being affected by the reading of God's Word? Hebrews 4:12, "*For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow...*". Why do you think the Bible calls "marrow" marrow? The Bible knows that your marrow is the place where your blood cells are being produced, and blood is alive. Leviticus 17:11a, "*For the life of the flesh is in the blood .....*". So, change a little every day, a little difference, and you will be totally changed and transformed.

## Chapter 2...

### Defining the Heart of Man

In the old *Spiritual Man – Book I* you must begin to get rid of the old chart and look to the new chart. I have already explained and proven from the Word that you do have *Spirit Emotion*, you do have *Spirit Mind* and you do have *Spirit Will*.



Diagram 1

Watchman Nee says that this is the *Body* (outer circle), this is the *Soul* (middle circle) and this is the *Spirit* (inner circle). Watchman Nee defined the word “heart” in his book and as you read all the way through, about three-quarters of the way, he starts to define the word “heart”. That is a very difficult word to define in the Bible. He based his definition on all the data bases on the heart, by searching for the word “heart” to see what every scripture says. He concluded that, since the heart thinks, the *Mind* is involved; since the heart can choose, the *Will* is involved; since the heart can feel, *Emotions* are involved; and since the heart is somewhere where God is working (a new heart He gives to you). So, he has to put the word “heart” somewhere in the *Spirit*. He says the heart is the conscience that decides right and wrong so for Watchman Nee, the heart is made up of three parts *Soul* to one part *Spirit*. That is Watchman Nee’s definition.

Kenneth E Hagin in his book *Spirit, Soul and Body* gives this conclusion, very simple, he did not do much analysis, however from his experience of the Scriptures and his reading, and his knowledge of God, knowing about the heart, he says that the heart, every time you see the word “heart”, it is talking about the spirit. So, for Kenneth E Hagin, he defines the word

“heart” to be spirit. To Kenneth E Hagin, the heart was *Intuition, Communion* and *Conscience*.



Diagram 2

*Defining the heart of man*

He is right in a way, although he didn't give many scriptures because the word “heart” is also an inner knowing, whereas Watchman Nee put all the knowing in the heart to be the knowing in the soul. The heart does know something that the mind does not know. We all know that from experience. Watchman Nee has put the heart knows right and wrong and that is why he says the heart knows right and wrong, even though your mind might not know right and wrong, your emotions might not know right and wrong, your heart knows.

The question is however, does the heart know more than right and wrong? Does the heart have knowledge? What about Hebrews 8 verse 10, where it says that God will put His laws into our minds and write them in our hearts? There is knowledge that comes from the heart. The heart can be filled with wisdom. The heart knows God. The heart would know and sense the mysteries of God, so the heart has some level of intuition. Intuition is like a super-inner knowing, instinctive knowing. The heart also communes with God and the heart knows God and God knows the heart.

Do the scriptures say in Proverbs 3:5-6 (that you all have memorised, you all know these verses, as a young Christian I was taught these verses), “*Trust in the LORD with all your heart, And lean not on your own understanding; In all your ways acknowledge Him, And He shall direct your paths*”? So, trusting in Him with your heart, there is something about this communion that you have with God, there is a sense of communion that is there.

Kenneth E Hagin is not too far away from it when he says the heart is the spirit man. However, he has been troubled because there are places in the Word where the word “heart” seems to be the wrong guy.

Look at the book of Jeremiah. Why do I use Jeremiah? I use it because the quotation of the word “heart”, “*I will put My laws in their mind and write them on their hearts*”, comes from Jeremiah, the one from Hebrews 8 verse 10, has its understanding from Jeremiah and see how the usage of the “heart” was, in his time. There are a lot of verses with the word “heart”. In fact, from my search I found that it appears 774 times in the Bible.

Jeremiah 4:14, “*O Jerusalem, wash your heart from wickedness...*” How can the heart can be wicked”? Now, at that point, Watchman Nee’s definition stands stronger because wickedness can be in the soul. You would not talk about the spirit as being a wicked spirit and say, “you wicked spirit”. So, Kenneth E Hagin’s definition now begins to break down, every time the word “heart” doesn’t refer to the spirit. You cannot put it into this verse here because wickedness is in the heart. Then we bypass all those things to chapter 5 verse 23, “*But this people has a defiant and rebellious heart...*”. Huh, “rebellious heart”, that is an interesting definition. It cannot be talking about just the spirit, it has to be part of the soul.

I am just trying to show how when a man of God or a preacher makes a definition, we can show from looking at scriptures whether that definition stands or not or is correct. When a man of God stands up to preach and gives a definition, he is applying and saying, “This is the Bible definition of the word heart”. Sometimes the definition is wrong, and we must improve on the definition. That is how dictionaries are built upon.

Watchman Nee says the heart is one-part *Spirit*, three parts *Soul*. First, look at one man of God first, Kenneth E Hagin, and see where his definition starts breaking down. Let us look here at chapter 9 verse 26 in Jeremiah. Remember, there are 774 occurrences for the word “heart”, that is a lot to study. We now look at the Old Testament and afterwards, we will look at the New Testament. Jeremiah 9:26 says “*Egypt, Judah, Edom, the people of Ammon, Moab, and all who are in the farthest corners, who dwell in the wilderness. For all these nations are uncircumcised, and all the house of Israel are uncircumcised in the heart*”. That means their hearts are not good. What does it mean ‘uncircumcised heart’? That means the

heart is not cut properly. The definition does not apply to Kenneth E Hagin’s definition and his definition starts breaking down. A good definition should explain all 774 occurrences.

In my New King James version, there could be more in Hebrew because in some places the word “heart” might have been translated differently. However, in the New King James Concordance, there are 774 references to the word “heart”. A good definition must be able to stand strong and remain consistent for all 774 times. Already, Kenneth E Hagin’s one is breaking down. So, we continue looking at, besides the original definition, “uncircumcised in the heart”.

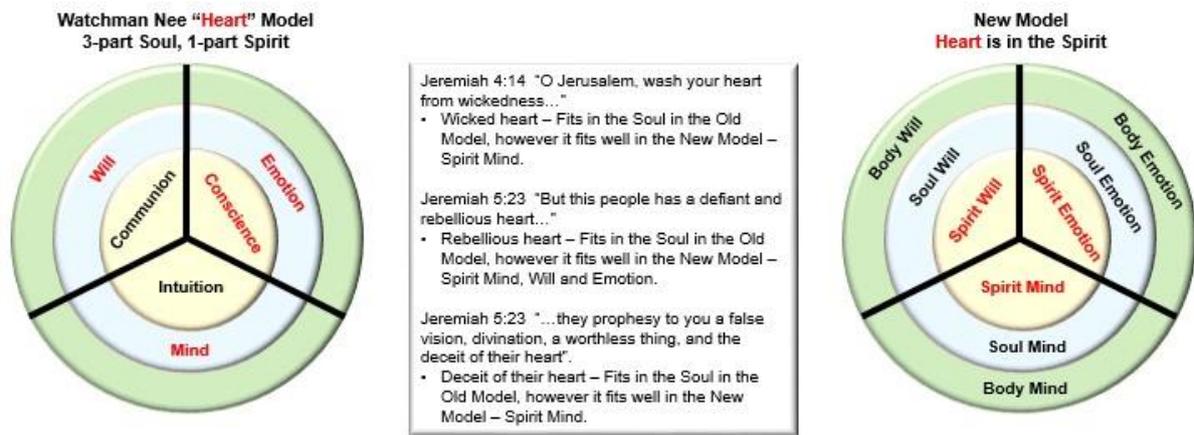


Diagram 3

Then this is a difficult one in Jeremiah 14:14, *And the LORD said to me, "The prophets prophesy lies in My name. I have not sent them, commanded them, nor spoken to them; they prophesy to you a false vision, divination, a worthless thing, and the deceit of their heart"*. How can deception be in the heart?

So, just these few verses, already saying that the heart is the spirit all the time doesn't carry it for me. Teaching is line upon line, precept upon precept, we are defining Biblical dictionary meaning. It has to be consistent all 774 times otherwise, if we don't apply this standard to the Word of God, how will the people of the world believe us? If we cannot be consistent in our own interpretation, in analysing what we call the Bible (the Word of God to us), how can they believe? We must be as consistent and as true as ever, which is why in all our preaching, we always tell people that if they find a place where we contradict the Word, write to us and let us know, but please quote the scriptures.

There are people who have written to me, “I disagree with you”, but not a single verse. They said, “I don’t think angels can appear that often”. You know what my answer to them is? Show me scriptures and verses that angels cannot appear so often. “You cannot know the angels so well.” Show me the scriptures.

You see, whatever we have experienced, we still do not contradict the Scriptures. Show me a doctrine or experience where the Bible says that thing cannot be so. There is none. So, some people who don’t believe in miracles say, “Ah, I don’t believe in that”. Some people do not even believe that angels appear to people and say, “I do not believe in this” or whatever their reasons. However, if you do not have scriptures, I will take the email or take whatever they send and just throw it away or put it in the junk folder. However, if you have a scripture, then you say, “Doesn’t this contradict the Scripture”? That is good. We encourage dialogue, we encourage debate and that is good. I get hundreds of emails every day. If I do not answer them, it will reach 1,000 within a few days. So, I must pick and choose what to answer.

In Jeremiah, it says a heart can be deceived. That is not so good. Now, here is the worst thing. I am only in chapter 16 of Jeremiah. In Jeremiah, it is almost mentioned in every other chapter or every chapter, it deals with the word “heart” a lot. Jeremiah 16:12, “*And you have done worse than your fathers, for behold, each one follows the dictates of his own evil heart...*”. An ‘evil heart’ now!

That is enough of the Old Testament, now to the New Testament. Jesus says in Matthew 5:21-22, “*You have heard that it was said to those of old, ‘You shall not murder, and whoever murders will be in danger of the judgment’. But I say to you that whoever is angry with his brother...*”. All this area is dealing with the heart up to verse 27, “*You have heard that it was said to those of old, ‘You shall not commit adultery’. But I say to you that whoever looks at a woman to lust for her has already committed adultery with her in his heart*”. Now, if the heart is the spirit, you cannot do that. The Spirit does not lust, but it says that in the heart there is lust. So, Brother Hagin’s definition is really breaking down even in the New Testament.

Just looking at the Beatitudes, in the Sermon on the Mount, Matthew 6:21, “*For where your treasure is, there your heart will be also*”. That is a wonderful verse. I use that verse to talk about the heart being the centre of gravity. It does not say where your heart is, your treasure

will be. It says where your treasure is, your heart will be. So, whatever is your focus, your heart will, in the end, flow in that direction. That is a very difficult definition. In this one, Watchman Nee’s definition breaks down because if the heart is just three parts *Soul* and one part *Spirit*, then if it is a good treasure, let us say it is a good treasure, then the conscience is not the only place where treasure is stored. Spiritual treasures, if you check the word “treasure”, you will find that it brings out, “good treasures” (old treasures, new treasures that are there, treasures of riches of the knowledge of the wisdom of God). The heart has to be more than the conscience. It has to be a receptacle for wisdom. Where is spiritual wisdom? In the heart, in the spirit. So, it has to be more than that.

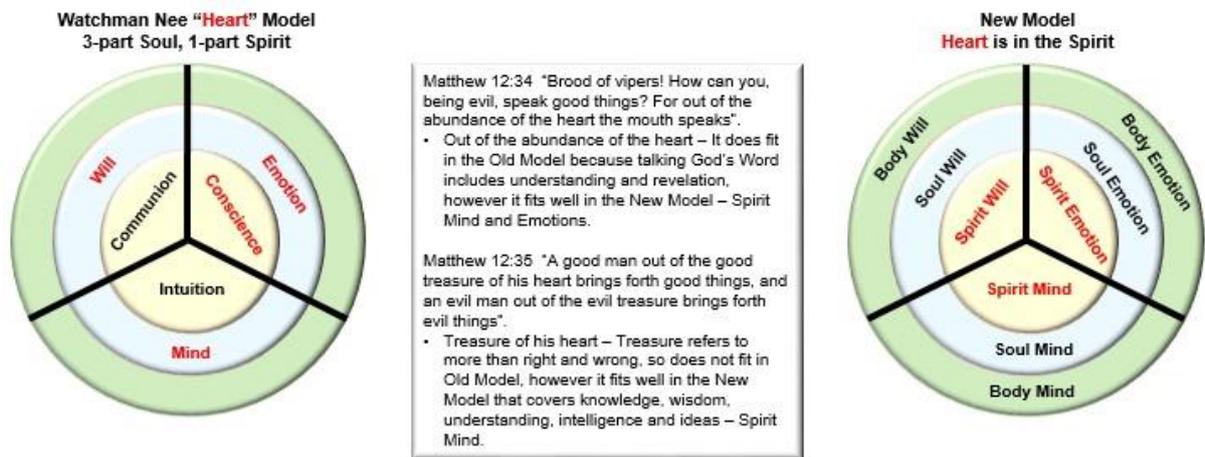


Diagram 4

In Matthew 12:34 it says, “*Brood of vipers! How can you, being evil, speak good things?* (He tells the bad guys) *For out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaks*”. So, whatever the mouth speaks, it comes from the heart. It can be good, it can be bad. Now, if He says that “out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaks”, that means when I am talking about things of the Word of God, about the knowledge of God, is the heart still involved? If the heart is still involved, then if I am teaching, my heart is involved, for my heart that is filled with God’s Word is involved. If that is so, Watchman Nee’s definition breaks down because I am using my heart to teach, for my mouth is speaking, out of my mouth comes words and knowledge (the knowledge of God, the wisdom of God), is more than talking about right and wrong, it is talking about God’s Word, understanding and revelation. Watchman Nee’s definition breaks down here because if everything that the mouth speaks comes from the heart, what happens if the heart speaks the Word of God, or the presence of God, or the revelation of God? It is beyond conscience. So, Watchman Nee’s definition breaks down, Brother Hagin’s definition breaks down. We have to find a definition that will cover all 774 occurrences of the word “heart” in the Bible.

In Matthew 12:35 it says, “*A good man out of the good treasure of his heart brings forth good things (good things, not just right and wrong, good things, things about God, things about the spiritual world), and an evil man out of the evil treasure brings forth evil things*”. Can you see the definition for “treasure” here? Treasure refers to more than right and wrong. I believe “treasure” refers to knowledge, wisdom, understanding, intelligence and ideas, all should come from the heart. An evil man has it from an evil heart. A good man has it from a good heart. Watchman Nee’s definition breaks down because to him (in his definition), the soul is always bad, and you want to tap on the Spirit and the Spirit’s Wisdom, not the soul’s wisdom. He has another teaching called *The Soul Man versus the Spiritual Man*. In fact, one of his books called *The Normal Christian Life* is talking about the spiritual man versus the carnal man. The carnal man is the soul man. This is Watchman Nee’s teaching. You see, a teaching is usually based on one’s deep perception. In Watchman Nee’s deep perception, soul and soulish is bad, so he emphasised the spirit but his emphasis on the spirit was not strong enough to cover that the spirit is more than conscience. The heart is more than conscience. The spirit has wisdom, knowledge and he admit it but he does not put that part of the spirit as heart. So, in this verse, both definitions (Brother Hagin’s definition and Watchman Nee’s definition) break down.

Let us look at Matthew 13:19, “*When anyone hears the word of the kingdom, and does not understand it, then the wicked one comes and snatches away what was sown in his heart. This is he who received seed by the wayside*”. I would say that it looks like Brother Hagin’s definition is also shaky here because if you are saying that the heart is the spirit, let me put it in here and see how it reads. “*When anyone hears the word of the kingdom, and does not understand it, then the wicked one comes and snatches away what was sown in his spirit*”. It sounds bad, doesn’t it? The devil can come and steal something in your spirit?

#### *The Word is a spiritual thing*

Now, let us put Watchman Nee’s definition in the conscience (since this is the Word, we can only say, the Word goes into your spirit). “*When anyone hears the word of the kingdom, and does not understand it, then the wicked one comes and snatches away what was sown in his conscience (or his mind, or his emotions, or his will)*”. Now, let us look at it. If you say that this one is the Word sown in the mind, then you have got a big problem. You know why, because the Word is a spiritual thing. When you use the word “soul” and you say the Word only affects your soul, then it enters into very shaky ground where Jesus says in John 6:63,

“*My words are spirit, and they are life*”. Now, how can spirit and life only enter the soul and do not affect the spirit? If the Word is only sown, let us say, in your emotions, the devil does not have to do anything. It will not work anyway. If the Word is only sown in your mind (the intellectual soul mind), the devil does not have to do anything. He does not work in your spirit. You know, the devil comes to steal it because it is going to affect your spirit, somehow in the intricate work of how the Word works.

Here is the truth. The Word actually affects your spirit, soul and body. That is a Biblical fact. The Word has to affect your spirit, the Word has to affect your soul, the Word has to affect your body.

Hebrews 4:12 says, “*For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit (there you got it), and of joints and marrow...*”. Based on Hebrews 4:12, I can say that the Word has to affect all three parts of us since we are tripartite in nature. That is why even Watchman Nee’s definition breaks down. Where does the devil steal it from? *Ah*, by now we should come out with some definition, right? Watchman Nee says that the heart is made of three parts *Soul* and one part *Spirit*, Brother Hagin says three parts *Spirit* (which is total, all) and nothing of the *Soul*. We have found that both definitions are insufficient.

#### *Where is the heart of man?*

So, if you remember, where is the heart? How to draw the heart, based on the old chart or the new chart? You have to start with the old chart, then you go to the new. Where is the heart? Is Watchman Nee correct? Is Kenneth E Hagin correct? Let me ask a different question. Based on my word, you say that they are both right and they are both wrong, correct? Very good answer. So, what about your definition? I am using both men who have already died and gone home to be with the Lord. So, what about your definition? Where is the word “heart”? The word “heart” applies to all of your soul and all of your spirit and you notice this, The Bible has a word that applies (the New Testament especially, and the Old) just to your spirit. When the Bible talks about your spirit, “*I will give you a new spirit*”, let us look at Ezekiel 36:26. Here is the Bible verse for our new definition. By now, let us stop writing down the 774 verses. By the way, before all these definitions, I would have to mentally go to the 774 verses to have a good definition.

Ezekiel 36:26 says, *“I will give you a new heart and put a new spirit within you; I will take the heart of stone out of your flesh and give you a heart of flesh”*. Now, based on Kenneth E Hagins’ definition and Watchman Nee’s definition, you also have a problem with this verse because if the word “spirit” and the word “heart” mean the same thing. God really has gone to all the trouble to use different words for the same thing, like He used the words, “new heart”, “new spirit”, “a heart of flesh”. You say, “Wait a minute, a heart of flesh is equal to the spirit”, a bit shaky, maybe just based on this one verse, it might push the definition through. You might push it through until you reach the other verses.

Now, if you take Watchman Nee’s definition, you will have a problem because for a moment, when God talks about the word “heart”, He excludes the spirit. *“I will give you a new heart”*, this is the giving part, *“I will put My Spirit within you...”* and then the last part He says, *“and put a new spirit”*. “My Spirit” is actually in the next verse, in verse 27. So, before He gives us His Spirit, He puts in a new spirit. Now, if it is a new spirit and He takes the heart of stone out, then the new spirit comes into the heart, which is only one-third spirit. Can the Spirit, which is supposed to occupy all of the spirit, occupy just one part of the spirit and all of the soul? You see, that is a problem for me. Spirit occupies spirit, it cannot occupy one-third, it has to occupy all of the spirit. So, Watchman Nee’s definition also breaks down.

What about *“I will give you a heart of flesh”*? You never call the conscience just “flesh” in that one part. You might call the part of your soul “flesh” (tenderness of the flesh), but you can never call your conscience “spirit flesh” because “flesh” is more applied to your soul. I base this on a lot of studies. When you study the word “flesh” in the Bible (especially occurrences in Romans) and Watchman Nee also studied the word “flesh”, (the words “self” and “flesh” to him are the same), the “flesh” refers to your soul, more than just your physical body because your physical body is neutral, you cannot do anything without your soul. Your body physically is actually the temple of the Holy Spirit. It is your soul that makes all the decisions, that makes you fleshly; your soul that is run by the flesh. So, his definition is also breaking down and the good definition let us look at it one at a time.

When the Bible wants to refer to our spirit, not God’s Spirit in us, our spirit, it uses the words, *“new spirit”*, *“new man”*, *“hidden man of the heart”*. Have you come across that? It is in the Bible. *“Hidden man of the heart”*, *“inner man”*, *“hidden man”*, *“new man”*, *“new creation”* (2 Corinthians 5:17), all these are words that refer to the spirit man.

Then when the Bible wants to talk about the soul alone, it uses the word “*soul*”. They will use “*psuche*” in the Greek or it might talk about the bad part of the soul called the flesh because the soul can be good or bad. So, the Bible has words that they can use when they want to zoom in on just the soul, or when they want to zoom in on the spirit, correct? But the Bible has another word if you want to refer to both at the same time. There is a simple word “*heart*” in Hebrew “*lebab*”, and in the Greek “*kardia*”.

Considering the word “*heart*”, this is our redefinition of both Kenneth E Hagin and Watchman Nee. They are both right. You mix them up and they become Kenneth Watchman Nee E Hagin. Both of them are right and so the heart is actually both when you use the word “*heart*”, it refers to both your spirit and your soul functioning as one. When they function as one, that’s your heart. They can be separated, they can be good or bad because if you talk about the heart (all six parts). So, here is our redefinition.

Kenneth E Hagin defines the heart as three parts *Spirit*; Watchman Nee defines the heart as three parts *Soul* and one part *Spirit*. We define the word “*heart*” and redefine it as the word for all of your *Spirit* (three parts *Spirit*) and all of your *Soul* which makes six parts in total. In other words, your heart is the real you. That definition covers all 774 verses, with no exceptions, because then you can explain why the heart can be deceived.

Now, when the heart is deceived, you know how the heart is deceived? Since the heart has six parts, let us forget the six parts and make it into two, the heart is the spirit and the soul functioning together, correct? You know how the heart is deceived? When the spirit is led by the soul inside you, it is already deceived, so there is deception in your own heart. However, the heart can be a place of treasure, it can be good, “*For where your treasure is, there your heart will be also*”. In other words, whatever is your focus, you will bring your whole heart into it. You will bring your whole soul and your whole spirit into whatever you aim at, where your treasure is. It meets every definition. I checked it up (all 774 verses), that definition stands. So, we give you the new definition, the Biblical definition, based on 774 verses, is that the word “*heart*” refers to your whole spirit and soul functioning as one.

Now, when He says the sower sows the Word into the heart, I would say it like this. When the Word is sown, let us say this is the Word and the Word enters into your heart, *zoom*, it is on your inside. It is both in your spirit and in your soul. It does not have a chance to grow yet.

You know how Satan can steal? It cannot be stolen from the spirit side. You know how he can steal? He comes to your soul, makes your soul doubt, fearful, and then you let go, so he pulls it from your soul and the Word is gone. Every definition we can explain with the new definition of the word “*heart*”. So, let this be in you when you see the word “*heart*”. You say, “*Ah, that refers to both my soul and spirit functioning together*”.

What if someone asks, “he stole from the soul, but what about the part that is not possible, the spirit part”? That is a very good question. We are talking about the verse in Matthew 13 where the Word is sown into the heart. The Word is still part in your spirit, part in your heart. It has not taken root yet. You know where it takes root and develops? In your spirit.

Airplanes are designed by what I call “rivets”? You know what is a rivet? A rivet is different from a screw. A screw is where you drill a small hole and then you slowly put a bigger screw in. A rivet is where you want to rivet something, the rivet punches the hole through, but the other side has got no holding beams, so the rivet from the inside explodes out on the other side. You have got only one side so how are you going to make two pieces of metal join together from one side? Rivets. When a rivet is punched, the side explodes and as it explodes it punches in and it explodes out. This part that explodes out holds the other side very tightly, and then this side is already punched in, so it holds the thing together by the rivet.

### *The Word is growing root*

Now we liken the Word to not be riveted in. When the Word is growing root, it needs time and that is why when the Word is not growing root, before it grows a root, it takes no root, remember the four types of ground, it needs to take root. Before it takes root, it can still be pulled out. That means after you hear a new revelation, you go out, no root yet, and you doubt, you fear, you can lose the whole thing. It can still be pulled out.

When you have a garden, you first plant a plant, but it is easy to pull it out at first. However, have you tried pulling a plant out after it has been in the ground for 5 years? Try pulling out a tree! You are not a Samson, are you? It is very difficult because the tree has got stuck to the ground by a huge network of root systems.

That is what the Word does, which Jesus is trying to illustrate. So, with this new understanding and when you read the Word, you can picture it better. The Word is sown and

affects your body indirectly. It is sown on the inside and as it grows, it rivets in and grows roots that the devil cannot pull out anymore. It stays firm.

The first type of ground, Jesus says, has no root. The second type of ground grows a little bit of root but can still be pulled out by persecutions and all that. The third type of ground is thorns where the Word is rooted, partly in your spirit, partly in your soul. The devil fills your soul with all kinds of things and you know that a plant can only grow with as much space as you give it. If you put a plant and you grow all the other plants close to it, all the weeds close to it, your plant cannot grow very big because the weeds are stealing all of its nutrition. The best type is that the Word must be in your spirit, (Psalm 119:11 KJV), "*Thy word have I hid in mine heart, that I might not sin against thee*". So, it is in the heart and it is in the soul, it is solid. For the Word to be in your spirit and in your soul solidly, you must meditate on the Word of God every day. When you meditate on the Word, it affects your spirit, but it also affects your soul too.

When a Word is grown fully, it puts roots out into your spirit and into your soul, beautiful! Then it is very hard to take it out because it is grown into you. However, even better, which is in this end time, the Word starts affecting your body too. The Word is made flesh. Your body can be changed and transformed. We are looking forward to signs, wonders and transportation as the Word starts changing us physically and we become the glorious Church. We are entering into this time now.

This little definition helps our understanding of this Word, it is very important. Without a proper definition, everything else is a puzzle. A wrong definition means you interpret for the rest of your life everything wrongly. So, the correct interpretation or definition is important.

#### *Giving attention to the Word*

Now of the six parts, when you read the Word, it depends on how much your heart gives attention to it. Just like when you are reading the Word, sometimes it might affect your emotion, or your emotion is somewhere, so that is talking about how much it affects your soul and how much it affects your spirit. That is why when you read the Word in a worshipful spirit, it builds you better. How much you yield your spirit to the Word will also help it be riveted into you.

Now, looking at the six parts in the new chart, remember, your intuition is your *Spirit Emotion*; your communion is your *Spirit Mind*; your conscience is your *Spirit Will*. The will is your communion because my definitions are based on scriptures. 1 Corinthians 14:14-15. Now, in the old chart, you can turn this anyway round, it is still different, *Intuition* is intuition, *Conscience* is conscience, *Communion* is communion. You can turn this inner circle, it can go anywhere, it doesn't matter because they are so different anyway. The three parts of your spirit are so different from the three parts of your soul, so you do not care how you turn the inner circle.

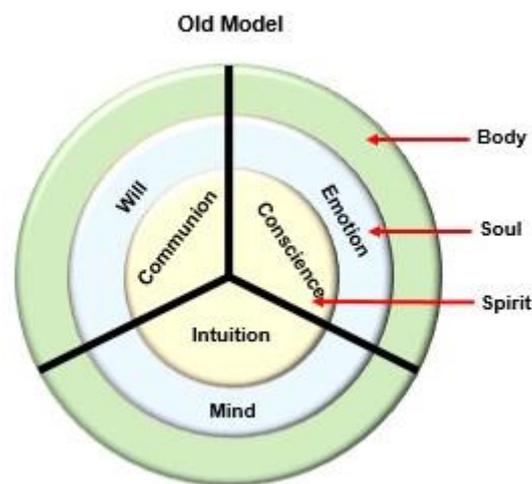


Diagram 5

In my chart, because there is a relationship between the *Will* and the *Will*, you must synchronise it. The will part of your spirit relates to the will part of your soul, based on 1 Corinthians 14:14-15 that says, "... if I pray in a tongue, my spirit prays... (Then he says), I will pray with the spirit, and I will also pray with the understanding. I will sing with the spirit, and I will also sing with the understanding". Do you notice one common word among them? "I will". Then "I will" refers to "I will pray with the spirit", it is the *Spirit Will*. "I will also pray with the understanding", that is the will part choosing, although understanding is the *Mind*, of course. Although we divide it into three parts, remember, they function as a whole.

Every time you hit one thing, the other vibrates so do not think that you can do one part without the other vibrating. It is just like how they used to knock your knee and your knee-jerk reaction, that kind of thing. Why when you knock your knee does your whole knee jerk? Now, when you knock your knee, you also feel the pain. Why when I step on your toes, your

mouth says “*Ouch!*”? Why does your mouth say something in reaction to some part of your body hurting? It is all related.

Whenever you touch one part of the soul, the other part feels the echo and vibration. It has affected that. If it touches one part of the spirit, it affects the other. The definition, like the three parts to three parts, is only for classification, so that you know the existence of it.

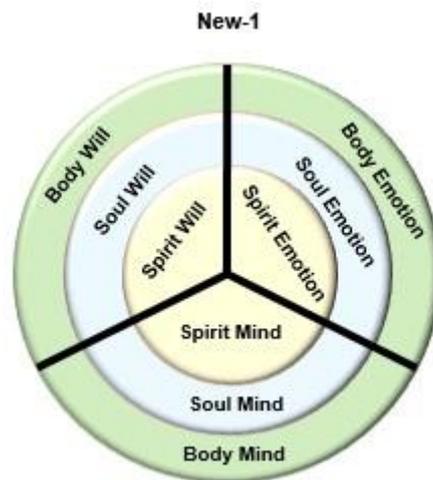


Diagram 6

Here, the new chart is different because we must turn it the correct way, so that we see the relationship based on 1 Corinthians 14:14-15, we have this area, *Spirit Will*, so we relate the two together. The *Spirit Will* is related to *Communion*, because when you say “*I will pray with the spirit*” it is communion with God. When you are praying in tongues, that is your spirit communing with God, “*I will*”.

*Intuition* is knowing – *Spirit Mind*. And this part, we put the two together, we have two sets of verses: from Ephesians and Romans. Let me give you the verses since they are not so commonly used. First, the one in Romans, Paul says (Roman 8:6-7) – “*For to be carnally minded is death, but to be spiritually minded is life and peace. Because the carnal mind is enmity against God; for it is not subject to the law of God, nor indeed can be*”. Now, you look at verse 7 very carefully. What does verse 7 actually say? It says, “the carnal mind is enmity” – enmity is like a noun word or something that is always, constantly, perpetually, eternally opposing. There is an enmity against you. Like Christ – “*Antichrist*”. The word “*Antichrist*” means one who opposes Christ all the time but actually Antichrist is not someone who just opposes Christ; he is actually someone who tries to replace Christ, someone who imitates or tries to take the place of Christ. That is what the Antichrist tries to

do, perpetually he is trying to do that, so that people turn to the wrong “Christ”. Enmity is like an enemy forever, so it is saying the carnal mind is enmity against God.

Now look at this thing, you thought that the carnal mind can be renewed, correct? “*Oh*, my mind can be renewed. *Ya*, my old soul mind can be renewed. Don’t waste it, the old refrigerator still can work, pump more gas.” That is what you were saying, right? “Your old mind is still good. Don’t throw away those old shoes, I still can patch them up, repair the underneath, take to the cobbler, put a new patch on it. I can still can walk, these shoes are made for walking.” “The old jeans, there is a place where I can repair old jeans, your favourite jeans, can repair it for the next few decades.” *Ya*, there are places where they can actually repair your old jeans, because some people’s jeans are of very sentimental value. What does the Word of God say? “... *it is not subject to the law of God...*” Can you see the words there? “... *it is not subject to the law of God, nor indeed can be.*” It is forever, forever and forever, cannot be subject to the law of God. Double emphasis. First, he calls it “an enmity”; second, he calls it “it cannot be”.

#### *Not subject to the Law of God*

Now, when something cannot be subject to the law of God, are you going to try? Will anyone of you try things, like evangelise the devil? Redeem the fallen angels? The movie that they made of Noah’s Ark where the fallen angels tried to redeem themselves – completely unscriptural. There is no way you can evangelise the devil. There is no way you can redeem a fallen angel. They are permanently irreparable, something has gotten into them whereas humans are different. Now, to understand that, because some of us haven’t seen fallen angels or haven’t actually seen the devil although we know he exists, some humans are irreparable – those that commit the sin of wilful sin (Hebrews 10:26) or be seen that there is no more repentance (Hebrews 6), or of a sin unto death (1 John 5:16). So, some humans walk into that state where nothing you do can ever convert them. Whatever you give them, they will take and use it against you. They are only looking for something to fight and oppose, a reason to debate your folly, they are not there to listen. If they ever listen, they only listen to pick up ammunition so that they can use it to attack you. Some humans are that way.

The devil is like that time thriller, he has existed in our earth time for a long time. Remember, a billion years in eternal time is like a trillion years here, and a trillion is a thousand million.

A million years there, because in terms of Adam and Eve, you see, long ago... Some of you are interested in how long Adam was created before he fell. Three days, but the three days were like one thousand years each and that is even a bigger calculation than the earth's. The one thousand, it was almost to that extent, how do you know, because so many things can occur that if you put one every second, it will not contain one 24-hour day. Definitely time is different, and it functions differently. So, each of Adam's day was like one thousand years. You have got the illustration, "like with the Lord one day is as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day" (2 Peter 3:8). That came from somewhere, but it is like 3 days. So, in a sense, he was like 3 days old and he fell.

Satan and all those in the rebellion in those days, they existed for billions of years, but their billions of years in our modern time, times thousands would be trillions of years and the actual rebellion was only like a million years. However, a million of their years measured in today's time might be a million years also (times thousands). So, the multiples do not actually work exactly. I am saying this to say that Satan and the fallen angels (in human terms) are like trillions of years old. However, you do not have to be frightened because we actually also existed before we came to the earth, except all of your memories are gone. You have been serving God, walking with God before you came down here. There is no point converting him though because he is unconvertible.

Romans 8:7 – "... *not subject to the law of God, nor indeed can be.*" Now, if God has already given up something, why are you still trying? It is like God gave the devil up and you are still trying to convert him. Why do you think you are better than God? Did God not do a good job? How dare you? Repent, for the kingdom of God is at hand!

#### *The process of renewing the mind*

Then you ask the question, which I am surprised that no one quickly asks this question: "What is the process of renewing the mind?" If the old man... Who is your old man? – I always ask. Romans 6:6 – "our old man". Who is your old man? Your old man, by the way, is not your father. Who is the old man in Romans 6:6? "Our old man", which includes our old mind. The Bible tells you to respect your parents, so call them something more respectful, more honouring, closer. Your old man was crucified with Christ. Now, tell me which part of

your old man? Because it was a past tense; in fact, a past perfect tense. Paul says (Galatians 2:20), “*I have been crucified with Christ...*”

Here’s the part you must understand. If you do not understand this, the renewal of your mind is very difficult. Now you see how the correct definition will help you look at everything differently. Over the next twenty to thirty years in this revival, this is going to help you. This brings you further because humans in the scientific world / medical world / spiritual world will only go as far as their definitions that are truth and correct. Comprehensive and correct. Like long ago, before we understood that our body was consuming oxygen in the air, when people who were deep sea divers and they came up and they died suddenly, they called that the diver’s bends. People have died from that when they surfaced too fast. What happens is your body, besides taking in oxygen, also absorbs other gases, including nitrogen, which is of a high percentage in the air. When this happens the nitrogen (there are still air pockets in it) in your blood forms bubbles when you surface too fast. In order for it not to bubble, you must slowly depressurise yourself and need to have a pressure chamber when you go deep sea diving. Only when they understood this, then the superstition was gone because all the time when people died, they thought there were water demons – thou shalt not go in, water demons will kill you, something drags you. No, the something is the scientific force that was unknown.

Before humans calculated and discovered that the sun is the centre of our solar system, they thought that the earth was the centre and all the calculations were wrong. Now you go to any kindergarten class or any primary school, you see a chart of the solar system, sometimes with a physical display. Do you know how complicated their system was when the earth was the centre of the solar system and the old universe? Very complex. You turn this, then turn that, to make the sun keep going around the earth.

### *Definition is everything*

A wrong definition that is not close to the truth prevents you from understanding truth. Remember, definition is everything. If you define something wrongly, for the rest of your life, that definition will haunt you. What do you understand about life? In this world, there are people who know God and there are people who do not know God. Those who know God understand that life. Jesus’ definition of life is this: “Life is more than raiment or food”

(Matthew 6:25). He says “more”, but in the world, life is all about food, clothing and shelter. The moment you define life that way, it changes you as a person. Jesus’ definition of life is: It does not matter what clothing you have, it does not matter what you eat (and I could include where you stay). It only matters the life of doing God’s Will. Life is actually finding the fulfillment in doing God’s Will. That is Jesus’ definition of life. He says, “My meat is to do the Will of the Father.” The word “meat” means “food”. That verse in John 4:34, taken with Matthew 6:25, when you put it together, you understand that Jesus first defined it negatively. Life is not about food, clothing, shelter (“shelter” is the one I added in).

Then take it from John 6, Jesus defined “life” as “the will of the Father” since food equals life. Matthew 4:4 (taken from Deuteronomy 8:3) – “... *Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceeds from the mouth of God*”. Doesn’t that tell you something about what true life is? Change your definition to change your life. Jesus gets up every day and thinks, “What is the will of My Father today? What does the Father want me to do”? When you do those things, that is life, that is fullness of life.

In the world today, (I also have non-Christian friends here and there), their definition is different – life is food, clothing and shelter. My father, before he passed away (he got born again then passed away and now is in heaven), before he was born again, life to him was to eat, drink and be merry. He said this is what life is for, to enjoy yourself. When I was a child, his enjoyment was that he went to Yaohan to eat, drink, hang around Singapore, then went back to Johore Bahru again. It is just enjoyment or what you feel you enjoy. All of these things, Jesus says that this is not life, based on Matthew 6. I have nothing against enjoying your life. I didn’t say you cannot enjoy your life.

#### *Definition of the mind*

The definition about your mind (your old man). Who is your old man? The bible says that your carnal mind can never be subject to the law of God, which equals to that it can never be renewed. No, Jesus says “put it on the cross and leave it there”. Do not take it back. How then is your mind renewed?

In Romans 8:6 it shows you that you do have a spiritual mind and your spiritual mind has got life and peace. It says, “... *to be spiritually minded is life and peace.*” Let us read Romans

8:6-7 – “*For to be carnally minded is death, but to be spiritually minded...*”. So, there is a spiritual mind and there is a carnal mind. One produces death, one produces life and peace. The one that produces death, in verse 7 says cannot be renewed, cannot be subject to the law of God. It will stubbornly be like the devil, eternal damnation, doomed. Good enough only for the cross, to be crucified, that is where your old man is.

In Ephesians 4, it talks about your new man. Remember now the new man equals spirit; heart equals spirit and soul. So, renew your thinking. Heart equals spirit and soul functioning together. New man equals spirit or hidden man of the heart. Hidden man of the heart comes from Peter when he was writing about husbands and wives. He talks about the wife, don't just do your colouring and decorations on the outside, but let your beauty be the hidden man of the heart. Of course, some husbands would like that because for the rest of their lives, they do not have to buy anything else, your beauty is in the hidden man of the heart, so dress her in rags, that is not what this means.

In Ephesians 4, it tells us here from verse 21 onwards: “*if indeed you have heard Him and have been taught by Him, as the truth is in Jesus: that you put off, concerning your former conduct, the old man*”. He contrasts the old man, then he contrasts the new man. He is contrasting the two. Then he says, “put off the former conduct, the old man”, the same old man in Romans 6:6. *which grows corrupt*. Only more corruption which cannot be subject to God. Romans 8:7 says that it cannot be subject to His law, it is perpetual enmity against God and grows corrupt, *according to the deceitful lusts, (verse 23) and be renewed in the spirit of your mind,*” Now, these are interesting words in the Greek they actually say, “be renewed in the *pneuma* of your *nous*”.

What is the “*pneuma*” of the “*nous*”? Let us read the Greek words here. Taking the phrase – *that you put off, concerning your former conduct, the old man (“*palaion anthropon*”) which grows corrupt according to the deceitful lusts, and be renewed in the spirit of your mind (“*to pneumatic tou noos hymon*”). The words “*tou noos hymon*” in the Greek is translated as “of your mind”. However, “*to pneumatic*” is “into or by the spirit” of your mind so this is a possible translation – *be renewed “into or by the spirit of your mind”*.*

Think about the translation, what is it saying? In verse 23: “*and be renewed in the spirit of your mind,*” – notice they choose the word “in”. The word “in” is not in the Greek. I like to use the Greek words “*to pneumatic*” – “to” is the word “*tou*” omega with an alpha subscript, which means it can be “in” the spirit – “to, in or by” – “in” the spirit, “to” the spirit, “by” the spirit. There are three possible choices in the translation, that is why it goes straight to the Greek.

It says here – *be renewed “into or by the spirit of your mind”* – that verse looks hard to understand, until you know that you do have a spirit of the mind, hallelujah! That makes it easy. That is why I call it *Spirit Mind*. Now you know why I take my definition from the Bible. Then the next time you read this verse, you say “*Ah, I understand now, be renewed,*” when Romans 12:1-2 says “... *present your bodies a living sacrifice... do not be conformed to this world, but be transformed (“metamorphoo”) by the renewing of your mind...*” It still does not tell you how your mind is renewed; it only tells you to be transformed by the renewal.

We conclude our own process, we explain it away, “renew the mind” is to replace the old thinking with the new thinking. In a way, it is correct, but how is it processed? Where is the new thinking coming from? Which part of you is doing the new thinking? Your new mind (your spirit mind) – *be renewed “into or by the spirit of your mind”* – because you have got a mind in the spiritual dimension also, in your spirit man, which he tells us is in your new man. In Ephesians 4:24 (you see, all these three verses – 22, 23 and 24 – all are in one sentence) – “*and that you put on the new man...*”. How do you put on the new man? By taking all this carnal mind (which is a rag), take it, leave it on the cross; take this old fridge, throw it away; take this old shoe (tattered and torn), throw it away; take these old clothes (tattered and torn), throw them away – no, you’re not supposed to renew it; you’re not supposed to repair it. You do not patch the old with the new. If you put old and new together, they both get destroyed. You take the old mind and throw it away and then you let this new mind control you.

#### *Another hidden man*

In each one of you, there is not just a hidden man of the heart, there is another hidden man working. I do not hear it thinking because a babe in Christ still needs nourishment. Have you ever gone to a little baby and the baby discussed with you how  $E = MC^2$ ? How to build a nuclear bomb? Of course not, he does not even know Physics because he needs to grow and

learn. So, the reason your new mind is not doing any thinking, or much thinking is because it needs to be fed. Just give it time to grow and keep feeding it and feeding it and feeding it, which is one thing that I have found, even in the natural. Normally, babies take a long time to learn languages, they take a long time to grow physically and they have to master different things because every part of their organs are still growing.

However, they have discovered that when children who were lost in the jungle and brought up by chimpanzees or monkeys or wolves (they have a few cases now), who had never seen civilization. When they get back to society, they had lost touch with humanity, after all, their companions had been animals, they have learned some animal sounds and languages. When they were retaught, they learned faster than a baby because their adult capacities were good. They used the same skills that they had learned with all the monkeys (if they grew up with the monkeys) and to learn the new language of humans, the new emphasis on new things, the new social customs and all those things, they learned very fast. Within a year, they might speak human language because their capacities have grown. They are more or less like other teenagers or young adults.

In the same way, if you keep feeding your spirit man, grow your spirit man, your spirit man starts doing the thinking. Make sure your spirit man gets the right food. What is the food for the spirit man? It is the Word of God. That is why the first thing is to not to analyse the Word with your intellect.

### *Meditate the Word*

When you are born again you train your old mind to think new words. Instead of letting your new mind grow, which is why we have got the *Foundational Truth* series. The first thing we deal with, we teach you how to eat. First foundational truth should be on how to meditate on the Word of God, to eat the Word of God. If you do not understand what you are meditating, you just keep reading it and reading it and reading it – *Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceeds from the mouth of God*. Did He talk about analysing the Word? No. Did He talk about using your intellectual mind to discover the philosophies in the Word? No. Did He talk about Word study and all that? No. He just says, “Read it out aloud.” He even told Joshua – *This Book of the Law shall not depart from your mouth* – implying it will always be in your mouth. Why did He mention the word “mouth”? Because the word

“meditate” comes from the word “*hagah*” which means to speak it to yourself. That is all Joshua had to do. Joshua was more like a ruler and a soldier. He did not have time to sit down and be a philosopher, he had battles to fight. Every day when he got up he did not have to analyse how many outlines there were, how many points there were. No! He just read the Word, read the Word, read the Word, then went out and fought because the Word nourished him. God says (Joshua 1:8) – “*This Book of the Law shall not depart from your mouth, but you shall meditate in it day and night ... you will make your way prosperous...*”.

So, all we have to do is to let this new mind take over the old mind and not to listen to the old mind any more. Listen to this new mind that has focused on the spirit. When you discover that you have another mind in you, doing the thinking, suddenly you realise there are thoughts that have come to you that you never yielded to. This new mind – this new prompting that is in your inside that is already functioning. If you yield more and more to it, it will become a strong mind that teaches you many other things. That is what God wants to do in this new mind.

#### *Let the new mind function*

Even though you cannot see angels if you do not have discerning of spirits, even though you cannot physically hear their voices unless they make it audible, you have inner thoughts that come from this mind that tells you who they are. We all need this new mind. Even if you have open vision or inner vision, sometimes when I see something, my inner mind will say this is an angel, this is his name, and I could recognise which angel there. Those who have visions will realise that something in them tells them who this person is or you see a saint, or you are in heaven, or you are visiting heaven, then a man of God approaches you, your soul might tell you something but your inner man will tell you “*Oh, this is Enoch, this is Elijah*”, even if you have not met them before, because your inner mind knows things.

Does this sound like intuition? It knows things, it instinctively knows things. Yield to that. It is not that you do not have it. Today you discover that you do have it. The moment you are born again, you have it. When it says God will put His laws in your heart, in your mind, now you have got three minds, now you know where His laws go and then this mind replaces this mind – that is what is renewed. Have you noticed the word “renewed”? Every day is new. Every day this new mind functions – renew, renew. Let the new mind function. That is why it

talks about “... *bringing every thought into captivity to the obedience of Christ.*” (2 Corinthians 10:5). All this is impossible without the new mind. You have a new mind. So, we have discovered much about the heart. There are *Emotions* here – this ties to *Conscience*. The old one was *Conscience*. You see, in our chart, we have got to name it and name it correctly. *Intuition* (which is spirit mind) – links to *Soul Mind* and *Conscience* – it links with *Emotions* because it is a sense of sense. Now we know the word “conscience” is actually the word “consciousness”.

### *Interpreting conscience*

In 1 Corinthians 8 – Paul talks about idol worship, talks about right and wrong. Paul says an idol is nothing, there is only one God. Look at 1 Corinthians 8:7 – “*However, there is not in everyone that knowledge (Greek word “gnosis” – a knowing, knowledge); for some, with consciousness of the idol, until now eat it as a thing offered to an idol; and their conscience, being weak, is defiled*”. Now, Watchman Nee used the word “conscience”. In verse 8: “*But food does not commend us to God; for neither if we eat are we the better, nor if we do not eat are we the worse*”. The thing about this one verse in verse 7 is that you notice “consciousness of the idol”? Is from the Greek word “*suneidesis*”. Why is that word important? It is a Greek word for “conscience”. “*Suneidesis*” in 1 Corinthians 8:7 is translated as two different words in one verse because you know the other word “conscience” is also “*suneidesis*”. How can it be that in one verse the word “*suneidesis*” has two different meanings?

If I were a Greek scholar, or if I were speaking New Testament Greek, and long ago if Paul had written (Paul wrote this in Greek), and I was reading Paul’s epistle, I would read in the Greek in this manner – *However, there is not in everyone that knowledge; for some, with “suneidesis” of the idol, until now eat it as a thing offered to an idol; and their “suneidesis”, being weak, is defiled.* I will not see any difference because I am reading the Greek. I will understand what the word “*suneidesis*” meant. But it is in the interpretation of “*suneidesis*” to lead me to the word “conscience” which is having a problem in our English translation. I cannot translate it either / or. Let me show it.

If I translate “*suneidesis*”, we are taking just one verse, remember, I have many other verses that I can show the translation. If I just take that one verse (1 Corinthians 8:7) and try to translate it either this way or that. If I translate it as “conscience”, consistently this is what it

would be like – *However, there is not in everyone that knowledge; for some, with “conscience” of the idol, until now eat it as a thing offered to an idol; and their conscience, being weak, is defiled.* What? Idol has got a conscience? *Huh?* You see, it cannot translate as that.

If I translate both as “consciousness”, let us see how it sounds, to be consistent with the translation of “*suneidesis*” – *However, there is not in everyone that knowledge; for some, with consciousness of the idol, until now eat it as a thing offered to an idol; and their “consciousness”, being weak, is defiled.* – Not too bad.

So, the word “conscience” becomes “consciousness” – something you are aware of all the time. In fact, that is closer to the word “*suneidesis*”, that we, in English, apply only to the word “conscience”. Our conscience can be weak or strong but, in the Bible, “conscience” is not only used for weak, strong, right, wrong, it is not just for that. “Conscience” is an inner consciousness, is a spiritual consciousness, a spiritual awareness, that is what the true meaning of the word “*suneidesis*” is, without putting the word “spiritual” in there yet. It is a consciousness – a consciousness of right and wrong. This is our English word “conscience” because there are verses that say you must have faith and a good conscience, that is how you serve God.

Let me point to those verses in 1 Timothy 1:5 – *“Now the purpose of the commandment is love from a pure heart (again the word “heart” is used), from a good conscience (a good “suneidesis”), and from sincere faith.”* Now, if I put the word “consciousness” there – *from a good “consciousness”* – I did not know consciousness can be good. What is “good consciousness”? To be conscious of all the fruit of the Spirit – love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faithfulness, meekness, temperance. Paul also says in Romans 14:17 (KJV) – *“For the kingdom of God is not meat and drink; but righteousness, and peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost”*. So, the Kingdom of God is a sense of righteousness, peace and joy.

Now, before I go to that verse, let us finish 1 Timothy 1:19 – *“having faith and a good conscience...”*. Conscience is important, but then the same conscience is applied to weak and strong, so we discovered something about the word “conscience”. Conscience detects the level of faith, whether weak or strong, because Paul says in Romans 14 – if a brother who is

weak in faith eats it, he defiles his conscience. The right and wrong is a subjective right and wrong because he is talking about a situation where some people eat food and they are condemned, some eat, and they are not condemned. It is an internal consciousness.

In 1 Corinthians 8:10, “*For if anyone sees you who have knowledge eating in an idol’s temple (which to you is nothing, you are not affected by it), will not the conscience of him who is weak be emboldened to eat those things offered to idols*”? So, he sees you eat then he eats; you eat nothing wrong, he eats and gets condemned. Why is it okay for you but not for that guy? The Bible has the answer, “Because his conscience is weak”. We have got the answer and I will tell you why. It is because your old man also includes this old emotion! Do not renew your old emotion by trying to re-educate it, let it go. All you have to do is to let it go. Let the new emotions in you come out, which are love, joy, peace, and all these things that are in you, let the new ones come out. Be more aware, be more conscious of all that is in you.

*Conscience*, I have proven from the Bible that *Conscience* becomes *Consciousness*. Even if I use Watchman Nee’s old chart, and I preserve the word “conscience”, I could re-do his chart and replace his word “conscience” with “consciousness”, based on the Bible. I am sure Watchman Nee wrote his book in Chinese, he was not an English speaker. The word “conscience” in Chinese means what *Liang xing* – good heart. So, when Watchman Nee put “*liang xing*”, he would have written it in Chinese, somebody interpreted his book and replaced his “*liang xing*” with “conscience” because the word “*liang xing*” in Chinese equals “conscience”. However, the root of the Chinese “*liang xing*” means “good heart”, which is closer to the original meaning of “*suneidesis*”. “*Suneidesis*” actually means consciousness of the goodness in you. The Chinese root was translated as “conscience”, they obviously didn’t have a word for “conscience” in the Chinese or rather in English, so there are two words to describe what the English is trying to say. I think the Chinese translation for “*suneidesis*” is better than the English. “Good consciousness”, “good heart”, there is a word “good” inside, which brings you to *Emotions* (feeling good), the goodness that you sense.

How did I conclude with *Emotions*? I gave you two verses: 1 Corinthians 8:10 plus Romans 14:17. In Romans 14:1, Paul talks about those who are weak in faith, again he ends up talking about conscience. Our English definition of “conscience” does not support this sufficiently.

In the end, the conclusion in regard to all this debate in Romans 14 and he says whatever is done, he says in verse 5, *“One-person esteems one day above another; another esteems every day alike. Let each be fully convinced in his own mind.”* Let each one do what he knows is right for him, that sense of peace. In other words, let everyone do what is peaceful. Is a right thing for you? Is something that your inner man is capable of doing. Love is also something we grow, it is inside us, but we grow in love. You will never be asked to love an impossible situation without going into gradients of growth. God would not ask you to sacrifice your life in love immediately. He will let you grow into it. Every fruit of the Spirit is called fruit, fruit is something that has to grow, fruit of the Spirit is something that has to be grown inside us.

After he talks about all this observation of this thing, he comes to verse 17 (which is the verse I want), *“for the kingdom of God is not eating and drinking, but righteousness.*

*Righteousness is a sense of the conscience. Right and wrong immediately goes with and peace and joy in the Holy Spirit”.* Why did he say that the kingdom of God is not meat and drink, but righteousness, peace and joy? The whole context he is bringing together is talking about actually being true to your own consciousness, being true to your own self. That truth depends on the growth of the fruit of the Spirit in your *Spirit Emotion*. Peace and joy are your inner new man’s (hidden man of the heart) emotions, which God supplies to you and it is those things that must grow. We all know that we can grow in peace, grow in love, grow in joy, grow in all the fruit of the Spirit and that is why we use the word “emotions”.

### *The well of salvation*

I have explained how the verses built this chart together. Once you understand this concept and you accept it, you digest it, is a different thing. Every day, you are not looking to change on your own, you are looking to tap into the well of salvation. You see, there are many verses that I line up with this, the well of salvation. Jesus says that if you believe in Him (He told the woman at the well), “I will give you water to drink and you will never thirst again”. How many Christians have you seen are very thirsty all the time? Of course, we sing the song, we thirst for God, as the deer panteth for the water, we are also thirsty but then, we are thirsty for more and more. The fact is you should never thirst again because you have a well inside of you. Any time you want to drink, you can. You draw from your well, in your spirit. If you did not know that there is a well in you, you will not make use of it. If I have a well in my house and it is a good well that supplies good water, then I do not need water from anywhere else. I learn how to draw from it, but a well is different, you must draw. Then from John 4, He went

to John 7, about the Spirit, that “he who comes to Me, out of his belly shall flow rivers...”, your well becomes a river, so your well of emotions can become a river. Every day you wake up, there is a song in your heart. You say, “How”? Two things: You must be born again, and you must be filled with the Holy Spirit. Being born again gives you the well while being filled with the Spirit gives you the river.

*Be refilled with the Spirit*

In Ephesians 5:18-19 – “... *but be filled with the Spirit, speaking to one another in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing and making melody in your heart to the Lord,*” – you have melody in your heart. Every day you just have to listen to your heart singing. Some of you say, “Pastor, my heart does not sing.” You need to be filled with the Spirit. Once your heart is filled with the Spirit, there is a song in you. Every day you just have to listen to your inside and there is a song coming out. You say, “Pastor, what to do, I have a tune but no song”? If you wake up with no song, nothing, then first place you check if you are born again. No, you are already born again, check whether you are filled with the Holy Spirit. Then you say, “No wonder there is no song”. You say, “*Eh*, wait, I am not filled with the Spirit”. You were filled yesterday. You ask, “How to be refilled”? Start praying in tongues, you pray, pray and pray, then the Spirit fills you.

New-2

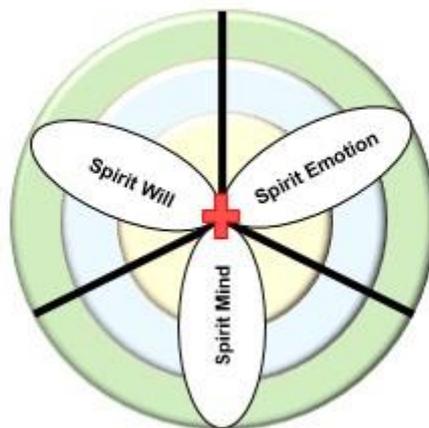


Diagram 7

Once the Spirit fills you, and of course those of you who are reading this, and you are not filled with the Spirit yet, you could not speak in tongues, just right now lift up your hands to the Lord, and ask that God fills you with the Holy Spirit. Lift up your hands to God, worship Him and thank God for the new tongues and by faith speak whatever words come to you. Now, as you speak in tongues, there will come a time when a tune comes to you. Hum the

tune, sing the tune, whatever you want, and sometimes it comes in songs that you know. Hum or sing that tune. Then that is your inner emotions being renewed.

Christian life becomes very easy if the Holy Spirit is flowing out through your soul. That is what this chart produces, *Spirit Mind* flowing, *Spirit Emotion* flowing, *Spirit Will* flowing. Beautiful, that is your Christian life. That was what we were like before Adam fell. We were born, we never tasted that, when we were born into sin. Being born into sin, our sense, our mind got chopped, chopped; chopped, chopped; chopped, chopped, that is why you feel conflict inside of you. You feel that you have got two minds, two emotions, two sets of choices but the more you flow in God, you realise there is only one true one, the Spirit. The more you yield, your mind becomes one mind. Knowing that your soul mind was supposed to be a part of it, but it got chopped into pieces. That is why you have got a remnant consciousness, that humans are functioning in. Go back to the original. This is the way we were made. This is the way God will bring us back into it, into the glorious Church.

## Chapter 3...

### Dianoia and The Heart

In Watchman Nee's model, he still has the *Soul* – the *Will*, the *Mind* and the *Emotions* – in the *Soul*, which is similar but in Watchman Nee's model, he has what we call *Communion*, *Intuition* and *Conscience*. We have replaced that word (because we want to make it clearer), that instead of *Intuition*, which is like an inner mind, we just put the word “mind” inside, for the Bible does not use the word “intuition” at all.

When we talk about spiritual intuition we wonder which part of the Bible and where are the verses. Instead, the Bible does use the words “spiritual mind” and words like in Ephesians 4:23, “... *be renewed in the spirit of your mind*”. So whichever way you look at it, whether it is the mind of your spirit or the spirit of your mind, there is something spiritual about the mind, it is the spirit part of your mind. *The spirit of your mind* – think about that. If I were to say, “that it is the skin of the durian”, then the use of the word “of” is associated with it. *The spirit of your mind*, so obviously there is a spiritual part of your mind or the mind of your spirit, whichever way the translation goes.

The word “intuition” is not used in the Bible. Instead, the word “mind”, and sometimes the word “*nous*”, is used but we are going to look at various usages. Sometimes it is the word “*phroneo*”. The word “*phroneo*” has been used quite frequently for the spiritual mind. It seems to be there, where it says, “set your mind on things above”, obviously it is not just talking about your carnal mind, trying to make your carnal mind higher. We have already established the fact from Romans 8:7 that the carnal mind is enmity against God, which means it is always set in opposition to God, and it says it cannot be renewed. So, when it talks about renewal of the mind, it is not talking about changing it at all. It is actually getting rid of it, replacing it with something new.

The new mind is the new mind of your soul which is being developed, that your spiritual mind is helping. It is very clear in Romans 8:7 that there is no way you can renew the carnal mind, you just have to consider it dead. In other words, do not entertain the thoughts of your carnal mind. Do not even try to renew it, just let the thought part: “That is not me anymore”,

reach out for another you. If you keep trying to renew that part of your mind, you are contradicting the Word and it will always be a struggle. It is just like trying to teach a pig how to observe table manners, even if it takes one hundred years, you will not succeed. Maybe a dog might be easier. Try to teach pigs table manners (how to use the fork, how to cut, put down the fork, change to use the knife) – you cannot succeed because pigs will just want to eat, without all the silverware. It is the same with your carnal mind, therefore we have replaced that word here with the word “mind” – the *Spirit Mind*.

For the word *Communion* – I have replaced it with the word *Will* because to commune with God is like worshipping God, when you talk about communion. There is a Greek word for communion which comes from the word “*koinonia*”, which means “partnership” or “fellowship”. If we use the word “communion” to be the Biblical interpretation of “*koinonia*”, it will mean a partnership with God. What other partnership can you have when, of your free will, you choose Him? You and God in partnership is communion so we have replaced *Communion* with *Will*.

We have also replaced the word *Conscience* (which is a type of inner sensing or inner consciousness). When studying the Greek word for “consciousness”, which is from the Greek word “*suneidesis*”, it has been translated as “consciousness” (an inner consciousness of right and wrong). What is that? We call that your spiritual emotion which you can trust. In Watchman Nee’s model, you could just turn the whole wheel inside and you could face any direction but, in this model, it must be synchronised – the emotion and the mind – so that the *Spirit Emotion* relates to the *Soul Emotion*, which are two different things.

#### *Where is the fruit kept?*

Now when you read, Galatians 5:22-23, it is easier to understand because when you say the fruit of the Spirit – love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faithfulness, meekness, temperance – Watchman Nee did not go much into that, but Kenneth E Hagin has a whole series on *the fruit of the Spirit* that he says the fruit of the Spirit is the fruit of your human spirit. However traditionally, it is translated (Galatians 5:22-23) as a capital “S”, which is the fruit of the Holy Spirit. The thing about it is whether it is the fruit of the Holy Spirit or the fruit of your human spirit, both are united anyway, both are related. There is obviously the fact that Jesus says, “My peace I give to you.” So, if Jesus gives a piece of His

peace to us, it is functional by itself. Where do you keep the peace of Jesus? Jesus says, “My joy I give to you.” Where do you keep the joy?

The Father God gives us the born-again experience where Romans 5:5 says “the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts”. So, the love of God is in your heart somewhere; it is not in heaven, it is not in the Holy Spirit, it is in you somewhere. Which part of you? Now it is easy to find and locate because it is all located in your *Spirit Emotion*. The *Spirit Emotion* is a part of you that feels love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faithfulness, meekness and temperance. These are the fruit of your human spirit, which comes from the Holy Spirit. We have no problem with whether it is capital “S” or small “s”. We know there is a spiritual feeling inside of us. As you begin to look at this chart, you realise that you do have a spiritual feeling that is different from your soul feeling, totally different.

#### *Where is the heart?*

Then where is the heart? Both in the spirit and in the soul. Watchman Nee says that the heart is all of the soul and the conscience, so is one-part *Spirit* and three parts *Soul*. That is in his book *The Spiritual Man – Book I*. This book is Book II because I continue from his work and finish it. Kenneth E Hagin says that the heart is just the *Spirit* and we have shown that there are contradictory verses. Sometimes the heart seems to be evil. You cannot say that the spirit is evil so Hagin’s illustration breaks down. In the end, we say that the heart is both the spirit and the soul. The general word “heart” just refers to something on your inside – your spirit and your soul.

Now, let us expand it a little bit more. Suppose that a Christian today who dies before the Rapture, his body is left behind, correct? He does not bring his body along. There are a few exceptions – Enoch, Elijah, Moses who were resurrected early. There are only three people in the Bible that we know who are now with God, spirit, soul and body.

The Apostle Paul himself says in 1 Corinthians 15 that when Christ comes again, the dead in Christ shall rise. You say, “Wait a minute, if they die in Christ, they are with Him so who is coming up?” Their physical body: the resurrected body and if you put all the scriptures together, you realise it is true. Paul says in Philippians 1:21 (when he was debating about the time when he was under death sentence and he knew in the spirit that he was going to live),

*“For to me, to live is Christ, and to die is gain”*. Then he continues telling them that he is in a struggle between to be with God or to stay behind but he knew in the spirit that his work was not finished, so he says he will stay behind. He says to die is good, to be with Christ, but he says it is needed for him to stay on because his mission and his work are not finished.

When a Christian die today, which part of him goes to heaven? His spirit and soul, correct? All of his spirit and all of his soul go to heaven. The soul is the part of his personality, so he does take his soul. His spirit and soul go back, but he does not have his body there. In heaven, right now there are saints with their physical bodies – they are the Old Testament saints. In the first resurrection, when Jesus Christ rose from the dead, it says that He led captivity captive. The Old Testament saints were raised up physically. Remember their graves were opened and they were the first resurrection, spirit, soul and body. All the Old Testament saints have got spirit, soul and body.

There is a slight difference. When you go into the spirit, if you visit heaven right now, and you meet some of the Old Testament saints, can you imagine all the Old Testament saints have got spirit, soul and body? However, if you see Paul, he only has got spirit and soul. The question is: “Can you tell in the spirit the difference when you are there?” Most people cannot because their visions are still growing. For them to see is already good enough, whether it is blurry or dimly or whatever.

To see is good enough but when you begin to move in and out of the spirit a lot, you realise there is a slight difference between the New Testament saints and the Old Testament saints in Heaven. Old Testament saints have got spirit, soul and body while New Testament saints have only got spirit and soul. Now, in the spirit world, their glorified body is almost like translucent, so you could almost see no difference between them. However, under the higher light of God, when the higher light of God shines on them, you can see the difference. As you get closer and closer into the presence of God, there is a difference that something is still missing in the New Testament saints, only their spirit and soul go to heaven.

Paul says if he dies, he would be with Christ and we know that Stephen, just before he was being stoned to death, saw the glory of God, he saw Jesus. Of course, Jesus took his spirit and his soul has to go along because his personality is still there. So, notice that the Old

Testament saints have spirit, soul and body, and they are already in heaven. They were the first resurrection. You say, “Why?” Because they had waited so long already. They had waited a long time for Christ to come, from the time of the Garden of Eden (Adam’s time).

By the way, Adam is saved. He might be the first man to bring sin in, but he is saved. He believed in the Messiah, so when you go to heaven, you will see Adam. The rumour is that he did not have a navel, because all of us were born of a woman, with the umbilical cord. When you cut the umbilical cord and the umbilical cord drops off, you have a little navel there. Adam did not have one. However, when you go to heaven, do not check everybody for a navel. You say, “Elijah, show me your navel”! Because somehow the glorified body can get rid of that. I have not checked all the Old Testament saints, so do not ask me, but they say that is the only difference about Adam and Eve, but they are our first parents and they are both saved. They did look forward to Christ and all of them have their resurrected body. However, the New Testament saints are still waiting for their body.

In a sense, we can say the hearts of the New Testament saints are already there, if the heart refers to the spirit and the soul. Now, let us see whether the Bible uses the word “heart” for spirit and soul coming out of the body. That is where we look back, and the Bible uses it in that manner. In 2 Kings, it begins to become clearer where we look at some possible stories to establish this understanding. Because this is a very new understanding, we have got to make it very clear.

Let us look at Elisha and his ministry in 2 Kings 5. We know that Gehazi pursued Naaman and he was greedy. One thing that Gehazi did not know is that Elisha saw the whole thing. When Gehazi came back, thinking that he had hidden everything, he pretended that nothing had happened. It says in 2 Kings 5:25-26, *“Now he went in and stood before his master. Elisha said to him, ‘Where did you go, Gehazi?’ And he said, ‘Your servant did not go anywhere.’ Then he said to him, ‘Did not my heart go with you when the man turned back from his chariot to meet you?’”* Now in the Amplified Bible, it says, *“Did not my spirit go with you...”* But here, it says in the actual Hebrew words “my heart”. What is Elisha trying to say? He says, “My spirit and soul were there.”

Can you see the usage of the word “heart” as referring to the inner part, the body drops off and your real man comes out? Your body is only your physical clothing. Your body is like a

glove which your spirit and soul wear. So that glove can be replaced. In other words, your real clothing in the physical world is your physical body. Your physical body is like a tabernacle. I think Peter refers to his body as that. He says, "I will soon put away my tent". He refers to the body as a tent that you live in, a temporary one waiting for the glorified body.

So, your body is the real clothing that you have but because of the fallen nature of man and you do not have the glorified body yet or the glory that covers your physical body, the physical body is naked, so human beings invented fig leaves. All of you when you get up in the morning put on your fig leaves. Your fig leaves are now very sophisticated, made from cotton, silk or rayon, or some of the new things that are coloured and designed, all those things whether they are branded fig leaves or non-branded fig leaves, all those are just leaves. Do not pay too much attention to that. Those are decorations, they are not really your clothing. You say, "What, they are not?" They are the decorations on your clothing because your clothing is your physical body. Have that mindset. So next time, take care of your real clothing.

#### *Take care of the real clothing*

People take care of the wrong clothing. They take care of the decorations on their clothing, instead of the clothing. It is just like, let us illustrate on your dress or something, and then you are just taking care of one section of your dress, pin something on it, decorating it. Maybe for some people, when they dress up, they put a pin and all those decorations on it, when there is a big tear and they are not taking care of it. You can decorate all you want, but a tear is still a tear. Some people's physical body is not in shape. They have not been taking care of the real clothing; they are taking care of their fig leaves instead. That is why every time when I get up in the morning, this is my mental thing, I say, "My tent, where my spirit and soul live, needs to shape up." That is what motivates me to do some exercise because that is my real clothing.

I make sure before I leave the house that I have a proper dress up for the body. You say, "What is a proper dress up?" You exercise, that is your real clothing. Of course, nowadays I buy clothing which I do not have to iron but it is just like in those days, long ago, sometimes I did not iron and you could tell when some parts needed ironing. The same way, some of your real clothing needs some ironing. You say, "What do I need to do"? The Bible says a little exercise profits a little (1 Timothy 4:8). This physical body has its own body-will, body-mind and body-emotion.

### *DNA, the mechanisms of life*

We are now discovering that there is a memory in the physical body. In science they discover that, especially today when they transplant parts (today people transplant parts and you can read a few test cases, not enough yet to have a scientific observation or conclusion), some people when they have a kidney transplant or a heart transplant, and before, they might not like, for example, to play tennis, but they did not know it, maybe their new heart or their new liver or their new kidney came from someone who loved to play tennis, they hate tennis, but when they get the kidney of a former tennis player, for some reason they find that they like to play tennis then people are wondering where did it come from. The only conclusion that they found is that this part of the body that was taken from someone, that person loved tennis.

Now, how did that physical body part transplant a desire into this other person? They found out that inside our DNA is locked up the mechanisms of the life that you have before because as you live your life, your DNA changes and adapts and there are some things that are located in your physical body. It does carry all those things, which is why when everyone of you were born from your father's or your mother's genetics, inside your genes you carry some leftover weaknesses of your father or mother. You carry the strengths, but you also bear the burden of the weaknesses of your forefathers, depending on how strong it is. It does not mean that you have to fall into sin; it just means you might have to do more to overcome.

Let me illustrate it from the Bible. You say, "Is this true? Can you support this with the Bible"? When Abraham told a lie about his wife, and at that time was when he went down to Egypt. God met him in Genesis 11 and 12 and then subsequently he went straight to Egypt and he told a lie about his wife for fear of his life? He had a fear of his own life and he did that again later on in his life. Isaac was not around the first time. Later on, Isaac might be a young man, but you find Isaac doing the exact same thing. Isaac also told a lie about his wife, Rebecca, and Abimelech found out and of all things, Abimelech was the same king. You know what Abimelech would say? Like father, like son. They both told the same lie. Abimelech almost got into trouble until the Lord warned him, and he said, "Why do you lie about your wife? You told me that she is your sister. Somebody could have taken her". Isaac told the same lie. He said, "Is that your wife"? He said, "No, she is my sister". Then later he found out because Isaac (if you read the story in Genesis) was fondling his wife. That is what the Bible says. He said, "Wait a minute, that is not the way a brother behaves to a sister". He

said, “She is your wife” and Isaac said, “Yes, she is”. So, Abimelech said, “Why didn’t you tell me?”

Now, the Bible records that. Where did that come from? Genetics. Somehow, we pass on the genes, positive or negative. There are more scriptures that show this too. In 2 Timothy 1:5 – Paul says to Timothy (and this is the positive side), “The faith that was in your grandmother Lois and your mother Eunice is also in you”. Three generations of faith. That is the positive side. Just as they can pass down the bad thing, they can also pass down the good thing.

We are talking about there being a mind in your body, an emotion in your body and a will in your body, either a weakness or a strength in these three areas, in your *Body-Will*, *Body-Emotion* and *Body-Mind*. Where is it located? It is located in every strand of DNA.

Now, let me go to the scientific side. We know that the day is coming, scientifically, when you can take a person’s DNA and examine it and you can tell whether the person is, what I call, has the propensity towards a weak heart, a weak lung or a weak gene. Nowadays, they know that there are some sicknesses caused by genetics. That is why there is no cure at the moment because it is inside every strand of DNA – from the hair cell to the brain cell to the skin cell. To heal the person, you need to be able to heal the genes in the DNA. We will have three wonderful miracles that God has shown but is actually more than three. Those are only the three that God showed. There are many miracles and especially God talks about DNA healing.

Sometimes, we will have one of the most dramatic miracles that will be on television because we saw that in a vision. It will be the healing of a dwarf and we will do the healing differently. Instead of people getting healed and then they testify, because we know what God wants to do in advance, we will let the people testify about their sickness first. Why? We are so sure that they are going to be healed because God showed us. We are working on a different premise now. We are working with Phanuel, Rovashael, Uccatucmael, Zerubbabel and Joshua and they will be present in the miracle service and we know they will tell us what they want to do. Already some things are happening in the air. I know some miracles that are coming forth so instead of waiting until the miracle service ends, we let them testify about their sickness first. They will say how long they have been sick, they were born a dwarf, here

is my mother, here is my grandmother, here is my father, and they confirm that this sickness is real. Everyone will look and have no doubt that the person really has that condition then we will pray and let the Lord do the miracle. In one of the visions on the healing of the dwarf, that will be one of the signs and wonders that are coming. Never before in recorded history.

So, we are talking about some things that are inside the DNA – the mind, the emotion and the will are locked inside the DNA. There is no condemnation in this. For example, if you have a propensity to weakness of sugar level, weakness of the heart, and the scientist might say, “There is a 90% to 99% chance of you developing a heart problem from the genetics”. The day is coming when they look at your genes, they tell you there will be weaknesses. That is why today they are afraid that people will start doing designer genes, might manipulate the genes, but do not trust them because our knowledge of genetics, even though it is a lot, when we have it, it is like one drop in the ocean. When you manipulate one gene, you do not know whether other things will be affected. So, do not let human beings do it. Instead, let God do it, let the Creator do it.

This message is for the next ten, twenty, thirty years because people are going to hear this message. And who knows, the development of genetics, how fast it develops. Nowadays they have invented tools to manipulate genes, splicing tools and all that. It is getting more and more into dangerous territory. All they need is permission to do it and they start experimenting. There have been a lot of illegal experimentations. In fact, when Stalin was ruler over Russia, he tried to create an army of chimpanzee humans, mixing human genes with chimpanzees to try to produce an army of just some sub-species he could use. Of course, if you read the story, it is a horrifying story. Thank God, they did not have the technology like today’s.

Today, as you all know, they have already cloned sheep, cloned dogs and all that. That is why I say the technology is still in its infancy because all this has got is a lot of sickness and disease. Cloning produces weakness. They say, “*Oh*, we manipulate this and that”. They might heal you of your weakness of heart and make your heart super-strong, but added to that, you might grow a tail, a lizard’s tail or something like that. Who knows, your ears might be as big as a bull. You might have one cured, but you have got other side effects. They do not know what they are playing with some of those things. We only need God to come in.

However, God can heal your genes but until God brings DNA healing to your genes, if the scientist says, “Well, 90% of the time you will most probably die of your heart sickness because this is in your genetics”, you know what you have to do? All you have to do if you are born with the weakness of a weak gene in your heart is to exercise your heart more by having, you know, those exercises that really pump on your heart and then you eat proper foods that are good for your heart. Then by doing that, even though you have got a weak gene physically, you might live longer than someone who does not take care of his life who has a good gene for his heart. An inherited weakness need not be an excuse for sin. You just have to know what your weakness is, but knowledge is important. If you know, for example, nowadays they discover a weakness for alcohol in your parents and all those things, and if you know those are your weaknesses, you just have to change your lifestyle and bring your lifestyle, enhance your lifestyle a little bit different from another person’s, so that it compensates for the weakness.

#### *Inherited weaknesses and strengths*

Just as you can inherit weaknesses in the spirit, weaknesses in the soul, you can also inherit strengths. No human being can excuse himself and say “I am sinful because of my genes. My grandparents are sinful like that, so I am sinful” and excuse himself. We can only agree with you, yes, you inherit a weakness in that area, but knowledge should help you compensate. This is where this teaching is important because for too long Christianity has denied the reality of this thing, when it is staring them in the face. Right? I have given you scriptures from Genesis, given you the scripture (the positive side) about Timothy inheriting the good genes from his grandmother and his mother, and now is in him, which Paul recognises.

Then when King David was told after he fell into sin with Bathsheba: “From now on, in your family, these things are going to happen”. Immediately after the fall of David, although God forgave his sin, the baby still died. However, you notice something about King Solomon. He had a weakness for women. Did you notice that? It is in your Bible. It is obvious that someone who needs 1,000 wives and concubines has a weakness for women! You say some of them were political marriages. Okay, that might give you 50 but it still does not account for the other 950. Obviously, King Solomon had a weakness for women. Where did he get that gene from? Even when God healed as best as He could, there was a propensity on that

side – a weakness – he should have watched himself more. Then after that, you have the record of David’s children sinning against each other.

Now, part of those sins was not genetic. Part of those sins was a whole host of demons released and when the demons were released in that area, it created more sin in that area because demons began to be at work. In fact, Absalom and all those things were inspired by demons. What they should have done is to immediately perhaps fast and pray. I know David fasted and prayed, but I do not know whether his children fasted and prayed. If they had fasted and prayed, it would have solved a lot of problems. As you all know, it can cancel demonic activity.

Let us talk about the most horrible man in the Bible, Ahab. After taking over the vineyard of his neighbour (Naboth’s vineyard), with plotting from Jezebel (the story is in 1 Kings), Elijah came to him and pronounced judgment. The moment he pronounced judgement, of all things, Ahab repented. Ahab fasted. Then you know what Elijah said? He said, “The judgment will not fall in your life, it will fall in your children’s lives”. Ahab said, “What”? Elijah pushed it back to the fourth generation. If his children had fasted and prayed, asked for forgiveness, it would be pushed to the grandchildren. If the grandchildren had fasted and prayed, it would be pushed to the great-grandchildren. If the great-grandchildren had fasted and prayed, it would have been pushed back no more. Four generations. That would have been the key.

If you understand the key of genetics in the natural, you can have the cure, which means that if your grandfather has a weakness for a certain thing, a certain sin, and you are the third generation down, it might affect only one more generation. This is the mercy of God. Righteousness affects a thousand generations and more, but sin only affects four generations. Some people say, “Unfair”! Wait, who are you calling “unfair”? I have a theory for it. I call it *The Speed of Righteousness versus the Speed of Sin*. It is only unfair if the principle works for only the negative and not the positive. When someone jumps from the roof and dies, you do not complain against the law of gravity. You complain why people did not understand the law of gravity, or rather, they understood, and they wanted to die.

Whenever we sin, let us say when an egg drops, it splatters and spreads across the ground, depends on how far it fell down from and how much material is enough for it to spread. A

meteorite, the bigger it is, the more dangerous it is, can create a big hole. What we cannot see is every act spreads across geography and time. Time is just another dimension. The moment it is done, it spreads. You cannot even stop it, but the goodness of God is He holds back the negative thing to spread to only four generations. He says righteousness is for a thousand generations. He shows His mercy to those who love Him for a thousand generations.

So surely in your genes, someone behind in your ancestry loved the Lord, even if it was 500 years ago, it is still growing strong because it is not a thousand years yet. So, you have got strengths and weaknesses piled up and if your grandfather had a certain sin and you are the third generation, there is only one more generation. If in your generation you sort of seek God and ask God to free you from the bondages of those sins of the forefathers, of course in Christ's blood, sometimes you never asked, also it disappears. Then if your children come to know Christ, hallelujah, that is the end of it. You produce new genetics, that from you and your children who know the Lord, there is some new genetics that flows (based on Christ) and they will no more inherit your grandfather's weaknesses because it stops at four generations.

#### *The Speed of Righteousness vs the Speed of Sin*

Understand that in the body realm – *Body-Will, Body-Emotion* and *Body-Mind* – only affects four generations in the negative. The speed of righteousness is faster than the speed of sin. Righteousness – the moment you do one act for God, one loving act it affects one thousand generations and more. The blessing goes down the line into your genes, into the seed of your body, that spreads to the generations to come. That is the goodness of God so now when you understand it, you will not shout “Unfair”! anymore. You have already shouted “I understand”, that is all you can shout. Then the knowledge will work on your behalf. This teaching on the body side is for understanding this aspect of *The Speed of Righteousness versus the Speed of Sin*.

If you want to understand who you are and where you are, you must understand your parents, your grandparents and your great-grandparents in what they went through. If they were a very fortitude people, you will probably inherit something there, but watch out also for their weaknesses because you might have a weakness or a propensity for that, that you might have to compensate. For example, if your grandfather was overweight, your father was overweight,

you obviously will have an overweight gene. They were not disciplined in their eating, so you struggle with that, but you just have to compensate. You say, “How to compensate”? Well, for instance we regularly have a 40-day fast every year. At first, it is difficult, but we push through then it becomes easier. This is the good news.

So, we have touched on this area of genetics, that is very important to understand who you are because you all look like your parents. Sometimes it skips a generation, you might look like your grandfather, when he was young of course. You have inherited quite a lot of things down the line but now that you are born again, there are things that are changed.

So, this is your heart, your spirit and your soul. That is the difference between our chart and Watchman Nee’s chart. We have modernised it, we have adapted it to the Bible. Instead of *Communion*, we have *Spirit-Will*; instead of *Conscience*, we have *Spirit-Emotion*; and then *Spirit-Mind*. Now, I have given you the story of Elisha who says to Gehazi “My heart follows you” – he is saying “My spirit travels”.

#### *The control centre*

As we look at this chart, the next thing we want to do, when you have got this part plus this part, you have got six parts, correct? How do you control it? You cannot have six drivers. How is the heart controlled? That is important to us. What drives the heart, since the heart is the spirit and the soul? We know that definitely the control centre lies in the spirit, but you might have to deal with all these things because these are all like they are hitched to the wagon. You might say that the spirit is the car and the soul is the trailer which the car pulls along but, yet you must hitch it properly.

In Australia, you can rent a trailer from most petrol stations. If your car has the attachment, you attach it to your car, and then there is also an electrical part that you have to join. It is a simple connection that you plug in, so that when you brake, the trailer lights also light up, otherwise at night people cannot see your trailer, or when it is dim light when we have winter (in winter our daylight hours are very short, it gets dark so that at 4 o’clock is like 6 o’clock). So, when you are pulling a trailer, we need to see your lights. You need to hitch it properly, connect it properly. You have a car power plug that is also especially made for trailers. You just plug it in, and when you press your brake lights, you will have your brake lights in your

car and the trailer, and at night, everyone can see you. So, when you hitch, you also must hitch things properly so that everything works right.

It is just like the spirit is the king, the soul is like the prime minister to the king, and your body is like the slave, the servant. You have got to have a proper relationship within the spirit and the soul. There must be some way in which you can bring it altogether, your whole heart together. That is the secret found in the words of Jesus when He talks about the heart, the mind and the spirit.

This is what is ideal – your spirit, soul and body – you’ve got one *Spirit-Will* controlling all; one *Spirit-Emotion* controlling all; Christ at the centre; one *Spirit-Mind* controlling all. This is the ideal that we are to return to, so that your will functions like one will, your emotion functions like one emotion, your mind functions like one mind.

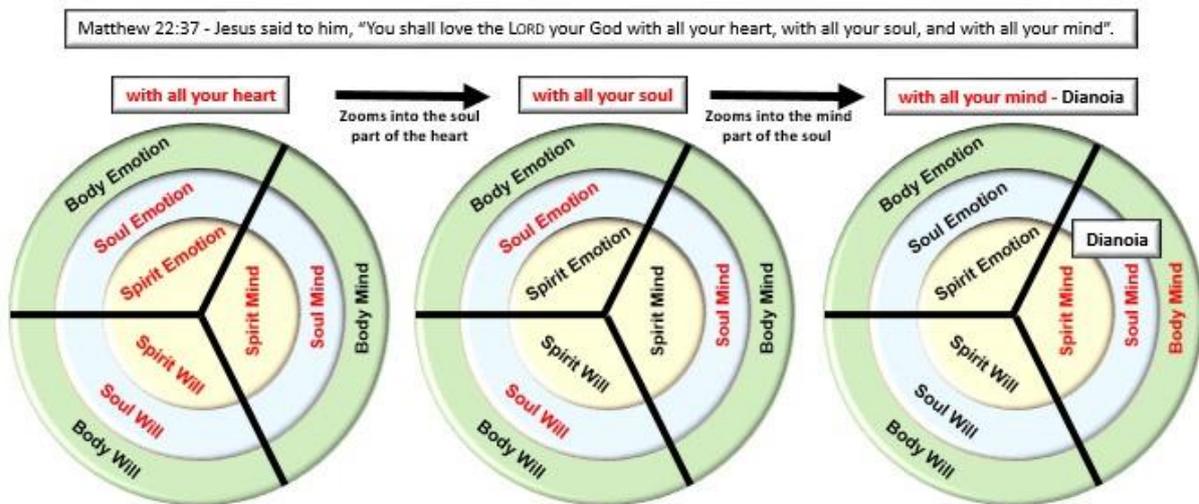


Diagram 1

In Matthew 22:37-40 – “Jesus said to him, ‘You shall love the LORD your God with all your heart, with all your soul, and with all your mind.’ This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like it: ‘You shall love your neighbor as yourself.’ On these two commandments hang all the Law and the Prophets”. If you understand these two commandments, you’ll understand all the Old Testament laws and the Prophets – very powerful laws.

### *The three temptations*

If the heart is all of the spirit and the soul, isn’t it redundant for Jesus to repeat it? Shouldn’t Jesus have said: ‘Love the LORD your God with all your heart.’? Finished, correct? Because

the heart includes the soul, the heart includes the mind, the heart includes all your inner being. Good question. Why did Jesus do the repetition? Because Jesus, as you know, when He did something (and the Bible records it), in His one act He gave a solution and a formula.

Let me give a clue for that. Remember, at the end of Jesus' 40 days of temptation, we are not told the details of all the temptations of the 40 days. However, the Bible records in Matthew 4 and Luke 4 three temptations that took place after the 40 days. So, on top of the 40 days, after the 40 days were over, He was actually very hungry, He had the last three temptations thrown in and the last three were the only ones recorded. You think in 40 days that Jesus only had three temptations? No, in those 40 days there were all kinds of things He was tempted with but at the end of it, the last three were recorded. Why only record the last three? Because these three are significant and are a summary.

One of the temptations is: If you are the Son of God, turn these stones into bread. Jesus said, *"Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceeds from the mouth of God"*. The order is slightly different from Luke's, but we just quote the temptations anyway.

The second temptation is where Satan showed Him all the kingdoms of the world and all the glory thereof and he said these were handed to him. Of course, they were handed to him from Adam; Satan he actually stole them. That is the one recorded in Luke 4 where he used the word "handed". He said, "All these things I will give You if You will fall down and worship me". Now, Matthew puts that as last, Luke puts that as second. Then Jesus said, *"You shall worship the LORD your God, and Him only you shall serve"*. That was His answer.

Then Satan took Jesus to the pinnacle of the temple (which has to be a real act) and this time Satan quoted the Bible (he quoted Psalm 91). He said, "It is written: Cast Yourself down and He shall send His angels to carry you" but he misquoted the Bible. "Throwing yourself down" is not in the Bible, because Psalm 91 says the angels shall, of course, take care of you, but it does not ask you to throw yourself down. He was changing it a bit, misquoted the Bible. Then Jesus said, *"You shall not tempt the LORD your God"*.

In the three temptations, we have in that order – the lust of the flesh (your own physical needs), the lust of the eyes (which is all the kingdoms of the world), and the pride of life – the

summary is found in 1 John 2:16 on the three things. All temptations are summarised in these three: they either test the lust of the flesh, test the lust of the eyes, or test the pride of life in you. However, in Jesus' singular answer, He gives the key and solution for all three. The cure for the lust of the flesh is to meditate on the Word day and night. *"Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceeds from the mouth of God"*. So, you fast and pray, and the Word becomes your life more than the physical world and you live your life based on the Word. When the Word becomes flesh in you, your fleshly appetites are actually changed. Inside His singular answer, He gives the cure.

Then the lust of the eyes, where He was tempted with all the kingdoms of the world and their glory, Jesus said, *"You shall worship the LORD your God, and Him only you shall serve"*. The cure for the lust of the eyes, the things that pull your attention, is to worship. If you were a worshipper of God, you could be surrounded by greedy people and it will not touch you. This is because when you worship, you have eyes only for God. When you worship, everything in the world becomes valueless. When you are a worshipper of God, you do not care whether you live in an attap hut or you live in a 5-room mansion, because a mansion without worship versus a little wooden house with coconut leaves for its roof is much better than that gold-gilded house. For when you worship God, you see God. Everything compared to God is no more beautiful, for He is the lily of the valley, the bright and morning star, the fairest of ten thousand. When you are a true worshipper, only Jesus has value, and anything with Jesus inside has value, anything without Jesus, even a million dollars, is not worth it. Jesus is worth more than that. Jesus gives the cure for the lust of the eyes in His singular answer. That is who Jesus is. How great is our Master and Lord? In His simple answer, He gives the cure.

When He was tempted with pride, the cure was: *"You shall not tempt the LORD your God"*. In other words, you shall not initiate anything that God never initiated. The cure for pride is do not tempt God. Be a servant and let God lead. You see, pride makes you want to lead, but being a servant allows God to lead. You learn not to do anything unless the Lord says. That cures your pride. You will do nothing until the Lord says something, even if you have the ability to do it. Like King David had the ability to build God a house. He did not do it because God said it was not for him to do. So, he did not tempt the Lord by trying to build it. He submitted. *"Thank You, Lord, I will not do it"*. It is important to only do what the Lord says to do and not to do what He says not to do.

### *Tempting the Lord*

There was one time in the Bible when they tempted the Lord and that was when God told them to go into the land of Canaan. This is found in Numbers. They had reached the shore, they could see Canaan and God said, “Go and conquer” but the 10 spies reported that there were giants in the land. God said go; they said they did not want to go. Then when they said they did not want to go and they complained, God said, “I will use your words to judge you”. God said amen to their words. They said they would die in the wilderness, God said, “Let it be so according to your words”. Then when they were judged with the judgment that they would die in the wilderness (if you read the story in Numbers, it says do not go), God said, “That is it, no more; your chance to go is gone, finished”. Then they said, “*Oh* no, no, we are going to die, we had better go”. They took a group of people and they went and God said that tempted Him.

What is tempting the Lord? Tempting the Lord is: Every time you must consult God, God might say yes to something, but you fail to obey, and then the next day God says no, then you should not. It is a day by day thing. Do not depend on what God says yesterday because yesterday was yesterday, “You didn’t believe Me yesterday” and today the Lord might say, “Your opportunity is gone, you have got to wait for the next turn”. You must listen to the Lord. “*You shall not tempt the LORD your God*”. In other words, listen. Let Him lead. You do not lead, let Him lead.

In Jesus’ simple answer, He gives the cure for the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life.

### *Loving God*

In this little story that He has, when Jesus says, “*You shall love the LORD your God with all your heart, with all your soul, and with all your mind*”, He gives the key on how to bring them into one. Even though it looks like redundancy, He gives the key, notice the key that He gives. Of course, love is the word “*agape*”, but soul is the word “*psuche*”. You notice, first He talks about the heart, then in the heart is the spirit and the soul, correct? Then He zooms into the soul part of the heart. You say, “Why didn’t He start from the spirit part”? Because when you start loving God, your soul must choose Him for the spirit to work. This world is controlled by the soul. Before we were born again, our spirits were dead. The soul must

choose Him – *with all your soul* – and your soul must keep choosing Him. In your soul is your emotion, your intellect, your mind, correct? Then He zooms into a part of your soul called your mind, but they use a special word for that and it is the word “*dianoia*”. “*Dianoia*” is a Greek word, it is the most unusual word for the mind. It is not the normal word because 99% of the time in Greek philosophy and in all normal usage, they use the word “*nous*” which is a generic word for “mind”.

Why is it that when they record Jesus’ words, Jesus did not speak in Greek, He probably spoke Aramaic, but the records were passed down in Greek because Greek was the common language of those times. In the end, it got recorded into the official language. They have got so many, as you know, we have got *Mind of Christ – Series I, Series II and Series III*. There are so many Greek words for “mind”. Why choose “*dianoia*”? Because *dianoia* is the key to your heart. You see, Jesus zooms in, zooms in, zooms in, the key to your whole heart.

#### *Only one control*

It is just like you can have the trailer (which is your soul) and you plug it in all properly, you can have the car that pulls the trailer (which is your spirit), you still have got only one steering wheel. I am sure when you buy a car, you do not expect to see a car with two steering wheels. You buy a car with one steering wheel. You do not want a car with two steering wheels where they can steer opposite sides and the car can come apart. Most normal cars have one steering wheel because the steering wheel controls the whole car. It zooms right into one steering wheel.

Same as in an airplane, airplanes can be huge, you do not want to have three or four control centres for the plane. There is only one where the pilot is, right in front of the plane. You do not want to have a secondary system at the back where somebody goes and plays with it. There is only one control centre, the steering wheel of the plane. Nowadays they have got a joystick too, but the steering wheel is the old way. Have you been on a plane with a steering wheel? Yes, I used to ride on such a plane, single-propeller plane, four passengers. The son of one of our intercessors, long ago, he was a pilot and he took us there. He showed me how the plane works. One day, if I have the time, I would love to get a pilot’s license just for fun. What you have to do is just spent about three thousand hours or something like that and it will be fun to fly a plane, fun to jump off a plane too, on a parachute of course.

In a car, you have got left and right, correct? In a plane, you have got up and down. The interesting thing is that when you pull up the steering wheel, the plane goes up; you push down, the nose goes down but there is only one control, not two. They may have many instruments, but one main control. Same way, inside our heart, our spirit, soul and body, the one control centre is very important to everything, it is the *dianoia*.

### *Different strengths*

From Matthew 22, we go down to Mark 12:30, “*And you shall love the LORD your God with all your heart, with all your soul, with all your mind...*”. Again, out of over 90% usage of the word “*nous*”, they choose the word “*dianoia*”. You cannot miss it; it is so exceptional. It is like one of the Greek words rarely used and they choose that one to translate what Jesus says – “*dianoia*”. But Mark adds one more “*... and with all your strength*” However, the word “strength” has many Greek words but here they choose the word “*ischus*”. *Ischus* is related to prayer strength, an energising that can come from God. The word “strength” can be like from the word “*energeias*” which means energy. You find that in Ephesians 1 & 2 – it talks about the devil’s energising versus God’s energising. So, there are different energising. It would have been a word that could be used either way, but they use “*ischus*” which means it is not just the physical strength of your body; it is relying on inner strength, something else. The strength of your body is in your spirit.

Well, for consistency so that you know we are not just looking at the word shallowly, but we really examine its usage. Let us look at Luke also. Luke 10:27 – “*So he answered and said, ‘You shall love the LORD your God with all your heart, with all your soul, with all your strength (again consistent, they use the word “ischus”), and with all your mind, ’...*”. Again, of all the Greek words, they choose the least commonly used one: “*dianoia*”.

Three times, three gospels, cannot miss. When you look for the word “*dianoia*” and you look at the way it is used, you find in Luke 1:51, “*dianoia*” is translated as “imagination of your heart”. Look at Luke 1:51, “*He has shown strength with His arm; He has scattered the proud in the imagination of their hearts*”. This is the saying, I believe, by Simeon and he says “the imagination of their hearts” or “the *dianoia* of their hearts”.

It looks like the *dianoia* is the control centre of your heart (the steering wheel) in which the consciousness of your soul, the consciousness of your body and the consciousness of your spirit, all gather in a singular control place – your *dianoia*. You really need to understand your *dianoia*, which means your imagination. Your imagination is a meeting place between your spirit, your soul and your body. You thought your imagination is just your imagination.

### *Controlling the natural world*

Do you know how the Tibetan monks control their body temperature? If you look at the internet, you find that some scientists have gone to measure a group of Tibetan monks who wear very thin clothes in sub-zero temperature in Tibet and on top of that, they sweat. While most people die of cold or hypothermia, they survive. But it is no ordinary thing and these monks tell the scientists that they put all kinds of things on them to examine how they stay overnight in a place that is snowing and they survive and do not die of hypothermia. For many years, they train themselves and they use their imagination where they will meditate on just a candle, a flame on their inside, all they do is to see a fire on the inside. When they see a fire on the inside, through the years their body responds to their thoughts. At their thought level, which is their imagination part (the *dianoia* part), their body temperature can be raised.

Now, some hypnotism is by demons, but some hypnotism is purely from the soul. A hypnotised person when told that a body part of his is burning, the body actually produces the symptom of burning. It has been documented. When people in a hypnotised state are told that a certain part of their body is burning, their body immune system kicks up their immune system which is an involuntary part of their body and produces a symptom of reaction to burning. You know how your skin will sweat and then you have this liquid that forms. How is it possible? It is a metaphysical area, almost in the area of mind over matter, but is more “*dianoia*” (the Bible calls it).

In the corridors of the imagination, let me tell you the secrets of some of all these philosophers’ mistakes, how they slow their heart down, how they do all these things. They might take many years, but you know, all of them have got only one key: the key that is in the Bible all the time. Not yet the keys of the kingdom, just the key to controlling their body. Keys of the kingdom is Jesus. You see, sometimes people who do not know the Lord discover some secret laws to their body, but they might not classify it. All truths can be found

in the Bible, even those that Christians neglect. The true art of controlling your body is your imagination. If you are fat, you do not have to tell yourself: “I am thin, I am thin, I am thin”. If you keep saying “I am thin, I am thin, I am thin”, but inside you see a big fellow, your confession will not work. You say, “Does God use our imagination”? Of course, He does. Why do you think God tells Abraham, “Your children will be as the dust of the earth, or your children will be as many as the stars of the heaven”? Why do you think God uses these things? Just for allegory? No, He was dealing with Abraham’s imagination.

If you live in the place where Abraham lived, every day you live in a tent, you have got to wash your feet because it is dusty. Every time he washed his feet, he said, “They are all my children”. Then at night he looked up, he could only see open sky, many times cloudless, so he saw the stars and he said, “These are all my children”. Abraham was about seventy-five years old when he came out from the land of Ur. He was ninety-nine years old when God told him that he would have a child next year and he was one hundred years old when he had a child, which means that for twenty-five years or less, Abraham meditated on imagination. You know how old Abraham was when he changed his name? He was ninety-nine years old. So, when he changed his name, it was a confession, correct? Instead of Abram, He called him Abraham, and Sarai became Sarah.

So, if one year of confession, and many people say confession is possession, they only see that part, but they do not realise confession is only 1/25th or 1/20th. Let us take away some years before God showed him about the sand and the stars. Okay, take five years for easy counting. At least twenty years, actually it is more than twenty years, but for easy counting we will say twenty. The ratio of visualising to confession is 20:1. Twenty years of visualising, one year of confession, that is it. Now, those things alone do not work, you still need God. I am not saying those things are special by itself. They are part of the human nature of things. You still need God to be in the picture. However, those things are powerful by themselves.

All these mystics, yoga, or all these people who slow down their heartbeats, they use only one trick: the imagination. They either visualise a still river or something peaceful, whatever. This is the control centre of your body, of your soul and of your spirit, your *dianoia* (the imagination).

### *A greater understanding*

Why is it that when “*dianoia*” is so seldom used as a Greek word for the word “mind” that you have, besides that area, Ephesians 1:18 (a verse that most of you know, Paul’s prayer for the Ephesians), “*the eyes of your understanding being enlightened; that you may know what is the hope of His calling, what are the riches of the glory of His inheritance in the saints,*” – the eyes of your *dianoia*, plus greater understanding.

“*Dianoia*” has been translated as “imagination” in Luke 1:51, translated as “mind” in those three verses which we quoted (*You shall love the LORD your God with all your mind*), translated as “understanding” in Ephesians 1:18. One Greek word translated into so many English words. You know why, because they cannot translate it, they cannot bring the fullness of the meaning. The root word of “*dianoia*” is the word “*nous*” + “*dia*” – “*dia*” in Greek is, like this is “*epi*” (upon), this is “*eso*” (inside), this is “*hupo*” (under) in Greek. The Greek preposition “*dia*” means, like pretend there is a hole and I go inside, and my hand comes out of the other side, that is “*dia*” (see through) – “*dia*” means right through the spirit, soul and body. All three parts: spirit, soul and body – the steering wheel.

The steering wheel for your heart is now related back to the spirit man. Remember, do not take this lightly. The Buddhist monks spent five to ten years just visualising part of it. You can read about it in the internet because all this is now common knowledge. They did a scientific study on that. They put the probes all over them. Those guys were not playing around with their imagination. It is their profession to be monks and for them it is a survival because if they do not visualise properly, the next day you bury a frozen monk. We, Christians, take things lightly. You learn about “*dianoia*”, you say “*ya, ya, I know it,*” but you never use it, never practice it. It is not just what you say, but what you see.

Don’t you think the devil use *dianoia* against Eve? Because he said, “This is good for you” and when she saw, it entered her *dianoia*. Jacob, he used the *dianoia* with the spotted and speckled sheep however it is the sheep that looked at the thing. Sheep also have *dianoia*. He found a way to get into the *dianoia* of the sheep. You know why, he only did it when the sheep were mating, not at any other time, when the sheep were most focused, and all their energies were out, after all, animals live only for that. The sexual drive is the number one drive for all the animal kingdom, survival to reproduce. So, the angel showed him how to do

it. Only when the sheep were mating, not at any other time. So, while the sheep were mating they were focused.

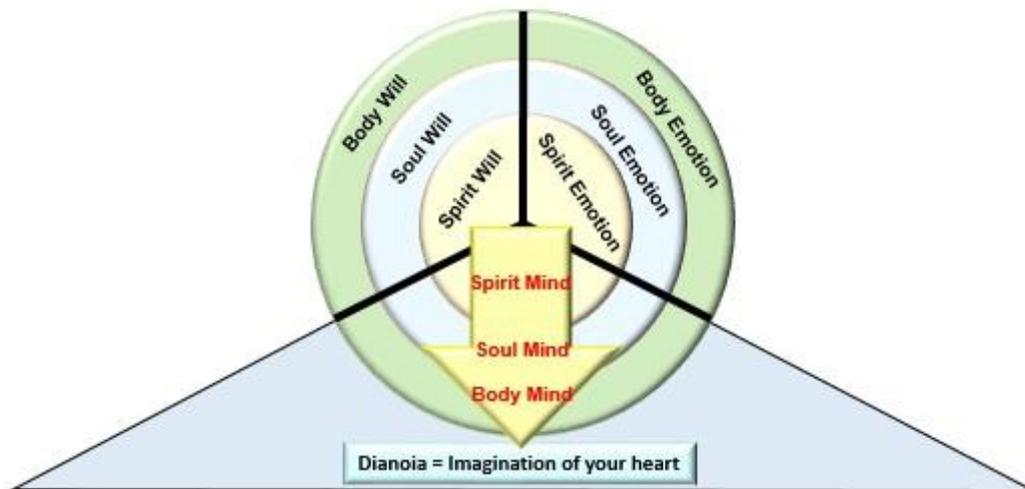
Whenever the animals were mating, he put this black/white, black/white, black/white thing in front of them. Even animals get hypnotised (whatever you call that). It enters into their *dianoia* and that affects them. Plus, the other fact is Jacob himself could have been visualising because he himself saw black/white, black/white, black/white, then looked at the white sheep, black/white, black/white, black/white, the sheep also went black and white. So, there are all kinds of *dianoia* being tapped on. You all remember the story, right? This is from Genesis (the story of Jacob, a strange story). Don't you think it is a very odd place to put in the Bible? It does not even look spiritual. Jacob was playing with strips of poplar leaves while the animals were doing that, what Bible verse is that? It is now in the Bible, it has become "Thus says the Lord". We just need to classify and understand it.

*An important principle of visualising*

*Dianoia* – a very important principle of visualising what you see, and I am looking at Ephesians 1:18, which many of you are not looking at it correctly. What did it say in Ephesians 1:18? The eyes of your *dianoia*. Now, let us be consistent. Luke 1:51 translates "*dianoia*" as "imagination". Let us throw in the word "imagination" temporarily here to bring the other nuance of meaning. So, he says, "*the eyes of your understanding (the eyes of your imagination) being enlightened; that you may know what is the hope of His calling, what are the riches of the glory of His inheritance in the saints, (verse 19) and what is the exceeding greatness of His power toward us who believe...*". When your imagination is enlightened, what happens? You will imagine more. Think about it.

If God gives more light to your imagination of what you hope for – *the hope of His calling; the riches of the glory of His inheritance*, you know what God is doing? He is just showing you more pictures. Why? You thought that God just push a white bulb, then you see light – white, white, white, more light, white, white. Why do I just want to shine a bright white light into your imagination so that you get blinded? When God gives light to your imagination, your imagination can see the pictures that are true. And here is the thing: It is so powerful that you must make sure only the true pictures are better, and God wants you to see the true things, so that you keep seeing them.

Why is it that when the Holy Spirit comes down and pours out upon all flesh, He says young men shall see visions, old men shall dream dreams? Aren't those very visual? Why does God show visions? Because visions are the seeds of the future planted into the womb of your imagination. One day, it will give birth if you will hold on to it without doubt and fear.



**Dianoia:-**

- Your imagination is a meeting place between your spirit, your soul and your body.
- The true art of controlling your body is your imagination.
- It is an important principle of visualizing.
- Our imagination must look unto Jesus and we must stir up, gird up the loins of our mind.

Diagram 2

By the way, the word “*dianoia*” has been used in a sense like a womb. 1 Peter 1:13, “*Therefore gird up the loins of your mind (dianoia)...*”. Now, we all know the word “loins” talks about reproductive organs. So, he is talking about girding up the reproduction in your mind, to translate it in a very blunt, brutal, crude way so that you cannot miss the translation. But that is the word “loins” in the Greek usage. Your loins are where your genitals are. Your loins are your reproductive capability. He used it for your mind. You say, “*Wah, I didn't know I have got genitals in my mind*”. No, the reproductive part of your mind, which is your imagination.

Think about it. People have made billions of dollars based on their imagination. How much does Mickey Mouse copyright cost? Mickey Mouse only exists in the imagination. Or the cartoon, Homer Simpson. That is not a real person, but that TV series has lasted longer than human TV actors. Bugs Bunny or that old Tom & Jerry cartoon. These are all imaginations. *Hey*, they are making millions of dollars more than you earn working as a clerk. These are the products of someone's imagination. Every building you see around here has been borne out of someone's imagination. Your imagination is worth lots of money. Ideas, concepts, the womb of your mind (that is the way the Bible uses it).

### *Power of the new covenant*

In Hebrews 8:10 and Hebrews 10:16 God says about the new covenant. He talks about the power of this new covenant and how different it will be. That is the difference between the old covenant and the new covenant, the power of God in our *dianoia*. Because when this verse reads this way in Hebrews 8:10, “*For this is the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel after those days, says the LORD: I will put My laws in their mind...*”, guess what, of all the hundreds of Greek words and all the most commonly used words for “mind”, they use the word “*dianoia*”. They never missed a bit when it comes to detailed things. God is saying, “I will put My laws in their imagination” if you take Luke 1:51 translation.

Now, what happens when God puts His laws in your imagination? Your imagination will now see the laws and not just hear the laws or think the laws. Can you see that? How do I imagine the law? It has to be a picture somewhere. It is not just a line and letter. Before that, you see “*Thou shalt not...*” and it is a sentence, but now you *see* something, something in your imagination that makes you want to be the law, want to follow the law. He makes your imagination enjoy the things of the law by seeing the pictures.

Which is why nowadays, look at how much billions of dollars the entertainment industries have used it. Why are the actors and actresses paid more than the policemen? After all, they only entertain. The policemen are at the risk of their lives all the time. Of course, some actors and actresses might be at the risk of their lives when they are doing those dangerous stunts, but they do not, they employ stunt people. They are so highly paid by millions of dollars whereas the policemen might get shot and die and do not go home that day. Because these are what captured people’s imaginations. Think about it, when you sit down in a movie theatre or sit down to watch something it is all an imagined story. Yet when you watch a good movie for 2½ hours, you come out still stunned because you have got to come back to reality. You have entered a different world. Well, your imagination is a powerful part.

God knows about it and He says in this new covenant, He will do something which He never did in the Old Testament. He will work in people’s imaginations. He says, “I will put My laws in their *dianoia*”. So, then it begins. In Hebrews 10:16, “*This is the covenant that I will make with them after those days, says the LORD: I will put My laws into their hearts, and in their minds (dianoia)...*”. Again, He repeats it. Twice He repeats it. Always emphasising the

*dianoia*. If you want to be well, you must see yourself well. Let the Holy Spirit paint the picture.

Finally, let us look at Hebrews 12 when we talk about looking unto Jesus and following after Him. It says in verses 1 & 2: “*Therefore we also, since we are surrounded by so great a cloud of witnesses, let us lay aside every weight, and the sin which so easily ensnares us, and let us run with endurance the race that is set before us, looking unto Jesus, the author and finisher of our faith...*”. Do you know you are looking unto Jesus? Our imagination must look unto Jesus and we must stir up, gird up the loins of our mind.

Peter tells us (2 Peter 3:1) – “*Beloved, I now write to you this second epistle in both of which I stir up your pure minds (dianoia)...*”. There is purity in your *dianoia* and all those things. 1 John 5:20 – “*And we know that the Son of God has come and has given us an understanding (the Greek says a *dianoia*), that we may know Him who is true...*”. He has given us a new imagination. That is 1 John 5:20. The word “understanding” is the word “*dianoia*”. This is the New Testament. He has brought us into visions and dreams.

#### *The truth of the Word of God*

So today as some of you begin to see angels in the corridors of your imagination, see inner visions, hold on to them, they will change your life. Seeing visions and pictures of your future – the question I ask you: If the Buddhist monks could hold on to just a simple thing like a fire (a picture of a fire) for 5 to 10 years training their *dianoia* just to survive in a cold climate, how much more you who have the Word of God and the truth of God, that you must see the things of God and capture them in the heart of your imagination and let it be that which moves you all the time until it is birthed forth from within? So, the understanding comes down to where is the control centre of your heart, your imagination.

Jesus, in such simplicity, says: “*You shall love the LORD your God with all your heart, (then He zooms in) with all your soul, (then He zooms in) and with all your mind (dianoia – the connection point between all)*”. Of course, your soul is the ego and the eye sense (sense of the eye), and that sense is what makes you different from another person. Your soul does go back to heaven with you and this life is for the saving of the soul. Jesus says, “If one soul is saved, angels rejoice”. Jesus says, “What good is it for you to gain the whole world but lose your

own soul”? The soul is so valuable, it is the power of creative energy and that is what makes the human race so special.

We, left to ourselves, think about us. Before we fall, we do not need to eat but since the fall, mankind depends on biology and consumption. We make it an art. We make cuisine an art. We make eating a connoisseur’s dimension. Of course, we are just eating for the sake of eating, but we make it so complex. In so many cultures a simple chicken has got a thousand ways to cook it. Why? Because of human inherent imagination. When we are given a chicken, we will think of a thousand ways to cook it. When given an egg, we will think of a thousand ways to eat it. It is inherent in the human race. God has given us the ability to create new things. We can take from the old and bring in the new, make something even newer because that is the redeemed capacity of humans. That is why we need a new heaven and a new earth – things in purity that can be created in God and God wants to bring us forth.

For now, though, every single problem in your life is locked up in your imagination. Either locked up inside it is some sub-conscious imagination that has handicapped / shortchanged you, or you dare not move out of that because that is your safety zone. You need to be bold and let the Word of God cut / separate your soul and body. Purify it. If you are in bondage it is only because you are in bondage to some concept of imagination that is false and giving you false pleasure. When you realise that, the truth must give you true pleasure.

For too long, Satan has deceived us like Pavlov’s dog. They say, that is what I call absolute reflex action, which is like your heartbeat. Then there is the secondary reflex action, that has no link to the original, but buried in you. Like Pavlov’s dog. You all know Pavlov, the scientist, who trained his dog. When he gave the dog food in the same bowl, the dog got used to the bowl and the food. Just the sight of the bowl makes the dog salivate, so the bowl becomes associated with pleasure. After some time, no food, just the bowl. We have been tricked by the devil. He has replaced the real food with just the bowl or with plastic food. Do you know why sin gives pleasure? You have been tricked like Pavlov’s dog until you realise, the only way is to replace that with the real food.

As you begin to adapt to the truth and the true things that give you pleasure, like the beauty of holiness, God, and your true love is whom you depend on, God. He who gives us life should

give us the greatest pleasure, correct? Your real life comes from God. So, if God is not giving you the greatest pleasure when He actually is the source of all life, you have replaced God with a bowl, with some plastic thing, maybe with gold and silver, maybe with riches and pleasures. But those things are not the real pleasure. You have become Pavlov's dog. You are born again. But if you are born again, do not live that life anymore. Raise your pleasure level to know this is the true God. This is who I should derive the greatest pleasure when I read His Word, when I worship Him, when I talk to God, and that is where my life comes. These must give you the greatest pleasure. Retrain your deception, so that the truth gives you the greatest pleasure. Jesus says, "*He who has My commandments and keeps them, it is he who loves Me*". Man shall not live by bread alone.

The next time when you take out the Bible, you should, *Man shall not live by bread alone*. This is better than chicken rice. You are reading the Bible. Any time when you come to prayer time, you start salivating, you say, "Can I? Should I? Must I"? The answer is "yes" to those three questions. Retrain your appetite and your life will change. It is said that humans derive pleasure in four areas: intellectual thing, imagination, emotion and physical pleasure. But we must change it so that all the pleasures come from God. It can be linked to all these parts of your being, but let your pleasure be the pleasure of the intellect, the pleasure of spending time with God. You say, "It has to be learned and acquired". Yes.

#### *Learn to acquire new tastes*

If people can take a lifetime, a short lifetime to learn to like to drink beer, wine, all those things, surely you can change your appetite. When you were a baby, no one gave you chilly because you could not take it but when you were growing up, some of you acquired a taste for it. You know how much we are influenced? For example, my basic culture, my taste buds have been developed by my mom's side (Teochew), I like stewed things. Even now, I still like stewed things. It is very hard to change it, but thank God, that is just physical.

The soul things that you learn to love must be all derived by the Word. Jesus says this is the only way you can tell whether you love Him if you love the Word and you keep His commandments. You must derive pleasure from them. Man shall not live by bread alone. Let it touch all the inner core of your being and you will find the Christian life to be fun, alive, joyful, pleasurable. Satan took all those things away from you and replaced them with the plastic bowl. Now find pleasure back in the real food.

## Chapter 4...

### The Conscience

In Watchman Nee's definition, he does not say anything about the body, which we have discovered even in our modern world, as knowledge is increased, that the body has its own memory system. The body also has a life of its own. The body, in Romans, we have touched on the fact that the body seems to have a mind of its own. And Paul calls it "Who will deliver me from this body of death"? He talks about sin nature living inside his body, as if there is something alive living inside his body, and that is the fallen body, there is sin nature that abides which Watchman Nee does not cover.

We did say that the body has a certain level of mind, a certain level of memory, a certain level of emotions. Even today it is so easy to prove that the body has emotions. You know why, they can measure emotions today in the psychological world by analysing the chemicals that you produce. Fear, adrenaline, oxytocin, endorphins, all these are chemicals in your physical body. So how can you deny that your body does not have its own emotions? If you do not believe it, we are not going to do that, we just inject you with a lot of endorphins and see what happens to you. It is like a drug, you find emotionally different things. Yes, your body does produce and have its own emotional and physical dimensions.

These are all knowledge that has increased. The time when they studied the Bible, knowledge was still coming in the natural world but in our time, we have added in all and we look at the Bible in a different way. The good thing is you find that all these truths are in the Bible all the time. That is why the Bible talks about the body as a living thing of itself. So, the body has its own level of emotions and the body seems to have its own actions and desires. It functions like another part of you and that is where we have added that into this *The Spiritual Man Book II*.

#### *Communion, Intuition and Conscience*

These are the old things – the *Will*, the *Emotions* and the *Mind*. We always look at the soul-man as having the will, the emotions and the mind. Then Watchman Nee divides the dimension of the *Spirit* with *Conscience*, *Intuition* and *Communion*.

We were very detailed, and I gave you scriptural basis, which we redefined this area to show that when Jesus says, “*The spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak*”, He is referring to a will in your spirit; otherwise He would not use the word “spirit”. He says, “*The spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak*”. That tells you that your spirit has a will of its own. Also, I gave you 1 Corinthians 14:14-15, Paul says, “*I will pray with the spirit, and I will also pray with the understanding*”. We thought that that was just the soul will, but if you look very carefully, it is the will of the spirit.

Then you have verses like Philippians 2:13 where it tells us it is God who helps us, who energises us both to will and to do. Now, if it is God who energises us to will, then we are no more responsible for our choices. Have you looked at that? But we have three wills, the will of the body, the will of the soul, the will of the spirit. God energises the will of your spirit, not your soul. Your soul still has the free choice to yield to the will what your spirit man wants to do. Your spirit man has a will. It wants to do something. It wants to pray.

If I were to ask you right now: How many of you know that you should read your Bible more? How many of you know that you should pray more? How many of you know that you should worship more? You know. Now, who is that who tells you that you should? The spirit within you which wants to do it. The want and the desire are the will of the spirit. So, your spirit has a will and the will of the spirit is actually this word here: *Communion*.

We talked about Watchman Nee, how when he wrote in his book, being Chinese-speaking, he wrote the book in Chinese, and then it got translated into English. Something might have been lost in translation. As we discovered, something else than what the English translation brought forth was lost in translation.

What actually is *Communion*? *Communion* is like intimacy with God. If we strictly take the word “communion” from the Bible, which is the word “*koinonia*”, translated as “communion” or “fellowship”, it means to fellowship with God and to fellowship with God involves two wills. You must choose. God wills, then you fellowship. Two free will, choosing to fellowship together, to be in communion with so I have put aside *Communion* and renamed it *Will*.

Then we say *Intuition*. *Intuition* is like an inner knowing. An inner knowing equals mind. Why not call it the mind? We will make it clearer. We brought Ephesians 4 which shows

there is a spirit of your mind. Then we brought Romans 8 which shows the spiritual man produces peace and life, the carnal man produces death. There is a spiritual mind so instead of calling it *Intuition*, we call it *Mind*.

Then, of course, there comes *Conscience*. Conscience is like an understanding; the Greek word is “*suneidesis*”. Conscience, to many people is like a sense of right and wrong. Isn't the sense of right and wrong some sort of emotional indicator inside of you? It is, because it is an emotional indicator. The conscience can also be hardened, and it can be seared, that means it cannot feel anymore and so instead of calling it *Conscience*, we call it *Emotions*.

#### *A synchronised area*

So, in my chart, I have to make sure that it synchronises carefully. I cannot put *Communion* here. I have got to rotate the chart: *Will* and *Communion* here. Now when you look at my chart, remember inside my chart is hidden Watchman Nee's chart. I just renamed the whole thing to expand on the teaching from the Bible and the main purpose of this teaching is to teach us about how our spirit, soul and body, how all parts of us function as one man in God.

Now we see there is a synchronised area – *Body Emotion, Soul Emotion and Spirit Emotion; Body Will, Soul Will and Spirit Will; Body Mind, Soul Mind and Spirit Mind*. We talked about the heart. By now you all should clearly know where your heart is when I ask you where your heart is. What does the Bible call the heart? Your heart includes both your spirit and your soul. Watchman Nee defines the heart as just your conscience plus one-third of your spirit, which is your conscience plus your soul. I showed that the heart includes other things too.

Let us look at one part here, a scripture that is very hard to understand. Based on Watchman Nee's chart, if you look at his old chart, this verse is very hard to fit in. Remember, we re-study Watchman Nee's book and we build upon it. As I mentioned that in my early days of calling to the ministry, I saw a vision of a building between two valleys (which represents the Church), which pillars were completed (represent pillars of prayer), and the two mountains that I saw (represent the First and the Second Coming of Jesus). Then I saw about half-way up or a third of the way up, I saw near the half-way point, a group of people were waving to me. I was still a 3rd year Baptist seminary student doing my field work in Kangar, Perlis, Malaysia so I had a 3-day fast without food and water. Actually, it was my first 3-day fast

without food and water. In that fast, God graced me with that vision. I saw on the platform, half-way there, standing on one of the pillars were Watchman Nee, John Sung (from the books that I read, I recognised them in the spirit) and many others. A lot of these Asian ministers and some also (I think I saw Hudson Taylor and some of them) were waving to me. Over the years I have understood what it meant, that I was called to complete the ministry of John Sung, Watchman Nee and all those people in Asia, to bring it forth. Most of these people were very good teachers, they brought you to the place, but they stopped before the Pentecostal Revival. Their teachings never moved on. Since then, the Pentecostal Revival has come and gone. We need to include some of these teachings and then complete that. I had a few encounters in my early days in the spirit dimension with some dreams and Watchman Nee was marking my papers and all that. Those were the early days of my training.

### *Learning from the Elders*

So, over the years we have to learn. You see, everything that we learn, we always learn from those who came before us. We cannot take credit. No man is an island and no human being discovers all things by themselves. In order to move forward, you must learn from all the best before you and that was what I did.

When I was in the Baptist seminary for three years, one of my jobs was as a librarian. It was one of the biggest libraries in Southeast Asia. Just to let you know, I read nearly half of those books in the library. I was like a sponge. Almost every man and woman of God that you know in church history or you have heard about that was well known, I read their books and absorbed them. So, learn from them. A lot of things you have got to learn and then you have got to master what they knew, then you can move on.

How can God give you more if God has already given you so much that you never took in? It is after absorbing all those things I realise we still have got a lot of things missing, that I began to seek God for more and more understanding. That is where God continues to take you further. That is where we continue to build upon that and build this teaching on, that will last in the next 4-5 decades of this revival, where many young ones are coming up. They will come straight into this teaching, and then they will not have to deal with all those things (bones or inaccuracies) that we have had to deal with in our time. Thus, they can progress faster in this revival, move on into the things of God and move into a close walk with Jesus.

### *Definition of Conscience*

So, we look at *Spirit Emotion*, which Watchman Nee defines to be *Conscience*, which in Greek is the word “*suneidesis*”. Here is the verse that does not fit into Watchman Nee’s chart because he puts the conscience as spirit, correct? And that is where he links it in.

In Hebrews 10:22, “*let us draw near with a true heart* (as if there can be a false heart, everything you can see, the opposite or potentially) *in full assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience...*”. I heard of a seared conscience, I heard of a weak conscience, but here is an evil conscience. If you are a Greek scholar, the word “evil” comes from the word “*poneros*” which is the word for real evil. They have another word for bad things which is the word “*kakos*”, that is just translated as “bad”, sometimes “evil” but this one is the “evil”, “evil” word. So, it will be like a word that you associate with Satan, the devil. It is almost like saying you have a Satanic conscience. What kind of conscience is that?

To call it “*poneros*” in Greek is to call it “satanic” because only the devil is “*poneros*”. So, how can the conscience reach this stage? The conscience is a consciousness of your emotions. Emotions can be good, can be bad; can be very, very, very good, can be very, very, very bad and when your emotion eats into your spirit, it pollutes it. That is why I drew the chart to show how, and remember I said that originally when God made man, we were not like that.

We were like that. We have only one mind, we do not have an unrenewed mind. We have only one mind that governs our spirit, soul and body. We have only one set of emotions that governs our spirit, soul and body. It is perfection and we will return to that state. We have only one will that governs our spirit, soul and body but something happened during the fall. During the fall of man, this part was chopped up, the spirit got disconnected from the soul; the soul got disconnected from the body. And so, the light of God (which is Christ, represented here by a cross) cannot flow through anymore being disconnected, it functions on its own. It is just like you have got a devil on your inside.

Now, the devil was once upon a time an archangel, in fact, he was a cherub. The Bible calls him a cherub and he was the cherub that tried to be like God. He was created by God, his life came from God, God can easily take his life back. Now he has life which comes from God

and he is rebelling against God. He has cut himself from God, but he still exists. He rebelled against God with all the fallen angels.

It is like the Universe in discord. The whole Universe has been divided into three sections – the pristine side which Satan could not make to fall, the warring side, and the boundary section. So, you have even the Universe cut into three sections. The boundary section is in between where the fall was. We are in the fallen section of the Universe called the warring section. Even God’s creation is cut up, existing separately in three sections. Our spirit man has been chopped into three sections and that is where we exist.

### *Tuning emotions*

Now we are on the road back to the fullness of one heart, one mind, one emotion with our Lord Jesus Christ, and we are learning to become that glorious Church, which is why we want to learn to tune our emotions into one, our will into one, our mind to be the spirit mind. That is where we are heading. We have a goal now. We know where we are heading. Having chopped us on this side, considering just this section here, *Emotions*, within each one of us, that is why the struggle in a Christian life is so real. You struggle not with two parts of yourself, but three parts. We are tripartite in nature. In 1 Thessalonians 5:23, it tells us that we are spirit, soul and body – tripartite – and each can exist on its own.

Angels primarily have spirit and soul. Angels can appear in bodily form, but their bodily form is like a spiritual material, different from our glorified material form. Animals have body and soul. Animals do not have a spirit. That is why you do not find animals building altars. Have you ever seen a wild dog or some dingoes somewhere in the outback of Australia and you look, *wah*, an altar built by a dog in the shape of a dog? No such thing. They do not have spirit, nothing inside wants to worship, although they do acknowledge harmony with God.

Animals have a soul, they have feelings, they think. So, animals do not exist there. We humans exist in between all. We interact both with angels and the physical dimension. We have a real physical body and like the animals, have male and female. We have gender, but angels do not have gender. Angels might look masculine / feminine, but they do not have

gender, humans do. So, because of that, when humans fell, it was a big fall and there is that disharmony in the three sections.

What we see of the evil conscience is actually the emotions turned upside down – there is a spiritual part of the emotions that can become evil; there is a soul part of the emotions that is just in the soul, no demons are involved; then there is a physical part of the emotions that can affect us. We can be affected by all three different sections.

Do you know that if we were to put you in a restricted habitation and control your diet, we can actually influence your emotions too, through diet? That is why what you eat also affects your emotional well-being, you might not realise that. At the same time, the spiritual realm has an influence on our spiritual well-being, or the devil trying to put the wrong thing. Then we have our own soul reaction which is a whole emotion of its own. This conflict is there.

### *Discerning Conscience*

There is a Bible definition of an evil or *poneros* conscience. First, we accept the fact that the word “conscience” (which is “*suneidesis*”) has been translated into other English words, besides “conscience”. One of the most common English words is in 1 Corinthians 8:7, “*However, there is not in everyone that knowledge; for some, with consciousness of the idol (talking about idol worship), until now eat it as a thing offered to an idol; and their conscience, being weak (see, I told you there is weak conscience), is defiled*”. In one sentence in the Bible, the same Greek word was translated into two different English words. If you have read it in Greek, you would not have seen the difference.

The first translation is the word “consciousness”. The word “consciousness” is the exact same Greek word for “conscience”, the word “*suneidesis*”. The Greek word is talking about the same thing. “*However, there is not in everyone that knowledge; for some, with “suneidesis” of the idol, until now eat it as a thing offered to an idol; and their “suneidesis”, being weak, is defiled*”. Can you find another way to translate the first word “conscience”? Can you see how the early translators tried to translate into English? Very difficult?

Some of you may speak more than one language, you may know how difficult it is sometimes to translate from Chinese to English. This is because in Chinese you might have three or four

different nuances of meaning and you have to choose one because you are only allowed one word. This is not the Amplified version where we tried to put everything in. Already people are complaining the Bible is very long, put in the amplified version, it becomes very big. Then put all the nuances in, some are tens, and the Bible (66 books) looks like transcripts. Before they start reading, they have already fainted, trying to get the people to read the Bible. They are trying to make the Bible simpler and simpler, and here you increase the expansion. The same way, sometimes you have got an English word which is hard to translate into Chinese because of the concepts that are there. They have got to find a word for that.

Anyway, you have “*suneidesis*” in 1 Corinthians 8:7. Look at that verse there and see how difficult it is to translate that one into English, “*However, there is not in everyone that knowledge; for some, with “suneidesis” of the idol...*” What do you mean – “*suneidesis*” of the idol? If you put there, “*conscience*” of the idol, idol has got conscience? Idol does not have conscience, idol is a dead thing. There was no way they could translate the Greek concept.

And I put before you here that the Greek concept of “*suneidesis*” involves some sort of consciousness, not just a sense of right and wrong, which is the English definition for conscience. Some part of you is like the little angel or the little devil, you know, that they draw in cartoons, one sits on the right shoulder and one on the left. One whispers good things and one whispers bad, then you choose. You either become a saint or the devil, angel or devil, that kind of thing, so that was like your little conscience talking to you, the English definition. But in Greek, the definition of such a conscience is not there. It is a wider conscience. It is like some sort of sense of consciousness. So, the only translation they could have is: “*consciousness*” of the idol.

Now, here’s another verse, Hebrews 10:2, “*For then would they not have ceased to be offered? For the worshipers, once purified, would have had no more (“conscience” or) consciousness of sins*”. The Greek word actually says “*suneidesis*” of sins. Sins have conscience? You never apply the word “conscience” to an inanimate concept or idol or object, correct? Only humans have conscience. Okay, let me push it further.

Do you think your dog has a conscience? Some of you are going to say yes because you love your dog. You train your dog and you say “wrong, wrong, wrong” when you are toilet training it. Your dog does it again and you say “bad, bad”. Now, your definition of bad and good is based on human definition because to a dog everywhere is like outdoors. In fact, if you have a pet dog, you have to train it. Let me tell you, nature takes its course. The dog will smell the ground when it wants to do its business. Just make sure when the dog is growing up, it knows how to access the outdoors. Of course, here your outdoors could be down there, so you might be living about thirty storeys high, if your dog goes outdoors, it will be the last outdoor excursion, so it is harder to train, I understand. So, you have to make the place where you want it to do its business as “outdoors” as possible, as natural, maybe put grass, maybe put sand, whatever, then it smells it. And it is the nature of the dog to look for those places. It is not its normal nature to do its business on cement or on your nice polished marble or your parquet floor. It does not like it actually because in the first place it cannot dig. You do not have to train it. Nature makes it want to go outside. So, does a dog have conscience?

Does a dog have spirit? “No”. Okay, then you go to the next one, take *The Spiritual Man – Book I*, let your dog read it and say, “According to Watchman Nee, conscience is in your spirit. So, dog, you do not have a spirit, therefore you do not have conscience”. Watchman Nee can answer for you. He has already gone home, and he will say dogs do not have a conscience, but dogs do have a sense of right and wrong.

### *Defining right and wrong*

The definition that your conscience is for sensing right and wrong is inadequate to describe the word “conscience” or “*suneidesis*”. I can prove that even dogs can be trained to recognise some sort of right and wrong, correct? You know why, because it has nothing to do with conscience. It has to do with emotions. I can say, “Does your dog have emotions”? “Yes”. Animals do have emotions. If they do not, why do the RSPCA exist? To protect against cruelty to animals because they do feel pain. If they do not feel pain, then our organisation of RSPCA is redundant. Have you seen an RSPCA for trees? None, except that you have got people trying to protect the environment, that is a different thing. No one has been jailed for cruelty to plants because animals are of a higher level than plants, they can feel emotions.

So, what do you think a dog has? It does not have is spiritual emotion, but doesn't the soul emotion look like the conscience? I could take the same dog and teach it that doing business in the house is right and doing business outside is wrong. You could. Every time it does it outside, you chastise it, it does it inside, you reward it. After one year, it will love the inside more than the outside. Why do they do it? For reward. All animals are trained with food, the day after all the training, no more food, is the day they might bite the owner or trainer. They are all trained based on reward and food. You could retrain a dog. Or if you have got a young dog, a puppy, you can train it on the emotional basis of what is right and wrong but what is right and wrong alone emotionally does not equal conscience.

Whereas the word "*suneidesis*" is a word that describes some sort of consciousness of the spiritual dimension and that consciousness is not something in a thought form. It is something in a feeling form. Having consciousness is to have a feeling but that feeling or that sense of consciousness is your spirit emotion. So, "*suneidesis*" of *sins* – it means (the only way they could translate that was) *consciousness of sins*. It is remarkable that they could not find another word. I challenge you to find another word. Very hard to find. That is the best one single English word to try to include everything that *suneidesis* speaks about and I have given you this alternate translation that is given here in the Bible. Well, that is Hebrews 10:2.

Now, let us look at something that I call the opposite factor here and the scripture. We are building on this understanding very slowly. Look at Acts 23:1. It is the very opposite of Hebrews 10:22, because here it says (as Paul looked up at the council, when he was already in prison, he was on trial, he said to the Sanhedrin Council) – "*Men and brethren, I have lived in all good conscience (suneidesis) before God until this day*". When you look at Paul saying he lived in all good conscience, the word "good" is a stronger word for good than the normal word for good. The normal word for good is the word "*kalos*", opposite is "*kakos*" (bad). But here is a stronger word for good, it is more associated with God, which is the word "*agathos*", close to the word "*agape*" (the goodness of God), so that "*agathos*" conscience (or *suneidesis*) opposes in Hebrews 10:22 the "*poneros suneidesis*". You have got two opposite poles. The "*agathos suneidesis*" is like Paul saying, "I have lived as true to my emotions spiritually as I know best".

Now, when Paul says, “*I have lived (past tense) in all good conscience before God until this day*”. I have one question, “What about during the time when he was persecuting the church, when he was bringing them to prisons”? He got letters from the council to imprison and put Christians to death. Was Paul walking in his conscience? Was he walking in *poneros* conscience or *agathos* conscience? Outwardly, he was doing a bad thing. He himself admitted it, he did not justify it. He admitted he was wrong. What he did was wrong – putting Christians in prison, killing them, sanctioning their killing. He was the one holding the clothes of those who stoned Stephen. Paul called himself the chief of sinners. He admitted “I am the chief of sinners because unlike all the others I have persecuted the church, I have been a blasphemer against God”.

Now, in Acts 23:1 when Paul says, “*I have lived in all good conscience*”, do you think Paul included that period of his life? “Yes”. He did? He included all the parts when he was outwardly an evil man? “Yes”. He did? If he said his conscience was so good, so good! Now, that sounds like some advertisement for some tea or coffee or whatever, so good but it is more an advertisement for our God. We say God is so good. Paul outwardly killing people, outwardly imprisoning people, inside him. He included that part of his life when outwardly he was an evil person with all the bad things, where Jesus even rebuked him saying, “Saul, Saul, why are you persecuting Me”? Inside him was all good, outward was all bad. Now, how can that be?

The *suneidesis* is not a basis of right and wrong. Paul was right inside but he was wrong outside. Can you see that? When I apply it to dogs, it looks ridiculous. Now I apply it to a man who became one of the foremost Apostles and the main author of most of the New Testament doctrines and theologies, Paul himself.

Paul did say he thought he was serving God. You see, in his encounter and in Acts 26 as he talks about his life, Paul again was testifying. In verses 12 to 18 he goes into greater detail about Jesus meeting him but look at his words in verse 9, “*Indeed, I myself thought I must do many things contrary to the name of Jesus of Nazareth*”. So, he says, “I thought I should have eliminated them because I thought they were the bad guys”. That was his testimony. He says, “I thought they were the bad guys”. He was trying to do good because he was good inside. He thought that the Christians were pests, the Christians were the cults, the Christians were the

bad guys. And so, he was getting rid of the bad guys based on his understanding of the Jewish law.

As you know, at that time he was not in the New Testament yet, although he was in the New Testament. He was based on Old Testament law and the law says you can kill bad guys. They had done it in the Old Testament and so he was redoing what he thought was still the Old Testament law period. After all, for him, Christ had not come. So, it was justifiable to kill the bad guys based on Old Testament law and that was his understanding of it. Look at his testimony (chapter 22 of Acts when he was before the crowds), he says in verse 1 onwards – *“Brethren and fathers, hear my defense before you now. And when they heard that he spoke to them in the Hebrew language, they kept all the more silent. (And he was in public). Then he said: ‘I am indeed a Jew, born in Tarsus of Cilicia, but brought up in this city at the feet of Gamaliel, taught according to the strictness of our fathers’ law, and was zealous toward God...”* Paul says, “I thought I was serving God”. So, he was good on the inside but his inside good did not convert into outside good.

That is why we are learning what the New Testament is. You know what the New Testament is? Inside good, outside must also be good but another thing we learn about the conscience – it is not reliable. Tell me what better conscience you can improve on than to have *“agathos suneidesis”*? Can you improve on that? You cannot. It is using the best Greek word possible for the word “good” (*“agathos”*) as opposed to the word *“poneros”*. You cannot improve on the *agathos* conscience, yet it is not enough. Can you see that? It is not enough. Not in the New Testament. One-third of your spirit is not enough because just as you cannot rely on your emotions to make all your decisions, you cannot rely on one-third. “I feel good” – *Oh yeah*. Or you might have already been convinced that it is right and good doctrinally, as Paul was trained, it is still wrong.

You see, good and bad cannot just be based on subjective. You know the meaning of being subjective and objective? The word “subjective” means from your inside; “objective” means from the outside. So, an objective view is a view outside of you, a subjective view is what you feel on your inside. Good and bad cannot just rest on our feelings of good and bad, which is where society is now heading towards. Society is heading towards the point where if the

majority feels that something is good or right, then it makes it good and right for the whole country where it might be heading for the wrong direction.

A long, long ago, in the time of kingdoms and kings, in the time where there were no human rights, where humans were in classes, you were either born a slave or you were born a free man, you were either born of royalty or you were born a peasant – you could not change that. Long, long ago, during those times, there were a lot of wrong things done that the whole country and community thought were right. For example, slavery. Another example, still sometimes practised by parts of ancient Asian societies, that when a family did wrong, the emperor would kill the whole family for three generations. The whole family, even the innocent babies, must be killed / eliminated. To them, that was the law, but the law was wrong. Society is heading back towards that.

#### *Guidance from without*

Then you ask, “What is the basis of right and wrong in the Bible”? Something outside of us. Whether you agree or disagree with the Bible, you cannot change the Bible. God says, “Thou shalt not...” How to change that? It came from outside, something external and that is something about us humans that are self-limited.

Do you know we cannot walk in a straight line? If we take you and put you on a desert without a compass, take you and leave you in Antarctica or the Arctic Circle where everything looks the same, or in the Amazon Jungle where everything looks the same, and you have got no landmarks to tell north, south, east, west, and you do not have enough knowledge to tell by the sun or the stars, and you do not rely on external things. Relying on the sun, the compass and the stars is external. But you rely on your own sense of walking – I am walking in a straight line, I am walking in a straight line – you will actually be walking in a big circle. At the end of the day, after a month of walking, you say, “Hey, footprints, I am saved”! You check your own footprints because we humans tend to put one foot stronger than the other. Thus, we always lean either to the left or to the right slightly and when you lean on one side slightly, you are already on a circular path. We need something outside of us to tell us the direction and the combination of the two helps because if anyone of you try using the compass, some compasses keep moving all the time.

Like when we went for altar building in Bimberi II, that is a long, long, long walk and we played it safe for everyone. We tied ribbons along the route, we made sure that different groups have a compass. I know some of them had a compass, but the compass was not really working. You shake it a bit, the north changes a bit and so some of you came down and you said, “*Eh*, that direction.” but they needed to remember where they came from. The rocks, the trees and the compass. So, generally the compass will tell you that you are still going in the right direction, but a compass alone is so general. You walk slightly 100 metres off where there is a big ditch or whatever, the compass will say that that is true north. Then you come to a place where there is no way out, whereas there might be another path just slightly 50 metres off and is still pointing to the north to a certain extent and you need to be able to climb that path. You need to rely on landmarks / familiar places so that you know the direction you are heading / going, plus the external, plus of course your internal thing that you sense – all this helps you walk in a straight line.

So, the moral sense of right and wrong gives you the conscience. Now, if the conscience is so unreliable, Paul, do you know why did Jesus reach out to him? If you see Paul in the spirit, outwardly he was an evil man, but if you really see his heart, he really thought he was serving God. He himself said in his testimony in 1 Timothy 1:13, “God had mercy on me because God knew I was zealous towards Him”. That is why Jesus reached out to him.

#### *The true heart*

The conscience is still important. The verse that I started with, in Hebrews 10:22, it tells us the conscience is important. Your conscience is like your internal ferment but not the only one. You cannot build your life around your conscience, although your conscience will bring you to the place where God will have mercy on you. Remember Romans 2 category where even the Gentiles without the law walked according to the law, their conscience accusing or excusing them? Look at Romans 2 category, those without Christ.

The conscience still plays a role, but I want to reduce the role of the conscience to one-third of this chart, to show that it cannot be relied upon, which is why it again emphasises why the definition of the heart in *The Spiritual Man Book I* is not accurate enough because the heart is only the conscience plus the soul. The heart has to include the other part of your spirit.

Look at Hebrews 10:22 again. You see, it tells us to have a true heart. To have a true heart, you need your emotions, correct? Spirit, soul and body. So, it says, "... *having our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience...*". We do need to get rid of the evil conscience.

Now, if Paul's heart has a good conscience (*agathos suneidesis*) and he does evil things outwardly, you might have a man who has a *poneros* conscience but does good things and all the while is evil. An example of that is the Antichrist. An example of that is the devil. When the devil told Jesus and showed Him all the kingdoms of the world and said, "All these things I will give You if You will fall down and worship me" – he is an evil being. One day, he will manifest through a fallen angel who becomes the Antichrist, born of human flesh, evil to the core, pure darkness, but outwardly a man of peace – "Live in harmony, harmony, harmony". Inside him is pure *poneros* conscience, outwardly he is doing good. Now, he seems to be favouring Jesus, he seems to be helping Jesus, but there is an evil motivation. When you say "e...v...i...l", that is what "*poneros*" is like, really evil. He wants to get Jesus under his thumb, to propagate evil.

#### *Motivation is important*

Let us look at another one, actually that would be almost like a semi-animal thing, but really bad. When the serpent said to Eve and Adam, "Do you want to be like God"? – that was evil. It looks like he was helping. It looks like he wanted to help them, but he actually wanted to destroy. Can you see the contrast now?

*Agathos* conscience – outward, perceived as bad. *Poneros* conscience – outward, perceived as good. Yet, do not panic, do not throw away your conscience, do not become conscienceless. God looks into your conscience, that is an amazing thing. God does look into your intentions. Although intention alone will not save you, yet it is an important factor, correct? Motivation is important.

The same, like there are many pastors and ministers in the world today. There are fivefold ministers; many apostles, prophets, evangelists, pastors and teachers, but what is the motivation? If a fivefold ministry only does fivefold ministry work for the sake of money, its motivation is different. The whole ministry will come out differently. If the fivefold ministry does the ministry work for the love of God and the love of people, it will come out

differently. So, do not underestimate the *agathos* conscience even though its manifestation might not be perfect because God looks at the conscience. In the long run, it is better to have a very good conscience, and purify yourself from an evil conscience.

In Romans 2, God looks at the conscience even among those who are not saved yet. He considers that when your conscience is good, like in verse 15, “*who show the work of the law* (they don’t have the law, they don’t have the Jewish law but in their lives, they walk according to their conscience, they show the work) *written in their hearts, their conscience* (you see, the conscience is in the heart) *also bearing witness, and between themselves their thoughts accusing or else excusing them*”. It is either / or, based on their conscience.

### A weak Conscience

So, the conscience is important and you all know the other verses that we look at, that to live according to your conscience is more important than to live according to church law or traditional law or religious law. I did not say; your Bible says it in Romans 14 and 1 Corinthians.

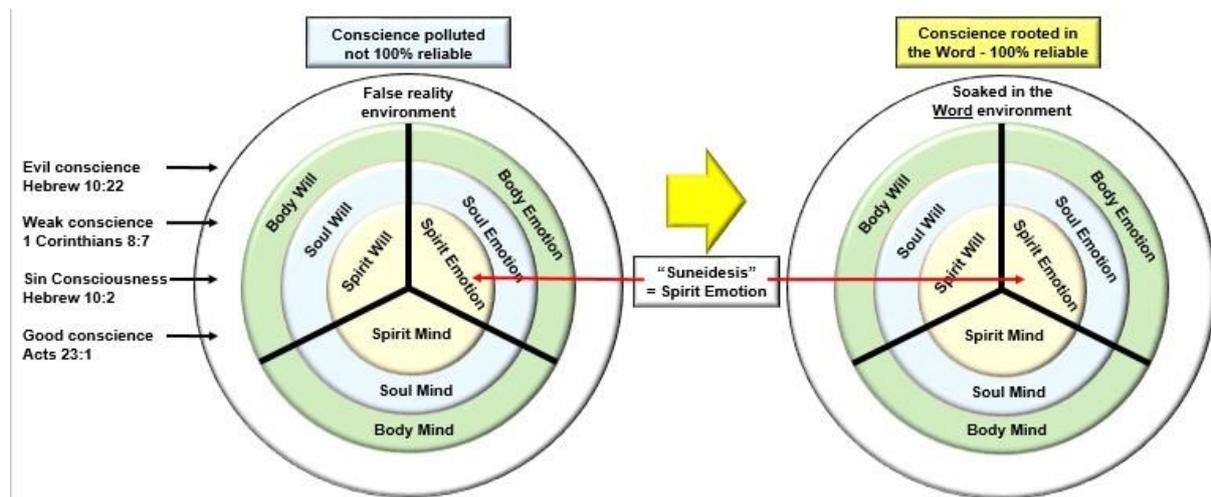


Diagram 1

In Romans 14, they were having a problem with religious laws and religious people because some say that you should eat only vegetables, some say it is okay to eat meat. So, this is a religious problem and it is a problem that came from culture and a problem that came from their religious background. It had come into the church. This was now a church problem and Paul had to make a judgment. He says in verses 2-3, “*For one believes he may eat all things, but he who is weak eats only vegetables. Let not him who eats despise him who does not eat,*

*and let not him who does not eat judge him who eats; for God has received him*". He says, God is okay with that.

One guy wants to be a vegan / vegetarian all his life because he is convinced he cannot eat animals, cruelty to the animals. Have you seen how animals die? Do you see how they are slaughtered? So, in terms of eating vegetables or meat, he says as long as their conscience tells them, they must flow with their conscience. Then he talks about obeying the Sabbath law, a Sabbath day, or observe or do not observe the Sabbath day because some people still do. You see, this came from their Jewish background. The Sabbath law was like irrevocable. It was like a major sin in that area.

Just like today, if you come from a Catholic background, the Communion you take is very holy and you do not dare to bite it because if you bite too hard, you could literally hear, based on your weak conscience, the scream of Christ. That is why they design the Communion wafer to melt and Christ melts into you, rather than you bite. It is all in your imagination because of your background.

Some think that it is wrong not to keep the Sabbath law, some say that it is okay. Paul says in verse 6, *"He who observes the day, observes it to the Lord; and he who does not observe the day, to the Lord he does not observe it. He who eats, eats to the Lord, for he gives God thanks; and he who does not eat, to the Lord he does not eat, and gives God thanks"*. In the end, Paul's conclusion is to let each one walk in accordance to his level of faith without condemnation.

He says here in verses 21-23, *"It is good neither to eat meat nor drink wine nor do anything by which your brother stumbles or is offended or is made weak. Do you have faith? Have it to yourself before God. Happy is he who does not condemn himself in what he approves. But he who doubts is condemned if he eats, because he does not eat from faith; for whatever is not from faith is sin"*. Then what is faith? Faith is your conviction but there are degrees of different convictions. How do I know a person's level of faith? By how well trained your conscience is to the Word of God. The more well trained, your conscience will stop being an evil conscience.

### *The conditioned reflex*

So, we all have our conscience polluted. Our conscience is not functioning 100%, otherwise we would not have sinned and because our conscience is not 100% reliable, it is trained in the wrong things and all these things, basically our *suneidesis* or conscience is just our emotions. Emotions can be trained. In psychology, we call it a conditioned reflex. Even dogs can be trained. Humans can be trained. In psychology, they call it, there is an absolute reflex and conditioned reflex. Conditioned reflex is what you have been associated with because you are conditioned to feel good in something, like the dog. Remember Pavlov's dog? Every time he rings the bell *ting*, he feeds the food. Then next time, just the *ting*, the dog already salivates. Or sometimes he uses the same bowl, so the dog keeps seeing the same bowl. Every time it touches the bowl or sees the bowl, it goes *ting*. Some of us laugh at the dog without realising we ourselves have been conditioned.

Let me give this illustration from a psychology book. In talking about conditioned reflex and absolute reflex, it talks about how, for example, two young people (a man and a woman) go dating, they go to the seaside where the wind is gentle, the sea breeze and the waves are gentle, coconut leaves waving. In this atmosphere, they spend a lot of time together, so it has built a good feeling every time one of them goes to the place and remembers the good times they have had. Then over the years they separate. They do not make it and they go apart. The girl one day meets another young man. They happen to go near the place. She does not actually like this young man. Everything tells her, *ah*, this is not the one for you but one day they happen to be in a beach scene where the waves are roaring, the wind is a light breeze, the coconut leaves also sway. At that very moment, she feels so in love with this man whom she just hated two days ago and whatever the young man tells her, she will do. She wants to do, she yields, and they go further and further. Then that night she goes back, all her feeling for that this person that is wrong comes back to her. She says, "Why am I so stupid? Why did I go half-way with him?" You were Pavlov's dog. You have conditioned yourself to feel good in a certain environment, without knowing it, sub-consciously it seeps into you and from the psychological viewpoint, this is what they try to do. They try to remove all the conditioned reflex that is false for you to try to find your true reality and the real you.

### *Living in a false reality*

Since the Bible is so... you need to understand some psychology to know what we build our own false reality on. Why do some people have a persecution complex? Because they are

convinced inside themselves that people are actually persecuting them. Whenever they see somebody whispers, he might be talking about the weather, the latest football game, but to this person, every whisper is about him. Is it true? No. But you are convinced. Perhaps you have heard of those situations and you have conditioned yourself to believe it. You live in a false reality. Do you know how many humans live in a false reality? A lot of them. You might have encountered some of them. We all have a measure of false reality that we have built, so fully convinced that we are right, but we are wrong.

Did Paul live in a false reality when he was convinced he was right when he was wrong? He had *agathos suneidesis*, a false reality that must be removed and inside each one of our lives, without realising it, we have built a false reality. False reality, like thinking the church you grew up in must be the only right church, I lived here, I was brought up here, I was baptised here, I was helped here (you see, you were helped, so immediately you have an emotional debt to that church). Then you were married there, and you hope that you will have your funeral also there. So, you are blind to the fact that your church might not be teaching the truth. It might be a church that is anti-Charismatic but your emotional attachment to that church is so great, you would rather die there than leave the church and grow spiritually. All of us have false realities built in. It was never pointed out to us and the false realities are based on our wrongly trained conscience because we tell ourselves this is right, and this is wrong. Is it wrong now to do this? Is it right now to do this? We only rely on our conscience.

### *Conscience needs training*

If your conscience is so great, why did Paul talk about a weak conscience and an evil conscience? I agree that the conscience is important, I am not under-estimating it, I do not want you to say, "I do not need a conscience, I will throw it away". Do not throw the baby out with the bathwater. The baby is still there. Your conscience is needed. Your conscience needs to be trained. It is a very important part of you, but you cannot rely on your conscience alone.

What about the guy who says, "I will only keep the Sabbath day, the other days are not equal to the Sabbath day". Okay, subjectively, he thinks he is right but what is the true picture? The true picture, Paul himself says that is a weak conscience, he calls it weak. Paul really pulls no punches. He says to him that is weak. He calls that slightly wrong and he says, to those of us who have this understanding, every day is the same because it is now given to the Lord. So,

the other guy's conscience is actually weaker. Who has the real perspective of reality? The one in the New Testament who realises the Sabbath law has been done away in Christ. It is the only commandment that has been removed because Christ is now the Sabbath. Now, the Sabbath law is good too. It is good for your body; your body needs one day to rest. It is good mentally because mentally every seven days, you need something to refresh your mind but spiritually as a law and a religious thing, it has been done away with.

Now, Paul talks about eating vegetables and meat, correct? We are not asking which is right and wrong now. Which is righter and more wrong? More right is that you can eat anything, slightly weaker, he calls him the weaker brother, he puts him lower, but that is his level of conscience.

What about 1 Corinthians 8 about idols? He says an idol is nothing, but to those who have consciousness. This is the word that I'd replace but the one who has an "emotional affinity" to the idol. You see, his emotion is weak because he still feels the emotional power from the idol. It is all in the emotion. Paul calls him the weaker brother. Now, Paul was very generous. He says the strong can follow the weak, the weak cannot follow the strong, which is obvious. So, he says in the presence of the weak, we can come down to their level, no problem.

You know, I can easily convince you that just eating vegetables alone is wrong. You cannot establish it. You know why, Jesus ate lamb. Now, do not just go meat eating, of course. Jesus ate fish. So, Jesus ate both. He was okay with that. If it is okay for Jesus, it is okay for me.

#### *Law, religion or health*

Paul says in 1 Corinthians 8, that food offered to idols, you can eat, it is subject to your conscience. And he says, eat whatever is in the market place, eat, asking no questions. Most Asians face this, I faced it because I was the first one born again, and my mother worshipped idols. Of course, she is born again now, same as my father. My whole family is all born again. I did not eat for the sake of differentiation. In our culture because we all grew up, even in Singapore, modern society, you go to any modern shops, everything is pristine, air-conditioned, all top class, first class high technology, right at the corner at the back of the shop is a little idol and they have modernised it. Instead of lighting a candle, they have got an electric bulb, also using technology. Next time they will use LED also.

There are two reasons given in the Bible not to eat idol food. One: If it is a participation with the ceremony, which is another verse where it says do not partake with the worshippers of idolatry, if it is a participation in idol worship and eating is part of the participation. Two: Where it stumbles another brother. So, the Bible gives us two reasons not to eat and those are your only two reasons. In Asia, because there are more people with the *suneidesis* of the idol, so more people are stumbled, for that reason the law is tailored for Asians. That is a general rule, just avoid it if someone tells you, which is what I call subjective application of that.

Last time, when we had a church in Malaysia, I had many elders and pastors (50 pastors, elders and deacons). One day, one of the elders' wife came. She started wearing a head covering. So, I looked, I said "Okay, that is interesting". I thought it was just one Sunday. Next Sunday, she still wore it, and the next, the next and the next. I had a private witnessing. Is this a fashion thing or is this a religious thing? Because, some people, when they read the part about a woman should have her head covered, and then in between the lines it says long hair is a covering, but in today's fashion, how do you define long? What do you mean by "long", 1 metre / 2 metres, right? Paul says (there is a little clause there that says) this is not practised in the other churches. They forget the tiny little words. Inside the verse (1 Corinthians 11:16), you will find this is not the custom in the other churches. It was only a Corinthian problem. You are not in Corinth. Anyway, Corinth is gone, the city is all gone, it is an ancient place, only tourists go to the ruined parts, I do not mean the modern city.

So, Paul says only that area. In the end I said, "Look, if you are fully convinced this is...". She said, "I feel that the Lord tells me to". She used the Lord's name. When anyone uses the Lord's name, I will give him a chance if it does not contradict any other parts of the Bible. I said, "Since you feel this is the thing, only two requirements are required of you. One: do it unto the Lord yourself. Two: do not spread it to all the other ladies because this is not our doctrine". Because the day I find you spread it, all the other women come with head covering, what kind of church is this, that would be wrong already. Then, after about a year or so, she stopped wearing it. So, she went through a phase in the development of wanting to please God.

That is where we have got to understand that conscience is important because it is an individual desire to grow to please God and we humans are law-based creatures. We want to please God with something we can feel and touch, something we can do, something we can

regulate, something that is law-based. We humans tend to do that, and the person might go through their growth in that way. Once they have grown through that, then they realise the Spirit is the spirit of liberty. There is no Bible scripture in the whole New Testament that says you should wear head covering, not even in the Old Testament. In the Old Testament, even the Jewish women went to church without head covering. It is the men who had a little head covering, the opposite, so it is a cultural thing. Paul says, it is only a Corinthian problem, but you see how important the conscience is. You must not go against your conscience.

What about the pig's blood"? *Ah*, you come to pig's blood, which includes all blood of other things. In the Old Testament, it was a religious law not to eat. In the New Testament, the closest you can find is in Acts 15:20, it tells you do not worship idols and to avoid blood and all those things. We will say of this, that because Christianity has spread over many cultures, we have understood not just the law but the principle behind the law, that the reason for not eating blood is more a natural reason and not a religious reason. Not in the New Testament because in the New Testament, whether you eat blood, or you do not eat blood, it is still the blood of Christ that cleanses you. However, whether you eat blood, or you do not eat blood is definitely something like whether you eat McDonald's every day of your life, 365 days, 4 times a day. You know the story, the guy who ate McDonald's as an experiment, he nearly died, right? It is the same with eating blood. Blood carries sickness and disease, the first point of infection of any animals, and so for that reason, take the religious laws of clean and unclean animals as health laws and then it will be New Testament. They are no more religious laws, they are health laws. Laws of health that God knows things we do not know, that we are discovering the scientific reasons why we should not eat blood but then you cannot be strict in your application because if you are preaching to the Masai, who are so poor, their only source of iron and protein is mixing some blood of the animal with the milk, you cannot just ask them to change straightaway. You cannot. Or if you are in a place where there is very little food and all there is there is that.

Remember the story of the plane that crashed in South America and they were stuck, and no one discovered them, and they survived by eating each other? Not eating each other alive, I mean they ate the meat of the people who died so they could survive. If that happened to you, would you eat or not? Of course, some of you (the cleverer ones) say, "It would not happen to me because I am in the perfect will of God". But I am saying that should it so happen, in that situation, would you have eaten? You know what I would tell people? Should I die, please eat

me, no condemnation but I myself find it hard to cross the barrier of eating another human being to live. I would rather say my prayers and die. So, I can understand if those of you who do that. It is a difficult thing, correct? But the people who did it, survived because there was no food there. So, that is a worst scenario than eating blood.

In the end, thank God for the New Testament, we are freed from all the religious laws, except the one in Acts 15:20 that says have nothing to do with idols, live uprightly (a moral life), and the Law of God.

### *An evil conscience*

What does an evil conscience do? An evil conscience always accuses you. That is why you must remove that accusation or the condemnation that is in your heart. You must have the Word cleanse you. Only the Word can go deep enough to renew and train your conscience. The only trainer for your conscience is the Word because you might have been brought up all your life to believe something is right and wrong which contradicts the Word but when you first hear about the Word, it is hard to believe. If you keep listening to the Word, the Word will retrain your conscience. So, you need an external factor to right and wrong and the external factor is the Word of God. The Word is your objective definition of right and wrong and the Word helps you tune. Now, after your conscience is tuned, your conscience is 100% reliable but we must always realise we all might still develop future false realities, we all might have inherited false realities that must be removed. What is truly real, and what is not truly real? Are the things that we do, conditioned reflex? Are we self-deceived? We must allow the Word to cleanse us so that we are honest to the Lord, honest to our conscience, honest to people, honest to God, and let the Word speak into our lives.

That is the part of conscience that you can see, it is a pure conscience, or self-consciousness. It is an emotion that needs to be trained. Here is the danger zone, remember there are danger zones – Jesus says that if you curse or get angry at your brother (in the Sermon on the Mount), you have to watch because let not the sun go down on your anger lest you give room to the devil. This area (the emotional thing), for it to flow, you must watch it all the time because this is the entrance of the enemy to use a seared conscience, to use an evil conscience, to use a conscience that is based on the false conditioned reality against you. That

is why, to say that you cannot rely on your conscience, is wrong. At the same time to say that that is all you need to rely on, is also wrong but we have put the conscience in its place.

The conscience is important. Paul says that we should have faith with a good conscience because the conscience tells us the level of faith. You cannot cheat yourself, you cannot be dishonest with yourself, you cannot lie to yourself – your body will know that you lie to yourself. In fact, it has been tested psychologically, we humans are made to love and to tell the truth. When you tell a lie, your whole-body system goes against you. Remember at one time we did a scientific analysis of Reverse Speech? Reverse Speech is when they tape it, it is not back-masking. Back-masking is something else. Reverse Speech is when you speak something, and you play it backwards. An Australian discovered that when you are trying to lie, your Reverse Speech tells the truth. You cannot hide your lie. Some part of your body reacts. In fact, if you live a lie all your life, your lie is causing you sickness and death, your lie is killing you literally. Your false reality is killing you. The only cure is to get back to the truth and there is only one truth, Jesus is the way, the truth, and the life and His Word is the way, the truth, and the life.

#### *Making melody in your heart*

However, your conscience, once fully trained, is an instrument that is so accurate and remarkable, it is the conscience the way the Lord meant it to be. Once well trained, your conscience which is actually your consciousness will make music that affects your soul and your body and health will spring forth from you. You cannot have a merry heart unless your conscience is in tune. A merry heart does good like a medicine and when the Holy Spirit fills you, one of the things He gives you is a song in your heart, *making melody in your heart*, *making melody in your heart*, so it makes melody and that melody is what cures you.

In the end, your conscience is actually not the base consciousness of right and wrong alone, it includes that. It is not even just an indicator of the level of faith. You know what, if you understand and this is where it helps you, if you understand that your conscience is pure spirit emotion, then your conscience is actually the part of you that sings. You see, in life, we need music, we need knowledge and wisdom, we need free choice. Without free choice, some people would rather die a free man than live a slave. That is, we humans, we treasure freedom. We need freedom in order to experience life, the fullness of life, at least the sense of

that freedom. We need wisdom and knowledge to have that sense of discovery. We need music.

What makes your life rich? What makes your life miserable? Take away all the music in the whole planet, imagine what the whole planet is like. Correct? Whether you are someone who plays music a lot or hears music a lot, it does not matter. Music is important to humans. It is an important part of us and the secret to training is here, Ephesians 5:19, the melody in your heart. Remember God created us to be like Him. He makes us have this part that can worship. You cannot really worship without emotions. You need emotions to worship. You need emotions to enjoy laughter, pleasure. This is the part of you that enjoys life. You take away emotions, you are just a robot. That is an important part of you.

You see, your conscience is more than that. It helps you enjoy life. Train it in the way of the Lord and life becomes full and the actual training of your conscience is in hearing the music from your heart. When your heart plays the music again, your conscience is healthy. When the music stops, then you have got to watch out. If you watch every little child that grows up, they are all naturally musical, even when they call their mama, “Mama...”. When they play, “Come here...”. Nowadays when we adults say, “Come here”, the music has gone. We need to find the music again. When the music is alive and playing, life is rich.

### *Enjoying life*

The Christian life is fun, which is why people say, “*Wah*, you all fast so much”. *Ya*, we enjoy fasting. “You all pray so much”! We enjoy prayer. You see, it is not works. We are actually doing it because we enjoy it, we have got so much benefits from it. If we do not enjoy it, we cannot last long and by the way, being in the ministry, I enjoy the ministry. It is when you enjoy it that you reach your peak. Think about it, if you are an engineer and you do not enjoy being an engineer, you can never reach your peak, you are already working against yourself. If you are an architect and you do not enjoy being an architect, you are already working against yourself. If you are a Christian and you do not enjoy the Christian life, God helps you, I do not know what you want to be. I do not know why many preachers and many churches take the fun out of Christian life. It is like they are so convinced that the 11th commandment says, *thou shalt not have fun!* I cannot find that in the Bible. God wants to make your life fun. Jesus never used the word “fun”, but He says, “I have come that you might have joy and that your joy might be full”. If Jesus was talking to some of the people who talked street

language, Jesus would be telling them, “I have come so your life would be fun”. Put the fun back into your Christianity from the Word. Take pleasure in God and you will find your conscience strong and back to the place where it should be. We will talk about the other two-thirds of your spirit man, but this is how we develop our spirit man.

## Chapter 5...

### Phroneo and Nous

In Watchman Nee's book *The Spiritual Man*, in the standard chart, he has *Emotions*, *Will* and *Mind* as the *Soul*; in the *Spirit*, he says *Intuition*, *Conscience* and *Communion*. We looked at *Conscience* – we tied it to an inner sense, that many people sense an inner sense of right and wrong, but we have expanded it as more than that; it is more than just right and wrong; it is more like a spiritual emotion. *Intuition* is an inner knowing, so it is like an inner mind and we replaced it with the word “mind”. *Communion*, we tied it to the will. *Communion* is a partnership with God from the word “*koinonia*”. *Communion* talks about being linked or being in union with God, union or partnership with God. So, there is a will when two people or two individuals or two beings decide to be one together, that is communion and so it has to do with the will.

Let us look at the new chart. In the new chart, this is the way that we understand it clearer. *Spirit Emotion* was originally *Conscience*, *Spirit Mind* was originally *Intuition*, and *Spirit Will* was originally *Communion*. We touched on all these areas.

If you look at it, more than conscience, then you realise that there is much more than that. We went on a deep study on the word “conscience” (in Greek, it is “*suneidesis*”) and we showed you from the Bible itself, that the Bible defines “*suneidesis*” as more than conscience; it is consciousness. However, what type of consciousness? Emotional consciousness. You see, you can be emotionally conscious. It is an inner part of your spirit man that needs to be trained. Remember, when we are born again, we are spiritual babes, the Bible does call us spiritual babes, which means that there is an inner part of our sensing that needs to be trained and we showed that the conscience is in development.

We showed from Romans 14 that different Christians have different levels, have different spiritual emotions. Some feel (in Romans 14) that it is right to eat only vegetables and cannot eat meat, and some feel that, you know, everything is sanctified by God. So, these are all Christians in the Bible. We have not talked about any other things outside of the Bible. These are Christians in the Bible, in Romans 14 and 1 Corinthians 8, some feel an idol is something,

they are conscious of the idol. Paul says, but those who are stronger, an idol is nothing. These are Christians again. In the Bible, there are different levels of feeling and sensing and consciousness and we showed how if you understand the conscience is actually the emotion, that you do have a spiritual emotion. We all know one thing, emotions must always be trained.

### *Well trained emotions*

When you see your conscience as an emotion, then you know that it needs to be trained. Now, once it is trained, is good. You could use it, you could flow with it. A well-trained emotion is like a good horse that you can now ride on, that can carry you into pleasure. Without emotions, you do not feel pleasure, but emotions are designed so that we feel pleasure. You see, originally, the word “*suneidesis*”, the very essence of the word “*suneidesis*”, and we did examine it, is actually designed to give us pleasure. If you take away emotions, you have got no more pleasure. It is just doing without feeling, it is very robotic. It is the emotion part that give us pleasure. Think about it. When you think about conscience as telling you right and wrong, when your conscience tells you that you are doing what is right, doesn't it give you a good feeling inside? Then when your conscience tells you that you are doing something wrong, doesn't it give you a bad feeling? It has robbed you of the pleasure.

We can be so focused on right and wrong that we forget that it is the will of God that we enjoy the life He created. A lot of Christians do right but they do not enjoy doing right. They are miserable doing right. They are miserable attending church, they are miserable doing Christian things. Something is wrong somewhere. They have been robbed of the emotional pleasure of the Christian life, robbed of the emotional pleasure of being in the presence of God or being in holiness or doing the right thing. Doing the right thing should be exciting, wonderful, glorious. It should not be “Oh no, I have got to study my Bible again”. What kind of relationship do we have with God? What have we lost? We have lost the pleasure because our emotions are not properly developed. We have never learned to take pleasure in the Word of God. The Word of God has not given us pleasure.

Now, how long does it take to give us pleasure? Sometimes you have to train it first before you get pleasure. It is just like playing the guitar. When you learn to play an instrument, at first it is not fun to press the guitar strings, your fingers get sore, then the skin comes off, then

you have got to learn to press again, then you learn the chords, then you have got to learn the hand movements, so you do not feel so much pleasure. You might say, “Is this supposed to be pleasure”? Then we tell you, “It is the right thing to do”. Okay, you have got to learn that is the right thing to do. So, you say, “Okay, I’ll do it because it is right” but after some time when you have mastered it, then you have got the pleasure of singing a song. Then you enjoy the song and you enjoy singing. Imagine, enjoying playing your own instrument and singing along. There is a certain pleasure in that.

Same with driving a car or playing a piano. When you learn to drive a car, nowadays you are allowed to learn in automatic gear, but long ago, you used manual gear. You need to play with the clutch and the brake and all those things. Some people press the brake, but they press the wrong thing, they press the clutch. So, you are learning to drive a car and then, you have got to learn all the road rules, you have got to learn what the signs mean and all these things. Nowadays, it is all signal lights, flip the light. Long ago, when they just invented the signal light, when you had to turn to the right, you needed hand signals. I learned my driving long ago in Malaysia. You need hand signal, even with the light so right turn was okay. You all still remember your left turn? Can you imagine doing that in the car. So, when the hand sticks up, people will say, “What is this guy doing”? “*Oh*, he is going around the roundabout”. So, you learn all these signals and when you are new to driving, you are frightened of the traffic, you do not know whether you are really in your lane or you are too much to the left, too much to the right. Sometimes we just tell people, “You see the black line on the road”? You say, “What black line? I see a white line, nobody taught me to see the black line”. In every highway that is frequently used, the spot that most cars go by is blackened. Did you notice? There is a white line but the white line, in between the lanes, there is a part darker, that is where most cars go by. In general, most cars take that one and that is the centre between the two white lines, so do not go off, that is the general thing. The blackest part of the road is under you, you will more or less go in the centre of the white line.

There are things that they do not teach you also. When you are driving in the corner, they will always tell you to slow down in the corner but the actual way the race driver does it is they do not actually slow down. When you slow down, it depends on the curve of the corner. You know, road engineers build an angle on the road. There is always an angle at every turn. It is not a flat turn. Nobody designs a road that is what I call a 180° flat, it is always an angle, so that you need a certain speed to negotiate it. You know why, because when you turn,

according to the law of Physics, when you are doing a turn, you have what I call the centripetal force and centrifugal force working, so the centrifugal force wants to throw you out, which is why they make the road curved a bit. So, when you are driving, you learn the basic skills, then you have got to learn, what I call, the expert's skills. I remember reading books on that. I am always a reader, everything I read, I like to find out the theory behind, everything, some curiosity in me. I found out that they never taught me all those things. Then I realised that when you are cornering, you do slow down. At first, when you enter the corner, you slow down, but as you come out, you slightly accelerate, it gives a firm grip, you slightly accelerate when coming out. So, you do not slow down all the time. There is a part where you go in slowly, then you slightly accelerate. Of course, race drivers, you know, they accelerate very fast, that is how they control the corners because they are fighting with centripetal and centrifugal forces in all these things.

Why are we talking about driving? It is all part of learning and teaching. It is all illustration. You say, "why"? You see, Jesus talked in parables, right? These are my new parables. All my parables are from Science. He took a long time telling parables. In fact, that is all He talked about. He just told them parables and he said good night / good morning and went off. Then the people said, "*Huh*"? At least, I tell you the parables and I explain the parables to you. So, there is a difference.

When you are learning to drive a car with all the driving skills, here is another thing. Everyone drives according to his nature. So, the next time I sit in your car, you will know why, I am analysing you. You drive according to your nature. When you are the type who wants to go forward, forward, forward, that is your nature. When you are the type that is *arrrh*, I am not talking about being a road hog, when you are on 90°, you still go at 60°. That is your nature, but there is an average in between. On average, I can drive very fast but only when I have to make a certain decision. I remember I was late for a wedding and I was supposed to be the preacher there. It would be horrible if the bride was there, the bridegroom was there, and the preacher did not turn up. First wedding and the preacher did not turn up. So, I had to actually break the speed limit in some areas in Australia just to get there. I said, "Never mind, I'll take the risk" but I had to make a decision, that is not my normal driving, to drive faster, to be on time and at the risk of getting a fine along the way. I said, "Do not worry, I will worry about it later but let me be on time for that". When I went there, I was on time but everybody else was late. I found that the lights were not even on yet. That kind of

situation arises. When you sit in my car and I drive you, you will find I am a relaxed driver. Some of you, when you drive, you are tensed, like you have just got constipation. It is important for us to know that everything you do, reflects you.

Today's parable is everything you do reflects you. The way you sit, the way you write, I have done handwriting analysis with all my young people. I remember we had visitors from USA and they joined us for the American altar building. There is a brother from USA who came with his wife, so they were there, and they said, "Hey, how about mine"? So, I said, "Okay, you are the one who handles finance, you are the one who did this" and he said, "*Wah*, you can tell all that from the writing"? Yes. Everything you do, reflects you. It is a part of you but you all need to learn how to enjoy yourself. The journey is as important as the destination. In Christian life, if you do not have that balanced, something will go missing in your life. The journey is as important as the destination. It is important to have a balance in everything in life.

### *Enjoying life*

We are talking about having pleasure in this area here, enjoying so when you do something, you need to show your enjoyment, that you are enjoying doing those things. I do not mean that you have to be laughing hysterically and laughing like a mad hatter or whatever. Then you cannot see every roundabout, most likely when you are driving, you are enjoying driving so much that you cause an accident, but you need self-control in whatever you are doing, everything shows forth.

The purpose of the conscience is actually, first of all, to give us pleasure, which is why last week I ended with the fact that the way to train our conscience and the spiritual emotions is through music. If you are someone who is music-less, I would encourage you to hear music, even if you cannot play music, to hear more music in your life. It is possible to live your entire life without music. You know there is music around you, but you yourself have no music. You wake up, from morning 9 to 5 you work, then because you might need an extra job, so after that you take a second job, work until 10 or extra hours, when you come back, you are so tired, you just do your devotion and then you sleep. The only time you have a bit of music is when you come to church and then you sing the songs. That is good, but you need more than that. When you incorporate the love of music into your life, and music being a

regular part of your life, something changes on your inside. Something develops when you learn to enjoy your Christian life, you enjoy your work life, you enjoy every part of your life. I have hundreds of emails every day coming to me. Sometimes they are depressed, they have work problems and all other problems, and you look at every one. If you are one of those who wrote those emails to me, I have got a solution for you. Check your life, you have very little music. That is why you are depressed constantly, and you are constantly wondering why are you where you are, when originally God told you that you are supposed to be where you are but half-way working, you lost the joy of your salvation.

The Bible gives us something, the joy of salvation. Where is the pleasure in knowing Jesus? You have lost it. Where is the pleasure in worshipping God? You have lost it. Where is the pleasure in studying the Bible? You have lost it. Where is the pleasure in attending church? You have lost it. When you lose the pleasure in Christian life, you lose the most important thing that God wants. Do you know God's original purpose is not for you to reach the destination? So, that you are so stressed out, not only type A personality, type A+++ , so stressed out until you just, by the skin of your teeth, make it to heaven. *Arrrh*. You know, all your entire life, you are stressed out. Is that what God wants you to do? You know what, you have failed to learn the most important thing. When you go to heaven, you think you will enjoy it, *arrrh*, but you have already developed the character of not enjoying. So, when you reach heaven, you think, *arrrh*, finally I can rest from my labour and enjoy, but your character is developed so much that you are the type who cannot enjoy, even in heaven, you have got lots of things to do, you need to sweep the floor or vacuum or anything. You are so... the angels have to send you back to school, something like kindergarten in heaven, to learn again how to enjoy. That is why blessed are those who enter into the kingdom of God, they are like little children. Unless you are like little children, you cannot enter into the kingdom of heaven.

The emotional part of our spirit is very important. I see very few Christians develop their spiritual emotions. They only think of their conscience, right and wrong, as long as they sense right and wrong, that is good enough. Not good enough. Sensing right and wrong is not good enough because then you are only dealing with sins, correct? You are only avoiding sins, make sure that you do not do the wrong thing, make sure that you do not, that is all. Is that what the Christian life is about?

The Lord came to give us pleasure. It is important that when you discover the right thing, that you enjoy doing the right thing. You find joy in that. So, sometimes it is work, that is why you have got to learn under someone; mentoring / discipling is part of God's system. At first, you have not learned the joy of it, like when you master the guitar, when you master driving. Let us say you know how to drive, you can go to a country and rent a car, and then you can enjoy the view. *Ah*, the pleasure of driving. So, the pleasure must be there. The pleasure of doing something good.

### *The Spirit Mind*

Now, we look at the *Spirit Mind*. We have studied about the word “*dianoia*”, that the word “*dianoia*” is the Greek equivalent of the word “*yetsar*” in Hebrew, which is translated as “imagination”. We have noted that it is found in Hebrews 8 & 10 and in every verse where it talks about *You shall love the LORD your God with all your heart, with all your mind* – when it says “mind”, they always use “*dianoia*”. Now, the “*dianoia*” which is translated as “imagination” is like in your overall system of all these things going on, you need to (you see, so many little things) treat all these things like little hard disk spaces, sectored, and you are one being (your spirit, soul and body). However, you have got so many sectors to do all those things and your *Spirit* section – treat this like a hard disk, you know, inside the hard disk, actually it is circular inside, it is not exactly in the same position, in terms of computer, it is actually hidden somewhere, could be the edge or somewhere.

### *Computer memory*

Your *Spirit* section is the section that is the core, everything else would be based around it. Your core system – data, memory, boot up system and everything – that is your spirit man. Your *Soul* area – mind, emotions and will – is other sections that control all the various programs you need in your life. The skills, understanding, knowledge, the “how” and all those are in your *Soul* area and then your *Body*, which is like your machinery that helps you do all the work. It has a second sub-set of programs that covers it, that is how it runs, it connects to the action part and it has its own data centre. Its data centre sometimes is locked into the molecules, the chemicals that run in your body, and it might affect your glands and it can also be affected by your glands. It is a two-way stream, in your endocrine system in your body or in all the DNA of your body.

As you all know, the DNA of each one of us, they have now discovered that when you change your diet, or you live on certain diet for a long time, it does affect your DNA. They have found that it now affects your DNA. So, you can imagine, out of the three sons of Noah, eight souls, we have got all the races of human beings. You can see the different shapes of the forehead, the nose and all these of different cultures / different people. All the DNA of the generations of people from the three sons, Japheth, Ham and Shem, have changed because the in-breeding, the diet that they have, plus the weather that they go through, change the persons, not just in the colour of their skin but also in their very features. All this can be affected by diet and the environment. The environment is affecting our DNA all the time, sometimes mutations take place.

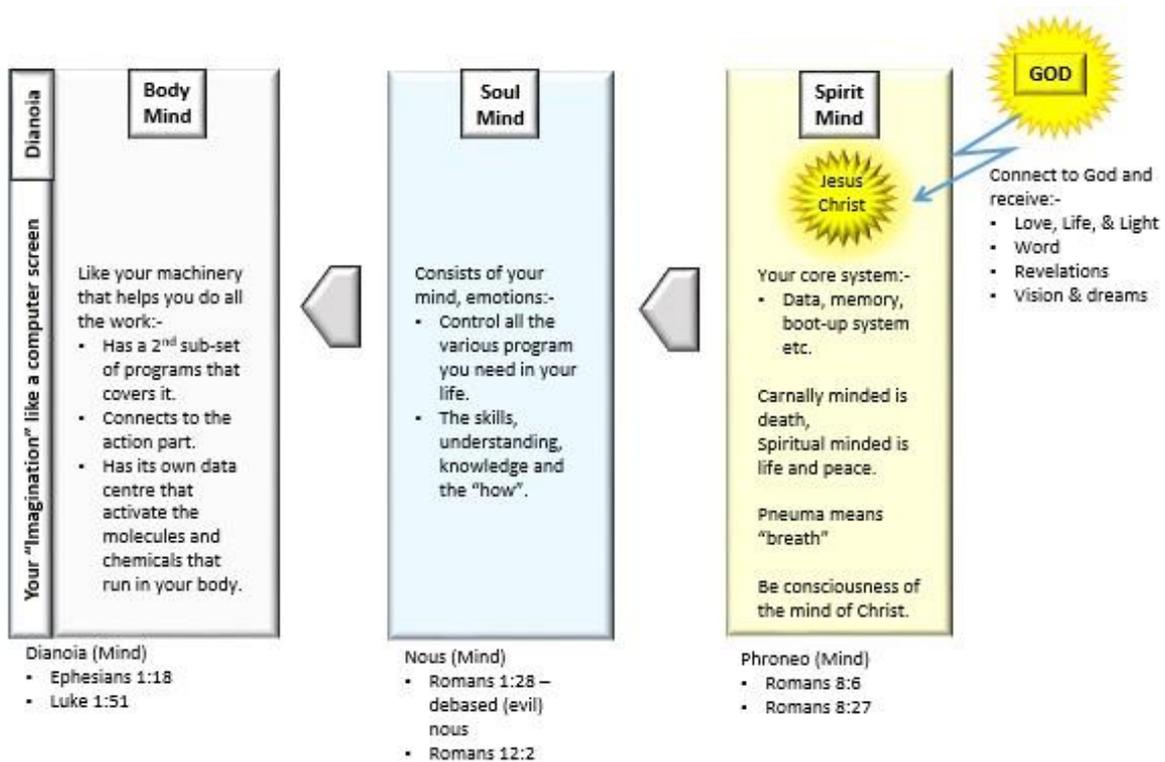


Diagram 1

We know there is a memory system here. In these areas in the diagram, you have got 3 x 3 which is 9 total areas – it is just like your computer, it has so many parts that you do not know. You actually have different memories in your computer. You might have a portable memory that uses the USB drive. You have a hard disk or what you call the Scan disk or whatever and your graphics now also has its own memory. Then your CPU might have its own additional memory to help the program run faster. Nowadays there are many parts of the computer, but the whole running and the whole programming of it depends on the computer screen. If you cannot see the screen, you cannot do anything. The screen on the computer is very important. If you are a programmer and you are programming a computer, whether you

are using a low-level machine language or some of the older ones like C++ or COBOL or Pascal, whatever language you are using, you need a screen to do the programming. You need a screen, something to see what you are typing. Even when you have to access different parts with a command, you still need a screen. Whether you are reduced to using BASIC or DOS where you are using lines and all that, you are giving a command, you need a screen to see what you are typing. Or whether you are a graphics artist, you do not care about programming languages as long as your programs run beautifully, and you can cut, paste, add, and then you use a program to enhance all of these things, you need a screen. Of course, we know that the screen can be of many layers, you open many windows, but you still need one screen. You can open a few screens if you want to, but you still need one screen, minimum.

### *Screen of the imagination*

The screen for this whole system is your *dianoia*. Now you can relate. Your *dianoia* (which is your imagination) will sometimes reflect things from your body, will sometimes reflect things from your spirit, will sometimes reflect things from your soul (your soul doing the thinking). Your *dianoia* is your computer screen for you if you look at yourself as an organic computer. Your imagination is that screen. Now, some of us have lived so long without imagination, we are screen-less, but it is actually still there.

There is a study about memories and they found that the brain actually stores memories based on more than one sense. It is almost like the brain stores memories holographically, using visual / smell / taste / emotion content and all those things. It is like a hologram memory inside you but there is a screen. Even when you do not realise it, there is a screen there, there is still a screen that you do see something. Of course, sometimes you forget that you have a screen, it comes out in your nightmares, in your dreams, then you know. Even if you think you do not dream, all the scientists will tell you is, that everyone dreams, except you do not remember your dreams.

If you are robbed of your ability for REM sleep (REM stands for Rapid Eye Movement), because while you are sleeping, your eyes are moving. You know why your eyes are moving? Because you are actually seeing something, and your eyes react like you are seeing something. So, all of you when you are asleep, it is REM sleep that allow you to dream. They have tested people, when they rob people of REM sleep, their whole life goes haywire, they

can go mad. It seems to be a part of us that is necessary. They have got different explanations for REM sleep which we will not go into because we have got spiritual explanations too. What I want to point to is this fact, that every one of you has an imagination and a screen, and it is whether you tap upon it and develop it or not. Whether it is hidden deep in the sub-conscious part of your mind or your emotions somewhere, but the key is to bring it into your present consciousness and work with it. When you were first born, every child has an imagination. Once upon a time, long, long, ago, when you were born in Bethlehem, of course whatever home town you were from, you had your imagination. As we grew to be an adult, our schooling system, our education system and our modern society system, based on intelligence quotient and logic, do not encourage imagination that much. Maybe if you go to an artistic school, then it is different, but it is important to develop your imagination.

### *Studying the Greek*

The Greek word on the word “mind” – *Love the LORD your God with all your heart, with all your mind* – is the word “*dianoia*”. Hebrews 8 says God will put His laws in your mind and write them on your hearts. Then in Hebrews 10, it says God will put His laws into your hearts, and in your mind, He will write them. When you see the word “mind”, the word used is “*dianoia*”, which is the one found in Ephesians 1:18 – the eyes of your *dianoia* (which is your understanding), the eyes of your imagination. In Luke 1:51, the word “*dianoia*” has been translated as “imagination”.

The Hebrew equivalent, in the Old Testament when (in Genesis 6), God saw that the imagination of man was wicked. God saw two things, God saw the wickedness of man (that is, his actions) and his imagination was evil continually (Genesis 6:5). Then God destroyed the world. He saw two things: his imagination was bad, and his actions were bad. His “imagination” is the Hebrew word “*yetser*”. The future that is coming up, is your imagination and your imagination is your ability to give birth.

I introduce you now to two different Greek words: One is the Greek word “*nous*” that you find all over in the Greek New Testament. “*Nous*” is the word that is commonly translated as the word “mind”, sometimes translated as “thought” and different things. It is the Greek word “*nous*”. It is just a general word for the word “mind”. The word “*nous*” is applied more, to anyone of this *Mind*, can be good, can be bad; can be the *Body Mind*, the *Soul Mind*, or the

*Spirit Mind*. It is just a general word. Many times, it has been applied to the *Soul Mind*. If you study the word “*nous*” in the whole New Testament, you will come to that conclusion. Then when it talks about the *Spirit Mind*, they usually use a different Greek word, when they specifically want to talk about it. It is the word “*phronesis*” or “*phroneo*” and usually when in Greek, it gives something else – there is the verb, the noun, adjective and all those things. They normally give it in the form of the verb. So, the root word is “*phroneo*”.

I want to show you how Paul changes the Greek word as it flows through Romans. We could take the whole New Testament, but it takes too long, so we take Romans. We look at Paul’s letter to the Romans. Paul was a Hebrew and a learned man, and he knew Greek, and we can assume that in the letters in the Bible, written by him, his choice of Greek words must have been purposeful. It is just like if I write a letter to you, whether a letter or email, I always choose the words carefully. So, if I use three different words to describe three different situations, they are actually meant for that. Paul had access to many Greek words, but he chose certain Greek words. As you all know, he is the one who used the Greek word “*zoe*” that today you understand it to be the life of God. Do you know, it is only because of Paul’s writing? Although the Greek has many words for “life”, Paul took a word “*zoe*” which is not commonly used in the Greek for “life” and he used it as a reference to God’s kind of life. In its original form, the Greek words used by Plato, Aristotle and all that, “*zoe*” was used more to describe something like a divinity level. Paul took it and used it for God’s love. He took that language and he redefined it and used it and today you understand the word “*zoe*” but if you talk to a Greek person, not modern Greek, modern Greek has changed a lot, but if you were to travel in time and talked to a *Koine* Greek (the common Greek of the New Testament), the word “*zoe*” is not understood to be God’s kind of life. It is not. Paul redefined it and used it.

In the same way, when Paul wrote Romans, it was one of those books where he purposefully spelt out his doctrines. When he did so, his choice of Greek words is important.

The first time he uses the word “mind” (as translated in English) in Romans 1:28, he says in a negative sense about those who reject God: “*And even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to a debased mind* (debased *nous*; I am going to use the Greek word for the word “mind”, so that short-circuits the process, he uses the word “*nous*”;

to a debased nous), to do those things which are not fitting”. There is such a thing as a mind that is gone, a debased mind, completely evil.

### *Training the right parts*

In Romans 7:22, Paul says, “*For I delight in the law of God according to the inward man*”. You see, it relates to the study of the “inward man” which usually refers to the “spirit man”, and he says, “My spirit man delights...”. Delight is to enjoy. “... in the law of God”. *Eh*, the inner man enjoys the law of God. Didn’t I mention about enjoyment just now? So, some of you are wondering, “Can I find pleasure in Christian life”? Your spirit man was created to enjoy. Why, you think God created Adam and Eve to work, work, work as slaves? The Garden of Eden was not created for work, work, work; no, the Garden of Eden was created for them to enjoy, to enjoy the Garden. There is a part of your spirit man that enjoys the things of God and here he puts “the law of God”. When your spirit man hears the law of God, your spirit man says “Hallelujah! That is nice”.

For instance, not everybody might enjoy the durian fruit. The same fruit can produce different things. Asians have got a few things; actually, Asian cultures have got strange things. There is another thing that not everybody enjoys: the Asian dried and salted fish. I used to live in Penang for some time. The Penang salted fish, if you cook it, it gives the smell. How many do not enjoy that smell, find it smelly? Salted fish, it is different to everyone, but we acquire the taste. Now here is the thing: some things you do not enjoy, you can learn to enjoy. How many did not like durian before but now love durian? At first you do not like it, but you learn to enjoy it.

The thing about God’s Word is this and you will delight in the law of God – *When you are born again*. – He created something in you to enjoy all the good things, that enjoys the things of God. We need to discover that. Paul mentions about that in verse 22: “*For I delight* (the word “delight” is to take joy, enjoyment) *in the law of God according to the inward man*”. So, this part, enjoy.

Now, here is where the contradiction comes in verse 23: “*But I see another law in my members, warring against the law of my mind...*”. So, something outside is fighting against the enjoyment. The word “mind” is the word “*nous*”. There is “*I see another law in my*

*members* (in my body), *warring* (look, it is at war, this is not enjoying, this is at war, warring) *against the law of my nous*". He uses the word "*nous*".

We are looking at every word "mind" in Romans in this study to show forth that Paul purposefully chooses the word "*phroneo*" to talk about this: *Spirit Mind*. We talked about this area: *Spirit Emotion*. We talk about *Spirit Mind*. In order to identify what your spirit mind is like, to your consciousness, we use the original Greek words of the Bible. Generally, he uses the word "*nous*" until he starts talking about the spiritual side of the word "mind". I have already told you it is different from the word "*dianoia*". You know what *dianoia* is? It is just a computer screen for all the six parts and it needs to be trained to be used by the right parts.

#### *Carnal mind vs debased mind*

Then you also have verse 25: "*I thank God – through Jesus Christ our Lord! So then, with the mind (nous) I myself serve the law of God...*". Wait a minute, the *nous* can be trained. He says, "with the *nous*", so the *nous* can refer to any part of this diagram. You are just wondering which part of the *nous*. So, he says, "with the *nous*". When I say "*nous*", I circle all three, anyone of these but we know that one of the "*nous*" was warring against this. Then in Romans 1 you saw that the *nous* can be debased. That means it is no more spiritual, living just outside here, just using the word "*nous*".

In Romans 8 he suddenly changed it, so sudden that you know that he purposely did it. The unfortunate thing is most people read the Bible in a translated language like English or whatever, so they do not have the opportunity to read the original Bible in Greek. They do not know that the change has come, but the change has come. Paul uses the word in verse 6: "*For to be carnally minded...*" – here is the word "*phronema*" which is from the word "*phrontizo*". "*Phronema*" is like the result of "*phroneo*" so it is related, same root. When you *phroneo*, it becomes *phronema*, is a result of *phroneo*. He uses the word "*phronema*". He says: "*For to be carnally minded (phronema) is death, but to be spiritually minded (phronema) is life and peace*". Then he says (verse 7): "*Because the carnal mind (phronema) is enmity against God...*". For the first time, he suddenly shifts the Greek words. If you read Romans in Greek, you suddenly say, "*Huh, he changed the Greek words*". In English, when you read it, it is still using the same word "mind" but it stands out that something is different about why he uses "*phronema*".

Then in Romans 8:27, “*Now He who searches the hearts knows what the mind (phronema) of the Spirit is...*”. He did not use the word “*nous*”, did not use the word “*dianoia*” by the way either. You see, there are specific words – “*dianoia*” is only used for something; “*nous*” is for another thing; “*phronema*” is for another thing and we are just focusing on Romans.

Now, having looked at Romans, in Romans 11:34, “*For who has known the mind (nous) of the LORD?*”. He has gone back to “*nous*” again. He only uses “*phronema*” in Romans 8. Then when he moves out of Romans 8, he is in chapter 11 now, he is back to using the word “*nous*”. Remember, in chapter 1, he starts with “*nous*” and he uses it in a bad way that the people who do not worship God, they have a debased *nous*, a mind that is so twisted, it is no longer of any good. Now he talks about God and having this “*nous*” of the Lord. Remember, the word “*nous*” is the general word used for the word “mind”.

Then in Romans 12:2, he talks again: “*And do not be conformed to this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind (nous), that you may prove what is that good and acceptable and perfect will of God*”. Look down to verses 15 & 16: “*Rejoice with those who rejoice, and weep with those who weep. Be of the same mind (phroneo, hey, “phroneo”, same chapter he changes the Greek word: Be of the same “phroneo”) toward one another. Do not set your mind (phroneo) on high things, but associate with the humble...*”.

So, look at all the play on two Greek words. We saw just now the play on two Greek words. The last two are in Romans 14:5 and Romans 15:6. Let us look at them. Romans 14:5 – “*One person esteems one day above another (these are the conscious things again); another esteems every day alike. Let each be fully convinced in his own mind (nous)*”. Again, the general word “mind”. Last one, in Romans 15:6 – “*that you may with one mind (here is a totally different word: “homothumadon”, one mind) and one mouth glorify God...*”. The word “mind” is actually not inside, it is actually the words “be of one accord”. So, you can leave that one out because “be of one accord” includes the mind, the emotions and the will.

In Colossians 3:2, he especially chooses the word “*phroneo*” when he says: “*Set your mind on things above...*” but at other times, he uses the normal Greek word “*nous*”. So how do we understand the spirit part of our mind? Now, we know that we have a spirit part of our mind,

the soul part of our mind and the body part of our mind. Just now I was just reading the Bible. Now I am explaining it.

When he says in Romans 1 that those who constantly go against their conscience and constantly go against God, in the end their whole mind becomes a body mind, because he talks about them making idols in Romans 1. It is in your Bible. I am just quoting details in the Bible. It talks about those who worship idols, those whose conscience are hardened, those who persistently are unthankful towards God, they do not worship God as God, they begin to worship the creation instead of the Creator – so they become body-based. It is possible for the mind to be a carnal mind. By the way, when Paul uses the expression “carnal mind” in Romans 8:6, “*For to be carnally minded is death, but to be spiritually minded is life and peace.*”, in both cases, he uses the word “*phronema*”. Why does he use “*phronema*”? Because there are slight differences. You have a carnal mind, that is the mind that is constantly in this *Spirit*, but when Paul talks about life and death, that settles it.

In Romans 8:6 where he says the carnal mind is death, the spiritual mind is life and peace, let us look at this. Is he talking about physical death or spiritual death? “Spiritual death”.

Romans 8:6 context is talking about spiritual life because he cannot be contrasting physical life with physical life. Can you see that? Then are physical life contrasts with physical death? Spiritual life (“*zoe*”, he uses the word “*zoe*”) contrasts with spiritual death. Spiritual life, spiritual death. Can you see it is in the context? It is very Biblical and a very balanced interpretation.

Now, if we all agree that the carnal mind produces death, would you say Romans 8:6 goes further than Romans 1:28 (the debased mind)? I am asking you questions from the Bible. Remember Romans 1:28? I am just re-quoting the Bible, it calls it a debased mind. Romans 8:6 calls it a carnal mind. Are the two the same or is one worse than the other? One is worse than the other. Okay, which one is worse? We are interpreting the Bible to understand this. So, to solve it, look at what the debased mind makes them do and what the carnal mind make them do. You see, in the debased mind, it only talks about natural death to a certain extent.

Romans 1: debased mind is found in verse 28, and look, he is talking about natural things. In verses 24-27: *“Therefore God also gave them up to uncleanness, in the lusts of their hearts, to dishonor their bodies among themselves, who exchanged the truth of God for the lie, and worshiped and served the creature rather than the Creator, who is blessed forever. Amen. For this reason God gave them up to vile passions. For even their women exchanged the natural use for what is against nature. Likewise also the men, leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lust for one another, men with men committing what is shameful, and receiving in themselves the penalty of their error which was due”*. So, in their own physical bodies, they are already having some problems.

Then he says in verses 28-32: *“And even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to a debased mind, to do (see, what are the results of a debased mind, to do) those things which are not fitting; being filled with all unrighteousness, sexual immorality, wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness; full of envy, murder, strife, deceit, evil-mindedness (“kakoetheia” and the word “mind” is not really inside there, that is why we never touched on it, “evilness” kind of thing); they are whisperers, backbiters, haters of God, violent, proud, boasters, inventors of evil things, disobedient to parents, undiscerning, untrustworthy, unloving, unforgiving, unmerciful; who knowing the righteous judgment of God, that those who practice such things are deserving of death, not only do the same but also approve of those who practice them”*. Now, this group of people includes every sinner and even if you and I have not done a lot of those sins there, we are included. These are all those, in fact, some of us might have parents who worship the creation rather than the Creator. I would say this group of people that are lost in all those things that God gave them up and they need one thing, the Gospel. They need the Gospel. He is talking about people who have no revelation of God yet.

Then you look over at Romans 8. You see, he introduces what the world is like without God. Romans 8:1-8, *“There is therefore now no condemnation to those who are in Christ Jesus, who do not walk according to the flesh, but according to the Spirit. For the law of the Spirit of (zoe or) life in Christ Jesus has made me free from the law of sin and death. For what the law could not do in that it was weak through the flesh, God did by sending His own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, on account of sin: He condemned sin in the flesh, that the righteous requirement of the law might be fulfilled in us who do not walk according to the flesh but according to the Spirit. For those who live according to the flesh set their minds on the things*

*of the flesh, but those who live according to the Spirit, the things of the Spirit. For to be carnally minded is death, but to be spiritually minded is life and peace. Because the carnal mind is enmity against God; for it is not subject to the law of God, nor indeed can be. So then, those who are in the flesh cannot please God”.*

Which one do you think is more horrible? In Bible schools, sometimes we have debates. The thing is: Is it talking about Christians or non-Christians, chapter 8? “Carnal Christians”. So, would you say that now in this (I’m talking about Christians), it is actually a worse thing?

Romans 1, it says in verses 18-19: *For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who suppress the truth in unrighteousness, because what may be known of God is manifest in them... – What does that mean”?* That means the judgement of the wrath of God; he is presenting what all humans are, in leading to the conclusion that all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God. Then he presents the gospel, in Romans 3 all the way to chapter 6, he lays out what the gospel is, the gift of righteousness. Then in chapter 7 he talks about the struggle between the spiritual law against the natural law of sin and death and then he resolves the struggle in chapter 8.

In Romans 1:20-21, *For since the creation of the world His invisible attributes are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even His eternal power and Godhead, so that they are without excuse, because, although they knew God, they did not glorify Him as God... – What does that mean?* He is talking about knowing God from His creation; not knowing God from His gospel but the easier question to answer is this: The greater has to include the lesser. That means if you are carnally minded, would you now also be debased? If you are debased, you have not reached your level of spiritually / carnally minded yet, correct? That means one includes the other because “debased mind” means a mind given to physical pleasure and physical things, whereas “carnal mind” means influenced from the flesh side, which includes the self and this side would include that side, but that side they might not have anything in the spirit yet.

Romans 1 talks about no gospel, they only know God through creation. Romans 8 – you have the gospel now and you are struggling between the spiritual mind and the carnal mind. Now, the understanding becomes clearer because of this diagram. It helps. Since there are three

minds, we all know only one can rule as one, one has to be the chairman. When you make a decision, it has to be one. The spiritual mind must be the king and prime minister. What is a spiritual mind? A spiritual mind is where the whole mind is given to the spirit (this is the king). A carnal mind is where the whole mind is given to the physical mind. You see why it was hard to understand the question just now? Now, I let you struggle, and you know why, a lack of understanding of the word “*phronema*” and the word “*phroneo*”.

You see, if you are Greek or understand Greek, then you know what the word “*phronema*” means. Let me show you the original word when they use the words “*phronema*” or “*phroneo*”. Look at what Paul exhorts us to have in chapter 12. You see what we are supposed to have? We are supposed to renew our mind in chapter 12. Let us take it logically, Romans 12:1-2, “*I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that you present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable to God, which is your reasonable service. And do not be conformed to this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind (nous), that you may prove what is that good and acceptable and perfect will of God*”. Romans 8 talks about the spiritual mind. Romans 12:1-2 say your *nous* is being renewed. The word “renew” is “*anakainoo*” which is like being changed to something new. It is from the word “*kainos*” which is “new”. Then he adds the word “*ana*” which is over and over again. Like the Anabaptists, people who baptise again. Renew again. The word “*ana*” means again. You renew again and again, it is “*anakainoo*”. That is a process of being new, and so you are made new, you are made new, you are made new.

Now, we know one part of us is born again: your spirit man, correct? In a sense, this is your new mind [*Spirit Mind*], this is your old mind [*Soul Mind*], this is your flesh mind [*Body Mind*], because when you are born again, you still retain your soul mind. To be renewed means this new mind must nominate your *nous*, that is why he uses the word “*nous*”, the whole thing is your *nous*. This is watched by this, made new; this is watched by this, made new; this one: present to God as a living sacrifice. Then you are renewed – your spirit mind is continually renewed.

Again, in Ephesians 4:23 it says, “*and be renewed in the spirit of your mind*”, “be renewed” in being spiritually minded, so let your spirit mind control. That is your spirit mind but to understand, he uses the word “*phroneo*” for the spirit “mind” or the carnal “mind”. In

Romans 12:16, “*Be of the same mind (phroneo, he goes back to phroneo) toward one another. Do not set your mind (phroneo) on high things but associate with the humble...*”.

### *The Greek scholars*

Now, when he says, “be of the same *phroneo*”, the word “*phroneo*” or “*phronema*” and all its usage, let me read to you the history of the word “*phroneo*”. Remember, Paul when he wrote this, he knows how it is used. Remember, Paul was very learned in all the literature of his time. In Acts 17, he is quoting Greek scholars. He quotes their own and talks about them, about how they, you know, some of those things. You say, “Did he quote other scholars”? Okay, since you do not know your Bible well, look at Acts 17 *lah*. Paul was well aware when he was with the Hellenist-speaking. There were the philosophers around him, and then he started preaching from there, at the Areopagus (verse 22). He says, “Men of Athens”, then he starts to preach. He says (verse 28): “*for in Him we live and move and have our being, as also some of your own poets have said...*”. Do you know he was not quoting the Bible? He was quoting their own scholars. So, I have proved to you that Paul knows other writings outside the Bible; he is a learned man. To the people that he was preaching to, he says, “*for in Him we live and move and have our being, as also some of your own poets have said,* (and then he says), *For we are also His offspring*”. That was not a quotation from the Old Testament. That was from their writings, *we are also His offspring*.

And, of course, when he wrote to Titus, he quoted the Crete’s own sayings to themselves, how they were liars. In that sense, we look back and we see the word “*phroneo*” in its original root form. The history of the word in the Greek literature (that is what Paul understood), from the Greek word “*phren*” (usually plural “*phrenes*”), the original meaning is diaphragm. The root word for “*phroneo*” means “breath” – the part of you that makes the breath go away, it means “diaphragm”. The diaphragm was, in the Greek philosophy, early regarded as a seed of intellectual or spiritual activity. It means inner part, inner mind, inner consciousness, inner understanding, inner internal organs, inward man. Can you see why Paul used “*phronema*”? Paul was very exact, he would have this picture in his mind when he was writing.

Then in its various usages by different classical Greek people, some of whom you know. Plato: he uses the word “*phronesis*” with “*phronema*” or “*phren*”, he uses it as the inner part

of man. He says that souls have *phronesis* or receptivity; souls have a diaphragm that receives the things of the spirit (the *phroneo* part). Then linguistically, Plato differentiates “*sophia*” as purely... “*sophia*” is wisdom, pure intellectual knowledge, from the more practical “*phronesis*”. But he says *phronesis* can help men in the battle between good and evil. So, *phronesis* is something that is like breath from God, an inward understanding.

According to Socrates, “*phronesis*” denotes the rule of good over the soul. That is why under the influence of Socrates, Plato answers the question of the unity of virtue by referring to “*phronesis*”. When he talks about God’s virtue and God’s things, he uses “*phroneo*”, “*phronesis*”. When I research a Greek word, I do not just look at Greek Concordance, I look at the origin of the Greek word used by the highest experts of Greek; I quote Socrates, Plato, Aristotle.

Aristotle uses the word “*prim*” which is the root form of “*phroneo*”. He says the “*phrenes*” (which is the plural for “*phren*”), for him, when he makes this statement that all living things have the ability to perceive, he uses a different Greek word, like “*aisthanomai*”, but the ability to comprehend “*phroneo*” only to a few. So, “*phroneo*” was very restricted in usage under Aristotle’s understanding.

Paul knew that the word “*phroneo*” was a specialised Greek word, like “*zoe*”, used for a special area, and he took the word “*phroneo*” into the New Testament usage, like “*zoe*”. Since the root word “*phroneo*” means diaphragm / breath, then the word “*phroneo*” (*Spirit Mind*) means it is a mind, breathed by the Spirit. That was Paul’s understanding. That is why he says when you are spiritually minded, the mind breathed by the Spirit, you will have life and peace (*zoe* life and peace). However, he warns, if you are carnally minded, you become breathed by “*phronema*”, carnally, by the devil because of death. That is why when you understand the Greek word, you would have been able to answer the question that a carnal mind is worse than a debased mind.

When you look at Paul’s understanding of the words “*phroneo*” and “*phronema*”, then you realise. Now, what is the spiritual mind? The spiritual mind is not a mind that functions by itself – that is the key. It must be linked to something. It must be joined to something. Joined

to the Spirit. In other words, even the flow of thoughts come from God. It is not your thoughts. It is the thoughts that flow from God that make you want to think those things.

### *The inward witness*

Which part is the inward witness”? Because when you read Kenneth E Hagin on “inward witness”, it is all the spirit. If you understand your inward witness includes three parts because your inward witness is your spirit witnessing to you in a trio. So, we learn one part at a time. We learn this is the *Spirit Emotion*. We learn what is truly the *Spirit Mind*.

Now, the next question: Is our conclusion in line with the Word of God? Let us look at 1 Corinthians 2. Remember, the word “*nous*” is also generally used for spiritual mind but let us see its usage in 1 Corinthians 2:9 – “*Eye has not seen, nor ear heard, Nor have entered into the heart of man The things which God has prepared for those who love Him*”. Now, it tells you that ordinary seeing / ordinary hearing / ordinary heart cannot see the things that God has for those who love Him. He takes something else in Verse 10: “*But God has revealed them to us through His Spirit. For the Spirit searches all things, yes, the deep things of God*”. Things we do not know or understand, even in this life we cannot understand all things. Verses 11-13: “*For what man knows the things of a man except the spirit of the man which is in him? Even so no one knows the things of God except the Spirit of God. Now we have received, not the spirit of the world, but the Spirit who is from God, that we might know the things that have been freely given to us by God. These things we also speak, not in words which man’s wisdom teaches but which the Holy Spirit teaches, comparing spiritual things with spiritual*”. Now, what does he mean in verse 13 “comparing spiritual things with spiritual”? Who is bringing this “comparing spiritual things”? That is the Spirit acting on this mind. Things that have not entered the heart before, now God let them enter.

Remember, “eye has not seen, nor ear heard” – Your eye seeing and your ear hearing actually goes back to your mind – all is processed by your brain. Your actual eyes are just instruments to receive the light. Your ears are to receive the sound waves, but the process is done in the brain. If you have got brain damage, you still might have perfect eyes and ears, you still cannot comprehend or digest the data that your eyes and your ears are sending to you. The processing centre is your brain. Same way, the processing centre – all this thing is inside us. What is it telling us here is that you need to be connected to Him?

Then in verses 15-16: *“But he who is spiritual judges all things, (The word “judge”, although is the word “anakrino”, remember that “anakrino” also means, is not just “judge”, is like the word “ana”, for “judge” they use the word “krino”. But “anakrino” means to examine, discern, search and question again and again and again. It actually means to examine. So, it has a root meaning of that and you could put it this way, he who is spiritual examines all things – that means he could examine all things, yet he himself is rightly judged by no one. For ‘who has known the mind (or the nous) of the LORD that he may instruct Him’? But we have the mind (nous) of Christ”.* What actually is the Spirit Mind here? The Spirit Mind is not your mind. It is a portion of the consciousness of the mind of Christ because of the word “*phroneo*”. That is why he says to be spiritually minded is life and peace, that means there is a connection. Can we have life without connecting to God’s life? Never, the moment you are disconnected, you will have no *zoe* life. *Zoe* life is a flow.

#### *Zoe life*

You see, the origin of the word “*phroneo*” (which is diaphragm, a breathing vehicle), so when he says your *phroneo*, in the Greek mind, is the thinking of a spiritual mind. I did not read all the Greek philosophies there, but one of the philosophers mentioned that “*phroneo*” is between “*nous*” and “*zoe*”. That was the understanding in the new Platonic philosophies where they put, as they developed the three philosophies, it reaches the point where the understanding of those Greek words was, how the Greek actually divide every nuances or intellectual understanding. There is “*nous*” and there is “*zoe*”. They have got “*zoe*” (which is the life of God); a dividing line, they say that “*phroneo*” is between “*nous*” and “*zoe*”, is closer to *zoe*, but yet is a part of your *nous*. That was the understanding that Paul got and brought across to us which is why... I have only got time to do Romans, but let me tell you, I could do from Matthew to Revelation every occurrence of the word “mind” and show you that the few times that they use “*phroneo*” or its derivation “*phronema*” or “*phronesis*”, it is used in the sense of a connection. Like Paul understood it is a breathing organ, it is the part of you that connects.

This is your spiritual emotion. Your spirit mind cannot exist by itself. It exists only as you are connected to God, which is why every time you want to tap on your spirit mind, you need to get consciousness of your connection. After some time, it is in your background, you meditate and worship a lot. You are always singing or worshipping. That connection, when

you are conscious of the connection, it flows easier. But when you are mature spiritually, it is always at the back of your mind (consciousness), it flows easily.

### *Responding to God's thoughts*

Then you look at the familiar saying, Romans 12:1-2 – “... *present your bodies a living sacrifice... And do not be conformed to this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind* (when your mind is being renewed, transformation is happening, transformation of your whole being, “*metamorphoo*”: Greek word for “transformation”), *that you may prove* (the word “prove” is actually that you may “seal” because it is the word “*dokime*” which is document, you may seal) *what is that good and acceptable and perfect will of God* (the good things in God)”. Our part is to respond to God's thoughts.

We never create oxygen, correct? We use oxygen. We can bottle air as we bottle water, but we never create it. It is there, and it is a system that we use. We use water. Our body uses water. Our body uses oxygen. Now, that process must continue for us. You cannot say yesterday you drank 6-8 litres, so today no need to drink. You cannot because your body processes water, uses it for cleaning your body, for washing up all the toxins, washing up as urine. So, you need more water coming in, or it comes out of your body through sweat, or in whatever form. You lose water, you need water to function.

In the same way, the spiritual mind is a flow of thoughts, a flow of words. Now, you know why you need the Word. What is the Word? The Word is a collection of the thoughts spoken by God to human beings who lived long ago. It is a collection of God's recorded words, which were once God's collected thoughts, correct? God must have thought it before He spoke it and it was written by men. Some of them were a record of God's thoughts flowing through Paul. Now when Paul was writing his letters in Romans, do you think Paul would know today that we will be using them as “Thus says the Lord” in Romans 12:1-2? Paul looks up, “*Oh, my letter has become the Word of God*”. So, question: Was it Paul or was it God? It was both. When Paul was writing the letters in Romans, it was God's thoughts flowing through him and as he wrote them out, they became for us the New Testament, the Word of God. Now we quote the New Testament but when Paul was writing the letters, he was not intending to write the Bible in the same level and sense as Moses wrote. They have become the Bible, 27 books in the New Testament, of which most of them were written by

Paul. Then to record the gospels, that is fantastic. The gospels are all the recorded sayings, thoughts and actions of Jesus. Paul's thoughts flowed and were recorded here, that became the Word.

Now, when you read the Word, what happens? Your mind (your soul mind, your spirit mind and your natural mind), as you are reading, your brain begins to also assimilate the same thoughts. It actually begins to tune to the same thoughts and that is where you discover why you need the Word, because the spiritual thought is at a certain frequency, the carnal mind is at another frequency. The carnal mind versus the spiritual mind. The carnal mind is at the frequency of death and sin. It is always at that frequency. It will attract that frequency. It is important to re-tune our whole system until we function at this frequency [spirit frequency], not this frequency [carnal frequency], until the soul functions at this frequency [spirit frequency]. That is what God wants. That is why Romans 12:1-2, you present this body, you do not let this body do anything, you take this body and you present it to God. Then this mind [*Body Mind*], let it be renewed of the new mind [*Spirit Mind*], then you are transformed. Until your spirit, soul and body are functioning at a different frequency and the day your soul functions in the same frequency as your spirit, 100% of all the things of the spirit power can flow through your soul. The day your physical body functions in the frequency of the Word of God, your body becomes glorified, the glorious Church. So, we see the importance of that.

### *Breathe the Word*

We learn the true meaning of the word "*phroneo*" in Romans 8, that it is a connected mind, is a breathing mind, breathing in from the Spirit. What does it breathe in? We breathe oxygen with our body, we breathe the Word. That is why God says, "*Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceeds from the mouth of God*". He had them write the Word on their forehead (in the frontlets), put it on their fingers, put it on the wall, put it everywhere. They must breathe the Word, their thoughts must breathe the Word, they must confront the Word constantly. God says you will speak of them when you lie down, when you get up, when you walk by the way. He must have surrounded them with His frequency, so that when you are tuned to a certain frequency, you can tap on the latest thing that He is downloading in that frequency, because God continues to speak.

Hebrews 4:12 – *“For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow...”*. It goes to all three so that this one can come right through. It begins to tune the soul and the body into the spirit frequency.

## Chapter 6...

### Spiritual Will Versus Soul Will

Looking at *The Spiritual Man Book I* by Watchman Nee, we have replaced *Intuition* with *Spirit Mind* – it is an inner knowing. We have replaced *Conscience* (when we studied the word “*suneidesis*”) with *Spirit Emotion*, since the conscience is a sense of right and wrong or sense of faith or sense of different things. So that becomes, emotions, that becomes an inner mind or mind.

#### *What is Communion*

Now we will look at *Communion*, and it is interesting that the word “communion” has been brought forward in the English version of Watchman Nee’s book. As I understand, Watchman Nee wrote his book in Chinese, so the word “communion” would have been translated from Chinese. Remember the Chinese word for communion? The word “communion” has been used in the Bible as the word “*koinonia*”, translated sometimes as “fellowship”, sometimes as “communion” of the Holy Spirit. If that is the Chinese word that Watchman Nee used, then... because the word “communion” is very hard to define.

When you talk about communion, for some of us from the Evangelical background, it speaks about the Lord’s Supper, which is like a covenant. I read this book when I was a very, very young Christian, Watchman Nee’s book *The Spiritual Man*. I was new in Christianity. I read as much as I could, came across his writings and I remember looking at the word “communion” and I did not quite understand what it meant because at that time I did not know Greek and I had not studied Greek yet, had not gone to the Seminary, and I saw the word “communion”. I said, okay, it must be like a sense of God. That was all I got, a sense of God.

The Chinese word “*kuan chi*” means “fellowship”. In Chinese he has used the word “fellowship” inside here. So that means he is talking about fellowship with God or a spiritual fellowship. He has taken literally from the word “communion” or “*koinonia*” in Greek. It might not be the best representation. The word “*koinonia*” has been translated into three different things in the New Testament, especially in the Old King James, translated as

“communion” of the Holy Spirit or “communion” of the saints. Then it has been also translated as “fellowship”. In the Old King James, it has been translated as “partnership”: where Peter, James, John and Andrew had a partnership, like they shared the fishing business. It has been translated as “partners”. The word “partners” comes from the Greek word, a root word of “*koinonia*”.

Same with the word, ‘*chiao wan*’. What is “*chiao wan*”? “Relationship”. So, partnership, fellowship, relationship. It still looks strange when you study Watchman Nee’s book, correct? Most of us do not know where to place this. How: relationship with God? It is a sense of that relationship with God. We still have not got it, when you have that.

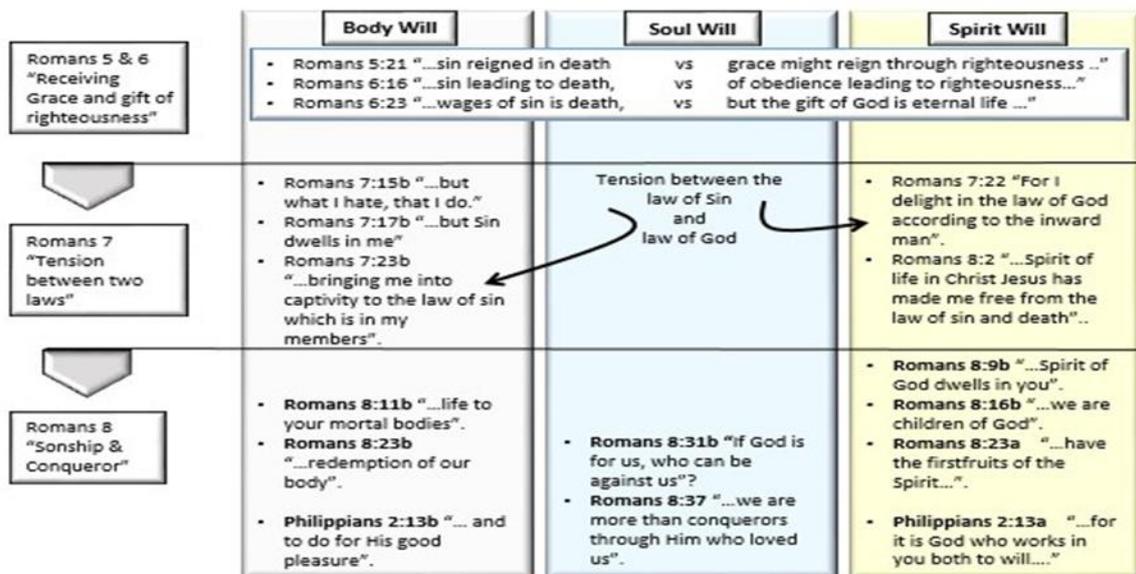


Diagram 1

When we replace “communion”, with the word “will” and if you look at those three Greek words: If you take the root word for the word “communion”, which means “relationship”, to have a relationship, you need free will. You need free will for that kind of spiritual relationship. I know a master and a slave have some kind of relationship, but it is not that kind of relationship borne of free will. In fact, slaves, thousands of years ago, were treated as property. They were treated as property, like they had no free will. I am sure that is not the concept that Watchman Nee was trying to present. If you take the word to be some sort of relationship, then the free will is involved in what I call “equilibrium” relationship, one borne of free will. Or even a covenant relationship is borne of free will. If you take the word “fellowship” for “*koinonia*”, it is still borne of free will. And even if you take the other translation, “partnership”, it is still borne of free will. So, I just want to point out that when we put the word, the “will” of the spirit, it is still consistent, it translates into the gist of that.

Remember that this chart is not in the Bible. We take it as Bible truth, but it is not in the Bible. Anything not in the Bible is subject to us re-interpreting it. Unless Paul actually draws a chart, put it in the Bible, *ho*, we are finished, we cannot change the chart anymore, it becomes Biblical truth. This chart was produced by a good man, Watchman Nee. It is as good as it stands. We have improved on that – that is our new diagram.

This is the new diagram and we have said, and we have already proved from the Bible that your spirit has a will, your spirit has emotions, your spirit has an inner mind. We have proved from that and we need to fit it into the spirit and I would like to fit that in the word “will” because Jesus did say that when He was in the Garden of Gethsemane, *the spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak*. He cannot be talking about the Holy Spirit alone. He might have, He might have included that, but He was talking about the disciples failing to pray when He came three times to tell them to continue in prayer and He found them asleep. That is on one of those occasions when He found them asleep that He made this comment: *The spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak*. Their spirits want to pray (although it is not a born-again spirit, they still have a spirit) but the flesh is weak, implying that there is a will in the spirit. Now, based on that verse, how are we going to fit it into Watchman Nee’s chart?

The verse we have chosen, with the exception of the word “emotion”, we try to be as close to the Bible to put it as the *Spirit Will*. Now I am looking at the Watchman Nee’s sections, section by section. We look at the *Spirit Emotion*, the *Spirit Mind*, and the *Spirit Will*. Watchman Nee’s version of what he calls the inward witness because the inward witness is supposed to be the voice of the Holy Spirit or sensation of the Holy Spirit. The inward witness (just for now, remember) is your whole spirit man, not just one part. All of your spirit man together is your inward witness.

#### *Dividing the different sections*

Now, we are just dividing the different sections of your spirit from the Watchman Nee’s perspective to understand it. So here He is saying that the spirit is willing. We now know that there is a will in your body, a will in your soul and a will in your spirit. Your body does have a will of its own. We can see that in Romans 7 how the body has its own desires, and you have to decide. We have the power over our body. We decide, so that sometimes when you feel hungry, but you have something that you are going to finish in half-an-hour or an hour,

you make your decision to postpone it but if you were an animal, driven just by your body, you will straightaway drop everything and just go for it, without any consideration. However, we are humans, we have a spirit will and a soul will, they do have a certain dominance over the physical body.

We want to look at this *Spirit Will*, that is where we are and remember, your soul has a will. Now, to show the difference between the will of the soul and the will of the spirit, I have to point, first of all, to Philippians 2:13. Paul, in writing to the Philippians, with the Praetorian guards watching over him, says here: *“for it is God who works in you both to will...”*.

The Greek word for the word “will” is the word *“thelo”*. It is a very common word. It has been translated into three different things. If you search the Concordance under the word “will”, it has been translated as “wish”, “desire” or “want”. When you ask: “Do you want...”, you say: “Do you *thelo* this”? Or “Whatever things you desire, whatever things you want, whatever things you wish...”. It has been translated as “desire”, “want” or “wish”. It has been translated as the word “will”. That tells us how the word *“thelo”* has been understood very broadly that we need different English words to translate.

Praise the Lord, it has been translated as the word “will” for us and it tells us: *“for it is God who works in you (or energises in you) both (both means two things He does) to will and to do for His good pleasure”*. The word “His” is not in the original Greek, which means that the pleasure does not just belong to God, it is also that we may enjoy doing something. When you put the word “His”, it looks like just God, it is for His pleasure and not for ours but no, whenever God wills something for us to do, it is also for our pleasure. Do not forget it is God who created senses in us to sense pleasure. Without the nerve senses, we cannot sense pleasure. We will be just like a rock without nerves and just exist, but God has given us sensations in which we can enjoy doing His will.

When you look carefully, every one of us knows this verse, we have seen this verse in the Bible, but this verse is theologically very explosive. If someone just take this verse and put it all by itself, he could justify “it is God who makes me will”. Now, if God makes me choose, then I do not have to answer for that because it is God who makes me choose. God will make me will and then make me do. It looks like I am a robot, He programmed me to will, programmed me to do, I do not have the accounting because the programmer is at fault.

Only recently, of course some people are afraid that robots will take over the world and become 'the terminator'. In reality, that will never happen, too short a time, we have got only less than about 50 years, not enough for mankind to progress technologically. We will progress to quite an advanced stage, where we will have, what I call, a watch computer and other things that will come about. Holographic projection will increase and improve, and different technologies will increase. They will invent something where they will harness noise, use the energy of sound to convert it, so that things will be quieter. So instead of looking at noise pollution, they begin to also harvest noise and different things that they are going to do. Technology will grow but it does not have enough time to grow into artificial intelligence. In the first place, it will never happen. You know why, because there is a God watching over a lot of things and it will never happen. Of course, they will make computers to be very intelligent.

I have two chess programs. I have not played them for a long time. It is a portable chess computer. Remember, every computer or program is only as good as its program or as good as its programmer, but I can guarantee you, it will beat every one of you because its level at the highest is about 17,000 and it has been programmed by Garry Kasparov. It is so good that when I have a few people play with it, they say, "How come you know that it has moved? How come you know my move? How come it does this"? It is just a program. It seems intelligent, but it is just a mathematical calculation of possibilities. No, it does not need to calculate every move; it only has to calculate the few good moves. Then you say, "Can I upset the computer by playing a move that is crazy"? It also knows because the game of chess is based on conquering the centre, watching the alignment of your pawns, placing all your pieces in the most advantageous position and always looking all the time for the opportunity to gain points by eating a bigger piece of you or by checkmate. It is programmed to do that. If you make a crazy move, that it violates every rule of law, you will still lose. It does not need to programme everything. It just needs a general rule to just win against you. It looks intelligent enough, but it is not artificial intelligence. It is on my shelf somewhere. I have not found it talking to me yet or coming alive, although it can play chess very well.

### *Is the will programmed*

If God programmed us to choose, it is a big theological step. I could take this one verse and you will find it very hard to argue if I am an intellectual. This verse proves that you are not accountable for your choices. There are two ways that I can get out of the argument. The first

way: I will squirrel my way out. The first thing: I say, “When God programmed you, does He programme you for evil”? No, right? Never, He can never programme you for evil. Then, when I do good, God gets all the credit because He programmed me. When I do bad, God never programmed me, so I get all the judgment. *Ah*, first tiny little argument, theology very interesting.

Second little argument that I would have on this area to squirrel my way out, to show that we are still accountable, would be like there is a willing and doing because even if God programmed me to will, I still need Him to energise me to do. The willing side and the doing side need to be complete and if it is incomplete, somewhere along, it shows our free will in action. Anyway, that is a very weak argument compared to the first one.

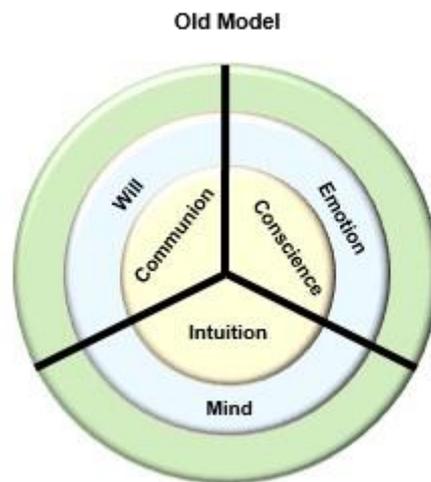
Standing by itself, if God programmed us to will and to do, there is some essence of the fact that what is free will, if God is programming us to do it. What actually is free will? The fact is because we have always seen from the old Watchman Nee’s chart. Every time you read Philippians 2:13, you are looking at this chart and you only see God programmed you in your soul. When you read the Bible, based on Watchman Nee’s chart, you are thinking it works in your soul, making you to will and to do. That in itself actually violates a few things because God always works from the spirit. It has to flow from our spirit to our soul.

If you have a spirit will, which we have shown you have, then the programming is here (in your *Spirit Will*) and that is true. Your spirit that is born again is programmed to do good. It is programmed to choose the good things and you still have your *Soul Will*, which can decide whether you yield or not. Notice there are three wills in conflict? Here is where we look at Romans 7 to show the dilemma that is there. In Romans 7, we see the word “will” here in verse 15: “*For what I am doing, I do not understand. For what I will to do, that I do not practice; but what I hate, that I do*”. Now, here is a conflict: There is a part of him that will to do but a part of him that does something opposite. So what part of him that does something opposite has to also be part of his soul because the body by itself does not move. The body still needs the soul to choose, like to walk from outside to inside, your body has to co-operate.

If I were to ask you, “Did your body walk to church or did your soul walk to church”? Your soul walks your body to church, would that be a correct statement? If your body walks your soul to church, you might be sleep-walking, but I assume you are all wide awake and none of

you are sleeping with your eyes open, like a fish. Now, your soul actually walks because you make a decision and your decision is to come to church for Bible study. In making your decision, your soul has to make multiple choices; it has to find the route to come, your body cannot calculate that by itself. So far in Singapore, no report of anyone sleep-walking, take MRT, go to a building, shop, eat and then go back, right? Although some people do sleep-walk, they go out on the streets and all that. He must have been a fantastic sleep-walker who can use the MRT card to tap in / tap out, so he does not pay much too. Obviously, your soul was involved in the process in making your own way. You make all these decisions with your soul, without realising you make a choice.

Now, if Paul says, “I do what I hate”, obviously someone is telling him to do and he cannot say “the devil made me do it”. Cannot. He admitted “*I will*”. Now, which is the “*I will*” part?



*Diagram 2*

In the old Watchman Nee’s chart, we have been saying, *oh*, the spirit man, the spirit desires but we did not dare to say the spirit wills. Have you noticed that the only explanation of Romans 7 is to interpret the “I will” as “the spirit wills”, correct? There is no other way you can interpret it properly, whether you be Kenneth E Hagin or Watchman Nee. If you want to interpret Romans 7, the only way to explain it is that the inner man desires something, the inner man wills to do something. It says “will”, it just refers to the will in your spirit, hallelujah! While we were using the old chart, we were explaining with the new chart, until this is the chart that we actually should have. We were using the old chart to explain Romans 7 but ignoring the fact that in explaining that, we were using the new chart, which has the will inside the spirit, not inside the soul. Once you put the will inside the soul, there is no way you can explain Romans 7 because then it says, “*For what I will*”. It looks horrifying in

explanation, like Romans 7:15, “For what I am doing, I do not understand. For what my soul will to do, that my soul will does not practice; but what my soul will hates, that I do”. That is even more confusing.

### *Defining the will*

Now when you separate it out, you know that there is a part of the will that is in your spirit and your spirit is willing. We find it hard to accept because of the word “will”, but remember, it comes from the word “*theleo*” (which sometimes it is spelt “*theleo*”, sometimes it is spelt “*thelo*”, but it depends on usage).

The word “*theleo*” has been translated as “desire”, like in Luke 5:39, “*And no one, having drunk old wine, immediately desires new...*” The word “desires” is “*theleo*”. It has been translated as “willing”, when the leper asked Him in Luke 5:12 – “*Lord, if You are willing (theleo), You can make me clean*”. Jesus says, “*I am willing; be cleansed*”. It has been translated as “wish” in Luke 4:6 – “*And the devil said to Him, ‘All this authority I will give You, and their glory; for this has been delivered to me, and I give it to whomever I wish (theleo)’*”. Most of the time, it has been translated as “want”, like in John 1:43 – “*The following day Jesus wanted (Jesus theleo, Jesus desired) to go to Galilee...*”. Now, the word “desire” would have been possible to translate in the verse. It is to sound like Jesus desires to go to Galilee (whatsoever you desire). John 3:8 – “*The wind blows where it wishes (desires)...*”. That sounds funny. It is translated as “*The wind blows where it wishes...*” Or rather, “The wind blows where it wills...”

What I am showing you is that, without trying to add anything further, just from your Bible, the word “*theleo*” means “wish”, “want”, “desire”, “will”. The word “will” involves a sort of desire. The Greek does not have a problem because the word “*theleo*” means *theleo* to them and they know the fullness of its meaning.

For instance, let us look at the word “*chim*”, which means “deep” but it is not just an intellectual word. It has an emotional aspect: “*Chim, ah!*” So, when you use the word “*chim*”, it could be like an emotional reaction; you’re not naturally talking about, like a mathematical equation, not necessarily. It could be like you just don’t get anything, which you have another word for it, “*liat bo kiew*”. You say, “*Chim, ah!*”! Do you understand? “*Chim, ah!*”!

There is an emotional aspect that you cannot translate across because in one word, you can only put one translation, you are limited to that.

The same in Greek when they use the word “*theleo*”, there is an emotional aspect that says this is a desire – I will to do it; I want to do it; I desire to do it. It automatically includes that, so that you do not need an English translation with five / six words to translate one word when you are reading it in Greek.

We have a problem because the word “*theleo*” means “desire” in His will. When you read the word “*theleo*”, you must see both, you cannot see one. You must see that it is a desire, which is what Paul says in Romans 7 – “I desire to do the right thing, but I do not do it; I end up not doing it”. Or “I will, I want to do the thing, but I did not get to do it”. So, that is the will of the spirit which we are talking about.

Going back and understanding this aspect of Romans 7, it says here in verse 15: “*For what I am doing, I do not understand. For what I will to do, that I do not practice; but what I hate, that I do*”. Suddenly he is doing what he hates. Is not it interesting that you can do what you hate? You will be stumped by verse 15.

We ask people the question: “Is it possible to do what you hate”? Most people will say, “No, why should I do it? I hate it”. Then a lot of people who are working very hard, because they make good money, but they hate the job. “Why are you doing it”? “*Oh, motivation is money*”. Not emotions. Maybe it might be a short-term thing or whatever. They hate the job, but they still want to do it because, you know, it is something that they see some profit out of it.

Or, for example, you could be a soldier, enlisted to war, you hate the war, but no choice, you are a soldier, you have got to go and fight. You ask any soldier: “Do you like to kill”? Most good soldiers will say no. “Do you like to take another man’s life”? No. Do you think it is a joy and do you think most of the soldiers are like Rambo and they love to shoot, just love the sound of the machine gun? That is fine, but worse still, they love the sound of the scream when people die. *Wah*, you get a soldier like that, you have got to lock the person up because that guy is a psychopath. You get that guy in your Army, he might do all the wrong things, he

might kill innocent people. Good soldiers hate to kill. Good policemen hate to kill. But they have to, it is their job. Can a person end up doing something that he hates? Yes, when something bigger compels him.

Long ago, I talked about the story: Before the Berlin Wall came down, and after it came down, there was a soldier who was put on trial. The soldier was an East German soldier. He shot and killed some people. When the wall came down, he was among the nearest at that time. They caught all these people and put them on trial: “Why did you shoot if people are running for freedom”? The soldier’s answer was: “This is what I have been ordered to do”.

Then we ask the hypothetical question: “If you were that soldier and your orders are any East German trying to get into West Germany, shoot to kill, what would you do”? At the threat of your life and your job? Suppose you have a wife and two kids. If you die, the two kids might starve. “Leave the wife and two kids”. But that is your position. You would choose not to obey the order, at the risk of being court-martialed and sentenced to death? You cannot resign, trying to save the whole family and the two kids. But soldiers cannot resign. Okay, here’s a counter-argument. If he cannot resign, that be it, but the possibility of resigning should be tried first. Possible. But let us say all these things are not planned, you know, like in life, a lot of things happen. I always tell people: When you pray for something, remember this, God always answers prayer. But remember part two, God answers prayer in His way, not necessarily in your way. The soldier could shoot him but miss on purpose. Intend to miss, shoot to miss. If they ask him why, then say, *oh*, I am a poor shooter. Okay, that is actually what I would do.

Let us say, like in life, the things you are caught in, you do not know what to do, and you know that these people are actually innocent. A soldier shooting another enemy’s soldier because of war, understood. A soldier killing an evil man who has, for example, slaughtered and massacred 100 people, that is taking execution of the judgment that he is commissioned to do. But shooting innocent people (which is also the answer), if you are a soldier – let us say you are from one of those Asian countries, where there is a dictator controlling it, military dictatorship, and the people are protesting for more freedom, could be like Tiananmen Square, something like that, and your government says “shoot to kill”, at that time you did not plan for that, the right way is aim to miss.

The fact here is that the East German soldier was on trial and he said he was compelled to do something that he did not want to do. But sometimes different people face the same situation. If you did not think carefully before, you would just do it without thinking.

Like nowadays we all depend on our GPS. I have a friend in Australia and we use GPS all the time because Australia is so big, we do not dare to go anywhere and everywhere and there are still places that we do not know. Sometimes the GPS tells you the direction, but the only thing the GPS cannot detect is the red light and the green light. You are at the red light and you are conditioned to obey your GPS. Your GPS says in 15 m turn left, that connects right turn but the GPS does not know the light is red. When you are coming to the red light, your GPS says turn left and then out of the command of the GPS you turn, but it is a red light. You are so used to being conditioned, so you still need to make your own decisions, even though the GPS does not tell you green light / red light. When you are at the red light, it will tell you go 15 m and turn right, but you cannot go, you have got to stop. Sometimes there are those cars in front of you, sometimes it's a red light. You still have your secondary decision-making that you retain but sometimes if you are not thinking and you lapse into a mode where you are just listening, and for those of you who use GPS and always get lost, because you always take your turn before or take your turn after, and it says turn left, actually is another 15m at the next turn. Turn left, you quickly turn, or it says turn left in 15m, first left you quickly turn and the GPS keeps on coming its way. You will notice this: If you were blindfolded, which you should not, or pretend that you cannot see the GPS and pretend that the GPS is just a voice, you will notice that most GPS will tell you to turn just at the turning. It will tell you it is 50m, 100m or in general 2km turn right or whatever, and all that you know. Then you wait until the signal says turn left, then you turn and if you follow more the voice and not be distracted by what you have seen on the GPS. You will tend to get it right because there will always be a reminder to turn left / right, whatever, at the final turning, not two turnings before, unless of course the road is unusual and is that close, but generally speaking, you find it works better that way.

Anyway, I find that in Singapore, it is a very strange phenomenon, the wives are the GPS. In many cars that I have taken a ride in, where it is a couple relationship; the wives know the road better than the men. It is still interesting because I wonder how come the husband does not know the road as best as the wife. He must check with the wife: "Is this the road"? "Ya, turn left, turn right". Some of the husbands of course say... because the wife has gone

everywhere shopping but it is not always true. I find that the wife is the GPS, that is an interesting phenomenon. That is quite not the same in Australia. The GPS is the GPS.

*We all have choices*

We all have choices, whether it is the robotic voice of the GPS or any voice, we follow something. No matter how we follow, the Bible tells us we are accountable for everything that we do, which puts the choice back to us. At the judgment day of believers and unbelievers, we have to give account of the decisions we make in our lives. You cannot even blame your parents. You cannot blame those close to you. No matter how great their influence over your life is, like the loudness of the GPS voice, you still have got your immediate decision to make, whether it is a green light or a red light. And, of course, sometimes when you choose to disobey the GPS (which you are going to take another way that you know), it is still your decision to make. Like the soldier, in the end, the soldier when he was put on trial, he was given a light sentence and he was told that he should not have obeyed that order. In the end, the rationale was that he should not have obeyed that order, but it was a difficult decision. We are not in a position, we do not realise how hard it is and sometimes the soldiers have been trained for so long to shoot, there is a soldier-mentality in them and they are trained to obey orders.

In fact, I have spoken to some Singaporeans, some of them have migrated to Australia, one of them rose up to the rank of, must be Captain or something, the one with the tiny little pistol, not all soldiers carry a little pistol, but you need a certain rank, right, to have your own little pistol, not just the normal gun. Officers have got a little pistol. You have got your own little pistol to shoot. He said, "You know what the pistol is for?" I said, "No, tell me". "It is to shoot the deserters who run away". The pistol cannot fight against the M16 or the machine gun. It is a back-up thing of course. I am sure it is a back-up thing, but he says one of its uses is when they give a command in war and the soldier is running away, the deserter gets shot. A soldier is a soldier. They are trained to obey orders. You know, AWOL all people or jail sentence, is something that they are trained to obey orders, yet at the end of it, free choice still manifests. Free choice will always be there. Or Resign, *lah*. Something like that in a situation.

### *Conflict of the two wills*

Now, we have the conflict of the two wills in Romans 7:15. Let us read on in verse 16: *“If then, I do what I will not to do, I agree with the law that it is good”*. Verse 18 is interesting: *“For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh) nothing good dwells; for to will is present with me, but how to perform what is good I do not find”*. Verse 18 says, “I retain my free will, to will is present, my free will is present, but how to perform what is good I do not find”. Then verse 19 (sub-conclusion): *“For the good that I will to do, I do not do; but the evil I will not to do, that I practice”*. And verse 20, *“Now if I do what I will not to do, it is no longer I who do it, but sin that dwells in me”*.

Now, all this conflict is between this will [*Spirit Will*] and this will [*Soul Will*], but this will [*Soul Will*] is supported by this *Body Will* because Paul himself says in verse 18: *“I know that in me”* and he refers to in this body, in the flesh. These two wills [*Soul Will & Body Will*] are overpowering this will [*Spirit Will*]. That is why I say there are three wills – there is the will of the body, the will of the soul, and they both gang up against the will of the spirit. That is the conflict that is taking place.

In verse 20 he says: *“Now if I do what I will not to do, it is no longer I who do it, but sin that dwells in me”*. So, he says it is sin. Now, where does sin dwell? In the body. Now, he is saying the body is to be blamed. The body’s choices but yet we are accountable for the body or whatever is done in the body. Whatever the body does, like I asked you, the first question: *“Did your body bring yourself here or did your soul?”* Your soul. If your body is involved, one part of you must be involved. Your soul. The body cannot move without the soul. The body is just a tent. The body is like a glove which your hand wears. Your hand is your soul. Your soul still has got to move your body.

Verse 21, *“I find then a law, that evil is present with me, the one who wills to do good”* but then evil still results. Look at his conclusion towards the end of chapter 7, verses 22-24, *“For I delight in the law of God according to the inward man. But I see another law in my members, (and in that law he says) warring against the law of my mind, (the law is in my members, so he says something here is making war with my mind which is in my soul and affecting all of my soul against my spirit, so body and soul are fighting against the spirit, then he says) and bringing me into captivity to the law of sin which is in my members (again in his*

body). *O wretched man that I am! Who will deliver me from this (notice the word) body of death*”? He calls the physical body the body of death. That body of death, he says who will deliver and he says (verse 25): *“I thank God through Jesus Christ our Lord! So then, with the mind I myself serve the law of God, but with the flesh the law of sin”*. That means the law of sin is still there, still present, but his mind has now been renewed, which implies his will now can be strengthened and affected and that is the condition if you leave yourself in Romans 7.

That is the condition of a lot of Christians where they have the power to choose, which Paul says “to will” is present, but the power to carry on the part is not connecting. That is why God has to energise two times. In Philippians 2:13, He energises both to will and to do. He has been energising “to will”. He creates our spirit, programmed it “to will” (*theleo*) for good and He energises that, even greater but if He does not energise us “to do”, we are still stuck. We need the energy of the will. Now, which part does the doing? The body, correct? It is God who works in us (Philippians 2:13) both to will and to do.

How come when we read that verse a thousand times, we never realised that spiritual energy needs to go to the body, correct? We were never told in our Christian lives that our body needs energising. We were only told that we are born again, we have got a ticket to heaven. Your mind must study the Bible, your body just sings the old rugged cross and you wish for heaven. How come they never told us about energising the body? If you read Philippians 2:13 (which I read as my first verse), it says “both”, double energising, “to will” which you know is in the spirit, and “to do”.

#### *God wants to save the soul*

Now, this is what happened. Remember, God is trying to save the soul; the body will be transformed so God is trying to help the soul to choose. The soul here, the soul which Jesus says is more valuable than the whole world; which Peter says we believe to the saving of the soul. The soul is the important part – the will of the soul. You know what God does? He energises here [*Spirit Will*] and he energises here [*Body Will*] – surrounding your soul so that your soul makes the choice: “Yes, I will go with that”. Your soul still can choose. Your soul still must choose, but it needs the energising of the Holy Spirit upon your physical body.

The question we ask: “Is this understanding correct according to the Bible”? Yes, when you read the next chapter of Romans, which is chapter 8. It again says the problem was not in your soul alone; the problem is in your physical body. In Romans 8:2, “*For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus has made me free from the law of sin and death*”. How? In verse 3, “*For what the law could not do in that it was weak through the flesh...*”. Can you see that? The weakness is found in your body.

In the whole of Romans 7, Paul puts blame on sin in the flesh and he says that in the flesh, there is a lot of sin. He identifies the geographical location of sin – in the flesh and he speak about how we will be delivered from this body of death in Christ Jesus.

### *Salvation of the body*

We are told in traditional Christianity that we receive the salvation of our body when Christ comes again. But how come they do not teach you that from the day you are born again, an energising has entered into your body too? They only teach you that another energising enters your spirit, but they do not teach you that it enters your body.

Paul does. In verse 3, he gives you the conclusion, that the problem is the weakness of the flesh. So he says God deals with this problem in this manner (verse 3): “... *God did by sending His own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, on account of sin: He condemned sin in the flesh* (to judge sin as in the flesh), (verses 4-7) *that the righteous requirement of the law might be fulfilled in us who do not walk according to the flesh but according to the Spirit. For those who live according to the flesh set their minds on the things of the flesh, but those who live according to the Spirit, the things of the Spirit. For to be carnally minded is death, but to be spiritually minded is life and peace. Because the carnal mind is enmity against God; for it is not subject to the law of God, nor indeed can be*”. So, we know something has happened: a new mind. We have got a new mind too. He helps us here with the new mind.

Then he says in verses 9-10, “*But you are not in the flesh* (From verse 9, He starts dealing with your body, not with your spirit; He does deal with your spirit, but He deals with your body. Paul says you are not in the flesh) *but in the Spirit, if indeed the Spirit of God dwells in you. Now if anyone does not have the Spirit of Christ, he is not His.* (And this is the

statement) *And if Christ is in you, the body is dead...*”. He actually strikes something dead in your body, something goes into your body.

We are not told that, and we are like the people who are in the cruise ship, who have a ticket that says, “meals included” and there we are munching on our little few cream crackers that we bought, thinking that we cannot afford the food, that all we have is the passage, the room but no food included. We live our lives munching on the little crackers until we reach shore. Then when you are about to go on shore, someone says, “How come you are not at breakfast, lunch and dinner with us throughout the whole cruise”? You say, “*Oh*, I was in the room, I had my takeaway food”. He says, “But your food was included”. “You mean all the restaurants on the ship”? “Yes”. “Any place, anywhere”? “Yes”. “*Oh*”! And that is what many Christians will go to heaven and say, “*Oh*”!

We were not taught. Were you taught as a young Christian that something happens in your body? I was not taught. I was taught that all the activity is in the spirit and being a young Christian, I did not even know what the spirit realm is like. Nothing in the body. Your body is still the old body, still singing the old rugged cross, wanting it to be hung. “On a hill far away... (and don’t forget the part) ... I will cling to the old rugged cross”. *Ya*, I was still clinging there. We were not told that something happened in the body.

Remember Paul identifies something active in the body, something very active? He says the law of sin and death is there. It is so powerful, in Romans 7, it makes war (he used the word), declares war and overcomes you, weakness of the flesh.

Romans 8:10, “*And if Christ is in you, the body is dead because of sin, but the Spirit is life because of righteousness*”. And you thought he ends the sentence, but he continues to verse 11 so that you could never misunderstand it: “*But if the Spirit of Him who raised Jesus from the dead dwells in you, He who raised Christ from the dead will also give life (zoe life) to your mortal bodies...*” Do you see that? He does not give life to your spirit alone, He gives life to your mortal bodies. You cannot misinterpret that. Paul is not talking about the born-again experience. The born-again experience already took place in chapters 5 and 6 – you were raised in Christ.

Now, why does he put chapter 7 there after he talks about the glorious liberty in chapters 5 and 6? After all, chapters 5 and 6, you were already born again, you have the gift of righteousness, you reign in Christ Jesus to the grave. Suddenly you have got chapter 7 there because he knows that after you are born again, you have got one more battle in your body. Your internal battle with yourself is more serious than your battle with the devil. The greatest war that you could ever conquer is the war against yourself, in your own body. After declaring chapters 5 and 6 so gloriously, look at how chapters 5 and 6 ended, gloriously! We have been crucified with Christ, legally all done, consider yourself dead and born again. Then he zooms in to talk about the problem that all of us have with the body. Your spirit is now extra strong, born again, new spirit, a new heart.

Now, when he says, “new heart”, we know the process, so we will talk about the new heart, how it affects the soul down the line. We will touch on Hebrews 8 and 10 – how God puts His laws in our mind and write them on our hearts; puts His laws into our hearts and write them in our minds. There is a process of it happening in our soul.

In the meantime, in Romans, he suddenly throws Romans 7 in and looks like a struggle because the struggle is based on only one thing and one thing alone, the body. Then in chapter 8 he gives the full solution. Do you know that the whole of chapter 8, although it does talk about the mind here, this mind [*Spirit Mind*] versus this mind [*Soul Mind*], it concentrates on something happening in your body? He starts in verse 11, with the *zoe* life coming into your physical body.

### *Zoe life*

Now, we all know, 100% as Evangelicals, that *zoe* life has come into our spirit and He renew our soul but no Bible teacher told me that *zoe* life comes into my body. After you are born again, you look into the mirror, you still look like the same you, maybe eyes slightly shinier, but still the same you and then you were told this old you, you have got to hold on until Jesus comes again, then (1 Corinthians 15) at the Rapture everything is renewed. Paul says the moment you are born again, *zoe* life comes into your body because we do not know, thus we do not believe, thus we do not have faith, thus we cannot receive. How can we receive something that we never were told about? How can they be born again unless they hear the gospel? How can they hear the gospel unless someone go and preach to them? How can

someone go unless he is sent? Paul talks about that. So how can we believe something in which we do not know about?

In Acts 19 when Paul went to Ephesus, he asked them, “Did you receive the Holy Spirit when you believed”? They said, “No, we never heard about it; we only knew about John’s baptism”. He said, “Into what then were you baptized”? They were baptized into John’s baptism. You know what Paul did? He re-baptized them and then he taught them about the Holy Spirit. He must have taught them about the Holy Spirit. Then only the Holy Spirit came on them. Here is the question. The baptism of the Holy Spirit was waiting for them. They never heard about it, so they could not receive. The Holy Spirit came in Acts 2. This is Acts 19 and they still had not received the Holy Spirit because they never heard about the Holy Spirit.

Some of us were non-Charismatics and when we heard about the Charismatic Movement for the first time, then we were open to it and then in spite of the challenges, we still went ahead for it. We were told all the bad things as always, you know, *oh*, be careful of these Charismatic people, you know, tongues can come from the devil. We were so frightened, we did not dare to go until one day we were just too tired of where we were, we still went, or we heard or whatever, and then we ended up in the Charismatic Revival. Something was still drawing us there despite all the warnings because we were never taught, so we did not know. We cannot receive what we were never taught and if we were never taught that on the day we are born again, that *zoe* life is available not just for our spirit, not just for our soul, but available for our body, we will not receive it until we are told that there is *zoe* life in our body.

The sensibility of it is that, the logic of it is that, look at it this way. If Paul points that the main culprit is the body, wouldn’t it be logical that the main culprit has to be dealt with? If the main culprit of the Christian life is that the flesh is weak, shouldn’t God do something about it? God did – Philippians 2:13 – He energises, works in us both to will and to do. The doing part is to energise the body because we are weak, so He must energise us to do. Logic, supported by the scriptures and that is not where Paul stops too. He goes on to verse 12 [Romans 8:12]. Here is the part. Many people forget that verses 12 to 28 are all connected to

verse 13 [Philippians 2:13], something that he is trying to tell us here, how *zoe* life comes to the body.

We become too confused by so many verses, you know, Paul is quite long-winded, almost like me. Except that in my writings, I use point form. Thank God for modern style. You know, most of my books are: These are the points, one, two, three, four. In those days, they did not use points. They just wrote. Of course, if I have a seven-point thing that I write, and I do not tell you where the seven-point thing is, I write like Shakespeare, leave it for you to find the seven points, it is not going to be easy. You see, our different cultures have developed but it is the same thing. Let me show that it is the same thing.

First, he tells us *zoe* life must come into the body in Romans 8:11. Then he encourages us to live in the spirit and he tells us that the Holy Spirit is already in us and that we will be glorified. Then he says in verse 18: *“For I consider that the sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with the glory which shall be revealed (notice the word, revealed not to us, revealed) in us”*. He is talking about the glory coming into the physical body. Not the glory that we will see which a different part of the scripture is in 2 Corinthians 3:18, as we see Him, so are we transformed. This is the glory that will be revealed in us.

Then you look at Romans 8:19, *“For the earnest expectation of the creation eagerly waits for the revealing of the sons of God”*. What is he talking about? Well, read on. Verses 20-23: *“For the creation was subjected to futility, not willingly, but because of Him who subjected it in hope; because the creation itself also will be delivered from the bondage of corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of God. For we know that the whole creation groans and labors with birth pangs together until now. Not only that, but we also who have the first-fruits of the Spirit, even we ourselves groan within ourselves, eagerly waiting for the adoption, the redemption of our body”*.

Look at verse 23. Paul is still talking about the body. He has not changed his subject. He is still talking about what he introduces in Romans 8:11, that the Spirit gives *zoe* life to the body. He does emphasise that you must now live based on this life (the spirit life), based on the spirit life, based on the spirit life. Then he goes back to talk about the body. The revealing of the sons of God has to do with the body being perfected, the body being conquered, the body being renewed, the body being transformed, that we become mature sons of God, no

more subject to the elements of the earth, which Jesus demonstrated in His 3 years on earth. The elements of the earth did not rule Him, but He ruled over them. He ruled over storms, He ruled over the seas, He ruled over water and gravity, He ruled over all the elements of the world, He ruled over sickness, He ruled over death, He ruled over demons, everything He ruled over. He is Christ and Paul talks about the physical body, 100%, you cannot run from the fact, he mentions the word “body”.

Then he says we are saved in this hope. Now he talks about this hope. Before you have faith, you must have hope. This hope that is transforming your body and he says hope that is seen is not hope and then he talks about this supernatural hope. Now, if you do not realise how powerful hope is, remember this is chapter 8 of his epistle. In chapter 4, he introduces the subject of hope and how hope is a requirement for faith. Look at chapter 4, same theme. Look at the word “hope” there. He speaks about father Abraham and he says in Romans 4:18, “*who, contrary to hope, in hope believed...*”. What was Abraham fighting against? His body and Sarah’s body. The context: Sarah’s womb was dead, his own body was dead (sterile), he hoped against hope and he believed because faith is a substance of things hoped for. When you have strong hope, it gives the building material for faith. Faith is the substance of things hoped for (Hebrews 11:1). This is chapter 4 in Romans. Same epistle, he wrote to the people.

Then in Romans 8, now he talks about this hope. He says (verse 24): “*For we were saved in this hope (of the body; we were saved in the spirit, we were saved in this body), but hope that is seen is not hope; for why does one still hope for what he sees*”? In the same way he says it in Hebrews 11:1 that *faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen*. If you see it, you do not need faith anymore. Verse 25: “*But if we hope for what we do not see, we eagerly wait for it with perseverance*”. Now, what are we waiting for in verse 25? He says, “*we eagerly wait*”. He was not eagerly waiting just to go to heaven. That is not the context of Romans 8. He was eagerly waiting for the body to conquer death, for all of sin nature to be wiped out in the physical body. That is the context of his theological argument.

Then he turns around in verses 26-27 and says now the Spirit helps us in our weaknesses. Remember, the problem was a weakness of the body. He turns around and says “... *the Spirit also helps in our weaknesses. For we do not know what we should pray for as we ought, (the context was in the context of the body; the whole chapter is about the body, the zoe life in the body; he says) but the Spirit Himself makes intercession for us with groanings which cannot*

*be uttered. Now He who searches the hearts knows what the mind of the Spirit is, because He makes intercession for the saints according to the will of God”.*

By this time, most people have forgotten that it is still about the body but what I am telling you here is this: It includes the spirit of course. The original interpretation is still correct but what many Christians do not realise is Romans 8 talks about your physical body which is the root of the problem that gives us another reason.

### *Why tongues*

Why does God give us tongues when there are so many other gifts that He could have given? We all know that the gift of tongues is slightly different from the gift of prayer in tongues, in terms of direction. Gift of tongues is from God to the people; prayer tongues is from us to God. So slightly different, but technically it is still tongues because we do not understand. Why wasn't it the working of miracles? Why wasn't it the gift of faith? Why wasn't it Almighty Wisdom? Why tongues? Because somehow when we pray in tongues (which is included in Romans 8 here), it includes, “For we do not know what we should pray for, but we pray with groanings which we do not understand”, implying tongues, but it implies more than the gift of tongues. It implies many types of prayer, but it does include tongues that you cannot exclude. When you pray in tongues, something happens to your body.

Long ago when we had the church in Malaysia (Tabernacle of Glory), which does not exist now, people have split several ways and taken the name and renamed it, we had people who were volunteers come and help the office. There was this retired elderly lady, she would help because we had our books too and we were sending books all over the world, she used to pack them, put them together and all those things. She heard so much teaching, so she told me one day (because I saw her every time in the office go up and down): “Pastor, I am going to try praying in tongues for 24 hours”. She heard that I pray for 48 hours, so she went for 24 hours. Do not forget, she was about 65-70 years old. I said, “Very good, tell me which day you are going to pray so that I will remember you in prayers”. She prayed and came back. I knew she was praying, so I asked, “How is it”? She said, “I do not feel anything but at the end of it my whole body feels very warm”. Interesting phenomenon, whole body feels very warm.

Some of you when you are praying in tongues, you may have tried praying for 48 hours or 24 hours and all that, maybe some of you might try 72 hours, you pray, pray, pray, and then with your red google eyes, you come and say, “Pastor, I have got nothing. Very thirsty, that is all”. So, a little bit sore, but not sickness. I cannot say sickness because people pray in tongues for so long but what you did not know, what happened was something happened to your body. So be the guinea pigs for Bible students. See if you pray in tongues often, whether you still can fall sick. If what they say is true, then praying in tongues is as good as taking panadol. *Oh*, you have got a headache, pray in tongues. “Headache, pray in tongues”? *Ya, lah*, I thought praying in tongues, no need your head, right? “Painful”. *Ya*, just lie down and pray. “What happens if you fall asleep”? Why, you cannot sleep, right, so before asleep, still good.

When I was a young student pastor in the Baptist church, I stayed in the parsonage in Penang. It was called Reservoir Garden Baptist Church. It still exists today. There was a little parsonage but now the building has expanded, and I stayed there, and I had just freshly come out. I was asked to leave the Baptist Seminary because I was a Charismatic, but the church still took me in as a student pastor. I was an official student pastor there and at that time I did not know much about praying in tongues. I had tongues, but I never prayed much. One day I was really having fever, feeling feverish and all that thing, I was doing everything that I knew to be well. I had a group of people praying with me and they said, “*Eh*, pray in tongues”. I said okay since there was nothing else that we could do. We prayed in tongues. Literally, this is what I felt because when you are feverish, you have got a little bit of headache and all this thing, your head is groggy and all that, I literally felt a warm sensation rising up slowly and it pushed the thing and then slowly my head cleared. But it took about half-an-hour to one hour praying in tongues. Those were my early days.

That is why I see some benefits in tongues that I have to experiment with. Maybe you could be my test case guinea pigs where for the next one year you make sure you pray in tongues one hour a day or one hour here / one hour there, 365 days and see from now to the next year whether you ever fall sick. Here is another side benefit to pray in tongues – good health, *zoe* life flowing into your body. So now I wonder, if everyone of us pray in tongues for one hour and that happens, what happens if we pray for two hours? What happens if most of the time we pray in tongues? I wonder whether some of you will reverse engine, you never know, you can be my guinea pigs.

Someone asked me, “How to pray in tongues and you are working...”? Some things need your mind, so it is very hard to pray but one thing good about praying in tongues is that you can go into remote control. Like praying in tongues, is in the background or is just softly inside you when you pray in tongues. I pray in tongues so much that now there is nothing coming out and I hear the sound. I hear my spirit man praying in tongues. Sometimes you can hear people in the spirit praying in tongues, but their soul does not know a thing. This is amazing, isn’t it, that your spirit could be praying in tongues and your soul knows nothing? But because you pray so much, it is in the default mode when you are praying. Imagine how many thousand dollars of doctor’s bills you saved, just by praying in tongues. Consider it an investment in your Medisave which you never need to withdraw.

Here is the benefit of praying in tongues and he tells us is in the context in verse 28, “*And we know that all things work together for good to those who love God, to those who are the called according to His purpose*”. We all know that “all things” include things in the spirit, things in the soul and things in the body. That is what we all want. We want the physical world to be working on our behalf. The good thing is that we are not fatalistic. We are not subject to the elements, we are more than conquerors and we overcome. It is not us that overcome, it is Christ in us, through us, overcoming.

And now, you think about the beauty of how God has made it. Whether we are rich or poor, intellectual or non-intellectual, highly educated or not highly educated, emotional or dry intellectualism, when we pray in tongues, it is all the same. It is all the same. It is an equalizer, except that some of us pray more, so we may have diverse kinds of tongues, but the fact is, whatever strata of society we are in, when God poured out His Spirit, all of them spoke in tongues. The tongues of Cornelius were as good as the tongues in Acts 2, so that Peter says (Acts 10:47), “Who can forbid us to baptize these who have received the Holy Spirit just as we have”? Qualitatively / quantitatively the same – “just as we have”. There were no tongues of fire but one thing, they prayed in tongues.

Why does Paul say in 1 Corinthians 13 that when he prays in tongues, his understanding is unfruitful...”? Very good question. Now, that is in 1 Corinthians 14 and he deals with the will too. He says in 1 Corinthians 14:15: “... *I will pray with the spirit, and I will also pray with the understanding...*” implying tongues. He says (verse 14): “*For if I pray in a tongue, my*

*spirit prays, but my understanding is unfruitful*". Because when you pray in tongues, it affects here: "I will". You see, praying in tongues has a direct thing on your body and in your spirit, but it leaves your soul alone. Can you see the reason why? Your soul has an atmosphere to grow. Then he says what must my soul do? My soul must sing with understanding and I will sing with the spirit. That is, my soul needs to depend on the renewal of the mind.

The soul's understanding is another aspect of growth, that we have to study the Bible, learn the Bible, grow in the Bible. You see, you cannot escape. You cannot just grow strong. That is why a lot of people who pray in tongues a lot, in terms of soul maturity, they are still very immature, correct? I will agree with Paul but a lot of non-tongue speakers, study a lot of the Word, study until with thick glasses, why, because they do not believe in healing, so... amen. However, they know a lot of the Word, they are quite mature in many areas, but they are non-tongue speakers. Now, not all non-tongue speakers grow but those non-tongue speakers who love the Word grow because their understanding is fruitful. They study the Word. The mind and the understanding but still need to study the Word and grow in the Word.

Praying in tongues has a place. You see, it surrounds you, it helps your body, it helps your spirit. It says (Jude 1:20-21) "*praying in the Holy Spirit, keep yourselves in the love of God*". Choosing God's love, your will still has to choose because what God does is He energises you to will and He energises you to do. The choice of doing is still your will to choose but He makes it easier. Paul says praying in tongues does not, we agree, (1 Corinthians 14:14-15), praying in tongues does not help your mind at all to grow. "Unfruitful" is the word he used but the same Paul never mentioned that it did not help your body.

In Romans, it says; look at what it does to your body because sin nature is in your physical body. Thus, we conclude Philippians 2 in its full extent when he says it is God who works in you to will (in your spirit) and to do (He gives your body energy). Once your body is energised, the soul is in a perfect environment because it talks about, in Romans 7, it says the problem with the soul is not that the spirit did not want to do, it desires, what I will to do, I cannot do because there is a war going on in my body. Now that in Romans 8 the war is gone, I can "*phroneo*" my mind. My mind is now no more clouded.

### *The war must end*

Remember the war must end, correct? If the war does not end, you cannot do business, you cannot trade, and you cannot conduct a proper society. If a whole country goes to war, everything is abnormal. When a country is at war, with the bombs and missiles all over the place, you cannot go to the office as normal. No, everything is abnormal. Our own body was at war. Paul calls it a war: "I see the law of sin and death warring...". This is a war declared here: the law of sin and death warring against my soul, my mind, my will. My spirit wants to do but there is a war going on.

God has to stop the internal war and the internal war is stopped in a funny way. In the baptism of the Spirit, God gives you tongues and your tongues is like the war is over. You say, "What is that"? Rejoicing, because not everybody prays in tongues the same way. Something happens to your physical body here and now your mind is in a perfect environment to grow. By ending the war here, so some of you are still fighting the war, but when you end the war here, suddenly you are in an environment that the Word comes better.

So how do we accelerate the process? Okay, whenever you combine, praying in the spirit is mastering the area of the spirit, when you combine it with the study of the Word or meditation in the Word, the two have a feedback loop because the Word strengthens your spirit. When your spirit is strengthened, you want to pray even more. The feedback loop is very great. It has a feedback loop. When you add the Word to the process... You see, Paul says that "my mind is unfruitful". He says (1 Corinthians 14:15), "... *I will pray with the spirit* (that means he did not stop praying in the spirit), *and I will also pray with the understanding. I will sing with the spirit, and I will also sing with the understanding*". In other words, he develops his understanding with the Word. That expedites and speeds up the process.

That is why you see some people, they only study the Word and they go off track, but you find preachers who study the Word a lot and then pray in tongues a lot, they are different. Something accelerates in their lives. Some preachers, they just pray in tongues a lot, really pray, men of prayer, but they have no Word, their growth is also, is there, but they cannot grow further. Same with every Christian.

What happens if your body is still at war? Does it help to pray in tongues? Yes, you have to pray in tongues until “the body gives up”. There is a point when your body gives up and the body is feeding to your mind – What is this you are doing? Why are you doing this? – you know, all this rubbish and all these things, until you pray, pray, pray. I tested it myself. I pray and my mind, like all Christians, in my mind all kinds of things going on. Then I pray until suddenly quiet, no more, like the mind does not fight back anymore, like the fight has gone out of the body and the carnal mind (which is enmity against God, so the carnal mind protests, protests and protests), until all quiet. Up to this day it is very quiet.

### *Entering the rest*

This is what the Bible says about entering the rest. Yes, it is entering the rest, Hebrews 4. Sometimes when you pray in tongues for very long, it has what I call a credit effect. That means you have been building more energy than you need, and the energy is not wasted. It is in somewhere, stored up. It is like you are banking in ten thousand credits of energy. Then for one month you did not really read the Bible or pray in tongues, it still carries you but then it is using your credits. So, after one month, maybe your energy credit has gone to nine hundred and ninety-nine thousand, you have got one credit more, then you pass the one more, *huh*, you start to fill in all the things, and you do not get back into praying in tongues again to boost up the energy. Let us say your consumption is about, in fact, different people consume different things, one thousand credits a day or two thousand credits a day, and you finish it very fast. There is what I call a credit factor that it can carry you but not forever. If you do not get back in, you will begin to feel the effect, like everybody else in the world.

Now, it is also scriptural, how to tie it to the rest in Hebrews 4 is by looking at the quotation of Paul of Isaiah 28. Remember Paul says this is what was prophesied? He talks about tongues in 1 Corinthians 14:21, “*With men of other tongues and other lips I will speak to this people...*”. You see, this talks about tongues but when you look at the quotation, he takes it from Isaiah 28:11. Then when you look at the next verse after that (Isaiah 28:12), “... *He said, ‘This is the rest...’*”. Paul did not continue to the next verse. “*This is the rest*” that was prophesied, that we will enter this rest.

Sometimes when you start praying in tongues or even when you read the Bible or meditate, after some time, you feel very sleepy. That sleepiness effect can be what I call slow motion

falling under power. Falling under the power is like very sleepy, you just fall asleep. Except when people suddenly go under the power, they just go into a kind of sleep and so sometimes when that happens, you just let it go if you have the time. You just let it go and just pray in tongues, and then you will wake up in the same position. Of course, when you wake up in a different position, in a different place, in a different city, that is a different thing – you might be transported. Then after that when you wake up again, you are very fresh. Sometimes you might receive encounters.

I have to tone down... I get so tired that I have to really tone down until so soft...”. I do have a teaching on *Praying in Tongues* series. I told people that when you are praying in tongues, you are in control of different things. People do not realise that they are in control. You control the speed of your prayer. You can pray in tongues very fast – the tongues come from God, but you own the speed. You can control also what I call the tone. You can pray very high or very low. It is still the same language. Just like when you speak in English. So, whether it be in known language or not, you control that level. People new to tongues do not realise that they have got this amount of control but once it is demonstrated, they realise they have. Then they can also pray very relaxed or very tensed where they enjoy each enunciation of words. They can pray that way. The third: control. You can enjoy the different control, but the language is still coming from the Lord.

Then the fourth area that they have in terms of praying in tongues is that the language can change but for the language to change, they must allow their body to have free movement of their whole mouth, their tongue and their vocal chords. Like I speak in English only from the side of my mouth, my English will always be different. Or I can speak in very nasal English because I purposely push all the things and I did not allow my tongue to move properly. People think that God takes your tongue and move for you. No, never. We allow the movement. When we allow the free movement of the whole thing, then God can enunciate different words.

Sometimes when I catch on to the words of angels, some angels’ words, their tongues are like the wind and water. I come to know that their language is like it comes from the back of the throat but there are other angels with different types of language. The movement of our lips and allowance of it allows the different tongues to come forth.

We can also speak in tongues while we are doing other things? That is the fifth one. We also have a remote-control tongue where you do not have much thought, but where there are somewhere you put yourself into it. It is just like when we speak in English or we sing a song. The fifth thing is how much effort, but we know effort is effort. Obviously when you are praying in tongues in the office, you could not put all the energy into it while you are working, you know, your boss is just next door.

Then when you really pray in tongues, is the sixth part that I never taught on actually, you pray in tongues with bodily movement. Of course, among some of us who are dancing would love it - like Agabus the prophet, where your body is actually involved, you really put everything into it. Or your body cannot afford to be involved, like when you are driving your car and praying in tongues. Of course, we do not expect you to be screaming in your car, so the person in the car next to you: “*Eh*, why are you guys scolding me in some funny language that I do not know”? But you could just be praying very softly, whatever.

What is most important about the will, you notice I concentrate on one verse only, Philippians 2:13, *both to will and to do* but there is a third part to that verse, *for good pleasure*. You know why God created free will? You can enjoy while you are doing, robots cannot enjoy that. The purpose for free will is actually just for that. God wants to give us consciousness, that it is our choice and that we are flowing with Him.

Praying in tongues there is a secret spiritual detector that can detect how long also you were praying in tongues. There is energy in your body that is actually there. That is how I know who has been praying in tongues and how long.

## Chapter 7...

### Inward Witness

We have touched on different parts of our spirit. This, *The Spiritual Man II* book, is to help us to grow, understand who we are and how we grow. We all have natural understanding and we have been taught in schools about our natural body. We know what our body needs. So almost everyone today knows that they need proteins, carbohydrates for energy, vitamins, enzymes and all the different things that make up the food. Even if you do not know all those natural knowledge, if you eat well, you could live and die without even knowing all those things.

Thousands of years ago, and even hundreds of years ago before all these foods were classified, people had lived and died, some of them lived well, some of them did not live well but the difference is that, with the knowledge, you know how to eat better. You know what your diet consists of, you know how to reduce your carbohydrates, increase your proteins, and then you eat according to your age. When you are young, you might need more carbohydrates. In fact, from studies, they realise that while those people who are growing, they do need carbohydrates too. It is part of their development in the area of their nervous system and all that for children. So, do not remove carbohydrates from children, they need it; it is part of their development stage. Once all your systems are developed, then you only need carbohydrates for energy and proteins to maintain your muscle mass. All these are useful information and is because we have all these useful information, we are able in the natural to fast 7 days, 21 days, 40 days, without necessarily losing that much body mass and body weight. Wisdom is important.

When we understand the laws that govern different things, it helps us to maintain a healthy physical body. That is why we need to understand the spirit man and the soul man, what is within us, so that we could be able to train our spirit, flow with the things that our spirit wants to know and know what is going on in our spirit. That is why we need to know the spiritual man. As we know, the body is just a vessel that the spirit and soul live in.

Kenneth Hagin’s book *How You Can Be Led by the Spirit of God* has a section called *Inward Witness*, and he spoke many things about the inward witness. In his teaching (which is good on its own), it teaches that the inward witness is like a green light or a red light. So that is what he taught but even what he taught in the book *How You Can Be Led by the Spirit of God*, he mentioned how the Lord taught him that if a person learns to hear the inward witness in his life in making all the decisions of his life... Now, we make thousands of decisions over weeks / months, and over a life-time maybe millions of decisions, decisions of what to eat, different things in the natural; decisions that affect our soul and spirit. Major decisions or small decisions, we make thousands of decisions and in his book (on the inward witness), Kenneth E Hagin says that if a person will listen to the inward witness, he will prosper, and God will teach him how to become prosperous in financial area. I believe the prosperity also includes the prosperity in your soul and in the area of your body so that you do not get sick. You might not realise it, but your spirit man knows more than your natural man.

*The inward witness*

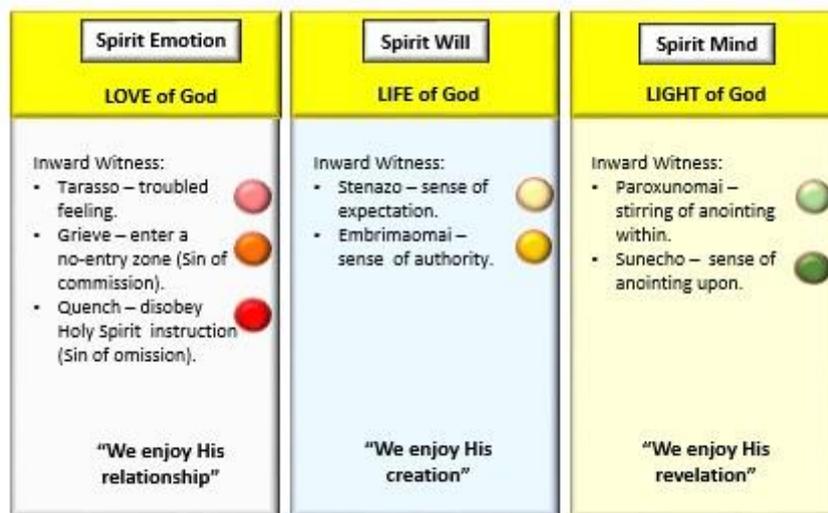


Diagram 1

It is in 1 Corinthians 2:11 where Paul says, “No man knows the things of God except the Spirit of God”. In the same way, “No man knows the things of the spirit of man within him except the spirit of the man”. Your spirit man knows everything that you need and your spirit man, if you listen to your spirit man, your spirit man will even tell you what foods you can eat, what foods you cannot eat, because all of us are chemically slightly different.

I have a book (in my library in Australia) that talks about how the different sizes of our internal organs (like kidney, liver and heart) can differ from almost 200% to 500%. That means a person’s heart could be, there is a general shape / size, but it could differ and a liver

or a kidney can differ so much. The position of organs in your body might be slightly different too. I mean, generally they are connected together. As you know, for some people (the rare case), their heart is slightly in the centre or slightly off position. All these little things make a person slightly chemically different and although in general, when you learn Health Science, you know what foods are good, yet you must also learn what foods affect you. Certain foods might be good but certain foods might affect you differently from another person sitting next to you.

Your spirit man will teach you. Some of your sickness and disease might be caused by chemicals that you add to the daily things you use (soap or even your lotions that you use), all those things your spirit man will actually sound a warning for you. Can you imagine how good your spirit man is? The problem is most of us cannot tell whether it is from the spirit man. We do not even have red light / green light, we have got no lights; the traffic lights are spoilt and so, it is a wild thing going on inside.

Believe me, before you ever get sick, your spirit man is the first one to tell you and sometimes it sounds the alarm by giving you a dream. Then it is up to the interpretation of that dream, to be able to interpret what you are supposed to do in the natural. There is a green light and a red light in Kenneth E Hagin's understanding.

Very interestingly, Watchman Nee in his book *The Spiritual Man* does not talk about the leading of the Spirit. Never covered that topic at all because this is the topic that belongs to Pentecostals. Evangelicals thought they have the Word – good enough. It is not much talk at all and if you read the entire book *The Spiritual Man*, there is nothing that says about how to listen to your spirit man but, yet it is part of the spiritual man. The spiritual man listens to the Spirit and knows what the Spirit wants. It is not bad, Kenneth E Hagin at least brought us a bit further.

I talk about Watchman Nee and Kenneth E Hagin, because one is from the Pentecostal realm and from a Western world culture, the other is a Chinese and is from a Chinese culture, probably wrote his book in Chinese too and it got translated. One is before Pentecostal Revival, one is after. We need to have both understanding to be complete, which is why we have this second book called *The Spiritual Man Book II*.

When I was exposed to Kenneth E Hagin's teaching, I realised that the inward witness is important. Then through time, I discovered that we not only have a green light and a red light, we have got a yellow light warning. Yellow light, as you all know, if any of you have been driving a lot but long ago, did you notice the traffic lights have changed not only to LED, but the traffic lights have changed? Long ago, it would go from red light to yellow light, then green light. Then from green light to yellow light and then red light. Did you notice that, long ago? But now, they do not bother with the red light to yellow light; yellow light, they just zoomed. Long ago, they had to go through that cycle but now, from red light, it goes to green light, then from green light, it goes to yellow light, just to warn you to slow down. Then only it becomes red light because we need that, except that the meaning of the yellow light to different people means different things. Most people see the yellow light as drive faster, get past it before it turns red, but the yellow light is originally and by law, legally it is to tell you to "slow down", correct? Once in a while, you have what I call the signal light at the crossing which is just flashing yellow – that means be alert, drive slowly and carefully but there is no other change, just yellow light flashing. So yellow light flashing means caution, be more aware, beware of different things, and slow down. That is what it is. So yellow light: slow down, get ready to stop. Then it turns into red light. Then from red light, it goes back to green light again. There is a red light, a green light, and then a yellow light that says "caution".

Then I say, okay, that is interesting. Since Kenneth E Hagin describes the witness of the Holy Spirit, and he got it from the Bible where it says the Holy Spirit bears witness within us that we are sons of God, so he got that thing from the word "witness". In my *Foundational Truth Vol 10*, I got this understanding from researching the word "spirit". I say, okay, if you are being led by the Spirit, the best place to start is from the Bible, and I researched the word "spirit". I looked at the word "spirit" and, of course, most of the time it refers to the Holy Spirit but there are a few times that it refers to the human spirit. All those verses are given in *How to be led by the Holy Spirit, Foundational Truth Vol 10*. You can find all of them there and in that, being led by the Spirit, I introduced five different Greek words, all discovered from the Bible itself. With those five that I mentioned, in fact I classified "grieve" and "quench" altogether and made it into nine. I will look at it from a different perspective: from your spirit man and how it operates, and I will mention five of them. They are: *stenazo*, *embrimaomai*, *tarasso*, *paroxunomai* and *sunecho*.

“*Stenazo*”, which is from the original word “*anastenazo*” which is a combination of “*ana*” and “*stenazo*” – “*ana*” means “again”. It is when Jesus was praying for a man and He sighed deeply in His spirit. He sighed deeply in His spirit. In Mark 8:12 – “*But He sighed deeply in His spirit...*” and that is the Greek word “*anastenazo*”. Jesus sighed, and it does not just say it is a physical sigh. The Bible says, “inside His spirit”, like He breathed out something. We all know what a soul sigh or a natural sigh is like – could be a sigh of relief in the natural but Jesus was not doing that. Then He said, “*Why does this generation seek a sign*”? That is the word “*anastenazo*”, that is one of the occurrences when Jesus was confronting His disciples in the gospel of Mark. It was especially after He sighed and that was because the Pharisees said, “Give us a sign. Are you the one”? That kind of thing. These are all movements of the things in the spirit that we recognise.

Let us look over here, one more place, especially, let us look at Mark 2:8, “*But immediately, when Jesus perceived in His spirit...*”. You see, the spirit can perceive things. These are all the interesting verses. I did not cover all these in the *Foundational Truth*, but I notice all these verses and I keep looking and meditating through them to get some understanding. His spirit perceived something. And “... *that they reasoned thus within themselves, He said to them, ‘Why do you reason about these things in your hearts’*”? He could pick up something in His spirit.

Then especially when He was moved (in the gospel of John). Let us look at John 11:33 (when Jesus was looking, before coming to Lazarus’ tomb), “*Therefore, when Jesus saw her weeping, and the Jews who came with her weeping, He groaned in the spirit and was troubled*”. So here are two Greek words: one is “*embrimaomai*” which means “groaned”; the other is “troubled” which is from the Greek word “*tarasso*”.

Then you have got “*paroxunomai*” and “*sunecho*”. When you start looking over in the book of Acts, the place where you see Paul functioning is when he began to travel in his missionary journeys and he came to various places. Acts 17:16, “*Now while Paul waited for them at Athens, his spirit was provoked...*” The word “provoked” is “*paroxuno*”. The other place, after Acts 17, is when Paul’s spirit was stirred or provoked. Acts 18:5 – “*When Silas and Timothy had come from Macedonia, Paul was compelled by the Spirit...*”, “*sunecho*” is the one: “compelled” by the Spirit.

You have all these different Greek words that I have come up with. The thing is, what do we understand from each one of these Greek words, based on *How to be led by the Holy Spirit, Foundational Truth Vol 10*?

I mentioned that “*stenazo*” is a sense of expectation when Jesus sighed. If you research the word “*stenazo*”, you will also find that there is like a sort of desirous thing, so I put it under different sections.

Since we know that your spirit man has will, emotions and mind, we realise that there are all the various signals that your spirit man is having. We have now identified them into which section of your spirit man – your will, your emotions or your mind, since they are from your spirit. Your will has, what I call, desires and things that push it forward: a decision is made. When a decision needs to be made, so under *Spirit Will*, “*stenazo*” and “*embrimaomai*”.

“*Embrimaomai*” – we found the word in John 11:33. So what I did was I did a Greek study on the word, I checked under the Greek Concordance and read where all the times the word “*embrimaomai*” occurs. When I found that the word “*embrimaomai*”, it occurs in the gospels when Jesus strictly warned the people that He healed. He told them not to go out and tell people because He had got too much publicity already. If they tell, He cannot go into the streets; everywhere would be crowded. So, He strictly told them, “Do not go”; especially to the leper that He healed, “Do not tell anyone”. So “strictly warned” is the word “*embrimaomai*”.

I was very puzzled. Why is it translated as “groaned” in John 11:33 and translated as “strictly warned” when they are two poles apart? When someone is giving you a warning, you do not say he is “groaning”. Has your boss ever groaned at you for a warning? No, when someone warned you, it is like, you know, he might raise his voice a little bit, he might sound very strict and strong and humour is out, and he is just correcting you.

So how can that one Greek word “*embrimaomai*” be translated into something poles apart? If you reverse the translation, it looks horrible, you know, “Jesus *groaned* to them”. Then you put the other side in John 11:33 and say, “Jesus *strictly warned* in His spirit”. What? Very funny translation. It is almost impossible to understand the word “*embrimaomai*” but the

essence of the word is what I call a sense of authority. It is just like before you make a decision, you must have the ability to make the decision. For lack of a better description, I call “*embrimaomai*” a sense of authority. If you do not have authority to make a decision, you do not have authority.

It involves the will, that when Jesus was groaning, we now understand it was not the same groaning as it was in Romans 8. Different sense. Romans 8, that one, surprisingly, is more “*stenazo*”. When you study the word “*stenazo*” in the Greek, you will realise the word “*stenazo*” has also been translated with different combinations into “groaning”. You see, there are many groanings. We already read the word in John 11:33, right, when He groaned. Look at Romans 8, if you would like to find out, that is where Paul begins to talk about groanings, and the verse that we are looking at is verse 26: “*Likewise the Spirit also helps in our weaknesses. For we do not know what we should pray for as we ought, but the Spirit Himself makes intercession for us with groanings...*” You see, two different Greek words [*embrimaomai* and *stenazo*], same translation – “groaned”, “groanings”, but different types of groaning.

#### *Two types of groaning*

You say, “I did not know there were different types of groaning”. Yes, in fact, there are more than two types. For tonight’s purpose, these two suffice, otherwise you will go out and say, “*Wah*, Pastor just said there are 210 types of groaning. Now I do not know how to groan anymore”. No, too complex. We just leave it at two and both have been translated in your English Bible as “groaning”, “groaned”, “groanings”. That is why you cannot get the deeper things unless you get into the Greek because no matter how you study it, even if you think about the allegory of prayer, you cannot illustrate it but only in the Greek, two types of groaning.

One groaning is with an expectation. Now Romans 8:26 becomes different. When a person is groaning (in Romans 8:26), it is like he is giving birth to something (his expectation) and that something is coming forth. There might be an emotional sensing of different things, but it’s just like... I am sure, no one has tested it, but I am sure, one day we should experiment and test it out. If you record a woman groaning in giving birth and someone groaning in pain, the physical ears might hear it to be almost the same, but I am very sure if you analyse it, there

will be a slight difference. No one has done it, so I do not have data because no one is interested in this kind of research. You sign up for the research. “What paper are you doing”? “Oh, I am doing a PhD on groaning”. “What? You are doing a paper on groaning? Why”? “Oh, there are 1,001 types of groaning”. What? And possibly, because groaning is like a language in itself, just like baby language is different. A mother knows the different cries of a child (if you have been a mother before). Most parents learn to recognise.

There are many types of groaning and all of it involves the will. I will explain why I put it there because you will think that groaning is emotional, correct? We are not talking about emotional groaning, that is an area we have not covered. Emotional groaning is like I come to you and I step on your shoes, with spite, “Ah”!!! That one is different.

This is a different groaning. One is a groaning of expectation [*stenazo*], the other is a groaning of authority [*embrimaomai*]. What type of groaning is that? Expectation. The other is Authority. In the spirit, there is a slight sense of difference and it comes from your inside. There are things that the energy stirs up.

Now, you know that when Jesus was groaning before He raised Lazarus from the dead, there was no prayer groaning. Prayer groaning is the other one: expectation, like a mother giving birth because by the time Jesus went there, all prayers had finished. He was to raise Lazarus from the dead. He was just sensing an anointing. There are the two sensations, two each. Two of them: inside the *Spirit Will*.

Then in your emotions side, now you know the inward witness has got six flavours. Before we turn them into traffic lights, let’s look at them first. Traffic lights: only three flavours. So, you have the *Spirit Emotion*, which is linked to a sense of grief. The Bible says in Ephesians 4:30, “*And do not grieve the Holy Spirit of God...*” and 1 Thessalonians 5:19, “*Do not quench the Spirit*”. Now, “grieve” and “quench” are slightly different, but I put them together, because I do not want to give you too many sensations, although they are slightly different. You could sense something missing there and I always analyse them this way: “grieve” is when you are doing something wrong, when the Spirit says not to do; “quench” is when you are supposed to do something, and you are not doing, which is also wrong. The sin of omission, the sin of commission, is within your sensation.

Why do I put them together? So, if you were to describe to someone the difference, it would be like trying to describe different textures. One person might say, “What is texture”? One is soft, one is softer. Can you see it is difficult to describe? However, the general understanding is there. That is why the general understanding of “grieve” and “quench” is that something is wrong. Something is wrong. Same way, your spirit man sense things, “grieve” and “quench” are quite close. You know why, both are red lights. There are two red lights.

Suddenly one day you drive a car in this new city and there are six traffic lights. In the six traffic lights, you say, “What is this”? Okay, this one [*Spirit Will*], “*stenazo*” and “*embrimaoma*”, orange lights. The other [*Spirit Mind*] – “*paroxunoma*” and “*sunecho*” – green lights. So, you have got red lights here [*Spirit Emotion*] but then within the red lights, you have got two red and one pinkish because I did not separate “grieve” and “quench”. However, “grieve” and “quench” are actually two different red lights because they are telling you something distinctive.

Then there is “*tarasso*”, which is like a burden. “*Tarasso*” is like “troubled”. It has been translated in John 11:33, “... *He groaned in the spirit and was troubled.*” – Jesus’ spirit was troubled. That is why you get the word “*tarasso*”. “*Tarasso*” is like a “troubled” feeling / stirring. It is not actually red, that is why I call it pink light. So now you drive in a city, the traffic lights have got seven lights, one red light that is redder than the other. One is matte, and one is shiny. Okay, just to make the difference.

#### *Different type of light*

As you all know, there are 24 spirit beings and each of the spirit being gives a different type of light. There is a way to differentiate in the spirit beings where they have got two types of black (of dark colour, darker, not because it is really black but because we cannot see, it is a higher frequency). Anything of higher frequency, we cannot see. We see it as brown or black, which is why the moths and all that, which are brownish, actually they are very colourful in the higher range and there are two types of black: one is shiny black, one is matte black. Even in colours, you can differentiate the two colours: one is shiny, one is matte. Matte absorbs while shiny reflects.

Now, there are two green lights, two red lights, two orange lights. The two: can differentiate, one is matte, one is shiny. You see there are seven traffic lights: one shiny red light, one matte; one shiny green light, one matte; two orange lights. You drive your car, you look: How do I get into this? Now seven traffic lights; to make it interesting, there is a pink one. How do I react?

Now we talk about the inward witness. You have got seven different “inward witness” inside. Kenneth E Hagin gives you two. I have seven: 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6 + “*tarasso*” (the pink). Within your emotions [*Spirit Emotion*], there are three. If you divide “quench” and “grieve” as two separate ones, then you have got seven. If I put them together, you have got six. There are these seven different sensations on your inside. The next time you say, “I sense an inward witness” – which one? After Kenneth E Hagin, you might say, “*Oh*, green lights, red lights, what about orange lights? How do we sense these”?

Is this too much information? Before, very stable but now red light or green light. Now too much knowledge. You know how you can get overwhelmed with too much knowledge? If you think too much, you cannot do it. Research is good, but can you imagine, you know the reason why they cannot bug every phone and bug every conversation and everything? Too much data. Too much data to consider. When you have too much data, what do you do? Filter. You begin to filter and in order to filter, you must design the filter, which is why I introduce to you, the first thing to do is to recognise whether it is in the green range, the red range or the orange range. That one, you can do.

When you have an inward witness, first, detect the range. Is it in the red range (which can be good also)? You see, the pink one is good, the pink one tells you to pray. Is it in the red range, green range or orange range? That is the first thing you need to do. I am going very detailed about the inward witness. Seven different ones I give to you. Very detailed.

Now, I did not touch on green lights. The green light is very simple, “*Paroxunomai*” is the stirring of the anointing within. Remember Paul was stirred? The green light is telling you to do something and then sense of anointing upon: “*sunecho*”. Again, when the Spirit anoints you, it is to do something. They are all positive green lights, something you must do, something must be done. You must act on something, so it is the green light.

In this sense of the orange light, it is like a sense of expectation or a sense of authority. It works very closely with the others because your spirit man is one that works altogether.

When you have a pink light, what is pink light? “*Tarasso*”. It usually feels like a burden. It could be a prayer burden. Sometimes the burden is so heavy, you might not be able to sleep and if it is pink, it is not necessarily bad. Paul tells us in 2 Corinthians, he says he carries the burden of the church, that means he is a man of prayer. The pink light is a burden that you sense, not necessarily bad. Generally, what is a red light? Caution, stop! You must stop, you must look around and you must be aware because if you cross a red light, you endanger your life and endanger other lives. It is time to stop what you are doing.

### *The prayer burdens*

Smith Wigglesworth was very sensitive to that. He was a very strange man; some people tell us. He can be talking to you halfway, then he stops, then he disappears, and then he comes back and continues the conversation because he had a prayer burden, he just goes to finish the prayer burden, then he comes back and carries on the conversation. When you live like that, you are not very sociable necessarily because in the middle of a sentence and you might not have time to say, “excuse me”, you just go. *Eh*, where did he go? Then if it is a prayer burden, two hours and you are supposed to go off in one hour, you might say you do not know what happened. He was very sensitive to the burden.

Today, however, when you pray in tongues, you learn how to pray even when you are receiving a burden in the middle of any place. Inside you, you start praying. Then it depends on the development of your social skill, you might say, “*Oh*, excuse me, prayer burden, I am going to pray”. That is the pink light. You need to stop and pray because sometimes it could be some urgent thing that needs an intercessor, maybe it could be the life of your loved ones, a situation that needs prayer and your prayer might bring a miraculous escape. So why can’t you postpone it? Because if you postpone, let us say the plane is about to crash, your prayer might help the plane land properly or crash properly without injury. That is “*tarasso*” (“troubled”), a troubled kind of a burden, but it is actually a prayer burden. It is different from the other one: “grief”.

The word “grief” means a kind of sorrow. Sometimes you feel sadness, like a sorrow, something just grieves you, not depression, a sudden sorrow. That is what the sensation is

like, a red light. Why am I using the red light? Because the red light is very important. Green light, after all, it is green. Whether you drive slowly past the light or whatever, you are at least moving but the red light is where it can cause you your life and grieving the Holy Spirit is the most dangerous thing. If you continue to grieve the Holy Spirit in your life, your life will be cut short. It also means that you are in the permissive will.

Do you know that people who are walking in the permissive will, their spirit is constantly grieving? However, they are so dull to it, they do not feel it. Something is missing in their lives. Joy has been cut out. There is no way you can live in the permissive will and be joyful. Kenneth E Hagin was in the permissive will for two years. There are pastors and ministers who live in the permissive will and in their heart of hearts, in their spirit, they have no joy, they actually have grief. The grief is so covered up, you know how like when you talk to some people, especially if they have gone through a tragedy, they have lost loved ones and all that, they put up a front. They have to because otherwise they will burst into tears and you could tell by talking to them that at any moment they can burst into tears. You see, it depends. Some people are so socially skillful that they can hide it so well; a thick layer has grown over their grief.

Grief is very important. Grief means you have entered a no-entry zone. Wouldn't that be dangerous? No-entry zone - red light. If you cross the red light, the policeman can catch you. You have just broken the law. When you cross the red light, you break the law because there is no pink light. Pink light: you can still go slowly to the side kind of thing. Red light: "no go". Your crossing means you have entered into the "no go" zone, the sin of commission.

#### *The sin of omission*

Now, the sin of omission, which is "quench", is also a red light but it is more a matte colour. It is important also. It means that if you do not do something, you have sinned against God. To quench the Spirit is like the Spirit tells you to do and you do not do. You know, Kenneth E Hagin entered the permissive will. What was his problem? If you read the book *I Believe in Visions* – it was the sin of omission, not the sin of commission. That means the Spirit told him to prophesy, he never prophesied. He likes to be a teacher-prophet, not a prophet-teacher. God says, "Every time I give you a word to tell this pastor, you never told it". He was travelling between churches and some of those pastors needed to receive a last warning

before their lives were taken away. He was disobedient to deliver the word. It was quenching the Spirit, so it was a sin of omission, also a red light.

By not doing, it is sin, which is why I always tell people, in any good meeting, whether it be an AGM, a leadership meeting or anything, silence is consent. When a decision has to be made and you disagree with the decision and you keep silent and you allow the decision to be made, your silence equals consent. It has entered into the red-light zone also. It is a no-entry zone. In other words, it is not safe to just commit the sin of omission. You thought do nothing, do not trouble anything, do nothing you also can die.

Jesus said, "If I didn't allow the enemy...". Kenneth E Hagin did not break the Ten Commandments, he just did not want to prophesy, and he held back his prophecy, he did not tell when God gave him a word to tell. By holding it back, he entered into the permissive will. Jesus said, "You would not have lived past the age of fifty". I wonder how many Christians died early because of the sin of omission? Red light is a dangerous area.

How to get out of it? Okay, very good question. Spend time in prayer with God because when you are not sure, and you spend time in prayer, God will make it very sure. At least you pray about it.

Now, Kenneth E Hagin had served fifteen years as a pastor in different churches and Jesus told him, "When you left for the travelling ministry...". He was like a travelling evangelist although he was a prophet. Jesus said, "You have entered the first phase of your ministry". Then Hagin said, "What about the previous fifteen years"? He was doing something good, not bad; he was not in the perfect will of God. God is a God of mercy and compassion, when we do not do (the sin of commission), He is tolerant to the sin of omission. He gives you time to do something. Sometimes He gives five years or ten years, depends on certain things, but there is a time limit.

In this end time, if a person does not make a decision within a certain time, someone takes his place, the door is closed, because things are accelerated but when God tells a person to do something in this end time, it is a shorter period to obey. Disobedience is also classified in the sin of omission. It is as seriously dealt with as the sin of commission. Interesting perspective. So, the cure is if you spend a lot of time in prayer, you are a person or man or woman of

prayer, surely you can hear God easily. Every time you pray, this is what happens. Let us say nowadays red light, the red light also has a red-light sound. You say, “What red light sound”? It is like if there is a fire, a fire alarm. A fire alarm is ear piercing.

Long ago, I lived in Canberra and I went to visit some Indonesian Christians. They were all staying in a hotel, a group of them. They booked a hotel room for me and I stayed there. There was some sort of conference or something and they just wanted to fellowship and ask about different things. Then in the middle of the night, the alarm bell rang, it was ear piercing. Everybody got up, some of them half-dressed. We were supposed to go quickly, not supposed to pack our bags or anything and so we went out there and everybody was outside. *Huh*, it was just a test. Why test at night?

This is what happens when you are in the red-light zone. You might hear, because you are very dull, you know, like a fire alarm from a building about 500 metres away, you just hear it like a little sound. However, when you go to God in prayer, it gets louder because every time you come to the throne of God, the red light is magnifying, which is why the cure is to spend time in prayer. Recommended: all-night prayer. Spend the night indoor praying. Not just 5 minutes, but you really spend time waiting on God. Isaiah 40:31. Then you can hear it clearly.

That also goes with the green light. How will you know that you have the green light and what will the green light be like? It is like the anointing. You sense the anointing over and over, preparing you for something and it gets stronger when you are in the presence of God, it gets weaker when you go into the world. It disappears when you turn your heart away from God and you totally cannot hear.

This expectation side also. You say what is this orange light for? Orange light is to alert you to the fact of something happening, to get you more alert. You know, nowadays they have got DEFCON 1, DEFCON 2. In many countries today, they have got orange alert, red alert, or they lift the level of emergency, and so they have that. In the same way, this is like raising the alert level. You see, alert level, like red alert which is different from red light. You have got to treat this like getting everyone in gear, when everyone is relaxed. Let us say if there is a 90% chance of your country being attacked. You know what, they will probably issue the alert and say, “Everybody, be alert, any time imminent attack is going to come, you need to

take charge”. That means everyone does different things. You might travel with a special pack of emergency food or whatever. You see, your normal routine is different, depending on the alert level. They cannot say that an attack has taken place because it is only a warning. The orange light is to tell you to be at your peak. Any time, it can tell you to do something.

God issued them a red alert, or let us call it an orange alert, about to take place after the Ten Plagues. Remember He said they must eat, with their sandals on their feet? You wear your sandals and eat, and you dress up ready as if you are going to move but God never told them that they were going to move. He never. He said, “When you celebrate the Passover, I want you to be all dressed up, like you are about to go somewhere”. That was an alert and it was good. He never told them what He was going to do, but He wanted them to be alert because at the exact time, after the judgment, after midnight, God sounded the green light for them to go. Now, if they did not pay attention to the orange light, when the green light said to go, “wait, wait, I dress up, wait” and some of them might take 3 hours to dress up, by then, all gone already. Then you come out, *eh*, where is everyone? The only people you find are the Egyptian soldiers about to come and arrest you because they are chasing after all the rest of them because they had got a short gap to quickly go out before Pharaoh changed his mind.

Since God works with the free will of man, God has to just put them on alert and see when He can tell them to go. That is, the orange light and it is very important. The only difference in this orange light is like, it is an orange light, get ready to go; there is no get ready to stop, which is opposite from our traffic lights. It is just an alert, be ready to take action, be ready to do something. It might also be get ready to stop, like the traffic lights in olden days. Be alert, I want you to stand down on something.

Inner witness is a sensation, it has got no voice. The voice of the Holy Spirit is totally different. It is the voice of your spirit man. The voice of the Holy Spirit is another realm. This one is just sensation. It is the spirit man. We are talking about inner witness is our spirit man sensing from these seven things. Your inward witness is the most important. It is your check for the inward voice and your check for prophecy.

If somebody prophesies, let us say somebody prophesies and my red light goes off, what do I do? I reject that prophecy, but most people cannot tell. It does not matter whether the prophecy is in King James English, comes with music or is from someone well-known, it can

still be a false prophecy. Most of the time, we depend on our pastors or leaders to do that for us but in the end time, everyone must be trained.

Some of us have gone through different experiences? On the morning of 22 September 2013, everybody was troubled from the COG church in Singapore. In fact, on the Friday before, some had some sort of a private meeting. I had not come back from Sydney yet. Everyone was troubled. The red light was flashing, the enemy had penetrated, they came for Friday meeting, and some people told me that was the worst Friday all-night prayer they ever had. We did not have such a thing before. The enemy had crossed the line but how many people were sensitive to the Holy Spirit; how many people knew that it was a red light? Even the vessel that God used before did not know. It is the scream coming from our spirit man and we need to be able to tell.

#### *Trained to be sensitive*

Once you are very sensitive and this is a good thing, once you are very well trained, sometimes in a person's conversation, already you can sense different things. You will become more and more alert to that to be able to sense different things and sometimes this is the sensation. You look at the person and you can even know whether he is in the permissive will. You say why, because you can also hear his siren. You can hear his siren in his spirit. Everything comes out from you. You do not have to put your ear next to the person's spirit to hear. You could sense it. Once you grow in sensitivity, you could even come to fellowship with a person and you could tell whether the person is in the perfect will of God or not. People in the perfect will have a different level of fellowship from people in the permissive will. There are different levels when you are walking with God.

Remember, seven flavours are inside you but I classify them into three sections: just sense. Kenneth E Hagin describes what the sensation is like. He describes it as a velvety-feeling on the inside. I, however, describe it this way: generally, red light area is "troubled" and "grieve"; green light area is like "joy" and "bubbly"; orange light area is a general alertness.

Now, when God divided these things, remember that there are three things that exist when God released creation. They are found in John 1:4, "*In Him was life, and the life was the light of men*". So, we always say the three things: life, light, and then we have in 1 John that when you have the life of God, you have the love of God. If you walk in love, you walk in life, you

walk in light. If you do not walk in love, you are walking in darkness. 1 John tells you that. So those three are important. Existence happens in those three, spirit dimension. You know we have got X, Y and Z, physical dimension. All existence is made up from these three frameworks: life, light and love. These are the perfect frameworks for existence. All existence must exist within these three frameworks. They are like the framework of creation in existence.

When we were created, the reason why within us, the three that are inside (three circles) – spirit, soul and body. Within us also divided into three parts, you have got will, emotion and mind in your spirit because each part was created from these three dimensions of God. The three dimensions of God are like they are all the same thing.

Let us see, okay, let me use water first. Water can exist in three forms. The chemical formula is H<sub>2</sub>O. Two atoms of hydrogen with one atom of oxygen joined together to form a molecule. That molecule is water. It can exist in liquid form, it can exist in water vapour form (gas), it can exist in solid form (ice). Every time you are touching ice or liquid water, or you feel hot with perspiration, you are dealing with the same molecule (hydrogen oxide, H<sub>2</sub>O), but it does feel different. It feels different based on different temperatures. At a certain temperature, it becomes ice; at a certain temperature, it becomes gas; at a certain temperature, it remains liquid; but it is the same.

Then when you have, let us say a bottle of anointing oil. You know how sometimes they trick you, kind of thing. Nowadays trick photography. If you photograph it from one angle, you might wonder what it is. When you are looking at that angle, you say that could be some sort of a mirror. It could be anything, depending on what it is, and you will not know its shape until you see it that way. You say, *huh*, bottle shape but if you photograph it another way so that you see it differently, you could see two round things. You might not know what it is because you cannot see the whole part.

It is just like the three blind men trying to describe an elephant: one blind man touches the elephant at the side and says: an elephant is like a wall. He is correct because it is only one part of the elephant. Another blind man is holding the elephant by the leg and he says that an elephant is like a tree. He is correct but only from his perspective. Another blind man is

touching the elephant's trunk and says that an elephant is like a snake. This is also true because he is standing in front of the elephant. Then there is another blind man, you say why, the story only has got three blind men; no, the other blind man is not talking because the elephant is stepping on him, he is dead, he cannot do anything. Okay, he is dead, so he cannot feel anything else.

### *Three areas of DNA*

There are three areas of DNA when created. God needs to put His life out, and His life contains light. When you are looking at love, remember you are looking at life and light. When you are looking at light, you are looking at love and life. When you are looking at life, you are looking at light and love. When God created us, He made our spirit to have the capacity to sense all three. Your emotion is to sense love. Your will is to sense life / light. Let me illustrate. When a person is very sick, that means he has got less life. You asked him, "Let us go and play badminton". No, he is very sick, no energy. "Let's go swimming". "Er..." His will is affected because he has got less life. Can you see the connection? The more life you have, the more you want to do things. The less life you have, *lembeh, lembeh*, you just hold one tiny second, you might fall apart and die. Yes, some people do not have enough life, that is why they do not have enough will. A weak-willed person is a person whose life has been sapped away. When he has got life, it comes from God, his will is strong.

Have you noticed this? The young ones always want to do things and when you go on vacation with them, you have got to pack up the whole thing, pack up with events and things, why, they cannot just sit around in the hotel and do nothing. Or some of you, when you go on holiday, all you want is to sit on the beach, lie down, take a good book, have a drink (with a little umbrella), that is your vacation. The young ones say, "Let's go paragliding, let's go surfing". Then after surfing, they still have got a lot of energy, "What shall we do tonight"? They have got a lot of life. Life energises them.

The more life you have, the more will you have. The connection is there. Your will is connected to life. Your mind is connected to light. The more light you have, the more you find your mind is brilliant, you can sense things. The less light you have, the less is your thinking capacity. We need to have more light. Different aspects. When you have got more of the three different aspects, you are well rounded in the way God wants you, but the Bible tells you which one starts first.

### *Love, life and light*

Love, life and light. When you have got three things, you must start with one. Light. Your Bible actually answers. Some of you, when you say light, because you are thinking: *God said, "Let there be light..."* Those of you who say life, because you are thinking: *In Him was life, and the life was the light of men.* Love, because God is love, it starts from God's heart. But which one starts first? Look at your own self because you are made in the image of God. Before you speak, you need air. Without air, you cannot speak. The air represents life.

John 1:4, *"In Him was life..."* You see, everything was made through Him and John 1 gives you the order. Do you notice that only John, John actually goes further than Genesis, because Genesis just says in the beginning He created heaven and earth? It never told you that there was a time before creation that the Word came out from the God-dimension, but John did. John slows down the process for us to see it.

John 1:1 (it says here and that is the order of things), *"In the beginning was the Word* (this is not the spoken word, after He has spoken it; He was the living Word, was the Word), *and the Word was with God, and the Word was God"*. Up to John 1:1, there was no creation. They exist, time has not been created. God just came into this Universe to start creating. He was the Word. You see, there were two parts of God, one was the Word, one was God in the God-dimension. There were two dimensions. God manifest in two persons. In verse 2: *"He was in the beginning with God"*. You see, this was still within the beginning but the Word coming forth was the very beginning of the Universe. There was nothing created, just the Word existing. In verse 3, *"All things were made through Him, and without Him nothing was made that was made"*. Verse 4: *"In Him was life..."* He breathed His life and His life gave out light.

Genesis 1:1 was seeing the light, but John went inside the light and said this is actually the process, life and when God created, now you know why angels also have free will. In fact, all creation has free will. Does your dog have free will? It can choose to obey or not obey, right? Free choice. Everything that has life, that was created in the soul format, has free choice. That is why angels have free choice. That is why some chose to rebel. The moment God breathed out an independent life, that life has got free choice. That life is conscious, and God never created robots. He created creatures that can choose, independent from Him. So that is

why the will is a part. The will is like creation, emotion side is like relationship, mind side is like revelation and you need to understand.

Now, if you have creation without the emotion, you cannot enjoy life. If you have creation without the mind, you cannot understand creation. If God removes your mind, you will be alive, but you have no understanding. If God removes your emotions, you have got life, but you do not really enjoy being alive. Here I come down to the next level. It depends on what degree. Do plants have emotions? Yes. Plants can feel. Plants do not have a soul. You see the differentiation now.

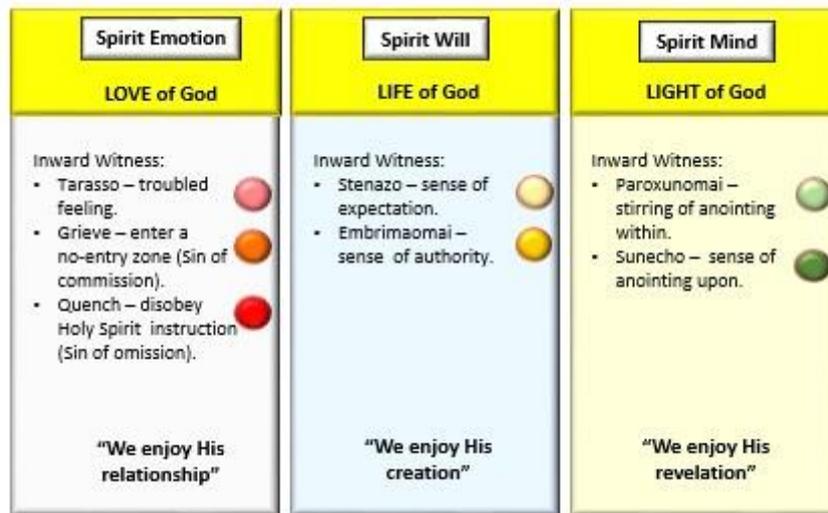


Diagram 1

Now looking at my chart. This chart helps you because there is a level of body will and emotions. We are talking about that.

### *Level of body will*

Now, why does God create spirit, soul and body for us? Because the physical dimension has a level of body will and mind but the weakest part, is just like conscious of the state of existence but it cannot really choose. A plant cannot decide if it wants to go from here to there. Where it is planted, that is it but, in a way, plants can sense. Plants have emotions that mean if you sing to the plants, the plants grow better. If plants hear music, plants can get sad. You can talk to plants. If plants can respond, they have an essence of emotions. That is the correct word to use. They do not have emotions or will, but they have an essence of it because they are the beginning of relationship with God. Now, if plants have emotions, when you chop a plant, does the plant cry? No tears because it only has got an essence.

Then God decided to move us into a deeper level, He created soul. Animals have souls. Animals could express emotions and free will and some intellect better and you have got Bible scriptures for that. Don't you think Balaam's donkey was very smart? You can count how many times it had been obedient, so it knew Mathematics. It asked Balaam: "In all my life with you, have I ever done this to you"? And Balaam said no. You see, the donkey remembers, so the donkey has a memory. It knows, it can count. All the time before it can talk, it already has got a conscience. It was a thinking donkey. Did the donkey protect his life? It made a decision. Balaam said to go there, it wanted to go to another side. It got beaten for it. It had got free will. It suffered. If the angel never let the donkey talk and never gave it the human language to talk just for the time being, you would not know that that was an intelligent donkey. It could count, it could anticipate, it could strategise. You know how when one time the angel was blocking the donkey; the donkey quickly made a free will decision to go to the side. It did not want to go there, it decided to go here. The angel was also smart, he waited until there was a narrow place and the angel drew his sword, so the donkey could not go sideways. You know what the donkey did? The donkey saw a little gap. It went there, and Balaam's leg was crushed. It is just like the whole path was there, the angel was invisible, the donkey did not go straight, like the donkey purposely stretched its leg, still protecting him. The donkey had a soul, but it lacked a spirit.

The spirit part brings it further. Animals know love, do you know that? Animals have some levels of love and compassion. You have seen animals sometimes taking care of one another, even different species, when they grow up together.

In Ecclesiastes 3:21, *Who knows the spirit of the sons of men, which goes upward, and the spirit of the animal, which goes down to the earth?* Why is it talking about the spirit of the animal? The word refers to the "breath" of the animal because all animals have what I call a "shared" soul. They are not so developed and a "shared" spirit, if you want to call it that. In other words, all of them are like represented in one another because they all came from the same spiritual substance.

It is like this: God is a spirit. When God created, He breathed out His spirit. When He created man, He kept man, spirit altogether, same as the angels, and He kept it as one piece. When God created animals, through all the intermediaries (the spirit beings), let us say dogs. There is a spirit being in charge of dogs, who brought in the spiritual life. This is the control of the

spirit being. The spirit being and all this, the tiny little bit of the spirit became something like the soul.

### *Animal soul*

Now, was man's soul, in the Bible, created? If you remember, in Genesis 2:7, it says he became; it never said God created a soul. So where did the soul come from? From the interaction between the spirit and the body. The soul was never created; the soul became. It says God breathed into Adam and Adam became a living soul. The soul came from the spirit. When the angels (involved with God) created the animals, this tiny little bit of their spirit came into contact with the ground as an animal, the animal soul.

That is why when I say when you bring all these animals together, they will become one spirit again, which is why you know that in New Zealand, the time has changed. The statistics might have changed. They say that they have about sixty million sheep and about three million people, correct? Something like that. There are more sheep than humans. If every single animal goes to heaven, heaven will have more animals. Think about all the chickens that Col Sanders had killed, if every chicken went to heaven and you go to heaven, heaven is packed. You say why a lot of chicken feathers all over the place? You say, "Can God make a huge heaven"? Yes, but yet in heaven, as long as you have got certain species of chicken there, it will represent all chickens. So not all chickens need to go to "heaven" because they are connected anyway. That is why their spirit goes down to merge with all the rest. To merge, I mean, "shared" soul. Every thought and intelligence are never lost. That is what I mean, it merged.

Today, this is a new thing of discovery. Today, they have discovered that somehow animals can pass their intelligence to the next generation, just through their genes. There is a mind of the body. In pure research, they are just touching on that realm. They realise that there is a mind inside, there is something, is not like the animals did not have a chance to teach each other. Sometimes they separate the animals, or the birds and they found that if the parent bird had learned a new tune, then the next generation bird, they take the eggs, have no chance to be taught by the parents, they grow up (the baby birds without contact with the parents), sing the new tune. Tell me, which school did they go to, when they have no contact?

Somehow through DNA, something passes on and that is the mystery of the animal soul. The best words I can describe is they have a “shared” soul / “shared” spirit kind of thing. When you say the spirit of the animal, it is more like the spirit being controlling. Each animal has a spirit being in charged. Just like every plant species, there is one spirit being. In fact, you know, there might be one main spirit being over mangoes, with many other assistants under him.

Nothing happens in life without an intelligent being doing something. If you do not like the word “spirit beings”, call them “angels”. Angels in charge of different species but when God created humans, they were given the whole thing. You are unique, and you have all the capacity, without any diminishing. That is why we have a spirit.

#### *Soul originates from the spirit*

In essence, “spirit” means the whole thing came from God. Soul is a sub-division of the spirit as it spreads out. That is how the soul was created because the spirit spread out into a physical body and man became a living soul. The soul actually originates from the spirit and the physical dimension actually came from the life of God’s creation. The physical exists in two realms – it is animated by our spirit and soul. If the spirit and soul leave, the body drops down, but it needs something from outside holding the pieces together, energised by spirit beings, because God created a body first, then He breathed into the body. That pattern tells us how things exist. That is why our physical body today is still energised by spirit beings in this dimension, in this realm that we live in, physical world, even when it was perfect, except with the fall of man, imperfection has crept in.

Why do I put it into different realms? Because life comes in. Without life, you do not have light or relationship and all the three parts of us, why I link it to the *Spirit Will*. The inward witness is this sense of “*stenazo*” and sense of “*embrimaomai*”. To make it simple, remember filtering. Instead of using the things from human creation (like green light, red light and orange light), now I will use the illustration, I have been teaching from that realm, because I use human illustration (human inventions and human traffic laws) to illustrate the spirit but now if I want to use heavenly perspective: from heaven, actually what you sense in your will is the life of God – the flow of life. You have inside you something that senses the flow of life. The flow of authority is the flow of life. The angels with a higher authority have a higher

level of life. That is why they can make something, they can make decisions and they can have power over those lower than them. They have a greater measure of life.

*Spirit emotion senses God's love*

Your spirit emotion is the ability to sense God's love. In all the area of *Spirit Emotion*, sense of grief or quench, sense of prayer (“*tarasso*”), is just the ability to sense the love of God or the lack of God's love. Isn't it true that the people who can hurt you the most are the people that you love the most? A total stranger can do what he wants, and you have no relationship, you do not feel any hurt. The hurt that you feel in your heart is always because you have a love relationship in some way, not necessarily of man and wife, it could be friendship. Your best friend has the capacity to hurt you the most or father-mother relationship, or parent-child relationship, or peers, or friendship, or business relationship, whatever. The people whom you love and, in that capacity, have the greatest power to hurt you because you are vulnerable. Yet it is wrong to shut out love. The Bible says open your heart to love. It is important because that is why we can sense love.

Now, when you sense “grieve” and “quench”, you know what you are sensing. You are actually sensing God being hurt. Yes. Does our God feel grieved? Didn't He reveal grief when sin came in, sin of commission? Didn't Genesis 6 cover two sins, sin of commission and sin of omission? Men are not living to the way God wants them to. The grief that we sense is actually sensing the heart of God. It is God's heart, God's love. That is why the more you are in love with God, the more you can sense grief. You know why a lot of people cannot sense grief when they live in permissive will? Everyone who lives in permissive will lives in permissive will because they love something else more than God. Maybe they love money, they love fame, they love other things more than God. The more you go further from God, you cannot sense God's heart anymore because you are not in love with God. If you are not in love with God, whatever happens in God, you cannot feel His hurt or His joy. You cannot. You have to be deeply in love with God and God is first love, then you can sense it, which comes to the answer, besides prayer, put God first.

What about the cure of natural love? Whereby the husband and wife being in love, the more we love, the more we feel hurt, when they disappoint us. What is that cure? It again comes from understanding God. Was God grieved when Adam fell into sin? But who gave Adam the first clothing? God. You see how fast He forgave? That is the power of God. When He

feels something, His love, this is the thing, unconditional. He cannot stop loving and He will not stop loving.

Romans 8 tells us: Nothing can separate us from the love of God, not even heaven and earth, not even angels, principalities and powers. The reason why, let us say the relationship which you mentioned, whether it is between husband and wife or family relationship, is because our love is conditional. Most of us are not walking in God's love. Humans are not walking in God's love. Humans are walking in a love of self / pleasure, the person gives you pleasure, so you love the person. We love those who love us, we do not love those who do not love us. That is not God's love. That is a little bit of the ability to love that we are experiencing. The cure, if you want it, is to begin to understand the fullness of His capacity to love, He never stops loving.

Remember when Judas betrayed Jesus, Jesus was betrayed with a kiss, did Jesus stop loving Judas? Jesus still felt the same love for Judas Iscariot as he felt for His disciples. Jesus did not love Peter above the others. He loved all equally. To be God, He has to love all equally and that is the power of God, that He has the ability to love unconditionally and equally. Whereas humans, we love unequally, and we love conditionally. All we need is just to open the gates and allow God's love to fill us but our sense here is actually the sense of God's love. The more we can sense God's love, the more we actually know whether we are grieving or quenching, or we are okay with God, to put God first in our lives.

#### *Sense of the mind is light*

Then this sense of the mind is actually the light. You can sense the light coming on your inside. This light coming on your inside, not necessarily the green light, but is the light of understanding because unless you have understanding, you cannot do something. It is just like sometimes you have a sense, you know what to do. That is actually the green light. You see, now I can put the two together. The light of God is what we can consider the green light. It does not have to sense like, *oh*, you have got to sense some joy and then you are going back to the emotional side. When there is a flow of understanding of what to do and you know this light comes from God. This understanding comes from God. God is actually telling you what to do. Without Him actually screaming in your ears, saying, "This is what I am telling you"! No, just the understanding to do the thing is actually Him telling you to do those things.

When you understand it at this deeper level, it is easy to obey God, easy to know what He wants you to do.

This green light, that we call it here in this area [*Spirit Mind*] is actually the light of God. This area [*Spirit Emotion*] is the love of God. Here [*Spirit Will*] is the life of God and you always must have the life first.

How do I have the life here? On our inside, just always say “I will” when you choose. Paul says, “*I will pray with the spirit, and I will also pray with the understanding*”. Always the chooser must choose. No matter how weak you feel you are, no matter how much like your love here could be all drained out and the person who is tormenting you, the person who causes you to really find it hard, you verbalise it and you say “I choose to love”, the moment you say those words or you believe those words or you want those words, suddenly you have got more life and energy to love. Even if at that moment when you say it and those were the last four words that you have got enough energy for and you say, “I choose to love”, the life will start flowing. Once the life starts flowing, this, too, will increase. Your choice and no matter, if you are really severely tempted, you really are about to fall, temptation is right next to you, a millimeter away, you say “I choose holiness”, then suddenly things change.

When we understand where things come from, which is the life of God, we are not God, we are creations of God and we need the flow of His life. We are weak only because we lack God’s life. So, the life of God will bring the light of God, and you experience your relationship. God creates us in these three parts for a reason. Here [*Spirit sense of the mind Will*] is like creation, we enjoy His creation. Here [*Spirit Mind*] is like to understand, it is for revelation. Here [*Spirit Emotion*] is for relationship and we exist purely for relationship. This [*Spirit Mind*] exists purely for revelation but this [*Spirit Will*] is where life is, the will, the life of God. It is wonderful to be able to understand something and the understanding puts us into harmony with Him, to enjoy being His creation that God wants us to be.

Pray constantly in your life the prayers from Ephesians 1 and Ephesians 3;  
Father, we pray that You continue to give to us the spirit of wisdom and revelation, that we may know the hope of Your calling, that as understanding flows forth, we will choose because the most You can give in revelation is just revelation and understanding. Yet with all that we know and understand, we must choose. Help us to choose You.

Then we pray the prayer of Ephesians 3 which is to strengthen the spirit man because, Father, we all need to be strengthened in You and Your Spirit strengthens and gives us life. Just as we need to take food to have physical life in this fallen body, but yet this physical body has to be energised by the Spirit. It is also right now we still need spiritual life. Teach us to open our spirit, soul and body to receive the life of Your Spirit, for as more life comes, more light and love capacity come.

Father, increase the dwelling of Christ upon each heart. Let Christ dwell richly in each one that they may all be able to receive with all the saints what is the width, the length, the height, the depth of the fullness of God that we may live in this fullness that You have for us.

Strengthen the inward witness of each one, the sensations that we have so that we can sense Your life flowing, Your love flowing, Your light flowing within us. Increase these sensations in our lives, so that they are sharp and accurate, to the very nuance. The moment we walk out of God's love, Lord, make it so strong that we know and the moment we walk out of Your life into darkness, make it so strong that we know. Help us, Father, to be in tune with Your life, Your love and Your light always so that You could strengthen the inner man within us and the inward witness and sensation.

Bless each one, Father, with a greater dimension of grace. In Jesus' name. Amen.

## Chapter 8...

### Defining the Soul

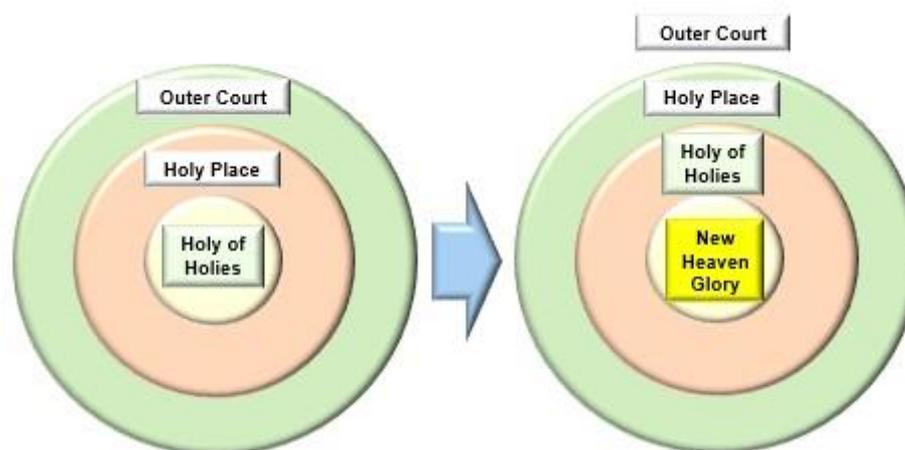


Diagram 1

Let us look at the diagram with the *Spirit*, the *Holy of Holies* and the *Holy Place*. We look at the top one first. Okay, this is what basically our spirit, soul and body are to become. Our spirit needs to be in the *Holy of Holies*, our soul in the *Holy Place* and our body in the *Outer Court*. Now, this is already the perfect spirit man, and this is the goal that the book by Watchman Nee (*The Spiritual Man*) – he wants us to reach this level.

However, in this second book *The Spiritual Man – Book II*, the next chart (the bottom circle): This is the new goal, where the *New Heaven Glory* is the habitation of our spirit; our soul will be in the *Holy of Holies* (and it is only possible because Christ has opened the door and the curtain between them); our body in the *Holy Place*; and the *Outer Court* is the whole world we function in. This is the goal, and this is what the manifestation of the sons of God is like. This is the *New Heaven Man* of which the new creation of what we are supposed to be in the New Heaven and the New Earth and the body of Christ and the glorious Church are supposed to be there.

Now we look at diagram 2 with the three circles together. Christ is in the centre, and we know that before the fall of Adam and Eve actually had just one *Spirit Mind*, one *Spirit Emotion* and one *Spirit Will*. After the fall, it was like cut into three pieces and suddenly we have disharmony between our spirit, our soul and our body but that is what we are returning to when we feel one will, one mind, one emotion.

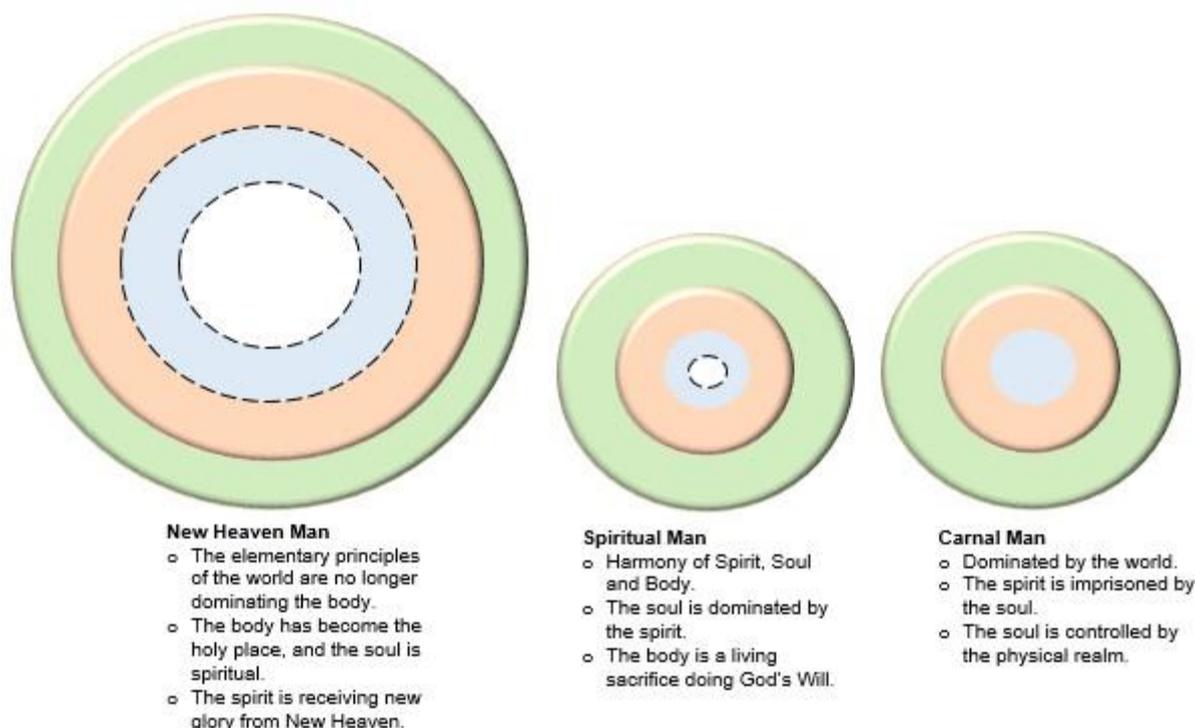


Diagram 2

We start with the *Carnal Man*, and in the carnal man, this is his spirit, soul and body. Although he is spiritually dead, he still has a spirit. When a person is spiritually dead, it does not mean that his spirit is non-existent. It just means that his spirit is imprisoned, weak and not growing. Also, his spirit is very much affected, it is like the flesh has influence upon the soul and the spirit.

The circle looks nice, where our spirit and body are so nice, but whenever you have transgression, you are crossing over. Like when the fallen angels fell for some time and then when God created Adam and Eve, the fallen angels fell even further because it was the first time that God made a creature called Man and man could exist in the three realms (spirit, soul and body) and the fallen angels fell even further. In Genesis 6, they intermarried with humans, so there was a mixture and, in that mixture, they produced giants. There is no clean circle anymore. It is like the circle has been infiltrated. It is not like angels kept their realm, men kept their realm and fallen angels kept their realm – each one is in the various realms; each circle is by itself. The book of Jude tells us how they left their first estate, so the circle is broken. They transgressed. There is such a thing as a mixture between angels and humans and these giants become some of the evil spirits that you see around today – disembodied spirits. Some of the evil spirits are actually the product of these angels and men; they are not meant to be.

Although it looks like a clean circle, in actual fact, the body has transgressed, depending on the fall of human, transgressed all the way into the soul and also into the spirit. At that stage, depends on what this black circle is, this black circle, if it is influenced, by the flesh, it will become bound by the soul and this green circle might become like tinged with brownish colour, not so clearly divided (a clean line), and so there might be tinge of brown inside. It is because of that, you have verses, like Hebrews 4:12, “*For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword...*”, it is able to divide spirit, soul and body. It is the word that pushes it back to the division. The word cuts and pushes and divides, cleanses it, and so separates the two areas. It is not very easy to separate. For example, sometimes you need a catalyst to separate things.

One of the hardest things to do is the mining of gold. In the mining of gold, gold does not just exist by itself although it exists in nuggets. Sometimes it is embedded with other types of minerals and all that. As a result, the purification of gold takes on a very poisonous substance, I believe arsenic is used. Cyanide also is used.

In the place where we went to build an altar in New Zealand, they have actually discovered gold inside that belongs to the Maoris and the whole mountain, in the spirit, we saw a lot of gold inside but to mine the gold means to destroy the whole land. So, no one wants to pay that price and cost. Perhaps the land is more valuable than the gold. Sometimes to separate some things out is a very hard process. It takes cyanide and all that. They have not discovered other processes.

In the meantime, the Bible says the word of God can separate spirit, soul and body. That is what the word does and even when it separates, sometimes the carnal man is still dominated by the world, the spirit is imprisoned by the soul, and the soul is controlled by the physical realm. This is what most human beings are existing in. It is like the spirit never exists at all.

Then in the second circle (the *Spiritual Man*): This is the key that Watchman Nee is aiming for us, where the spiritual man is in harmony with spirit, soul and body. The soul is dominated by the spirit. The body is a living sacrifice doing God’s will. If you read *The Spiritual Man* by Watchman Nee, it is clear but then Watchman Nee has got another book called *The Release of the Spirit*. If you read that book, it is less clear because in *The Release*

*of the Spirit*, it looks like anything from the soul is not acceptable, anything from the soul is wrong.

Then you have other verses, like Mark 12:30, “... *love the LORD your God with all your heart, with all your soul, with all your mind, and with all your strength*”. So, it looks like your soul is involved. What about verses, like Psalm 103:1, “*Bless the LORD, O my soul; And all that is within me...*”? Apparently, it is okay, the soul that is dedicated to God can be cleansed. Paul says in 1 Thessalonians 5:23 that he prays that our whole spirit, soul and body be preserved blameless at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ. So apparently the soul is to be redeemed. So, in this *Spiritual Man*, the spirit, soul and body are supposed to be in harmony with God – that is a good goal.

This is our ultimate goal, the *New Heaven Man*. That is what I am wanting to produce in *The Spiritual Man – Book II*. That is the ultimate goal. My last chapter in this book will cover more on the heavenly man where the heavenly man is no more subject to the powers of this earth, the elements of the earth, or the laws of Physics. We will no more be bound to the laws of Physics. We will taste the powers of the age to come. So, some of these will apply in this revival and in this life.

#### *The role of the soul*

We have covered the *Spiritual Man* and we have covered *Spirit Emotion*, *Spirit Mind* and *Spirit Will*. Now, we begin to talk about the soul. We have to consider the soul, what the role of the soul is. In order to do that, we have to look at the beginning of the soul, so let us look at Genesis.

Genesis 2:7, “*And the LORD God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living being*”. The original word “being” is the Hebrew word “*nephesh*” and it means “soul”. The word “*nephesh*” has been translated as “soul”. In some translations, I believe they translated that as “*man became a living soul*” but here, it is translated as “*man became a living being*”.

Here is the question: Was the soul created? When was the soul created? We know that spirits were breathed from God even before the foundation of the world. Now, it is obvious that,

even the things that seem to be created and all those things, in its genesis form, everything has been released by God and God allows that to continue forth because after the seventh day, God rested, which means that there is nothing else He needs to do with His creation. Even during the fall, the books and all that had been pre-written and when Jesus opens the seals in the book of Revelation, somebody had written it and sealed it and those were all done before God rested on the seventh day. That is how powerful our God is. All the past, present and future, all and everything that needed to be done, when Adam and Eve fell, any other works had been completed in God. When God created the heavens and the earth, time was complete, He finished the creation of past, present and future, with the exception that humans began to experience life and flow with the timeline but for God, the timeline is completed; God has finished.

God has created us before the foundation of the world. Obviously from Ephesians 1:4, before the foundation of the world, our spirits have been breathed out by God and we were in some place, somewhere, training before we came down, same as Adam. Coming down to the planet earth is a new dimension. It is the dimension of the physical that humans can become spirit, soul and body. We know that humans are tripartite because the Bible says so in 1 Thessalonians 5:23. We are spirit, soul and body, which means tripartite.

The question we ask is: What is the soul and when does the soul come into being? It says man became a living soul. Spirits are not created, spirits are actually breathed out from God and we say that long, long ago, before the foundation of the world, God breathed out all of creation in the spirit. Angels are spirits. Now, do angels have a soul? What about the Bible says if one sinner is saved, angels rejoice? So, the moment they can rejoice means they have got emotions.

Now, does God have a soul? I will show you how to answer that question. Nowadays, some of you carry your electronic Bibles with you. You just press the little button to search. First, you look under the word “soul”, then when you find the word “soul”, it shows “*nephesh*”. Do a search under “*nephesh*”, which should be your word No H5315 and you will see all the various places where it occurs in the Bible. You do not want to just look at the English translation of soul because the English translation might miss it and might forget to translate “*nephesh*” as “soul” and you find that the word “thing”, the word “creature” and many other places use the word “soul”, so there are all these other various verses. Then, there are a lot of

verses to look at of course, and you might not have the time to consider all the verses but if you have a careful reading, that is the word, “*nephesh*”.

Now, look over to the New Testament, check under the word “soul”, which should be the word “*psuche*”. When you look at the word “*psuche*”, you find in Matthew 12:18 (God says), *My Beloved in whom My soul is well pleased!* So, question again: Does God have a soul? Even if you do not understand how God has a soul, you cannot run from the fact that God has a soul and if God has a soul, means God can feel.

In Genesis 6:6 it says that God was grieved. *My Beloved in whom My soul is well pleased!* That is God the Father referring to Jesus. God has a soul. What is the function of the soul? The function of the soul gives each its characteristics. We know God is Spirit. The Bible says, “*God is Spirit, and those who worship Him must worship in spirit and truth*”, John 4:24. Jesus said that God is Spirit, and those who come to Him must worship in spirit and truth. We know that God is Spirit, God is Soul. God has a soul.

#### *Individual characteristics of the soul*

The soul gives, what I call, the individual characteristics that are there. Of course, God’s soul will contain all the potential of all souls. In fact, our soul proceeds forth from God to a certain extent, that is why God can know the number of your hair. Not a single hair will drop without God knowing. Not a single sparrow will fall to the ground without God knowing because in a sense, God’s soul feels every soul in the Universe that He created. It is like God has a nervous system, which is connected to every creature that He created, that has a soul and He could feel the pain of every creature or the joy of every creature. So, God’s soul is beyond our understanding, multi-processing and understands all those things.

Having looked at ourselves, having looked at God, now I come back to the question again: Do angels have a soul? Yes. It would be unusual if God has a soul, we have a soul and the angels do not have a soul. So, angels do have a soul, and it does not make the angels different. The soul differentiates between angelic soul, human soul and animal soul because, in the Bible, God actually made the animals and the word is “soul” (“*nephesh*”).

Look at Genesis again. If you look at the word “*nephesh*”, you find in Genesis 1:20, “*Then God said, ‘Let the waters abound with an abundance of living creatures (souls or nephesh),*

*and let birds fly above the earth across the face of the firmament of the heavens’*”. Then verse 21: *“So God created great sea creatures and every living thing (soul) that moves, with which the waters abounded, according to their kind, and every winged bird according to its kind. And God saw that it was good”*. Then verse 24: *“Then God said, ‘Let the earth bring forth the living creature (souls or nephesh) according to its kind: cattle and creeping thing and beast of the earth, each according to its kind’; and it was so”*. That is the book of Genesis, so there it is.

Then of course there is a summary statement in verse 27, *“So God created man in His own image, in the image of God He created him; male and female He created them”* but we know that, that one sentence has got a story because in Genesis 2, it goes to a clearer story and it tells us here in verses 19-20: *Out of the ground the LORD God formed every beast of the field and every bird of the air, and brought them to Adam to see what he would call them. And whatever Adam called each living creature (soul), that was its name. So Adam gave names to all cattle, to the birds of the air, and to every beast of the field. But for Adam there was not found a helper comparable to him”*.

#### *Different soul qualities*

Now, the soul quality is different. Obviously, animals have a soul, angels have a soul, we have a soul, and God has a soul. The quality of our soul is different from the quality of the soul of the animal, but animals can be quite intelligent. Animals have a mind. Animals do have some will too. Animals have emotions. Animals can feel sad. You know, try kicking an elephant and then 30 years later, see whether the elephant remembers you. He thinks, “This is the one that kicked me”. So apparently elephants remember, elephants know. They have a soul. There are many qualities of soul. God, being the highest Soul of all, is like the Soul of the Universe. Angels have a soul. Angels’ quality of soul is different from ours. Humans seem to have a greater capacity than angels to feel emotions. So, all the animals were created as souls but when God created Adam, He did not just speak Adam into being. For all the other creatures, He spoke them into being. You can read Genesis 1: God said, “Let this happen, let this happen”. First, He said, “Let there be light”. Then He said, “Let the earth bring forth, let this bring forth,” and all that. So, God spoke, and it came forth but with humans, with the first man, it was different, and I want you to know, even the angels were not made that way.

### *The origin of angels*

Since the Bible never said how God made angels, this is by deduction. Fact No. 1: Angels do not have physical bodies like us. Someone may ask, “then why is it they can have children with humans”? Well, they have to do something. They are fallen angels: they have to become a body to do it. They need to change something. So, the original angels: before they fall, they do not seem to have physical bodies. Fact No. 2: God seems to give them the title as “when the *sons of God* came to present themselves”. So, they do have some sort of soul and some sort of entity in existence and it is used four times in the Bible: three times in the book of Job, Job 1:6 & 2:1, “when the *sons of God* came to present themselves”, and Job 38:7 but in Genesis 6, the sons of God fell, then when they fell, then only were they able to take on physical bodies and they produced giants. In the book of Enoch, it tells us a little bit about this. Hebrews 1:7 says God has made His angels spirits and they are ministering spirits.

Then we have the extra-Biblical thing, it is still in line with the Bible. There is a chapter in the book of Enoch and there it talks about how one of the fallen angels, it says 200 fallen angels came and they decided to intermarry with humans, actually not intermarry. When the women gave birth, some of them sacrificed themselves and they died. They literally gave their physical lives to the worship of the devil and then they sacrificed their lives in order to bring forth that one, so it is not a normal thing. The leader among them was Samyaza who is now locked up in the Siberia area and will be released in 2027. Samyaza is in charge of sorcery and among the sorceries, the book of Enoch talks about how he taught sorcery and the dividing of roots. If you check on the internet – dividing of roots – you will find it brings you back to the book of Enoch. I searched and looked at ‘dividing of roots’, some translated it as some sort of horticultural thing and some have traced it to some sort of sorcery because it is linked to the first part of sorcery where they used the roots to do some sorcery thing.

I have been looking at it and in the book of Enoch, in its original form, that actually it talks about DNA. In those days, they did not have a translation for that. The dividing of roots is the scraping of DNA. So, interpreting as splitting of DNA, which of course DNA is called in its double helix form and to create something, you must tear it apart, divide it, replicate and add something over it. So, they played with the DNA. That is how they became physical. They are smart and cunning, but evil smart. The dividing of roots, so far, no one has interpreted. I checked every other interpretation, no one could interpret but looking into the spirit, the Lord

showed me that dividing of roots is actually splitting of DNA because in the same verse in the book of Enoch, it says that Samyaza taught sorcery and the dividing of roots and they produced giants. You see the three phrases are linked up, that is how they produced giants. Samyaza himself through that produced two children, two giants but not the tallest. The tallest was by another fallen angel, who is like a Titan. Two of the names are Ohya and something else. So, these giants were the ones that in the book of Enoch, it talks about how they had dreams about their own destruction, that is why they consulted Enoch and Enoch told them and prophesied destruction to them. The book of Enoch says that they will become evil spirits once they are destroyed.

These are all the Bible evidence. I gave you all the verses, some are apocryphal. When you are presented the evidence, no matter how inconceivable or how hard to understand, or impossible it seems to be, the facts stand by themselves. The conclusion must be there, and it points to the fact that if they have to do all those things in order to produce a body and intermarry with humans, it implies with all certainty that they do not have a physical body.

In 2027, this fallen angel Samyaza will be released, together with Azazyel, who is another fallen Angel. Does it mean that history will be repeated again? Yes, it will be. How? They will start playing sorcery again. So, what shall we do? We are the glorious Church and it will be the glorious Church that stops them. Wherever they try, we will receive a signal in the spirit, because the soul of God (which can be sensed by the Holy Spirit) can sense every human soul. So, any human soul / anything that interferes and starts taking the powers of the age to come on the evil side, will be informed to us, and we might send some of you and you will bring your rod there and say, "Thus says the Lord, this is forbidden". Then you call down fire after giving people a chance to repent.

Remember, we will have the power to turn rods into snakes, call down fire and exercise all the authority, and all the miracles in the Bible. We will be able to perform all these once again in this revival. We are slowly coming to that.

Angels – we can conclude, even without the book of Enoch, from Hebrews 1 and all the Biblical references, point to the fact that the safest conclusion when you study about angels is that they are spirit beings, they have a soul, but they do not have physical bodies. That is the

safe conclusion. God, we cannot touch on because God is beyond everything. Animals, they have a soul. It says so in the Bible, you cannot run away from the word “*nephesh*”, that God created animals as living souls.

*Do animals have a spirit*

My question is this: Do animals have a spirit? That is my first question on the animals. No. What does your Bible say? Only in Ecclesiastes 3. We need to understand all these things around us before we understand ourselves. Ecclesiastes 3 speaks about the animals, verses 19-21: *“For what happens to the sons of men also happens to animals; one thing befalls them: as one dies, so dies the other. Surely, they all have one breath; man has no advantage over animals, for all is vanity. All go to one place: all are from the dust, and all return to dust. Who knows the spirit of the sons of men, which goes upward, and the spirit of the animal, which goes down to the earth?”*

Now, generally, scholars have interpreted the word “spirit” here to be *ruach*, which is the Hebrew word “*ruach*” and they have interpreted it as just breath (which is oxygen). In a sense, it is true, animals breathe oxygen, we breathe oxygen, we are all carbon-based life forms and we are burning oxygen, so they interpret as that. That is quite a good interpretation, clever interpretation but it does not explain properly Ecclesiastes 3:21, what does it mean when the spirit of the sons of men goes upward, and the spirit of the animal goes down? So, the question here is: Do animals have a spirit or no spirit? That is the first question. No. If no, what does that verse mean? So, in the same verse, we are cutting the same verse into half, the half that refers to the animal, the spirit is just breath; the half that refers to men, the spirit goes up, is really a spirit goes up. Is it safe to interpret the Bible in that way? There is a spirit that is poured forth on the earth, there is a spirit that is poured forth from God, so the spirit of men that is spirit out of God returns to God, whereas the spirit that is poured forth on the earth turns into breath. Can you see that? That is the correct interpretation because it talks about the spirit going in two different directions.

Now, do animals have those three circles, like spirit, soul and body? No, because animals, if they have got three circles, they have got spirit, soul and body. That means when you draw the animals, let us say your dog has got spirit, soul and body, that means your dog will probably be looking for worship also.

Here is the explanation. First, look at the question: Do animals have a spirit? Firstly, animals do not have “spirits” the same way that we have, where a spirit becomes individualised and becomes one spirit. We have one spirit, your spirit and my spirit are different, unique spirits. So, obviously Ecclesiastes 3:21, it implies that our spirit that we have and the spirit that animals have are different, the direction is different. When we say the direction is different, it means something is different, cannot be the same. In Mathematics, it is actually different. Now, we explain the difference and the difference is, based on James, let the Bible explain the Bible, James 2:26, “*For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also*”, which means the animal’s physical body needs spirit life to sustain it, otherwise the animal also dies. The animal’s soul and the animal’s spirit have to be sustained by some spirit since life comes from the spirit. Our first point is that the animal’s uniqueness of its spirit is different from man’s. The direction is different, that one you cannot argue, definitely different direction.

Secondly, based on James 2:26, it says “*For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also*”. The fact here is that the body cannot be alive without the spirit sustaining, neither can the soul, so the soul and the body need something to sustain them. The life comes from the spirit and it is true because, based on the creation of man in Genesis 2:7, it was only when God breathed into the physical body that man became a living soul. The soul came into existence because of the spiritual force. The soul cannot remain by itself without the spirit. Of course, it is allegorised in a physical reality, actually oxygen in breathing but everything in the natural expresses something in the spirit. There is a spirit life that comes from God. All animals have that, but the animals do not have individual spirit life, and that is conclusion No three.

Number one: There are definitely two different directions and we need to explain the directions. Number two: The body and soul need a spirit to give them existence. When an animal dies, if the spirit goes back to the earth, you have conclusion Number three, that the difference between man’s spirit and animal’s (whatever portion of the spirit is) is that man’s spirit is unique and individual. When a human being dies, the Bible talks about the spirits of just men made perfect (Hebrews 12:23) or spirits of men kept in Hades for the judgment. The spirit of men has its own entity in existence, but the animal’s spirit has no individuality, it is just like life, so the life goes back to the ground and the ground represents spirit beings who are life-givers or hold the molecules together. Actually, that finishes point Number three.

Point Number four is extra-Biblical. In extra-Biblical understanding of Revelation, we do know that all animals have different spirit beings in charge of them. There is a spirit being in charge of creating or bringing forth dogs or sustaining dog's life. There is a spirit being in charge of horses. Or even plants, different plants have got different spirit beings in charge of, mango plant, durian plant or whatever.

So, all these spirit beings, together they form, and they are under the main spirit being over the earth (which happens to be an archangel) – that is Uryaluzzael, he is in charge of planet earth. Each archangel has a spirit being. Apparently, from my understanding, as I look more and more into the spiritual world, Uccatucmael is the main spirit being working hand in hand with Uryaluzzael (the archangel over the planet earth). So, Uccatucmael (the spirit being who worked with Jesus) is most likely the No. 1 spirit being in charge of the whole planet. That is why when Jesus came, he worked with Jesus. Jesus walked on water – through Uccatucmael and his two captains. When Jesus had miracles, turned water into wine, all this is because the main key spirit being was working with Jesus. Under Uccatucmael are many, many spirit beings who are in charge of different things.

There are spirit beings in charge of animals, so these spirit beings would energise, let us say dogs. When a dog dies, the dog has a soul, so the soul can be preserved or can be absorbed, but the spirit that gives life to the dog, that is sustaining the dog's life, is absorbed back by the spirit being in charge of dogs and it remains on the earth. That is why the dogs are on the earth and do not go to heaven. However, if you include all animals, if every single chicken that died and went to heaven, there would be a lot of chickens or animals in Heaven. So, hypothetically, do all chickens go to heaven?

You see, “unique” means it functions by itself. That is the computer language for unique, separate. When you name a file, each of the file has to be unique. You cannot name the same file in the same name in the same folder. Neither can you even have two folders in the same category or group category with the same name. It needs to be different in some way to co-exist. So, they do not have a uniqueness, that is why they do not have a conscious spirit, or a conscious will of the spirit, or a conscious mind of the spirit. They only have a conscious soul. Their soul is unique. So, looking at the soul, I am asking a sub-question here: Does every animal actually go to heaven?

No need because one representation can go. They share, so one representative is good enough. You do not need every chicken that Col Sanders slaughtered going to heaven, or every dog that exists because, remember, let us say in New Zealand, they have got 60 million sheep and a couple of million human beings. There will be a lot of sheep in heaven, little sheep, and not us who represent the sheep. So, it is a representation. However, if you have a pet dog or a pet animal or even a pet chicken that you loved, you loved it so much that you named it Habbakkuk (do not know why, but because you like *Bak Kut Teh*). Then you die, and you would like to have the chicken with you. The soul of the chicken will be preserved and transferred and brought into the heavenly realm for your pleasure. Animals are made for your pleasure.

Like I have one dog that I liked very much, and I named it Mozart. It was with me for ten years (during my ten years of blood, exactly). It is now in my mansion, it loves the garden there. As you progress, you pull your animal along. As I progress, also the dog can progress higher. In the new heaven and new earth, there are also animals. Remember, in the millennium, there are animals. I think you saw my dog in heaven.

In each level of heaven, the animals are more glorious than the world-type, they get pulled along. Animals are regarded, like your property, so they just get pulled along. In heaven, when some of the spiritual people progress (those Romans 2 category), their mansion just moves to the next level. There is no like dismantling and re-assembling. It is just like disappear from here and just move. The whole thing moves. Your property just moves with you. You do not need a logistics company to move in heaven. It is just at the speed of thought, the thing that belongs to you, it moves. Which is why you will never see any spirit being or any angel or any guardian angel carrying backpacks. Believe that? None. Have you ever seen an archangel or an angel, they have got a backpack next to them or a haversack on their back, that kind of thing? No, because whatever is needed, they just have it instantly. So, basically you travel with your hands free. Whatever clothes you want, that is it, in an instant. That is the part of the spiritual realm that is very interesting.

Now we have identified the animals. So, I ask: Do animals have a spirit? I have explained those verses, so all are satisfied that animals do not have a unique spirit, that their spirit is like a “shared” spirit and the same, in the way of their soul, they have some kind of uniqueness of their soul.

### *Visions of the Garden of Eden*

Then my next question is: Do animals have physical bodies? Alright, here is the thing: In Genesis, if you look very carefully, the reason I look very carefully is because every time we do not see something until we see some visions. When I saw visions of the Garden of Eden and all those things, there is a difference between Adam naming the animals and before Adam named the animals. You see, God brought all the animals in Genesis 2, as I have mentioned, verse 7 is unique, only God made humans that way. Then after God had planted a garden there, He put the man whom He had formed there, and then God did something. It says in verses 19-20: *“Out of the ground the LORD God formed every beast of the field and every bird of the air, and brought them to Adam to see what he would call them. And whatever Adam called each living creature, that was its name. So Adam gave names to all cattle, to the birds of the air, and to every beast of the field. But for Adam there was not found a helper comparable to him”*. Then finally God put him to sleep and then God brought forth Eve.

Now, what happened before naming and after naming? When Adam named the animals, the animals fell into some sort of sleep. When they woke up, they had male and female but there was one more thing that I did not notice before. When you look at the Garden of Eden carefully... I saw, then I checked with the Bible. It is true in the Bible. I saw that the animals only received their physical body after Adam named them. This is what they looked like in the vision. I like to understand what the vision was. The animals were like some sort of spirits, looked like a spiritual, ethereal kind of thing. So, the animals that God made were like transparent lights. When Adam named them, they were sexless, they were just different types of animals that God had breathed out. Then when Adam named them, they fell under some sort of power or sleep and then they split into male and female. Then they took on like another layer, I believe a glorified body, a body form, that is how the male and female came about. Some of the animals remained on earth, but some of them were escorted to different, different parts of the Universe. It was like God filling the Universe all over again; like the earth was the production centre for plants and animals. As Adam touched them, contacted them, blessed them, something happened.

In the spirit world, you cannot impart what you do not have. Adam had spirit, soul and body. Angels, as you know now, have spirit and soul. Then when I saw it, I said, “Interesting”. I need to look at the Bible. Then when I looked at the Bible, I saw it is true because (in Genesis

1) when God made all these animals that were there, the Bible actually uses the word “soul or *nephesh*” for all the animals. You see, even like the word “thing” here, Genesis 1:20-21 – “*Then God said, ‘Let the waters abound with an abundance of living creatures (souls), (So animals were just created with souls which were sustained by the spirit.) and let birds fly above the earth across the face of the firmament of the heavens’.* So God created great sea creatures and every living thing (soul) that moves, with which the waters abounded, according to their kind, and every winged bird according to its kind. And God saw that it was good”. Verse 24: “*Then God said, ‘Let the earth bring forth the living creature (soul) according to its kind: cattle and creeping thing and beast of the earth, each according to its kind’; and it was so*”.

#### *In another realm*

The Universe had existed until the age of the angels and spirit beings for a long, long time; for billions of years in our time. Then one day, there was an angelic rebellion. Of course, they manipulated matter. The spirit beings had the power to manipulate matter. They are also angels, but we give them a new title to differentiate their work. Spirit beings are actually angels in charge of molecules. In the spirit world, when you look at angels, they can have different forms, depending on what wave lengths they are from and where they are from. Guardian angels, because they have got so used to appearances on earth, they can look very human and they can even take the form of any racial features upon themselves but spirit beings or angels in charge of molecules have, what I call, a transparent quality. Now, transparent quality is because they live in two dimensions, they are between dimensions. Let us use something from the human world. When people say they see ghosts or spirits – a ghost or spirit is supposed to be something that does not exist in the physical realm, it exists in another realm – they have an appearance of it, ethereal appearance, so they look transparent-like kind of things.

When something is between two dimensions, whichever side of the dimension you look at it, you will see something transparent. Even angels need spirit beings to manipulate matter. That is why to each archangel is assigned a spirit being that is with the archangel. Archangels and angels carry out the commands and messages of God. They are, in essence, angels (which the Greek word says “messengers” of God), they carry the word of God and they are like the hands of God. The spirit beings manipulate matter, so the worlds and all these are

manipulated. Angels exercise dominion over many, many physical areas although they themselves are not physical beings. They can exercise dominion through spirit beings who can manipulate matter. So, they exist in that dimension and all those in charged are all spirit beings; matter being separate by itself but there is no spirit being that has spirit, soul and body.

It looks like when God started bringing Adam into the picture (and Adam was probably in some sort of spirit form, somewhere reserved in the archives of God, was brought forth and God breathed him in), that for the first time He had a creature with spirit, soul and body – it was very unique, super-unique.

God had already created these animals (these souls) and He brought them to Adam to name them. When Adam named them, because he himself was in the physical dimension, when he named them and blessed them, it was like him blessing them, the animals could become and take a physical form also. They became male and female and took a type of physical form. At that time, nothing had fallen yet, so it is not like this physical fallen world. It was a glorified physical form. They took on a glorified physical form. Apparently, it looks like he finished about 30% of his work. So, there are many, many other animals that are still in this form that have not taken the more solid form of the glorified physical realm and nearly 70% of them that we have not seen. When the fall happened, all of them disappeared. Later on, we found out that they did not actually disappear. The archangel of the planet, Uryaluzzael (who is the Seven Thunders archangel), absorbed them all into him, because he is in charge of the planet earth. He holds them in himself and he will bring them out again to be renamed, where Adam will finish the naming of the animals and all that. It will all happen in the twinkling of an eye because he will be given quantum time to finish everything before Jesus lands in the millennium when everything is completed.

So, the animals took on a physical quality (glorified physical body) when he named them but he himself, God had to put to sleep and then bring out Eve. That was when Adam became male and female. The earth exists as it is when man became spirit, soul and body, but there is a quality of masculine and feminine given to mankind. Looking at that, especially of Genesis 2, now we know that animals (after Adam had blessed and named them) have soul and body; angels have spirit and soul; Adam has spirit, soul and body.

### *Another level of soul*

I asked the question: Where did Adam's soul come from? There was another level of soul that man had when man came. When a unique spirit is created, like the angels, we were like the angels. When we were first breathed out before the foundation of the earth, in fact, before God created worlds, God breathed out life – angelic life, human life – we were like the angels and Jesus says that when human beings die, they will be like the angels again. When you die, your soul goes with you, so obviously your soul is always attached to you. It is not attached to your body, attached more to your spirit. So, we have a type of soul that is there.

Looking at the word “soul”, the soul is like a hard disk. It started recording all your experiences the day you were created. Everything is recorded but when you came to the earth, the access to the hard disk (your soul) before you were born had been removed, with a few things that God let you remember, maybe in dreams and visions. So, there is basically no access and some people have got some limited access. There are few people who remember their lives before they came, predestination-type. Of course, in vision, some have gone back and seen, and God allows you in this revival for you to go back and see what you were like before you came, and different people have got that today. The main full access to your part of your soul, that (your soul) started recording the first day that God breathed you out and you became a living being even before you came to earth. It started recording.

Your soul is your hard disk, but there is a difference. That hard disk is also self-aware. It is a self-aware hard disk and it gains more and more knowledge and every conscious moment, like if I were to ask you: Do you remember when you were two years old? I do not remember. Three years old? What did you remember? You see, you remember something, but inside your mind, in your brain now, all the memories are there but the more traumatic events you remember. I cannot remember how I was when I was small. I can only remember a few incidents with uncles and aunts, that is all. I can see their faces, but fragments of it. Only as we grow, then we slowly remember more things and we recall more things.

Now, that is talking about your soul quality: your mind and your brain. Your mind and your brain are actually a physical representation of your soul. It is a physical representation. If we pass electricity through it to stir it, it can trigger certain memories. Your mind and your brain are actually connected to your soul in some way but when you die, your brain dies, your soul

still continues. People with out-of-body experience remember things that their brain cannot receive. Your mind and your soul are actually beyond your brain, somewhere else. When we go to heaven, we remember. In Luke 16, when Lazarus and the rich man died, they both remembered who they were. Remember, their brain and their physical body were left on earth, but they remembered who they were, especially the rich man: “Ask Lazarus to come” – he remembered Lazarus’ name. All the memories are there, in the soul.

Scientists, when they research NDE (near-death experience) or OBE (out-of-body experience), they find it very hard to explain the mind because if people can remember, NDE or OBE, especially if they are dead and they have got no more electrical circuit going on in their brain, and they are, what I call, brain-dead, question: “How did they remember”? It is obviously another part of their mind that is not physical, that is their soul. The mind is part of the soul. So, it is obvious that the soul continues to record things, but it is also self-aware.

Then what is the difference between the soul that Adam or we have before we came to the earth and the soul that became when God breathed into Adam? Remember that God breathed into Adam (the physical) and he became a living soul. There is a difference. It is like another level of soul. Now, that new level of soul is what makes us different from the angels. Humans were given the ability to develop their soul even more but coming to the earth, their soul continues to develop further. Thus, our soul has a greater ability.

None of us has seen angels cry. Do Angels laugh? I have seen them smile but I have not heard angels laughing but the Bible says God laughs. Do you know God laughs? Psalm 2: When His enemy comes and all that, He who sits on the throne just laughs because all the attacks of the enemy on the Lord are nothing. God just laughs. Our God laughs. Our Lord has sorrows. So, apparently, throughout the age of the angels, no one could express God’s soul. God has always wanted a creature that is like Him, that can express the soul, so He made man in His image and we were given this uniqueness of an additional level of soul to develop, that continues to record this life on this earth.

Now, this soul that we have is so precious and unique, that Jesus says: “*What will it profit a man if he gains the whole world, and loses his own soul*”? There is no profit. Our soul is why we came to earth, not the earth itself, the soul that we have to develop.

Look at some of the scriptures. Look at the New Testament first, check under the word “soul”, especially starting from the gospels. Mark 8:36, *“For what will it profit a man if he gains the whole world, and loses his own soul”*? Verse 37: *“Or what will a man give in exchange for his soul”*? Nothing.

You have stories in comic books and stories of people giving their souls to the devil for some sort of power and all that, they are foolish and stupid. The soul is so unique. One soul is worth more than a planet and imagine how many souls are on planet earth right now. Your soul is what God came to save.

In the epistles of Peter, it tells us here in 1 Peter 2:11, *“Beloved, I beg you as sojourners and pilgrims, abstain from fleshly lusts which war against the soul”*. 2 Peter 2:8 talks about Lot whose righteous soul was tormented daily. Poor fellow. The soul, you can see, can be assaulted. Then in Hebrews 10:39, *“But we are not of those who draw back to perdition, but of those who believe to the saving of the soul”*. God wants to save your soul for you and you all know the scripture (Matthew 22:37): *“You shall love the LORD your God with all your heart, with all your soul, and with all your mind”*.

What will you give in exchange for your soul? What is the soul’s worth? The reason we came. What will happen if we did not come to the planet earth, if we remained up there as spirits? We will become like the angels. That is all because we qualify ourselves in different, different areas. We will be like the angels but by coming to the planet earth, there is something unique, that you are chosen for the soul to grow beyond what you could not. So, why must we come to this fallen earth in such a manner? God knew everything, and He allowed this thing because the journey of the soul is this, the soul must experience its uniqueness and its individuality. To be individual, you need to be unique. That is why at the very beginning, Adam named the animals. What made them?

What is the difference when you have a whole lot of chickens? The childcare in Sydney had about four or five little chicks. After the children had played with the little chicks, so they learn what chicks are. We have to donate the chicks. So, we passed them onto one of the church members. The chicks grow to be chickens. Among the chicks, happened to be two or three roosters and a few hens, and so they grew quite big. He brought food for them and they were eating every day and he had one dog too. His dog preferred the chicken food to its own.

So, he started naming his chickens. He named his chicken Tandoori, Ayam Masala, Tikka and so all the different foods. I think there were a few roosters that had been slaughtered because they made a lot of noise, so he had to slaughter them and kept them in the fridge.

When you name the animals, when you have a whole group of chickens, it is different when you do not have names but once you name the animal, the animal seems to take on an individuality. They are not just like a pack of animals that were there or brood of animals. They become individuals. You begin to relate to them, one to one, having a name.

When he had to slaughter his chickens, I said, “What are you going to do with the chicken”? The next day we had fellowship. Every one of us said, “Please do not bring chicken” because we were not sure whether it is that chicken. The next day, he did not bring the chicken. Before I left the next day, I said, “Where is your chicken”? He said, “It is in the fridge” because I was teasing him, that is the only chicken, if you cook it, you will be thanking God for the food but as you eat, you will be crying because you remember the chicken. That was your favourite chicken or whatever and you know what the chicken’s personality was like. So, you will be eating the drumstick, *wah*, nice, but crying. After teasing him, before I left the last trip, he said, “It is still in the fridge. No one had any mood to eat the chicken”. It was slaughtered but no one wanted to eat it.

When Adam named the animals, they started developing their soul. Given a name, they started developing their soul. A name is a unique thing. It is just like there could be a pack of wolves, one day you might have a baby wolf, you nurse the baby wolf up from young and you name it, it is different because now it has a name that you gave it. So, when Adam named the animals, the animals started developing their soul and think about our uniqueness – the soul that we have that God gave. God has to give us such a uniqueness of soul, so that the soul can choose not to want God. That is how extreme it is. It can choose, and it can choose to obey / disobey at different levels. That is the uniqueness of our soul.

### *The finale of man*

If the finale of man (the new heaven and new earth): Let us say we move into the new heaven and new earth, then we continue progressing until we are really so transformed and very much, at the end of it, when God looks at us, we are exactly like God. Let us say after eons

and eons, when God looks, we are perfectly like God, but with one difference, we are not robots. We have our own free choice and we choose to be free or we choose to be connected with God. So, there will come a point. When God created us as spirits and souls, we started growing. At a certain point, we came to the earth and then at this end point, our growth in God is completed and we are exactly like God at this end point, millions and millions of years ahead, could be billions or eons, become like God. When God looks at us, we are exactly like Him, with all His character, but the uniqueness is we are still self-conscious. We have our own consciousness, but our consciousness is united with Him. Our souls were nearly lost but Jesus redeemed us and put our souls on the right path again, to teach us to develop, to grow our soul. There is a uniqueness for our soul and why it is important to develop our soul.

The New Testament is given to once again spiritualise the soul. God wants the soul to be exactly like the spirit. The soul is too much like the flesh. God wants the soul to be transformed until the soul is exactly like the spirit, which is why the soul will have to go through a transformation. Not only does our physical body need to be transformed, but also our soul. No matter how much power God releases, our soul is still the conduit to the body. You can have a lot of power, the power flows 100%, but if your soul is just tiny, no matter how much power flows through, it is limited, how much power goes through to the physical dimension. Our soul needs to expand, needs to develop, needs to reach the stature of what our potential spirit is like. It is called the saving of the soul, but also the transformation of the soul.

In Romans 12:1-2 it says, *“I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that you present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable to God, which is your reasonable service. And do not be conformed to this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind...”*. Now, notice the word, “transformed” is the word “*metamorphoomai*” but the transformation is done by the “renewal” of the mind, “*anakainosis*” which means to make anew again. The word “*ana*” means “again” – to again renew.

“*Metamorphoomai*” is the same Greek word that describes the transfiguration. The word “transfigured” is the word “*metamorphoomai*”, same word. Jesus was transformed but physical transformation is directly tied to what is going on in your mind, based on Romans 12:1-2. It says, *be transformed by*. Notice what the word “by” is? You say, “How did you

arrive”? I came by train, I came by bus, I came by car. Right? The word “by” refers to the method. *By* – how are we transformed – *by*. *By the renewing of your mind* – which means as your mind is transformed or renewed, so is your body because “*metamorphoomai*” speaks about your body, but “renewal” speaks about your mind. It was Jesus’ body that was “*metamorphoomai*”, transfigured. It is directly proportional.

Now, the word “renewal” is “*anakainosis*” – “*kainosis*” is the Greek word for “new”, “*ana*” means “again” – which means that we must have new thoughts, not our own thoughts; we must think in a new way, receive things in a new way, see things in a new way. As we can see it in a new way, so are we transformed. The difference between you being born again and not being born again is when you saw and accepted that Christ died on the cross for you; you accepted the gospel. The difference between you believing for finances / provisions and basing it on this fact that Christ became poor that you might become rich; He took the curse of the law that you might have the blessing of Abraham (both verses are found in 2 Corinthians 8:9 and Galatians 3:13-14) is when you accepted something new: a new concept, a new revelation, a new understanding.

#### *How are we transformed*

So how are we transformed? By the renewal of the mind. How is the mind renewed? By “*anakainosis*”, by taking on something new, a new way of thinking, a new idea, a new understanding, an understanding that comes from heaven. There can only be one truth, everything else is a lie. How much of our thinking, how much of our belief system is in line with the Word? The past that is not in line must be removed and be replaced by what is truth and in line with the Word. So, to have that, we must read the Word because only the Word can give us new understanding. We need both the written word and the spoken word and most of all, we need, how do we come to truth? No one can come to truth except by the spirit of truth. We need the spirit of truth. Without the spirit of wisdom and revelation and understanding, we can understand nothing.

Now, here is the thing: If God chose not to reveal to you, you will never know. Remember how, even one of the smartest men in the world, Daniel was ten times smarter than all the people around during his time, ten times smarter than his whole generation around him, and Daniel wanted to know more things? God said, “Go your way, Daniel (at the end of the book

of Daniel), because these are for the future”. Sometimes God holds back a revelation because the revelation is not for this time yet. People are not ready for it because with every revelation will come a transformation because a revelation is a new thinking, a new understanding. With the new thinking and new revelation, society will change, your life will change, things will change – transformation.

In your molecule, in your DNA and in your understanding, the only thing stopping transformation and transfiguration is what is going on up there in your mind. You need to be able to see what God sees. To see truth for truth and lies for lies – that is why it is all inside your understanding. The thing about it is we cannot come to truth in our own mind. Truth must be revealed.

We are like the blind men touching the elephant. It depends on which part of truth you are touching. It is true that an elephant is like a rope because you are holding the tail. It is true that an elephant is like a tree because you are holding its leg. It is true that an elephant is like a wall because you are touching on the whole, full body side of the elephant. Those three blind men were right, but they did not have the whole truth. How will I teach the blind men? Have them feel every part of the elephant. Let us say if they move at one millimetre per hundred years, I doubt they will come to know the whole elephant. The elephant represents truth. That is how fast we move in our own mind and own understanding. We can never come to the truth but there is one way: open the blind men’s eyes. In one Nanosecond, from the way the speed of light travels at 186,000 miles per second, within a Nanosecond you can see the elephant, you say “*Arrrh*”!

Remember, in order to perceive truth, you must have an organ to perceive the truth. The eyes must be functional and in the same way, mankind cannot see the truth before Jesus comes. Cannot, impossible, because we do not have the proper apparatus within us, which is why in Ephesians 3, finally when Jesus comes, we can begin to walk that path of knowledge and truth. Even in Ephesians 1, already Paul is praying for the spirit of wisdom and revelation, and understanding but he tells us in Ephesians 3:8-10 – *“To me, who am less than the least of all the saints, this grace was given, that I should preach among the Gentiles the unsearchable riches of Christ, and to make all see what is the fellowship of the mystery, which from the beginning of the ages has been hidden in God who created all things through Jesus Christ, to*

*the intent that now the manifold wisdom of God might be made known by the church to the principalities and powers in the heavenly places”.* Hallelujah!

*Wisdom comes from heaven*

In the book of Enoch, section II, chapter 42, it talks about how Wisdom came from heaven and looked upon the earth for a dwelling place and could not find one, so Wisdom went back but Wisdom has found a place. The day Jesus came to the earth, Jesus was the landing place that Wisdom can come in. Jesus was the Word made flesh – the Word equals Wisdom. Jesus, in Him are stored the treasures of all wisdom, riches of wisdom by the way, the book of Enoch is in the canon of the Ethiopian church, not in our canon. That is why the Ethiopian version is the more accurate one. Finally, Wisdom found its place in Jesus. Jesus is the head, we are the body. The same wisdom must flow in us. That is why it says, “In Christ”, the fullness of wisdom is there and all the riches.

Here in Ephesians 3, even if you do not have the book of Enoch, it tells us the purpose of the church. The church is to show forth the many, many, multi-manifold – the word “manifold” in Greek is “*polupoikilos*”, which means multifarious, variegated, that means all manner of variations, all multi-facets, all the finished / completed parts of wisdom in the church. So, the church has been given that and God has given the church the task of perfecting wisdom, manifesting wisdom. The day the church comes to its fullness of receiving that wisdom is the day the church becomes glorified. What is the principle of glorification? 2 Corinthians 3:18 – as we behold Him, so are we transformed into the same glory, which means if you see one volt, you become one volt; if you see a thousand volts, you become a thousand volts. As you see Him, so are you transformed.

God today wants to reveal the truth and we have more impartations of understanding of angels, of spirit beings, of understanding of many areas than we ever have had before. When we preach every Sunday, when we preach on Thursdays, we are unveiling more and more understanding. You understand the spiritual world more than ever. You understand where you came from, who you are in God and the more you accept this understanding, the more you are transformed because as your mind adds that new thinking to yourself, something changes in your body, Romans 12:1-2 principle. That is all for the soul because the spirit comes from God. It is the development of the soul.

What is the new covenant? Hebrews 8 and 10, correct? In Hebrews 8:10, “*For this is the covenant... I will put My laws in their mind and write them on their hearts...*”. Hebrews 10:16, “*... I will put My laws into their hearts, and in their minds I will write them*”. Do you notice there is a putting in both and there is a writing in both? Do you know now what is the heart? The heart is the spirit and the soul. Can you see that if you develop your spirit, but you do not develop your soul, you are still not finished? Your heart is your spirit and your soul, and how developed will it be?

1 Corinthians 2:16, your *Soul Mind* will think exactly like the mind of Christ, it says we have the mind of Christ. Romans 5, your *Soul Emotion* will be like 1 Corinthians 13, your *Soul Emotion* will only feel the *agape* love of God, all its variations and of course in Philippians 2:13, your *Soul Will*, will become the will of God, Thy will is all we want to do. The Lord’s prayer: *Thy will be done on earth as it is in heaven.*

Finally, our soul emotions are full of the spirit of love; the mind of the soul is full of the mind of Christ and the thoughts of Christ; and the will of the soul is full of the will of God. We are complete perfection.

## Chapter 9...

### Voice of Spirit Man

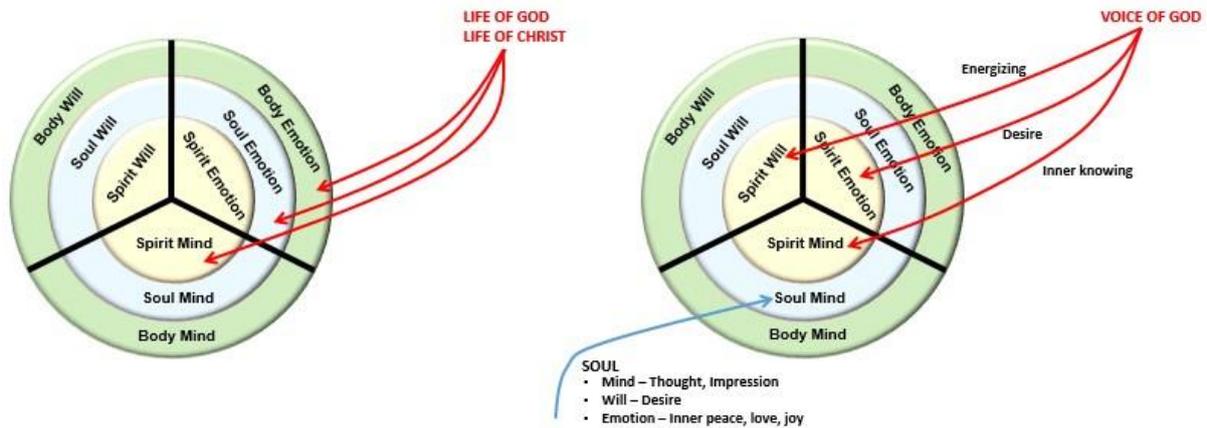


Diagram 1

In the new chart is what I call *The New Man*. You have your spirit, your soul and your body and we talked about how your spirit has a will, emotions and a mind; just as your soul has a will, emotions and a mind. Then your body has a will of its own, it has emotions and it has a mind of itself. Then the life of God and the life of Jesus actually flows into all spirit, soul and body.

Romans 8 talks about the resurrection life of Jesus. It talks about how the life of God is now flowing in the physical body as well. It is not just a spiritual body and that life can increase. The more we allow that life to increase, the more we are exactly like Jesus, and the more we are transformed, and we become the glorious Church that God wants us to be, through the washing of the Word.

#### *The Voice of God*

Now, let us look at the second circle. When we talk about the voice of God, God speaking to our hearts, as you know, the whole thing in our lives, the purpose in our lives, is to hear God. The ability to hear God, Jesus says in John 10:27, "*My sheep hear My voice...*". All through the life of mankind in the Bible, the difference between the Bible people and the people today is that the Bible people heard God's voice. That is what made them the Bible people – they heard God's voice. There were some who heard God's voice partially, there were some who heard God's voice all the time. These are stories in the Bible and the stories in the Bible

continue in our lives, if we can hear God, if we can hear God’s voice. We are the living Bible today, which the world will need to read and if we can hear God’s voice, then that should make something different in our lives. The ability to hear God’s voice is important but where do we go to learn to hear God’s voice?

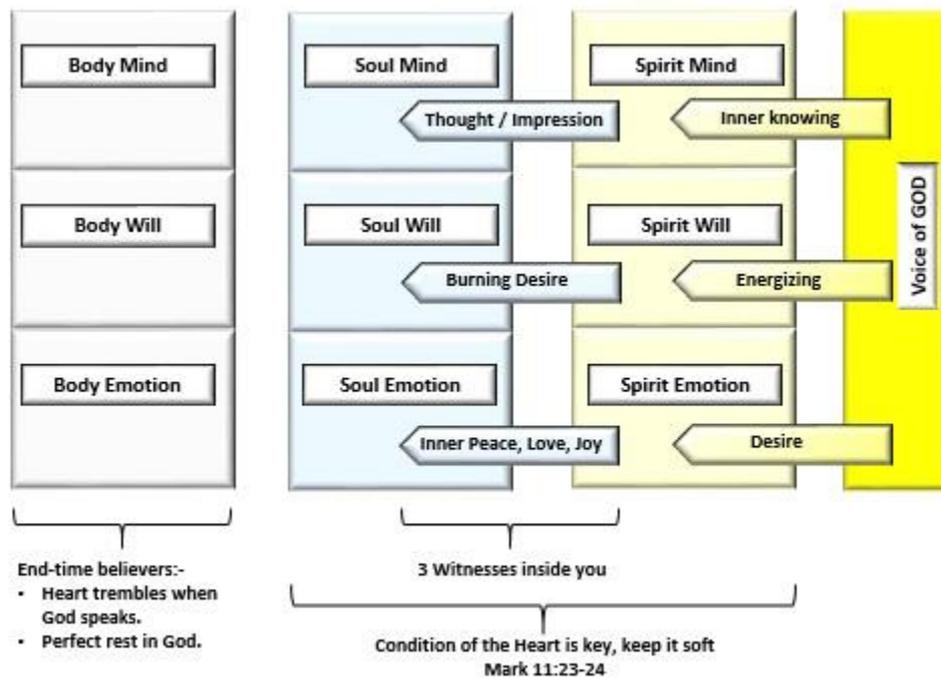


Diagram 2

Ever since I was a young Christian, all they taught me was the knowledge of the Bible; they never emphasised on hearing God’s voice. They only taught me about the Bible, which is important, which is a prerequisite to hearing God’s voice. The world and all the universities are not going to teach us to hear God’s voice. The responsibility to teach people to hear God’s voice belongs to the church but if the church of Jesus Christ itself does not hear God’s voice, then how are we going to teach people to hear God’s voice? Men and women of God that are alive today are supposed to teach us to hear God’s voice but if they themselves are not hearing God’s voice, then where can we learn from?

Thank God, that in every generation, God always raises people who hear Him. Sometimes they hear Him partially, they obey Him, then they start doing things on their own and then they go astray. Sometimes they hear God all the time, all through their lives, that would be wonderful, and it is important for us to grow to the stage, especially in this end time when we need to hear God’s voice. We need to discern God’s voice and there is no more room or margin for error, not in this end time when the Antichrist was born in 2015.

Incidentally, since the Antichrist was born, more and more disturbances will come on the planet earth and even in the cosmic areas above us. As the angels push all the fallen angels towards the small circle around our solar system, there are more and more cosmic disturbances, even in the heavens above. As the Antichrist and the false prophet grow and become older and older, by the year 2040 onwards, and even after the tsunami, the earth constantly experiences all kinds of natural shakings. Up to 2040 and 2050, there will be cosmic disturbances also and then by the time, after the Rapture and the Tribulation, you hear the cosmic disturbances in the book of Revelation – one-third of trees, one-third of the sea, one-third of this and all those are affected. So, you think that it is only the Tribulation years. Even before that, the curve of increasing darkness causes troubles in the natural world. These are not ordinary times anymore. When you cannot hear God's voice at this end time, you will die. It is no more an option. It is now the only condition to be part of the glorious Church. That is why we need to hear God's voice and discern His voice.

Now, because God is Spirit, when God speaks, He does not speak in English. He does not speak in the language of man. It is too low for Him. God speaks in the spirit. God speaks beyond what man can invent, any language that man can invent. You say, "But I seem to hear God in the known language, whether it is in English, Chinese, Indian, or some European or Asian or middle-eastern language". That is because your soul interprets what your spirit hears. God does not speak in English, not at all. Neither does He speak in King James English, that only came about in 1611. God existed before 1611. God speaks in a spiritual language, beyond all the languages of humans. We must lay down that foundation.

The only part within us that can hear God in God's language is our spirit man and then our spirit needs to convert what it hears into our language that our soul has understood. Every time when something is translated, you lose something in translation. Lost in translation. We need to realise that. Which is why sometimes when you thought you hear God and you have got a thought in English, you might only get a portion of it. You are not getting everything because God continues to speak, and we need to know there are many aspects to the interpretation of what God speaks.

What we want to hear and learn is how to hear the voice of the Spirit, not just the inward witness, but the voice of the Spirit. So, our spirit man needs to be in a position where we can

receive from God. There are spirits that are enclosed and so, what I call, bound up that they cannot receive any signals from God.

As you know, generally, when you have a phone and when you are on the phone, if you enter the elevator, the phone signals are usually cut off. Occasionally, in very rare cases, where the bouncing of the signals is there, you might receive a signal but generally, if you enter an elevator, which is properly built and all insulated, the phone signals run out. Even though the signals are out there, because of the surrounding buildings that absorb the radio signals and all the encasements inside and the surrounding metal is preventing the signals from going through, you have no signal even though there is a signal, only within that 1 m or 1.5 m square little cube, it has no signal.

In the same way, humans might have a spirit, but it is enclosed by the things of the world, enclosed by a soul that is not in tune with God. God might be sending His signals, but you are not getting the signals, not at all. Our spirit needs to be able to tune to God's signal.

Anyone who has a phone and walks about with a phone, you will realise that once in a while there are some dead spots, especially where the relay stations are not broadcasting the signals. There are dead spots where suddenly there is no signal. Sometimes in the jungles or in some valleys somewhere, even today. Singapore is too small for that, except you might be blocked by buildings but when you travel in a large country, I remember when we were travelling in the United States, driving along the place to build an altar, from Washington DC we were driving to somewhere in Maryland, along certain parts of the road, there was no signal. It is all mountains and pristine forests, with a few little shops here and there, but there was no signal. I was wanting to contact someone, whether all the cars were going together as we travelled. I looked at my phone but there was no signal. So, in the end, I assumed everybody knew how to find the way. There was no signal, no way to contact the people. Sometimes in certain areas, there is no signal. That tells you that sometimes if you go to the wrong place and you are not in the place where there is a signal going on, it is a dead spot.

You must be at the right place, doing the right thing, in a right position with God, to get the signal and mountains can develop around you, mountains that you did not scale. Sometimes you are piling things and piling things, sometimes they become a mountain in your life, and then the mountain blocks you from God's signal. You know what you need to do? The only

deliverance you have is to hear God's voice because it is God's voice that brings a miracle. It is God's voice that brings deliverance. Think of all the stories in the Bible – they were always in trouble and God needed to deliver them. For God to deliver, they must hear what God wants them to do. To hear what God wants them to do, they must get into a position where they can hear. So, sometimes you have got to climb the mountain first and there right on the mountain, there is a signal.

Some of us have been to Canberra's highest mountain, which is Bimberi. There is a certain portion, as you enter into Bimberi, you walk a long while before you start climbing. As you begin to walk, there is no signal but suddenly when you are on the mountain top in Bimberi, there is a signal again. So, for a moment, there is a signal; in some portion, there is a signal again and it is a long way to walk all the way up. That is what we call "enter into the rest".

#### *God gives you rest*

Have you noticed that when angels come, they always say, "Fear not, peace unto you"? Remember when Jesus was resurrected, His favourite word to His disciples was "Peace unto you"? What is the rest that we are talking about? The rest is actually to hear God's voice. When God's voice speaks, it gives you a rest that no physical rest can give you. Remember, Jesus stills the raging storm, "*Peace, be still*"! All the raging storms in your life, in your soul, when Jesus comes, there is a rest, but the word of Jesus needs to come, the signal of Jesus' word needs to come through and entering the rest is actually entering into the place where you can hear God. When God speaks, there is peace because the Prince of Peace brings peace. When the Prince of Peace speaks, there is peace and that is how the Bible says "Labour to enter His rest". You know what the labour is for? To bring yourself to the position where you can hear Him. It takes effort to bring yourself to the position, whether you fast, you pray in tongues; whether you join a prayer meeting, you go with a group, ask for fellowship to pray along, you do whatever you need to do, to go to a place where you can hear God and when God speaks, you enter His rest.

Faith comes by hearing and hearing by the word of God. When God speaks, faith enters a rest. God is speaking, we need to hear God. We need to receive; our spirit man needs to receive a signal. You might think, okay, you are thinking of the physical, in terms of mountains, dead spots, valleys, elevators and all that but in the spiritual world, the condition

of your heart changes your place. You might literally be in the same house, physically be in the same geographical spot, but if your heart has become slightly hardened, you are no longer listening to God. You might be in the same position, geographically and physically, and become further from God. That is why we must guard our heart to always be soft and able to hear God.

Why do we do devotion when we start a new day? We do devotion because we are tuning our heart to hear God again. The purpose of devotion is not an end in itself. The purpose of devotion is you are refreshing yourself to be in a position where you can hear God again. As long as you can hear God, it is all right but the day you cannot hear God and you say, “Wah, I cannot hear God”, something is wrong somewhere. A lot of people have grown up not hearing God all their lives.

We need to be able to hear God. We need to check the condition of our heart and constantly ask, “Can I still hear God when God speaks? Am I hearing God”? If you are not hearing God, these are the problems. Either you are associating with people who are bringing you further and further away from God, or you are becoming worldly in your life and the people surrounding you are worldly, so they do not hear God, you do not hear God, so that is it. Or there is sin in your life that blocks you from hearing God. Or you are disobedient to what God asks you to do, so God does not speak to you anymore.

Do you know God can be silent? Abraham, the father of faith, had his silent years. You know how long his silent years were? From the time he had Ishmael until he was ready to receive Isaac, that was nearly about 12 years. 12 silent years. What happened between then? No one knows. You know why, he went into permissive will. If that can happen to Abraham, I wonder whether anyone reading this word today is in their silent years. You do not have to wait until the cycle of 12 years, then get back. Get back quickly, as soon as you can, to hear God.

#### *Prepared to hear God*

Now, all these are to prepare us to hear God. The fact is that even when you receive a signal, you must be taught how to recognise the signal. How do you know when God is energising in you and speaking into your life, that there is a certain condition? The Bible tells us that God is energising in our will, in our emotions, and He is also energising in our mind.

Look at Philippians to see God working in our heart. Philippians 2:13, “*for it is God who works in you both to will and to do for His good pleasure*”. It says God is working in our will. We have come to the conclusion that the will is not talking about the will of the soul because if God is working in the will of our soul, then we are no more accountable for our own actions. That means if you are not doing it, God is not making you will. If God is working in the will of our soul, we have become no better than robots. We are programmed to do something but, yet we have free choice. What God does is He works in the will of our spirit and the will of our spirit, the will to do something in our spirit becomes strong, and then our soul needs to choose to do God’s will because now God’s will is being energised inside our spirit will. What does that feel like? I put it as it is a type of energising where you feel a certain energy because if God wants you to do something, He gives you the energy.

Philippians 2 says in verse 13: “*works in you*”. The word “works” is the word “*energeo*” which is literally translated “energised”. So, they could have translated it, *It is God who energises in you both to will and to do*. Now, some people say, “*Wah, I do not have the energy*”. It is because you are not in the place where you are receiving the energy. Haven’t you noticed that every time you spend time in the right place, for example, when you come for all-night prayer, and physically it is exhausting, but at the end of it, you are spiritually energised, because you are in the right place at the right time and everyone is praying and seeking God. When you are in the right place, you are receiving the signal. The signal energises you.

Today we have an invention that we can illustrate with, now they have a way of charging your phone which is wireless, and you just put the thing in contact and it charges your phone. They are inventing things so that they charge your phone without plugging it in. In fact, if they make the signal strong enough, you can charge your phone from 1m away. You just have to go and stand 1m away. Of course, I do not know what it does to your body cells at the same time and the time we are living in. There is so much radiation around us. They are not sure whether when you are just charging your phone because your body is being microwaved at the same time. At the end of it, you smell like a burger, you look, *oh*, it is your hand that is converting into a burger. No, because it is too strong a signal, so they made the signal a shorter distance where you just have to put your phone in a certain place, then it gets charged. Imagine, if the wireless signal can charge your phone and actually is a certain frequency or radio wave, as it charges, then you realise that your phone battery is restored.

In the same way, if you are in the right place, and when your will, the part of your will receives a signal from God, your will, it is an energy and, you know, the will is very important. With a will, you want to do something. The energy is there. So, that is what it does to the will – it energises the will.

### *The salvation process*

On the other part, about the emotions, look at Romans 5:6, “*For when we were still without strength, in due time Christ died for the ungodly*”. Now, when it says, *we were still without strength*, it is not talking about the physical strength because some people were physically strong when they accepted Christ. It is talking about how we were spiritually weak, when we were weak in sin and in all those things, Christ died for the ungodly. Verses 7-10, “*For scarcely for a righteous man will one die; yet perhaps for a good man someone would even dare to die. But God demonstrates His own love toward us, in that while we were still sinners, Christ died for us. Much more then, having now been justified by His blood, we shall be saved from wrath through Him. For if when we were enemies we were reconciled to God...*”. So, in other words, our spirits are now joined with Him. That is the meaning of the verse. We are now joined with Him and we are saved by His life. Now, all this is talking about the salvation process and how our spirit is put back in connection with God. You look at the context of verse 6, it says, *For when*, which means all the verses previously to that are important.

What are the verses? Verses 1-5, “*Therefore, having been justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ, (This is what happens. In your Spirit Emotion, there is like a spiritual desire, like a spiritual peace, love and joy on your deep inside, deep desire. So, at first you feel the peace of God in your heart, that is, peace is all your spirit finally finding its place, connection with God) through whom also we have access by faith into this grace in which we stand, and rejoice in hope of the glory of God. (So, things are happening there). And not only that, but we also glory in tribulations, knowing that tribulation produces perseverance; and perseverance, character; and character, hope. Now hope does not disappoint, because the love of God has been poured out in our hearts by the Holy Spirit who was given to us*”. Now, it talks about hope. The hope is energised by the love of God and God is love. His love shines upon us.

What does hope feel like? Hope feels like a desire, a desire for something good. If you do not have hope, you have no desire to live. Why do people commit suicide? Because they thought there is no hope. It might be a natural area or whatever area they consider. A lot of young people commit suicide because of the small things that they encounter, the small mountains that they feel, when they lose something, they feel that they have got no more life, no more future, no more desire to live. Hope is important. Hope gives you a desire to keep on living. Hope gives you a desire to want to keep on doing something because there is still hope. There is still hope to change your circumstances, to change your situation, to become better, to improve yourself. That is your hope. Hope gives you a desire. The stronger your hope is, the greater your desire.

### *The two hopes*

There are two hopes. One is natural hope, the other is the hope that comes from God but hope that comes from God can overcome natural things, where in Romans 4, it says that Abraham against all hope still hoped. That man has great desire, against all hope he still hoped, mighty man of valour. So, because many people come to the end of their hope and they have got no more but when it comes to spiritual hope, it increases even when natural hope fails. That is why when God energises or when the voice of God contacts your emotions, what your emotions feel is a greater desire, a burning desire.

From the day that I came to know the Lord and after getting past the fact that the Bible is the Word of God and coming to know that Jesus is real, I have a great desire that I want everything that the Bible says. I want to see in reality, everything that the Bible talks about. Some hope was given, and that hope grew and grew. Even today it never dies, it has grown stronger because it is sustained by the Word.

When your spirit is contacted, and God continues to speak, because you are not hearing this in your understanding yet. Remember, it is your spirit. You need to differentiate. Whenever you have less energy in your will, you have gone in the wrong direction. Whenever you have less desire for God, you are going in the wrong direction. So always go in the direction when your desire increases, you are walking in the right direction. Some people are not so sensitive, you know, "God never speaks to me". Alright, alright, God never speaks to you, but do you have a desire for God? "Yes." Then He is speaking.

### *A desire for God*

A desire for God propels you. If you have got a desire, you are hearing God's voice, but you have not converted it into something that is tangible in your soul yet. You see, I am helping you to hear God's voice. If you are feeling an energising from God, or a desire for God and that is inspired by God, you are hearing God. The only thing is you are not able to convert this into the soul area yet.

Now it is to help you identify when you are in connection. You know, some of the funniest things that sometimes people have, "*Oh*, my computer has got a problem". "What is the problem"? "Cannot, cannot". Then you look. You never turned on the switch. "*Oh*, my phone did not charge". "Why"? "Something is wrong with my phone, suddenly cannot charge". You did not plug it in. So, the first and most crucial point is you need to make sure that you are connected, and the switch is turned on. You know that the switch is turned on when there is a desire and it is energising but there is something else.

When the voice of God hits your *Spirit Mind*, there is, what I call, an inner knowing. The inner knowing is a knowing where you know, and I like to put it in a paradox – you know without knowing, you know. It is you know without understanding. It is just like sometimes, let us say when you are looking at a situation or when you are hearing a sermon. There are many types of preachers. Then when you hear a certain preacher, you say, "There is something wrong somewhere, but I cannot pick what is wrong". You see, your spirit knows something, but your mind does not know. That is what I mean. You know. Your spirit knows but your mind does not know, so you are in a situation where you know but you do not know. There is an inner part that knows.

Your inner man will be able to tell you whether a person is a false prophet or true prophet; your inner man will be able to tell you whether a prophecy is false or true; your inner man will be able to tell you whether a teaching is right or wrong – even before your mind can understand it. That is how powerful your inner man is, your inward intuition. Your inward intuition will also tell you in your circumstances whether when you go into a business, your inner man will say, something is not right here, but then your mind says everything is good, the person is so good, the talking is so good, the presentation is so good, look at the analysis, everything is good but when you go in, you go bankrupt. Your inner man will know

something is wrong. That goes with all your investments, that goes also with all the jobs that you think that you want to take – your inner man knows even before the natural man.

### *The inner knowing*

We should trust in this inner knowing. The question is: What does this inner knowing feel like? Like I have mentioned, your *Spirit Emotion*, when it is in contact with the voice of God, feels a desire. Your *Spirit Will*, when it is in contact with the voice of God, feels an energy, an energy that drives you and you do not need people to tell you what to do, you just want to do that; it is energising you. What happens when it hits your *Spirit Mind*? What does it feel like? It is like you know truth without understanding why you know truth. It is like you know how you can tell light from darkness. It is like something on your inside knows it.

Now, the Bible has described certain situations like that. Ephesians 3, in Paul's prayer, he says in verses 14-19, "*For this reason I bow my knees to the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, from whom the whole family in heaven and earth is named, that He would grant you, according to the riches of His glory, to be strengthened with might through His Spirit in the inner man, that Christ may dwell in your hearts through faith; that you, being rooted and grounded in love, may be able to comprehend with all the saints what is the width and length and depth and height – to know the love of Christ which passes knowledge; that you may be filled with all the fullness of God*".

Now, here is the thing, *to know the love of Christ which passes knowledge*, isn't it interesting? Something beyond your knowledge, to know without knowing. That is what I mean. To know without knowing, that is a new ability that you have been given. Nobody might have told you that, but the day you were born again, you could know without knowing. You say, "*Wah*, how wonderful to know without knowing. You could know without knowing, except you never trained that sense. Do you know that when you know without knowing, you can tell when people are telling lies? You do not need lie detectors. Something in you says this is not right. Something in you knows, the unction within, this inner knowing and perception. You do not understand all the reasons, you might have zero natural reason, but you just know that this is right, or this is wrong.

Let us look at another example. Philippians 4. You see, there are situations where you know without knowing. I will give a few examples. Philippians 4:6-7, *“Be anxious for nothing, but in everything by prayer and supplication, with thanksgiving, let your requests be made known to God; and the peace of God, which surpasses all understanding, will guard your hearts and minds through Christ Jesus”*. *The peace of God which surpasses all understanding* – can you see that? The peace of God that you do not understand; the peace of God that your mind does not comprehend tells you.

Now, let us be practical. You will know when sometimes people ask you, you will know whether you are supposed to do something or not. Some people ask: “Should I be in this meeting or not”? You know, your spirit man has answered. Your spirit man always has the answer. Some people ask: “Should I go to this altar building or not”? Your mind does not know but your spirit knows. These are all practical things. Or you say, “Should I be a part of this church or should I be in the other church”? Your spirit man already has the answer, but our mind sometimes is slower than what we think. It might take you 10 years to discover. By that time, you say, *“Wah, I should have left 10 years ago”*. Your spirit man knows.

We will know without our mind knowing. So, that is very difficult. For example, if this thing requires three persons to make decisions. Three witnesses. However, I have this but the other two do not have this, but I have got no proof. Then how? Then you will live your own decision according to your decision. For example, if three people want to go into the inner jungle, three of them want to go in this direction and they take a vote. Two want to go, one says “No, I feel troubled”. If you are the one person who sense that there is danger, would you still go or not go? Provided you have got the power to decide, correct? If you have got no power and you are a prisoner, you do not have to choose, you are dragged along, and you expect that God will protect you but if you have a choice, choose not to; if you have a free choice and the power to choose. This is how some people avoid being caught as innocent people dying because of natural disaster.

This is going to be even more important. You will see the earth shaking, shaking, shaking. The earth is going to shake even more. Cosmic events are going to happen, and it is going to be worse and worse. I have seen some of the things in the future. You know what I saw? Fire comes down from the sky. It is like a cosmic event. They treated it like, *oh*, it is nothing. In

the future, they take it, *oh*, it is a phenomenon now, this is what the earth is like. Some called it global warming but that is more than warming; it looks more like global barbecue, and it has a cosmic event and I saw newspaper headlines in the future saying that we are just in the meteorite showers for some time. You see, the natural world explains it away but what they do not know is that evil has increased, and it is the time of the Antichrist and the false prophet as they mature. When they reach the age of about 30 and 33, then you see more and more of this. By the time you enter the Tribulation years, even more. That is why you are beginning to see more and more.

*Inner knowing different from intuition*

So, inner knowing is different from intuition, right? Because intuition is more referring to the world, whereas inner knowing is more from your spirit. Okay, you say “Is it the same as intuition”? It is technically the same, except intuition is a part of inner knowing. Intuition is, by English definition and Watchman Nee’s old definition, of the mind, it is like a sense of knowing something, but this is even more comprehensive. It includes intuition, but it includes a bigger sense of knowing.

Now I ask you a hypothetical question. In persecution, we are going to be scattered as churches all over the world. In fact, we are going to have churches in every country of the world, in all the five continents, ten thousand churches and this advice we will have to give to people because we are all over the world by that time. In physical persecution, do you stay, or do you run? In physical persecution, that means there are people persecuting the Christians, do you stay, or do you run? What does the Word say? The Word does say something - historical precedents.

Here is what the Bible says. In Acts, there were several periods of persecution. There was a persecution that first came when they started preaching publicly and the apostles were arrested. In Acts 4 was their first prayer and in their prayer (because you are going to be persecuted, you turn to God in prayer), you see, you need to know the Bible. Every time before you think about hearing God’s voice, first thing, check the Bible first, check the historical precedents. What did the Bible people do? The Bible does have stories. So, in Acts, the first persecution that arose was the Pharisees rejecting the preaching of Peter and John. They persecuted them, arrested them and beat them up. Then they came back (in Acts 4) and they told the church and even Peter and John, you know, they were not sad. Nowadays when

people get persecuted, their face grows long like an old cucumber, wrinkled, kept for five years, preserved. When they, the Bible people, were persecuted, they rejoiced. They said, “*Wah*, did you see my new strength? Look, I have got this stripe, they beat me here, really bloody, bruised and black here”. They rejoiced.

What did Jesus say in Luke 6 when they persecute you? Leap for joy! You see, we are not practicing the Bible. A lot of people, when persecuted, they do the other thing. They, instead of leaping for joy, complain; they do all kinds of things. Why? Then God looks down and the angels look down (the angels are discussing): “A lot of these people are not reading the Bible. They ask why but the answer is in front of them, the Bible”.

You all want more glory, right? You all say, “more glory, more glory”. What is the condition for glory? Suffering, yes. You say “glory, glory”. Suddenly God puts you in a situation of suffering, then somebody got it and said “why?”. God says, “Funny people, I have answered their prayer, now they complain. Didn’t they know this is the condition for that”?

*God, give us boldness*

So, persecution – that we have in Acts, they were persecuted, they rejoiced, then they went into prayer in Acts 4. You know what they prayed for? God, give us boldness. So, were they ready to run or ready to flee? They were willing to stay, and they became bolder. They said, “We want to be bolder. You told us not to preach in the street”. They were told not to preach in the street, they went back there and preached. In Acts 12, Peter was imprisoned. When he came out of prison, he continued to minister. They were bolder. In the first persecution, they did not run, they stayed. They grew and grew.

Then another persecution came. This one was headed by Saul, who became Paul. A lot of them died, a lot of them were imprisoned but they still never ran, until it reached a climax when one of the seven deacons got killed. Then (it says) persecution arose (second persecution). Of course, scholars like to explain that, *oh*, the church should have gone to Jerusalem, Judea and Samaria, they should have gone out, they did not go, so God persecuted and scattered them. Very clever. That is not the only reason, not good enough. They would have gone out anyway. It was just the enemy.

When the persecution arose (the second persecution), they fled, they ran. That is how you have got people like Philip. You think Philip was an evangelist, sent out by the church and he went preaching? No, Philip packed his bags, moved to a new house, moved to a new city, while moving, he preached the gospel. Later, you find Philip lived somewhere far away. Philip was actually moving to a new house and he still believed the gospel, but they were all fleeing. It is very interesting in the Bible when it says they fled.

Look at Acts, the second persecution arose in chapter 7, after Stephen's preaching and then it goes on in chapter 8, let us look at chapter 7 first. At the end of it, after his preaching, it says (verse 54): "*When they heard these things they were cut to the heart, and they gnashed at him with their teeth*". Because behind it is all demons. In the end (verse 60), Stephen died, first martyr in the church. When you are first in something in the kingdom of God, there is a sort of crown. Stephen was the first martyr – he received a very special crown.

Then in Acts 8:1, Saul was consenting to his death. A great persecution arose, this is too dangerous for families now. In this, families were now affected, and the church scattered, but the scattering ended up with the gospel being preached everywhere, including Antioch because later on, the story continues in Acts 13 where some people in Antioch received the gospel because of these Christians running but here is the fact, Acts 8:1, not everybody ran. Do you notice the last three words, "... *and they were all scattered throughout the regions of Judea and Samaria, except the apostles.*"? Because God didn't want the apostles to run, they were to stay behind. So, some of them had to stay, some of them ran.

Philip was one of those who ran. *Eh*, what happened to the deacon? Deacon moved to a new house. Philip went away. *Hey*, he was supposed to be a deacon in the church in Jerusalem. Sorry *lah*, persecution, he was gone. Why? He had four daughters that were very young. You do not want to have four tiny little girls as martyrs. Remember, Philip had four daughters, never talked about sons. So, he brought them all to safety but the apostles, they stayed behind. Later, you read about how (in chapter 12) one of the apostles was martyred. So, what is the will of God? For the apostles to stay but for some people to run.

Then later, you see in the Apostle Paul's time, when he himself became a Christian, he himself was persecuted. When he went preaching in his first missionary journey, he was

persecuted and then he left. They sent him away secretly. Later in chapter 9 when he stood up, after his conversion, the same people who were with him persecuting others now wanted to kill him. What did they do to Paul? Did they say, “Paul, stay on, God will protect you. We are all with you, stay on, after all, you met Jesus specially, you have a future in Jesus, Jesus even said that you will be this and that.”? Remember all the things God said about Paul, how he will preach to the kings and everything? Yet at the end of Acts 9, in the middle of the night, they took one of the fish baskets / vegetable baskets (it has to be a basket for some other things, it is not a basket for human being), so here is one of the greatest apostles that the world has ever seen, starting his life in a vegetable basket, being let slowly down the wall. That is how he started and when he went there, he escaped in the middle of the night to his home town. That was God’s will for him. He was supposed to go back in that direction. He wanted to preach on, but they saved his life.

Later on, in his ministry, you see, sometimes Paul was really stubborn, and he wanted to still go, they said, “Paul, Paul, do not go”, Paul wanted to go and preach. Remember, in Ephesus, the uproar that was there? The whole city was in an uproar and they were gathered in some stadium somewhere. The people were gathered together, with all these sellers and makers of idols, and they were shouting in the riot with one voice to their false god, and Paul wanted to go there. So, they told Paul not to go and Paul was persuaded not to go. If Paul had gone, what would the crowd do to him? So, we see all the different things that they did. The Bible says this.

Now, having seen some history in the Bible, I ask you again the question: When persecution arises, what would you do? In every situation, find out what God wants you to do. You must find out what God wants you to do. So, everybody must hear God for themselves.

Now, what happens if you cannot hear God? Trouble. You have to hear God. That is why sometimes you must hear God on where to go, where to be because there are many natural disasters coming. Sometimes you could have been booked on a certain flight, like in one flight when going to Singapore, I was sitting next to two passengers. It was a full flight. I always choose the aisle seat. At the window seat was a woman who was going to Turkey. She was a Croatian and her family had migrated to Turkey. She was now an Australian citizen and she was going to Turkey. She was in her seventies and travelling alone. Next to me was a girl from Nepal and she was on the way to Nepal. In their conversations, I heard them talking

about the plane. So, I turned to them and said, “As long as I am here, everything will be all right. Nothing will happen to this plane”. However, you cannot always say that if you do not know that because you might be booked on a flight, then God might tell you, “I want you to come out of this flight” but are people willing?

Are there innocent people who die in the Millennium? Yes. Are there people who die in every tsunami and flood? Yes. Could their lives have been saved? Yes, if they individually had heard God’s voice and not let their mind rule them, but let their spirit rule them instead. These innocent people who died, will they go up to heaven? Depends on whether they know God. If they do not know God and they are not Romans 2 category, that is the end for them.

Even Christians die in those things. So, you ask: “Did the Christians hear God’s voice”? I can assure you this, I have been in the spiritual world, I have seen. Everyone has been given a warning, either through a dream or vision or something, if their lives are to be preserved. Between the desire and inner knowing, what if you want more details? You only have the desire to do or not to do, yes or no, but if you want to do something, you want more details, how do you go about it? Good question. The answer is, when God does all this thing, if I want more details, the details will help, spend more time with God.

Someone once asked me, “One time, I was supposed to travel to Vietnam. Just a few days before I left, I had this vision. I saw the plane, something like a gas cooker, I saw myself fly out of the plane window. So, because of that, what does that mean”? “However, nothing happened to the plane”. That person saw themselves thrown out of the plane and they obeyed the vision. They were sitting near the door and of course the pressure sucked them out. It was an interesting vision but because of that, they did not go. That is good to obey if God was testing you. They asked, “Was that a real vision”? It is a real vision and God was testing them to see if they were obedient. They said that they did not go, the door never flew out, another passenger took their seat and went. Do you know why? Let us say it was a test and let us say the enemy wanted to attack and it was one area that he could attack. Since they were no more there, he also did not want to attack but if they had gone ahead, then the door might have flown out.

So, that is an interesting thing, that we want more details. Read the story at the end of Judges, in the civil war between the 11 tribes versus the tribe of Benjamin. When they sought God

and no leader was mentioned, the tribes asked: “Lord, who shall lead”? The first answer God gave was Judah. They ran out and fought and they lost. Then they came back. What happened? In the end, they spent time with God, they asked God: “Should we actually go ahead”? God said yes. Then they went outside and fought. Many died; they came back. Then the third time, they sacrificed, they did all those things, they prayed to God and God said: “Go, for I will give you the victory”. Then they fought, and they won. Why did it take three times?

God, in the written word told them a sequence of things to do before they fight. By that time the written word had gone so low, nobody checked the Bible. Just like, even in David’s time, they never checked the Bible as to who should carry the Ark. They should have. You cannot contradict God’s Word. So, the Word of God says you must offer an offering before you go for battle. That is the reason why Samuel had to come, before King Saul could go and fight, and he was impatient.

#### *Hearing accurately*

Always check and ask yourself this question: What does the Bible say? Remember that you cannot trust your own self because your own self can be wrong, you must trust something outside of you, which is the Word of God. The Word cannot go wrong. After all, it has been revealed to men and women who lived over thousands of years and it has been all the time consistent and you are just one of those men and women added to the bulk. So, by referring back to those men and women, it helps you position where you are. Always check: What does the Bible say? So, the details can come. Number one: Check the Bible.

Number two: Spend more time with God. If they had spent more time with God before getting in a hurry to fight, they might have saved thousands of lives (in Judges) in the civil war. You read how many people died. Thousands, by the thousands. That is a disaster in any modern war because they never checked the Bible and they never heard God, finished. It is just like they asked God, “God, who will lead”? “Judah”. They said, “*Ya, ya*”. God said, “I have not finished yet”. They just ran off to do something. They needed to wait on God.

Number three: Isaiah 40:31 tells you that they that wait upon the Lord shall renew their strength. You not only have to not just know what to do, you must have that empowerment to do it. What did Jesus tell His disciples in Luke 24:49? “Do not leave Jerusalem until you are

endued with power from on high”. So, there is a condition. Jesus already told them what they were supposed to do. Preach the gospel but Jesus said, “Do not do it yet, until you have power”.

That is the same reason why we are not going out to the entire world yet until Jesus says go. We are only going on the secret altar building, we are not going to the entire world doing miracle services yet, but the day will come when we will do that. We will be going out to the world, we can demonstrate the things of God because God has to tell us. We need to hear God’s voice. It is important to hear God’s voice.

### *Make right decisions*

Now, God’s voice will tell you right now whether you should be going to a job or not going to a job, doing something or not doing something. Ask God, seek God. If you do not have a direction, seek God and God will speak. So, we have all those areas and I gave you a hypothetical question on what you do in persecution. The answer is you have to hear what God wants you to do. To stay or to go. Sometimes God wants you to go, sometimes God wants you to stay. It is important to get it right.

Those are the decisions in my life, that I thank God, I took. For example, when I chose to leave the Baptist church. Sometimes you have no choice, sometimes you have a choice. When I look back today at some of the people, they are still struggling with the baptism of the Spirit, I say, thank God, I would never progress if I never left.

It is a decision we must make. Pray about that. God will lead you, even in your job, vocation, getting into business, investing in something, buying shares/stocks, different areas. Do not use your mind. Do your research. By the end of the day, check whether God wants you to do those things. If God does not want you to do those things, do not do those things. “It is good, it is good, everybody says it is good”. Yes, but it might not be for you. God might want you to do other things. Remember, there is a lot of money to make in the world, but God does not want you to be the one to make all the money. You are supposed to just do your portion, that is it. Leave the other portion for others. Each one is to do their little part. That is all that we need to do in this life.

### *Get connected*

So, there is the energising, desire, inner knowing in our spirit. The first thing is to make sure you are connected. Some people are so used to being disconnected that they are disconnected a long time and still do not know it. Know whether you are connected to God. Once you are connected to God, everything flows nicely. Then your spirit must find a way to communicate to your soul.

Let us look at Acts, the little passage that we have is taken from Acts 27. Unfortunately, here Paul had no choice, but it was Paul, who says in verses 9 and 10: *“Now when much time had been spent, and sailing was now dangerous because the Fast was already over, Paul advised them, saying, ‘Men, I perceive that this voyage will end with disaster and much loss, not only of the cargo and ship, but also our lives’”*. Now, he did not say, “Thus says the Lord”. It is not a “Thus says the Lord”. It is an inner knowing that he successfully transfers to his soul mind. There is nothing in the natural.

You know what the natural says, look at the next verse: *“Nevertheless, the centurion was more persuaded by the helmsman and the owner of the ship than by the things spoken by Paul”*. Because Paul was not a sailor. If he was any tradesman, he was a tent maker. The helmsman and the captain of the ship were more experienced than Paul. They could smell the storm. They were more experts in the natural. When it comes to natural knowledge, Paul lost to them. So, when Paul says, “It is dangerous”, they say, *“Huh, no it is not. We have been sailing for donkey years. Who are you? You just come, and you are here, and you say you know the place”*.

Then, look in verse 12, even the weather forecast was good because the harbour was not suitable to winter in, so there was a natural reason why they wanted to move faster. If winter came and winter was coming, and they were stuck there, they would be stuck for a long time. If you were a businessman, you would say, *“Eh, this is loss”*. You do not have goods going to and fro and if your goods got stuck there, that is money being stuck. So, the owner of the ship, of course, you know, he wanted his ship to make money. Then the majority advised to set sail. You see, they have got a majority also. Everyone was against what Paul said. By any means, they should leave. So, they had a reason for moving faster. Weather forecast: (verse 13) the south wind was blowing softly, so nice. Weather forecast: pleasant weather, lovely, slight breeze and if you check the weather forecast for the day, you say, slight breeze, fair

weather, lovely for a day out in the sun. So, on the soft, pleasant breeze, they set sail. The moment they set sail, *ho*, unpredictable weather. Here is an example of an inner knowing. This inner knowing is very important.

In the Old Testament, you have the story of David when he was running from King Saul. When David was running, he went to the priest and the priest protected him. When he left, David sensed something, that the priest was in danger. Then when Saul came and killed the priest, David himself said, "I perceive this is going to happen". So, there was an inner knowing. That time he was not even born again.

We all have our inner knowing and we never paid attention to that. I have given you scriptures for all this inner sense and inner knowing. We need to pay attention to that, especially in this end time. Overall, it ties back to your inward witness. When you are doing the right thing, there is a flow of peace, love, joy and warmth, so you need to know what is right. I made the green light very, very pleasant, peace, love, joy; and you have what Luke 24 says. Your heart warms. You feel a very nice sensation and it is not like acid reflux, not natural heartwarming, but is a very nice, pleasant thing, like you are in the perfect will of God. It is a nice flow.

When something is wrong, you can sense different things. I can sense when things are not going right, even in other people's lives. I can sense when some other people are doing things to the church, especially if church people are involved. I can sense if any leaders or anyone go off track, or even if words are being spoken in absence that are dangerous because angels are hearing. I can sense even that. So, you intercede all the time. This sensation extends to cover different things. Sometimes, you can sense whether your loved ones are doing what is right or wrong. Sometimes you can sense whether something is about to go wrong or right. All of you in Christian families, if you live with Christian families or with Christian friends, you can sense whether a quarrel is coming or not. Before it comes, you can know because the future is always told you and then you have got to get your guard up, you can sense it. If you are more sensitive, you will avoid those things because sometimes it is not because of human beings, it is because God permits the enemy to test us.

### *Flow with God*

Along your path, normally it is a straight line but as you are walking, God allows something, and you are supposed to go this way, this way, then back this way, you can sense it and know. If you can listen to your spirit all the time, there is a flow with God. Sometimes, either people pick up things or demons are allowed to test, and actually it is a demonic thing. Now, if God allows you to be tested by demons, by fallen angels, by Satan himself, don't you think an alarm bell should tell you it is red alert? Must have an alarm bell, red alert, to tell you that you are living in red alert.

Remember that Jesus was tested for 40 days and 40 nights? He had red alert. He was all ready and he was ready to confront the things of the enemy because sometimes when you are not alert, like in Matthew 16, He blessed Peter. He asked them, "Who do you say the Son of Man is"? Peter said, "You are the Christ, the Son of the living God". Jesus blessed him. Jesus said, "Flesh and blood has not revealed this to you, but My Father who is in heaven". He said, "I will give you the keys of the kingdom of heaven". Peter had the blessing because he was bold to proclaim what he heard. So, God was working in his life, giving him, the revelation and he spoke it out but immediately after that, Jesus started talking about going to the Cross and die. Peter, who was influenced by the Messianic understanding at that time that the Messiah was to be king, could not comprehend why now the Messiah must die and now Peter, "*Wah*, I am now blessed by the Son of God". *Wah*, he is honoured, bigger than all the others; he is the one who spoke out; he is really, really the one among the ones. So, he took Jesus aside and he rebuked Jesus. *Wah*, now even can rebuke Jesus. He is got one revelation, now he is head above shoulders, really rebuked Jesus. He said, "Jesus, you know, do not talk like that". He rebuked, the words are not recorded, but the Bible says he rebuked Jesus for talking about the Cross and Jesus rebuked him back in a different way. Jesus said (verse 23), "*Get behind Me, Satan! You are an offense to Me, for you are not mindful of the things of God, but the things of men*". Suddenly, Satan was involved.

Just in a few minutes or seconds, people are not aware. You see, I am very aware nowadays of fallen angels, demons, and all those things, but some people are just blur, blur. So, if the Antichrist were to walk up, people say "welcome, welcome". When the false prophet comes, "welcome, welcome". No discernment. Do you know that, at some point when we have conferences all over the world, the false prophet will try to attend the conference? May God help the person who gives him a name tag. We must have the ability to sense that. You know,

in the exodus, there will be many people with wrong motives and those who are in charge must have a very good alert system. You must be able to hear the angels and discern that this person is not right. It is important: this discernment that we grow in the Lord, this ability, this red alert.

Maybe you want to be friendly with everyone and all that, you have got to get used to it: in this life, not everybody will like you. You can never get 100% of people to like you or love you. If you are still trying, give up quickly so that you will not be discouraged and disappointed. All you have to do is to love those within your circumference of love and always give out love unconditionally of course but do not go around trying to get everybody to love you and like you. Just walk in God's perfect will. Wait until we go to heaven, then guaranteed, 100% of people will love you. What will happen to the rest? All in hell.

So, in this life, there are people who do not walk with God, who do not love God. In this life, the reality is there are people who are demonic and there are Christians who are half-baked, who are half in the world, half in the things of the Lord. Why bother about trying to please these people? Why bother about trying not to offend. Not to offend? Offend by all means, so that we can draw a line. It is important that we just want to do God's perfect will, be loving as much as we can, but when no compromises come, we do not compromise our alert system. It is important that no infiltration comes.

#### *The tripartite nature*

When it comes to the *Soul Mind*, the mind will receive a thought or impression; the *Soul Will*, will receive, this is where the energy will convert into a desire for the will which is interesting, the desire originally was on the emotional side but now it is the will of your soul that feels a desire. What about the *Soul Emotion*? Your soul will feel an inner peace, inner love, inner joy. This is how it translates into your soul.

It translates into your soul. That is why we teach the tripartite nature. You cannot just discern by the thought and impression, you need three witnesses. You know, the Bible says two or three witnesses. You need two or three witnesses, not just outside of you, inside you. If you have a thought or impression, the thing is, is the thought or impression you have in your soul? This is talking about your soul now, in the soul, because you have got to transfer to the soul. When it is transferred to the soul, does the thought or impression of your soul have peace,

love and joy? If the thought or impression does not have peace, love and joy, and causes confusion at first, it is not ready yet. Your soul has not got all of it yet. It has to have three witnesses even on your inside. Not just a thought. Some people, just a thought and impression, that is it. Your thought and impression must also have your emotions come alongside.

Your soul emotion, if it is from God, will always produce peace, love and joy. Your will, will have a stronger desire towards God. It will become very clear cut to your will, and it becomes a desire that leads you to a desire for God and towards God, and in prayer. You have got three witnesses inside that confirm. Sometimes it could be an inner sense first before the thought comes, but it will support, all three witnesses of your soul will support each other. Then you know that it is in a particular direction, and sometimes you have got only one-third of your soul, you need to pray through.

Sometimes people say, “I am not sure whether this is the job God wants me to have”. I say, “How does your heart feel”? “My heart feels that this is good, but I still feel troubled”. I say, “Fine, you pray”. Then when you are praying, in the midst of your prayer, in the depths and heights of prayer, let me know what you feel. Not what you feel outside of prayer, what you feel inside prayer. So, the person comes back and says, “Whenever I pray, a lot of peace. When I stop praying and come out, troubled”. Which is the right sensation? The one in prayer and the reason you feel troubled, maybe it is something you have never done before, maybe something risky, maybe something that challenges you. Trust the feeling you have in the depths of prayer, not the feeling you have out in the market place, because you can feel all kinds of things but what do you actually feel in the depths of prayer? Because the soul, being the soul, will still get confused, especially if it is something your soul does not understand yet. So, it feels confused and has got many questions. There are people in the Bible who have that.

When Mary was told by Gabriel, the archangel, “Blessed are you” and who then talked about how this thing will happen, she said, “How can this be”? You see, confusion, how can this be, but her heart was right. She just said, “I do not understand how this can happen”. The angel said, “The Holy Spirit will come on you” and that is it. Now, confusion all gone, and Mary said, “I am the Lord’s servant. Be it unto me according to your word”.

Different from Zacharias, same chapter in Luke, when the angel said, “Your prayer is answered”. “What prayer?” “Remember...” He said, “When?” He was an old man by now, probably in his eighties or nineties. “Remember when you were twenty-one”? In those days, they might marry very young. “twenty-one? Now I am ninety-one? You mean the prayer I prayed seventy years ago”? When he first married, he was praying for a child. Seventy years later, “*Oh, ya*”. All this was going on in his mind, “Thy prayer is answered”; “What prayer”? His mind had this confusion. The angel was very specific: “A child”. “Oh, that one”. Then he said, “How can this be”? The same question as Mary’s, but the same question has a different impact. Look at Luke, almost the same question as Mary’s, but the impact was different. You can say poor Zacharias. Actually, Zacharias was met by Gabriel first.

Here is Mary’s response (Luke 1:29). Mary was troubled, and Mary considered that this greeting was so special and then the angel said (verse 30): “Do not be afraid”. Then Mary said (verse 34): “How can this be, I do not know a man? The one I am engaged to is Joseph, we are not married yet”. So, she asked that question, she got a good answer: “The Holy Spirit will come upon you, and the power of the Highest will overshadow you”. Then Mary just said (verse 38): “Behold the maidservant of the Lord”! She just said: “I am yours”.

For Zacharias, the angel said to him (verse 13): “Do not be afraid, Zacharias, for your prayer is heard; and your wife Elizabeth will bear you a son, and you shall call his name John and all these things will happen, he will be a Nazarite, etc, shall drink neither wine nor strong drink, he will turn the hearts of the people, will also go before Him in the spirit and power of Elijah”. Then Zacharias said (verse 18): “How shall I know this? For I am an old man, and my wife is well advanced in years”. And then he was punished.

#### *The two how’s*

Looks the same, right? Looks the same. Why different? God can see the heart. We only see the words, but the heart is different. You see, Zacharias’ heart was a heart of unbelief. He could not accept this, to him it was so impossible, and he was going to reason how it was impossible. He said: “I am an old man”. Then he added point two: “My wife is also old, well advanced in years”. If you check the original Greek, she had menopausal already *lah*. Can never produce and the angel said, the angel came on his own authority (sometimes the angels do that, they quote who they are): “I am Gabriel, who stands in the presence of God, behold, you will be mute and not able to speak because you did not believe my words”. Whereas

Mary, she said in verse 34, to the same angel, Gabriel: “How can this be, since I do not know a man”? And the answer was: “It is all right; the Holy Spirit will come upon you”. Looks like different treatment because God can see something. Mary was already believing every word. She just needed an explanation for “how”. So, her “how” was a different “how” from the other “how”. He also asked “how” (in verse 18). Two “how’s” but both are different. One, she wanted to know “actually how”. The other, “how can” – it was a “how” of unbelief and God can see right into the heart.

Put it this way: Before you speak, you were. Think about this. By the time you speak, you already have the position. Your speech reveals your position, a few seconds or a few minutes, even if you got it a few minutes ago. You see, whatever you speak comes from who you are. So, the who you are is who you are. Whether you are in unbelief or in faith is determined even before you say one word because faith is not just what you say, it includes what you say. Believe in your heart and confess with your mouth. So, where does faith start first? The heart. So, before you can say it with your mouth, your heart must believe first. God does not even need “how”. No need, all of you keep quiet. He just considers the heart, you believe, or you have unbelief.

If you understand this truth, it is important. The condition of your heart is determined by your will. Do you know that before you say I will do it, you were willing to do it? A few seconds. When people say, “How many volunteers today”? There are people already willing. The willingness is inside.

In Mary, there was a willingness to believe. In Zacharias, before he said one single “how”, he was already resigned to live a life happily ever after without children. He was already resigned, really satisfied with what he was. He had got used to not having a child. They were ready to die in their old age happily ever after without a child. They were already there. Whereas Mary was different, she was willing for anything, willing to do. You know why, if he was in his nineties and he was really old, historians gave him as eighty to ninety years old. Let us put him at ninety-one, easier to count. Let us say he got married at twenty-one, so seventy years. Do you still want a child at ninety? Or let us say Abraham at one hundred years old. Sarah was ninety years old. So, you think, baby, changing nappies, baby toddling. Do you know there are people who do not tell everything in their minds? But angels know all

your thoughts. You know, the angel gave him a lengthy conversation, longer than Mary's. In the lengthy conversation, he said, "Your prayer is answered". "What prayer"? The angel said, "Elizabeth, your wife will give birth to a son". Before he said how, while the angel was still talking, he started thinking: "What child"? He was already seeing: changing nappies, running around. He could see himself like a great-grandfather, chasing after a five-year old child. He was nearly one hundred years old. You can imagine, when the child reaches teenage years, he is about one hundred and two. The angel could see what was going on in his mind. So, when he said "how", the angel could see right through him because before you speak, you were.

We can keep our hearts soft. The heart is your ground. In Mark 4 in this area, remember, the key is these three [*Spirit Will, Spirit Emotion, Spirit Mind*] must work together. For the three to work together, remember what your heart is? Your heart is your spirit and your soul. You must keep it soft. Inside you, there is something in you that always says: "Let it be unto me according to Your word". You have got to keep the softness of your heart, which is why when the Lord told me (and I was not actually prepared), when the Lord told me in 2016 that I must go to US and plant a church there, I say "*huh*" but my heart is: "I am willing". My heart is: "That is shocking, Lord" but it is an okay heart because deep in my heart, I would say, you know, "As long as it is You, even tomorrow, I will obey". My heart already said that.

#### *God sees the heart*

We must keep this kind of heart and God can see this kind of heart. Remember God says, "I will choose a man after My own heart"? When it comes to David, when the Lord says something, even if he did something wrong, he says, "*Oh, sorry*". He is very quick, and he always wants to please the Lord. That is the heart that can hear God.

So, in Mark 4, there are four types of ground: It says the sower went out to sow and when he sows, there are four types of ground. The parable is mentioned in verse 3 all the way to verse 8. Then Jesus explained it from verse 14 to verse 20 and the whole situation of His explanation in all this is what type of heart the person has. You see, Satan, in the first ground, comes and takes the word that was sown in their hearts. The third type of ground, the heart has got a lot of cares of the world. Then the last one, the heart is correct. When the Word comes, they just take the Word. The thing is before your mouth speaks, your heart is already

conditioned. Mark 11 tells us, if you believe in your heart and confess with your mouth, if your heart believes it and you do not doubt in your heart, you will have what you say.

In the faith message, people always teach about be careful of your words, there is death and life in the power of your tongue. It is correct, it is true but the power of words is actually based on the power of the heart. In Mark 11:23-24, if you doubt, everything you speak here is like empty air. What did Paul say about love? If you have all these things, gifts here, if you do not have love, it is also empty because love comes into the heart. Your motive must be love. Any other motivation is heartless.

So, let us remember that words are important, but the condition of your heart, you can change instantly right now. You can make it harder or softer by choosing. You choose to be willing to obey. You put yourself in the position, which I always put myself and I say, as long as it is the Word of God, whether it be the word of God given directly to me by vision or revelation, or the word of God is given by an angel, or the word of God that comes through someone who has a vision and seen an angel and he confirms something that God has been speaking to me, in any way, as long as I know this is God's Word, I will tremble at God's Word and this is what God seeks, that we are the people who tremble at God's Word.

In Isaiah 66:1-2, *“Thus says the LORD: ‘Heaven is My throne, And earth is My footstool. (Remember, this one, even before that in Isaiah 65:17, it talks about new heavens and a new earth, so this is the type of heart that will enter new heavens and new earth). Where is the house that you will build Me? And where is the place of My rest? For all those things My hand has made, And all those things exist,’ Says the LORD. ‘But on this one will I look: On him who is poor and of a contrite spirit, And who trembles at My word’”*. That is the new kind of spirit man that God wants to bring.

### *The vibration of God's Word*

We feel the vibration of God's Word. Now, the trembling, here I want to explain. It is not that you are trembling because you are scared. If you really know God, when God speaks, He really speaks. When God speaks, there is a vibration, a frequency. We know how powerful God's voice is, whether it is a whisper or even a thought that comes from Him. When you are able to vibrate together with His frequency or tremble, then you are really sensitive to God. Even in the midst of natural noise, like Elijah, earthquake, wind so strong that it blows down

rocks, fire, all these things, but suddenly there was this sound of a still small voice. Now, you read the story in 1 Kings 19, God never spoke to him until he went out, but he heard the still small voice. So, if he heard the still small voice, what did he hear before God spoke, since he went out? While he was in the cave, he heard something. What did he hear? Because when he actually went out, then God spoke. So, what did he hear? What was the still small voice? He heard the trembling and the vibration of God's voice.

If your heart can tremble when God speaks, and this is the thing. It is actually true when God says something, the whole Universe shakes with it and all the angels know. You do not have to tell the angels what God speaks to you, because they can feel the vibration go right through them, but the thing is, humans cannot feel. God is raising a new breed of people, where the slightest tremor that comes from the throne, it vibrates. In that position, your perfect rest is only with God. That is what God wants, greater than any in this end time. Remember, in the midst of noise, you can be in the noisiest place in town and you can hear all those things, but when God speaks, it is the loudest sound because you are tuned only to God's vibration.

It is just like if I have got a tuning fork here. If the tuning fork is tuned to a frequency, if it is a tuning fork E, I have got a tuning fork G, no matter how I knock, the E will not vibrate. It can make a lot of sound, that E will not vibrate but if I have got an exact E and I strike it, that will vibrate.

In the same way, nothing moves you. Your whole spirit and soul is tuned only to God's frequency, so that when you are talking to someone, the moment God speaks, and straightaway you tune in and you are receiving it. This is the person God wants in the new heavens and new earth. That is Isaiah 66. That is what He is preparing all of us for. The thing about Mark 4 is: What is the difference between all those four grounds? Their hearts. The difference is their hearts, and didn't the whole New Testament story tell us about God changing our hearts? What is the whole New Testament story about God giving us a new heart? A heart of flesh, He replaced it from a heart of stone. What is the New Covenant? God works in our heart (Hebrews 8 and 10). Our heart must be tuned.

## Chapter 10...

### Resetting the Body of Sin

We have been touching on the different things on the spirit man. We have touched on the Holy Spirit. So, from here forward, we are going to talk about how the Holy Spirit works with our human spirit. That is the whole purpose of *The Spiritual Man Book II*.

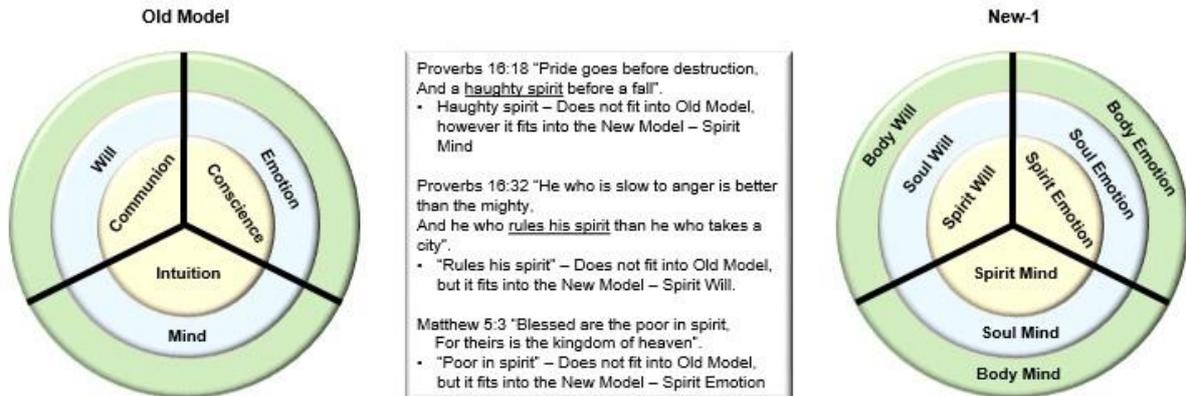


Diagram 1

In the three circles of diagram 1, we have the inner circle is the *Spirit*, the middle circle is the *Soul*, and the outer circle is the *Body*. We have made adjustments to Watchman Nee's model and he did not touch on anything about the *Body*. He only concentrated between the *Spirit* and the *Soul* but for us, we have the *Spirit*, the *Soul* and the *Body*. I did not touch much about the *Body* but when we talk about the Holy Spirit, I need to touch on that, which is the outer circle. So, this is the actual true circle now. We have said that ours includes and incorporates Watchman Nee's model, except that he has named it in the *Spirit*. It is only the difference in naming.

I understand that Watchman Nee also actually wrote everything in Chinese. Whatever you read in the English book, it has been translated. Some things get lost in translation. We did check some of the Chinese words.

In Watchman Nee's model, the *Spirit Mind*, he calls that *Intuition*. Then the other area, *Spirit Will* – he calls it *Communion* and we have defined "communion" as only possible between two entities, and so is a communion between us and God and it actually involves the *Spirit Will*. Remember, Philippians 2:13 says that it is God who works in us both to will and to do. Obviously, God is energising our *Spirit Will*. We have enough scriptures to show that He

cannot be energising our *Soul Will* because our soul needs the freedom to choose. If there is no freedom to choose, we are robots and when you put all scriptures together, if you take a scripture offline and just live on that one scripture, you can become extreme. So, it is obvious that He is energising the *Spirit Will* within us.

I have defined that the spirit man has its own will and is more yielded to God because it is the same resonance and frequency as God's. Like Jesus says, 'the spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak' – He is not talking about the soul; He is talking about the spirit; the spirit is willing. He is definitely not talking about the Holy Spirit. He is talking about how inside the human spirit, the human spirit is willing, wants to flow with God, but the flesh of the human is weak.

Now, nowhere in Watchman Nee's model did you see where the *Spirit Will* is. That is why I say that we have made improvements on his definition where *Communion* is. By the way, when you have read his book, if I were to ask people who has read the book – what does he understand by "communion"? Most people cannot answer. They just say "worship". I read his book when I was a young Christian. I assumed that "communion" just means "worship".

Even in the study of the Chinese word "communion", if he took it from the Chinese word, and from the English word "communion", and from the Greek word "*koinonia*" (which is "communion"), which is contrasted with the word "fellowship", it implies some sort of relationship and any relationship involves free choice.

The crux of the issue is, it should be defined as *Spirit Will* where the spirit can enter into communion with God and communion also implies union with God. By looking at verses, like Philippians 2:13 (where God says through Paul in his writing), it is God who energises, who works in us both to will and to do. Anyone who is in one spirit with the Lord is in one spirit with Him. So, there is a union that is there, and our will is always in union with God. We have been born again.

Of course, in the area of *Spirit Emotion*, Watchman Nee calls it *Conscience* but "conscience" is poorly understood. We talked about how the conscience is more than just right and wrong. It has so many factors and sensations. It senses faith, it senses many things. To call it *Conscience* would be too self-limiting.

We also analysed his data. You see, whenever in the scientific world, when you want to re-look at a new theory, I call his book “theory”, my book is also a theory in the sense that these are theoretical principles that I have put together for you to understand – you want to see the database. His database was that he looked at every word where the word “soul” comes and every word where the word “spirit” comes and then he tried to define that, okay, the spirit seems to imply, every time we talk about the spirit, seems to be right and wrong; or the soul. That is how he got his understanding of the soul having the three parts – *Will, Emotions* and *Mind*. So that is his database. He was trying to work on something like a concordance. Now, I did the same kind of database. I looked at every passage in the Bible where the word “spirit” comes out, and I found that he left out some data. Any theory is only as good as your data.

For example, I can just interview ten people in Singapore and then I say, okay, based on these 10 people, I am going to draw some conclusion about the whole of Singapore. You think it can be good? Bad, because it also depends on where I go to take my data. I can go and take my data at Bukit Timah or I can take my data of ten persons in Geylang. Then it would give me impressions of Singapore. So, basically, your data need to have a minimum essence. If you want to conclude something that has a general tendency for about 5.5 million people, your data probably might need to involve at least about, maybe several hundred thousand if possible; if not, at least ten thousand or fifty thousand to get a more accurate data.

In the same way, the more verses we include, here the database is our verses. When I re-looked at his data, I said: “Why didn’t he include this verse? Why didn’t he include that”? I have to re-look at his data, and which is a fair research. So, re-looking at his data, I realise that there are verses that he could not explain, like “*the spirit is willing...*”. Eh, wait a minute, that is the will of the spirit and so in the end, I arrange it this way: *Spirit Will*. In this model, you just rename it differently, the circle could turn in any direction, it is still the three parts but in this old model, it needs to be synchronised – *Will, Will, Will; Mind, Mind, Mind; Emotions, Emotions, Emotions* and you turn the circle a bit, it is facing the wrong direction.

We have touched on the *Spirit* (the three parts) and the *Soul* (the three parts). We did not touch much on the *Body*. I need to touch a little bit on the *Body*, not too much, which Watchman Nee did not touch on at all, to prove that the body has emotions, a will, and the body also has a mind of itself.

### *The Holy Spirit's work*

Look at Romans 7. There is a reason why we are looking at the *Body*. It is because we are going to talk about the Holy Spirit and the Holy Spirit's work in our lives is hindered by the strength of our spirit, the renewal of our mind, and the surrender of our body – three things. You know, all these three things are found in Paul's basic Magna Carta gospel in the book of Romans. He talks about how our spirit has to be born again and is obvious. In Romans 8 he concludes with our spirit but in Romans 6 and 7, he talks about the struggle that is there and then in Romans 12, he talks about two things. To know the will of God, two things must happen. You all know that verse. Romans 12:1-2, "*I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that you present your bodies a living sacrifice...*", your body, not a symbol, not an allegory, your real physical body must be surrendered. Then he talks about the renewal of the mind. When those two things take place, then you can perceive the will of God. So, it is obvious that the strength of our spirit, which you can add other verses, like Ephesians 3 – as your spirit man is strengthened, so Christ can dwell more in you. That has to do with the kingdom of God coming. The strength of our spirit is important, and the renewal of our mind, and the surrender of our body. We need to know how to surrender our body and what is involved and what are the things that are working in our body.

Now in Romans 7, Paul talks about this struggle that he is having between spirit, soul and body. The part that we want to look at, let us get a good point to start reading from, in verses 15-16: "*For what I am doing, I do not understand.* (So obviously, his mind is not understanding, he is talking about his soul mind, because his spirit mind knows everything, based on 1 Corinthians 2 – the spirit of a man knows everything that is in a man, just as the Spirit of God knows everything that is in God. So, when he says *I do not understand*, obviously, it is his soul mind coming out in the play and he says) *For what I will to do* (that is what his spirit wants to do), *that I do not practice* (obviously, something gets carried on right through his *Soul Will* and his *Body Will*); *but what I hate, that I do. If, then, I do what I will not to do, I agree with the law that it is good*".

Now, I want to pause there for a moment and go over to Philippians 2:13, "*for it is God who (energises) works (the word "works" is "energeias") in you both to will and to do for His good pleasure*". I want to repeat again, *to will and to do*. Do you see the "*to do*" part? So, God helps you to will and helps you to do.

Now, this same Paul who wrote Philippians 2:13 wrote Romans 7:15. He says, “*For what I am doing, I do not understand. For what I will to do, that I do not practice...*”. Now, something is wrong somewhere. It is not in agreement with Philippians 2:13 because Philippians 2:13 says God wills and God does not just will, He enables us to do. The enabling us to do is broken down here in Philippians. The “willing” seems to be received, but the reception of the “doing” part, something goes wrong. Here, I have one little question for you: Who does the doing part? We do. Who is doing the “do” part? We have to cooperate.

Now, to specify more the answer, the doing, he says “*what I will to do*”, *what I will*, that means “I decide to do”. Can we agree that it is the *Spirit Will*? Obviously, *Spirit Will*. Since the doing is on this part [*Spirit Will*], we look at this angle. Now, he says in Philippians 2:13, “*it is God who works in you both to will and to do*” – God. So somewhere, the doing part has to come down to the body, correct? So, here [*Spirit*] “will”, here [*Soul*] says “no”, something is broken down. Which part does the doing? In the end, the doing has to be by the soul and the body. *The spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak*. Now, think about the statement. Isn’t that the exact thing like what he is talking about? The spirit is willing, the flesh is weak. It is the same as saying the spirit wants to do, the flesh does not want to do.

Now, in Watchman Nee’s teaching, sometimes in some of his books, like *The Normal Christian Life*, which is actually when you read *The Normal Christian Life*, you realise your Christian life is not normal. He could have written *The Abnormal Christian Life* to all normal Christians, but actually all Christians are abnormal and his “normal” was normal but now, his “normal” is also not good enough now in this end times. You have to go higher. In his book *The Normal Christian Life* (which is a pretty good book on Romans anyway), he defines “flesh” as “self”. He makes the two equal. That is why he does not touch much on the *Body* part. He defines “flesh” as “self”. He puts the two as equal. In a sense, yes, but the two still need to be divided, there is a flesh part of the body and there is a carnal part of the mind.

Let us look at the Bible and see which part says no. Romans 7:15, “*For what I am doing, I do not understand. For what I will to do, that I do not practice...*”. So, the second part, *I do not practice*, that it is both the soul and the body. Ok, let us go to the next part, in verse 16, “*If, then, I do what I will not to do, I agree with the law that it is good*”. Somebody is doing the doing. I guess it is the bad part doing the doing, that is why he says that the law is good but what he does is evil.

Verse 17, “*But now, it is no longer I who do it...*”. Now, you agree, all the way in verse 15, the “*I will*”, the doing that is not in line with the “*I will*”, he is talking about the doing that is not in line with the “*I will*”? So, let us call it, the disobedient part but we look here and see the doing part, so he says in verse 15, “... *For what I will to do (and that is the spirit man), that I do not practice (I do not practice) but what I hate (that is the bad thing), that I do*”. The second “*I do*” again is soul and body. Verse 16, “*If, then, I do (assuming that is something bad) what I will not to do, I agree with the law that it is good*”. If you do the bad thing, it is still your soul and your body.

Now look at verse 17, “*But now, it is no longer I who do it (okay, Paul says it is no longer me, then he says), but sin that dwells in me*”. Now, here he is blaming it not on the devil. A lot of people blame the devil. He is blaming it on something called sin nature. Now he is saying in verse 17, if you look at the logical sequence, he is saying that in verse 15, “*I do not practice*” is sin nature. He says that, when you go backwards two verses. This is exegetical analysis, two verses back, it has to refer to the same thing – sin nature. If that is sin nature in verse 15, and verse 16, it is sin nature that again does what he does not want to do, then in verse 17, he actually named the sin nature and says that it is sin nature that is in him. Instead of calling it “soul and body”, he calls it “sin nature”.

Now he says in verse 18, “*For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh) nothing good dwells; for to will is present with me (which is correct), but how to perform what is good I do not find*”. He says, “*in my flesh*” – where is sin nature? In the body. Okay, the word “*sarx*” is the word “flesh”. “*Sarx*” in Greek.

Let us read the definition:

Strong’s #4561: *sarx*

*probably from the base of 4563; flesh (as stripped of the skin), i.e. (strictly) the meat of an animal (as food), or (by extension) the body (as opposed to the soul (or spirit), or as the symbol of what is external, or as the means of kindred), or (by implication) human nature (with its frailties (physically or morally) and passions), ... So that one, you can push it to the soul.*

The word “*sarx*” is used, if you look at the cross reference on how it is used, it is used in the verse about man and woman marrying, and Jesus says in Matthew 19:5, “*For this reason a*

*man shall leave his father and mother and be joined to his wife, and the two shall become one flesh*". That is physical. Then He says in Matthew 24:22, "*And unless those days were shortened, no flesh would be saved...*". And you have Matthew 26:41, "*Watch and pray, lest you enter into temptation. The spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak*". Take it strictly, do not bring in Christian tradition. Do not bring in preconceived ideas. If you were a person reading this, analysing it word for word, without any preconceived idea, and looking at the original Greek, and every time when the word "*sarx*" is used (which is translated "flesh"), you have no choice but to conclude that it is the body.

### *The power of the body*

Body without soul but in our concept, you see, this is where we do not understand the power of our body, the inherent power that your body has, which Watchman Nee did not touch on. Your body has a will of its own. You can blame the soul if your body does not have a will of its own. The body is just a glove, but your body has a will, has emotions and has a mind of its own. That is the part we never have, you see, Christianity has always been limited by scientific understanding.

For example, a thousand odd years ago, Christianity believed that the sun goes around the earth. Do you know that it was not Christians who take the forefront of knowledge to say that the earth revolves around the sun? Isn't it sad? The Bible never said such a thing. At some point, Christianity also keeps thinking that the earth was flat, but the Bible actually says the earth is round.

As we begin to understand *Spirit, Soul* and *Body*, because we see that the body is just an inanimate object that cannot function on itself before God... after God gives the body life, I can understand that the body without the spirit is dead. Yes, the soul without the spirit also cannot exist, but yet the soul can be independent from the spirit. So, you cannot give that argument. In James, when you are trying to use that verse, that the body without the spirit is dead, then I ask you: Can the soul exist without the spirit? It also cannot. The soul came into being, in Genesis 2, when God breathed, then man became a living soul. Without the spirit, the soul does not exist. Yet the soul is so independent from the spirit. Why can't we see that the body can be independent from the spirit?

What Paul is outlining, if you look carefully, let us look back, from the exegetical study of the word “flesh”, you have to conclude that generally most of the time he refers to the body. Conception-wise, you bring it to the soul but generally, the literal interpretation and the rule of thumb for interpreting any Bible scripture is: Go as literal as possible and only when it is impossible, then you use the allegory. That is the general rule of thumb. Otherwise, Bible interpretation can go to two extremes. It can go so literal that you cannot see the spiritual thing; it can go so spiritual that you lose its literal meaning; and they are both extremes. Now, in Romans 7, what I am trying to show you here is that his whole argument is trying to show the body. I will prove it from the exegetical thing. We have finished at verse 18. Paul puts in bracket (*my flesh*), so if you take (*my flesh*) is (*my body*), so that we do not miss it, “... *nothing good dwells; for to will is present with me, but how to perform what is good I do not find*”. Verses 19-20: “*For the good that I will to do, I do not do; but the evil I will not to do, that I practice. Now if I do what I will not to do, it is no longer I who do it, but sin that dwells in me*”. Now, you have got to find out which part sin is dwelling in. Continue in verses 21-23: “*I find then a law, that evil is present with me, the one who wills (that is the spirit) to do good. For I delight in the law of God according to the inward man (that is the spirit man). But I see another law in my members...*”. Can you see the word “members”? Now, when you see “members”, question: Is he talking about body or soul? Now, body, right? It is very obvious, “members”, he is talking about body now. It is consistent with the interpretation of the flesh as body.

Now, here is the thing: How can the body have a mind of its own to make war? You would have thought it is the soul because, like they say in one of the movies, “Do not under-estimate the power of the dark side”. You are under-estimating the power of the dark side, which is your body. Every sin and temptation of man has come through the body, has involved the body. It is all the body, in the physical sense. So, he says in verses 22-23 – *another law* – and this is the law not operating in the soul, but in the body, itself where sin nature dwells. *In my members* – warring against who? The law of mind? Now, do you agree, by this stage that the body is powerful also? The word “mind” refers to the soul. You see, now you have got the soul. Now finally the soul comes in. Can you see that the soul is caught between the war? The soul is in no-man’s land. Both sides are shooting but the spirit side does not shoot, if it shoots, it shoots love, but the soul is caught in-between.

It will be like in a war. In those days when they went to war, they had very interesting uniforms. When the British went to war against the Americans, they wore the red coats and, I think, the Americans wore the blue coats. It is funny why people chose red to go to war. In our modern warfare, if any soldier wears red, you might as well paint a target on him and then go to war. You know, paint a bull's eye, *eh*, aim properly. Nobody wears red today to go to war because now we use camouflage. Can you imagine, if you wear half the uniform of one side, half of the other side, both sides will think you are their friend, but the alternative is both sides can see you as the enemy. You thought that you could put a draw to both sides, but both sides would shoot at you.

So, here is the mind, he says the body, in verse 23, is warring against the soul and bringing the soul into captivity to the law of sin which is in his body. Then in verse 24, he says: "*O wretched man that I am! Who will deliver me from this body of death*"? He never said, "this soul of death". You see, the soul is the good part, the soul needs to be saved. The body is Darth Vader; your spirit, cannot give to Luke Skywalker; give to Jesus Christ. Your soul is the part that has to try to find its way. Verse 25: "*I thank God – through Jesus Christ our Lord!* (Then here again the soul comes out). *So then, with the mind I myself serve the law of God...*". You see, there is nothing wrong with the mind at this point, but the mind was corrupted from the flesh. When you read Romans 1, what is the order of corruption? From the flesh to the mind. Put the mind as an innocent child.

It does not mean that when a person is good, let us say if you take the DNA of Abraham Lincoln (who is tall and slim and has been a good man in history) and let us say, hypothetically speaking, you genetically clone him. Let us assume you cannot instantly grow it. The clone has to grow up like a normal child and into toddler, teenager, and then learn through school and university. Is there any guarantee that you will produce an exact Abraham Lincoln? You cannot because who a person is, is both nature and nurture. Nature will mean the genes you inherit, nurture will mean the environment we bring you to. If, for example, you get the same exact genes as Abraham Lincoln and you do not have the same experience, the same godly influence, the same upbringing, the same friends, the same teaching, the same assimilation of knowledge as him, you might have an evil Abraham Lincoln. If when he was a teenager, he went and mixed with the wrong guys, or he was badly hurt, unforgiveness crept in, and all these things, can you see that nurture plays a role as well as nature?

The soul is like that. The soul needs a lot of help and if the soul gets its help properly from the Spirit, it can resist the body, but the body is the evil one and that is why the body needs to be surrendered because evil cannot be assimilated.

*The body must surrender*

A real-life example, our body, our flesh is the one that is no good, our soul whereby every day is full of nonsense? If anyone prays and ask for the wrong thing, because he desires the wrong thing. Depends on where the desire comes from. When you are hungry, where does your desire come from? There is a desire that can come from the spirit. Spiritual desire. There is a desire that can come from the soul which is a desire for knowledge. There is a desire that can come from the body. Now, remember, the Bible did say that your body is the temple of the Holy Spirit.

Can you see now why long-ago Christianity went through different stages? Do you know Christianity has swung the pendulum many times? Because of this revelation of the great evil of the body. Up to the time of Martin Luther, Christianity swung to the extreme that the only thing good was spirit and soul. Martin Luther himself was wearing those monks' robes. In those days the robes were not made for comfort but were made for torture. When the monks wore those robes, they might add a few prickly things inside, maybe cactus or whatever, so that every time they wore it: *ah, ah*; every time they moved, it was painful. Why? They were torturing their body, thinking that their body was a great evil. So, the more they were tortured, the more they endured. Gnosticism is part of it. Gnosticism is just all trying to save the soul, *logos* entity, and get rid of the body but the Bible is balanced. On the other hand, the Bible says the body is the temple of the Holy Spirit.

It is obvious that there is something in the body that needs to be surrendered but something in the body needs to be put to death. There is a sin nature in the body that needs to be put to death and this is the part when people read Romans, they cannot see. If you read Romans without your traditional Churchianity glasses that are so thick, filled with colour and tinting, you cannot see clearly but if you read it pure, undefiled, without any input, drawing conclusion, you have to conclude by chapter 7 that the body is evil. Then the logical conclusion, the solution is to deal with the body. Paul did, in Romans 8.

In Romans 8, he deals with the body. Now, what I am illustrating is in Romans 8:1, where he says, “*There is therefore (which refers to the argument of chapter 7) now no condemnation to those who are in Christ Jesus, (so something has happened) who do not walk according to the flesh, but according to the Spirit*”. In other words, the soul is now taught to walk in this direction, and not that direction and that is, carry your body along. Verse 2, “*For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus has made me free from the law of sin and death*”. Remember, the law of sin and death is in your body. He mentions that in chapter 7. Now he says in verse 3, “*For what the law could not do in that it was weak through the flesh, (Can you see that?), God did by sending His own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh...*”. Again, from contextual usage, flesh refers to the body.

We have been consistent exegetically all the way in every single verse, but if you have at any point interpreted the flesh as the soul, you are confusing the language. You are jumping, *oh*, this part flesh is the body, this part flesh is the soul; you are jumping to and fro. Can you see how inconsistent that is? But if you take it with simple understanding, you know why, because many people do not realise, this is the revelation of Paul. There is something in your body that needs to keep on disciplining. That is why Paul says, “I pommel my body”. That is how when you get up in the morning, you tell your body what to do, do not let your body tell you what to do. Your body must be told because your weakness is in the flesh.

#### *The default mode*

Now, we grow up with the fact that there is some problem inside the body that you were born in, which implies that if you have been born into a very perfect body, your soul might never have sinned. Think about that possibility. When Adam, looking at the illustration of spirit and soul, came into a perfect body, he had the choice to sin, but sin nature was not working in him yet. The nature of sinning was not there. Here is talking about the nature of sinning, the tendency. In computer language, you call it “default mode”.

Now, default mode, for example, is when you have little children and food is very scarce, and maybe once a week you have chicken; another time, pork skin, whatever. So, in your celebration, once a week, you have chicken, and, in a chicken, there are only two drumsticks, let us not count the wing part. Let us assume, because not everybody likes drumstick, let us assume that the drumstick is the best part and then you have a big juicy drumstick with part of the thigh, and another small little part with just, maybe a bony part of the chicken.

Everyone eats the chicken until left two pieces: the big juicy, nice drumstick and one tiny part of the chicken flesh that looks like something that came from the chicken stall, where you chop, chop, flat, a lot of bones, but one tiny bit of meat. You put it in front of the child. Which do you think the hungry child will choose? The drumstick, that is your sin nature. By nature, it is looking after itself; it is inherent inside; it links to self but, of course, they do not eat in the spiritual world. If you go to heaven and you visit children's paradise (where they do not feel hunger, they do not feel all these things) and you present fruit, maybe since they do not eat chicken, you present a big juicy fruit and one small tiny one (if you could find a small tiny one in heaven because all are very big), and you (hypothetically) present it to a child in heaven. The child might look at it and say, "Anybody here wants the big one"? Why? No sin nature. So, a child in heaven, a child on earth, different. One does not have sin nature, one has sin nature – questions, choices, all affected, and your body is affecting you so sub-consciously, you do not even know.

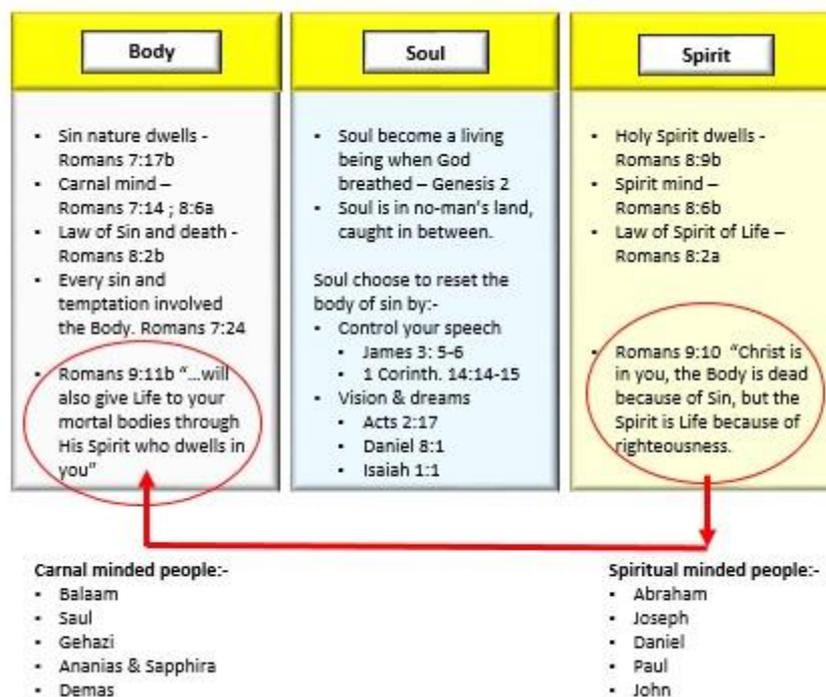


Diagram 2

*The carnal mind vs the spiritual mind*

When you cannot see your enemy, your enemy has already won. Isn't that true? If you do not know who your enemy is, you are already lost. You are not fighting the real battle. If you cannot see your enemy, you are lost. You go out to battle and say "Charge"! You say, "Where, who, how"? You cannot see your enemy. "Shoot"! "Where, who how"? You have

got a big fantastic gun, but you do not know where to shoot. Your enemy is your physical body, the sin nature in it.

Out of the logical progression, Paul talks about the mind that is affected by the body (called the carnal mind) and the mind that is affected by the Spirit. Can you see that the mind is a poor child? Your mind is Oliver Twist, “More, please”. However, if you ask for more from the wrong guy, problems. Your mind is a poor little child that wants to grow.

After he mentions that, he says to be carnally minded is death, to be spiritually minded is life and peace and then he says in verse 8, “*So then, those who are in the flesh cannot please God*”. Now, those who only live for their physical body can never please God. That is a true statement. If you live only to eat, to drink, to make merry, you are not pleasing God. You are pleasing yourself. No doubt, God created all these things to be enjoyed but if that is all that you are doing, in your life without spiritual aspiration, or even development of your mind, you are definitely not pleasing God. You know why, you are no different from the animals. Animals do that, survival of the fittest.

Darwinian theory reduces mankind to animals and by default, can you see that the whole humanism and Darwinian theory that says that you came from the apes and proves it that 90% of your genes are ape-like or animal-like, does not that show this body has changed? Because the DNA that they are looking at today is a fallen DNA. A lot of the spiritual DNA is lost, changed. Obviously, if we have got a DNA as Adam had it before he fell, none of us would have aged, a single wrinkle, a single pimple, a single defect in our bodies. Doesn't every one of you have moles, body marks and imperfections in your body? In Adam, there was none. In Jesus, there was none. These are all signs of the fallen body that is out of sync and we have here, if sin really is in the body, God has to do something.

Look at verse 9, “*But you are not in the flesh but in the Spirit, if indeed the Spirit of God dwells in you.* (Why is he making the statement? He is telling you: Live like the most important person in you is your spirit, not your body because if you live like your body is the real you, you are gone. That is a deception. Then he goes on). *Now if anyone does not have the Spirit of Christ, he is not His*”. In verse 10, “*And if Christ is in you, the body is dead because of sin...*”. Now, what does he mean “*the body is dead*”? He is saying sin nature is knocked out. See how logical his argument is?

When you take off your traditional glasses and you read chapter 7 logically, chapter 8 logically, you conclude that sin nature is in the body and it must be knocked out by the presence of Christ. The conclusion is that we are to live this life and every decision that you make in this life must be to profit your spirit. If this life is to live only to profit your soul, you are already gone. So, you can see today that the world is living that way. You can see today that Christians who cannot see their enemy are living that way.

What does Jesus say, *For what profit is it to a man if he gains the whole world, and loses his own soul?* You see, to profit your inner being (your spirit and your soul), God came to save the soul. The soul is meant for more than just a physical life. The soul is meant to discover the things of God, comprehend the things of God. Now, that we have identified from Romans 7 and 8, the kingpin has been discovered, the gangster in you, the horrible part in you and here is the thing: if anyone in this life stopped being in union with Christ, the kingpin will rise again.

Singapore is a wonderful country where people obey laws. You can generally wake up at 3:00 am, go for a stroll and come back, it is a pretty safe country because you have good laws, good enforcement and people are law-abiding, but you would not think about going for a walk at 3:00 am if you were in Syria or Libya now. In fact, in some countries where we went to, we also have advised people in the prayer walk that after certain times at night, especially when we were in Brazil, we said, “Take caution after a certain time please, do not hang out too late”. A precaution, because it is a different country and you have lawlessness and it is the nature of man that when you do not have law enforcement, lawlessness prevails. We will see a lot of that in the evils that are arising when civil war occurs in America and then the entire world erupts. You can see lawlessness trying to come up. All you need is one and everybody “copy-cat”.

### *The soul, an infant child*

So, sinful nature is only the body. The soul, I would say, is like a little child that needs to be saved. The soul will become whatever is nurtured because in all our lives, the soul has been nurtured from the body. If your soul, let us say if somebody reached you soon enough when you were born, and you had spiritual upbringing and you were taught that this body is not the real you, the real you are your inside and to develop the aspirations from the inside, your soul might have grown up differently. It is our fallen world and fallen society where people are

poor, hungry, impoverished, and people struggle for food, clothing, shelter. In that kind of society, people are reduced to their physical nature.

In 1 John 2:16, *For all that is in the world the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life is not of the Father but is of the world.* Influences from the flesh. The difference is this: You can be in the world but not of the world. So, you can see through the eyes of Jesus. Does Jesus see everything and every temptation? Yes, but He can see that, that is outside, and His influence is from the inside. Whereas we see the same thing, we are influenced from the outside, instead of being influenced from the inside because we are trained all our lives to see the visible. What does Paul see? 2 Corinthians 4, the last verse: we look at the things which are invisible.

The training for young children, young kids and young Christians who are just born again and are taught this, is to train that they see the invisible as more real than the visible. Isn't this is what faith is about? Think about all the Bible people, did they look for the invisible or the visible? The invisible. Enoch saw all the things around him and he looked for God. The fall of man – they looked to the visible, rather than the invisible God who visited them in the garden. Satan said, “*Oh, look at this tree*”. They looked, they lusted after it, they desired after it, and that was it.

The soul is such a little infant child, easily influenced, which is true, children are easily influenced. That is our soul. We were not taught that the invisible was the real world because we lost sight of the invisible. All the way through, people like Abraham, he looked for, although he left for his journey in Genesis 12, Hebrews 11 says he was looking for a city that was built by God, not by man. He was looking to the invisible. Noah, he spoke of the invisible things. All the Bible people spoke about invisible things.

Today, the church is not speaking about invisible things. In the church that people attend, they are always talking about visible things and they call that being practical. Yes, it is good to be practical. The Bible teaches the true Christianity is heavenly. If you are a follower of Christ, the first thing that Jesus tells you is not to desire the things of the world but what do we learn? When we go to church that is named after Jesus Christ, we call ourselves Christians, the church tells us, you know, be successful in the world, do the things in the world. It is okay to be successful, it is important to be of a good reputation but if we are not

taught the value of spiritual things, before we handle the world, we are gone. The value system in many Christians is based on a worldly measure but the true value, if you are a disciple of Christ, it is better to spend time in prayer with God than to try to get another \$10,000 by working extra overtime. This is all a 'value system'.

### *Seek spiritual things*

In the end, this is the thing: The Bible shows that people who actually seek spiritual things get richer than those who are seeking natural things. Joseph, do you think that he was working for money? No, he was working for righteousness. He could have easily committed adultery with Mrs Potiphar and then one day Mrs Potiphar secretly killed Mr Potiphar and then Joseph would take the place of Mr Potiphar, but then he would become *Mr Potipfat*. He did not want that. You know, he was not working for money. He worked for righteousness. Seek first the kingdom of God and His righteousness and you are richer than the people who seek after the world.

Look at Daniel. Do you think Daniel was there for money? He was there for God. Daniel would rather pray three times a day than spend the extra time fellowshiping with his chief minister and all the ungodly Babylonian fellows. That is why he never spent time with them, they were angry and jealous, and they tried to kill him.

People who do not look for money become rich. People who look for money become poor. What an upside-down world? Then we are not taught that in Christianity; instead, the church, because you know why, churches are looking for money, so they teach that way. The pastor's heart and the ministers are looking for money and what comes out from their mouths is from their hearts. That is why in many television ministries, they are not interested in your prayer items, they are interested in your cheque book. We have an upside-down Christianity, that is why God in this revival will tear everything down.

There is no value, like, for example, in spending an extra night in all-night prayer. Some of you work very hard. Now, I work very hard too. I am actually doing five different jobs kind of thing. Then you have got your Sunday, and if you are an active Christian, is your whole Sunday where you would rather be in church. Now, think about it this way: Do you know, as a Senior Pastor, I could have chosen to have only one service? Why have three services and then I work so hard? It is because you have to give of all your best and to reach out, even if

our second service has got extra two periods because most people are in two churches. Some of course are in no churches but in every church. You heard of Jack of all trades but master of none? Well, they are members of every church but master of none of the churches. It is to cater for people who are the in-between. Sunday morning – is the committed crowd. Evening service – it only started because we say, well, we have got people who are active, let us give our energy to do this and I commit myself to help once a month, every first Sunday. So, I preach three sermons. Then I have preached Thursday Bible study; Friday all-night prayer; Saturday, single service; Sunday, two services. How many pastors would want to give themselves more work? Most pastors are trying to give themselves less work. It is taking more time, but the fact is that I have to be there also, not just the congregation. It is not the congregation that prays and then I sit at home and do other things. No, it is giving me more work but because of the desire for the spiritual things of the people, I do it.

We know there is no short-cut. One needs to sit down, one needs to pursue after Him, one needs to seek after truth, and God purifies us as we get into the process. We just know like what David says, that a day in God's house is better than a thousand days.

When we are taught, the spiritual value is easy, and this is where many people missed it. Many people think that if (they calculate) they give Sunday to God, the other times of the week belong to them; if they spend more time outside, they can do better for God. They forget, if they give the Friday all-night prayer, I have never seen a Christian who prays consistently for Friday all-night prayer, whose life does not continue to grow in an outward curve. Will always be going upward. I did not say there are no tests and trials, but generally come what may, they find their lives going upward. At first, you might not notice it but over time, incrementally, you will realise there is a big difference in your life and it overflows into the practical areas of your life (that is why we are practical), into your work life, into your business life. The one extra hour you pray or the one extra day you give to God could prosper your business another few million dollars and you thought that by chopping here, you have more time to make another million dollars; instead, by chopping here, then suddenly start losing a million. It is like the law of tithing. You thought if you keep 100%, you have more but then you realise, if you give 10% (minimum 10%) and keep 90%, the 90% somehow can do more than the 100%. That is the way God works. By giving more and keeping less, we still have to do more because God provides more.

Every man and woman of God in the Bible had not sought money. Those who sought money, you see them as, like an example of the bad guy, Balaam, Saul (who was only after position), Gehazi (Elisha's servant), Ananias and Sapphira, and Paul says in the Bible, Demas who forsook and went to the world. Can you see that these are like footnotes of what thou shalt not be? Jesus says we are not of this world, in His prayer in John 17 and we must see that it is the world and the body's contact with the world that deceive us. Once we know that, that is our warfare, we can begin to, every time we deal with the world, our guard is up. Any time we contact the world, our guard is up. Always.

#### *Reactions that can create*

In terms of *Body Will*, *Body Emotion* and *Body Mind*, let me throw in some scientific things here. The body has its own ability to produce emotions. It is like a feedback loop. It is your thoughts, your experiences, your reactions that can create things in your body, chemicals in your body. They say that the brain is not just a data centre. The brain is a gland. Besides that, you also have the endocrine system in your body which consists of all the different glands, positioned at different places in your body. Your body is producing chemicals. Today, they have discovered only a bit of the chemicals. They have not discovered all the unknown chemicals. We thought today they have discovered all. No, I have one book called '*The Brain as a Gland*' and it lists down that the brain produces thousands of chemicals of which they only classified a couple of hundred and understood a couple of hundred better. So, the brain is not just a data centre, it is a gland, it is producing chemicals. We have understood some of the chemicals today, endorphins, adrenaline, oxytocin, some of these chemicals that are being produced by the body that can affect our moods. That is why the food you eat, the chemicals you are exposed to, all these also have a chemical effect and today we have chemicals that are actually direct impact too, because they have discovered that. It is obvious that your body has emotions, but it is a chemical emotion. It can affect you, you can affect it, but you need to be aware of it.

Your body has a mind of its own. We did a series called *Cellular Memory*. Cellular Memory is how the body seems to retain a certain memory (which people do not understand, but it is coming out more often today with organ transplants), where for some reason when a person is transplanted a certain organ (it does not happen in every case and they still have not solved the mystery), why a person who does not love tennis, who might have received a heart from a tennis player, suddenly after some time says he likes to play tennis. There have been so many

cases that it is now a curiosity and is being researched. Science does not have the answer yet, but there are many theories. One of the theories is cellular memory, that it has certain memory that is producing certain desires of its own that can affect and whatever the theory is, it will explain about twins. Why twins? Because the closest DNA match is the twins, separated at birth, can grow up liking the same type of food, doing things that are strangely coincidentally the same. You can read a lot about it on the internet. It does not happen to all twins but when some twins are closely matched, they seem to have a DNA effect on each other. Now, the only thing twins share, if they are brought up in a different nurture environment, is the DNA. Yet the DNA can influence. Sometimes you wonder how much a DNA can influence a person. That is why the study of twins is still ongoing, but scientists do not have all the answers, but cellular memory is quite a nice theory at the moment until it is more backed up by the scientific side. However, more or less, there is some sort of a mind your body does have. It does have an impact on a person and it is true, if you want to look further to DNA, your DNA actually determines whether you are a more intellectual or emotional person. It is in your DNA. So, if your DNA equals your body, that is it, case solved. Your DNA does determine one of these.

Does it mean that the body part is all that: *Body Will, Body Mind...*? No, no, we need to be aware that the body was born with a sin nature. Sin nature sounds horrible, right? *Wah*, we are monsters, inside us is Mr Hyde trying to come out, you know, Dr Jekyll is a good guy, Mr Hyde is a bad guy, so any time Mr Hyde might come, and you change, you grow back, then you turn back into the nice Dr Jekyll. You all know the story of Dr Jekyll and Mr Hyde, right?

Treat your body as this, easier to explain by default mode. Your body has a default mode to say amen to the world. It was born with an amen to the world. Anything the world says - yes, yes. You have to train and retrain your body to say no, and then amen to God. Present your bodies as a living sacrifice. So, change the default mode.

#### *Resetting the body*

Now, in computers, it is so easy. You just go in, select, change your settings and that is it. In the end, your phone has got a default screen. You change your settings, put a different picture, whatever but where is the button for your body? Can we reset? Yes, can reset. I will show you where the reset button is.

When did the snake come in and tempt Eve? Is it after Adam and Eve ate the fruit, because before they did the action, they actually preset their minds that they wanted to eat it, then only they sinned. Up to that moment; even if they go near and the serpent says “come, eat, eat”; even if they go near, put their nose right next to the fruit, smell it, lick it, and then go away, God will still say they have not sinned. It was the moment when they opened their mouths and ate, that they were gone. The very strange thing is the tree of the knowledge of good and evil is actually like a big giant grape, a big grape that is reddish in colour, is a grape size thing but a very longish grape, it is big like the size of my whole hand and is red with red juice and Adam was like pure white. So, when they ate it, it was like they were covered in blood, they looked like Dracula, just eaten somebody’s blood. Very strange. If you have a chance in heaven, and they allow you to go to the video room, look into the archive of Genesis when Adam and Eve fell, you will notice after they ate, the juice, all red colour, dripping. Maybe that is where the horrors we get in all the pictures of vampires with this blood coming out from their mouths, but it is a red fruit that has red juice coming out. So, it is the default mode. Once the default mode is set, there is a setting. I am going to teach you, the settings for your body.

You know how in a lot of the phones, a lot of the software in computers, sometimes they hide the settings somewhere, especially Apple computers, they like to hide it. They make it friendly but when you want to change things, you have to go to the settings, whereas Windows computer, you know where it is, if you know Windows, you just go in and re-programme it. In phones also, they try to hide the settings because they do not want you to change anything and so even in some of the phones, sometimes they put the settings in two places, like in some places, in some apps when I am looking, why does it keep on taking all my contacts and I do not like it, delete, delete. Then the next day it came out, delete, delete, just came out. I said how, check the settings, nothing. Then I checked another area, there is just one line there, one box “ticked”. I unticked it. Then it said, “Stop touching my contact list”. You know, it says no, that kind of thing, but they hide it somewhere.

Your body has a setting. Remember here, it says in Romans 8:1, “*There is therefore now no condemnation to those who are in Christ Jesus, who do not walk according to the flesh, but according to the Spirit*”. It looks like we need help from the Holy Spirit. The Holy Spirit must come. When the Holy Spirit comes, the strange thing is that in Acts 2, among the prophecies of the Holy Spirit coming in Acts 2 (it is quoting from Joel), it says in verse 17,

*“And it shall come to pass in the last days, says God, That I will pour out of My Spirit on all flesh...”*. Notice that, on your body? It did not say on your soul. When the Spirit comes on all flesh, that means the Spirit has now come to control your flesh. It says in Romans 8:3 – the law was weak through the flesh. It is your flesh that needs a lot of help. The Spirit comes on your flesh. You never find in the verse where the Spirit comes on your soul. Of course, the Spirit comes in your spirit because they that are in the Lord are one spirit with the Lord but why does the Spirit come on your flesh? Have you asked that question: Why flesh?

When we feel angry or when we feel insecure, the root is it comes from the physical, flesh. It is not through our thinking. No, your thinking was a process. If you look at all anger, all anger is most likely related to something outside you, at a person, at a thing, or something somebody did. Still outside. 100%, everything is from outside. The inside is only choosing. Once you realise this tiny little secret, the next time you get angry, remember, you are looking outside, and you look. You have to be angry at a thing or at a person; you cannot be angry at nothing. You do not look at the blue sky and say I am angry at you because the blue sky did not do anything to you. When you get angry it is at something outside. All your emotions, you need to submit outside. There is a big secret. Once you are aware when you almost lose control – there is something outside, maybe someone outside, or words spoken outside, or some reactions outside, or something outside because if we have kept you in a cave and do not let you contact anybody, of course you might be angry that you are not let out by the person who put you in the cave, or you are angry at the cave because the cave is blocking you but it is at something outside. It always links back to the outside.

Here is the question: Why does the Spirit come on your flesh? Because there is a setting that you need to reset in your flesh. Your flesh must become the temple of the Holy Spirit and then look at the process. Acts 2:17 says, *“...Your sons and your daughters shall prophesy ...”*. So, the first thing that the Spirit gets is to take control of your speech centre.

If you read in Science, in Biology, in Psychology, in every area, the centre of your brain control and your psyche control is in your eyes and in your speech. Have you seen the cartoon drawing of the nerve centre of what you will look like if your face or your body is drawn according to number of nerves? That means it is not according to your normal human shape. Let us say if a lot of nerves go to your fingers, so your fingers will be drawn out of

proportion to the rest of your body. There is a drawing like that, you could see the mouth and the fingers where all the main nerve centres are, it is really out of proportion because the nerve centres are there.

### *Your control centre*

The Bible itself tells you the control centre. Control centre setting, Number one, your speech. James 3, Where is the rudder of the ship? In our modern term, where is the steering wheel of the car? So now we are getting into the settings of your body, your speech, what comes out from your mouth. You all know James 3, it talks about the tongue is the control centre. You control the ship, you control the horse, the tongue controls heaven and hell. Matthew 12:36, you will be judged for every idle word that you speak.

God tells His people, which is why the first thing God tells you to do: Read the Bible out loud. If you were in the Old Testament, they will tell you to read it out loud but the word “out loud” is not conveyed. It is in your Bible. When they say “read”, it means not silent reading, read out loud, because for them something is released. That is why the word “*hagah*”, “meditate” day and night. The word “meditate” is to speak softly, because those were holy scriptures.

God tries to take control and teach you how to reset your body in your sin nature, watch your tongue. Death and life are in the power of the tongue. There are a lot of books written on the power of speech. So, your first control centre is the tongue and that was one of the first things God did when the Holy Spirit came down. He gives you speaking in tongues. As you allow yourself to speak in tongues and in understanding, you begin to develop your soul and your spirit. When you speak in tongues alone, your spirit is energised. It has an indirect effect upon your soul and your body, but it did say your mind is unfruitful. Then it never says it is not unfruitful to your body.

In fact, the word “edify”, in Greek “*oikos*”, is the root word, means a house. So, to “edify” is to “build your house”. Where is your house? Your body. When you pray in tongues, “*but the mind is unfruitful*”. It did not say the body is unfruitful. The mind still needs to study, that is why there is a study to show yourself (a workman) approved of God but when you pray in tongues, it does have an impact on your body. There are many verses linked together. Romans 8, when it talks about manifestation of the sons of God, it talks about physical

groaning, it talks about the weaknesses of your body. The weaknesses are infirmities. When you check the Greek word, it always points to the soul but now you know, it links to the body too, that somehow it gives you the ability to speak and groan in tongues.

First setting: your speech. It is better to be silent than to say the wrong thing. Silence is golden when you do not know what to say but Proverbs 25:11 says if you speak well, it is like golden apples in pitchers of silver. *Wow*, so speech can be more powerful than gold. It is like golden apples in pitchers of silver. So, good speech surpasses golden silence because it becomes golden apples in pitchers of silver but if you do not know how to speak, do not know what good words to speak, then silence is better. So, first control centre: speech. Many people lose their miracles, lose their answered prayer, lose their breakthrough, lose the work of angels. You know, angels are very disappointed, work so hard for you, if we can apply hard work to angels, they do work hard, but they do not sweat like us. They take so much time doing something, protect all the things, then you come, and then finally when all is arranged, and it comes, like Gabriel came and said, “Zacharias, thy prayer is answered”. “What? How?” Finished. Speech is important.

Do you know that Zacharias was given among the best of the best of the best? John the Baptist, specially chosen, came into his life. What a blessing. That is a lot of work of the angels, preparing that, choosing John. To choose him, Zacharias paid a price. There were many people praying for children in Israel. Don't tell me Zacharias was the only one? I am sure he and his wife were not the only barren ones. Many others might have prayed and then maybe they were a young couple starting off, they said, “*Wah*, God answered Habbakuk's prayer. You see, Habbakuk and Naomi have five children now. They were like us, barren, *wah*, look, God answered”. Then they looked over there, “*Wah*, Suzannah, she has 12. We all started at the same age, got married at the same time, graduated from the same Rabbi school, suffered the same thing”. Then they were disappointed for a while – why, why? God reserved them the best. You do not know about Suzannah's children, what they became after; Habbakuk's children, do not know what they became; not in Bible story but his was special, just one child – Jesus says there is no prophet greater than John the Baptist. God answered his prayer, but for that prayer, the answer, only one condition, cannot be born too fast. Why do you want John the Baptist to be born so early? “I am the voice that cry and cry and cry in the wilderness” and then died? God had to postpone his coming until Jesus was near the time. Did not allow him to be born. So, the good thing is God kept Zacharias alive. Zacharias

looked around and said, “We are still old, we are still healthy”. Actually, they were about ninety years old by that time and then Mrs Zacharias, she was also wondering why. They said that Suzannah and her husband died at seventy, while they lived past them. You say why, because God must give a special blessing. They had to live for very long until just in time before Jesus came, then John came, must be the same time. So, they paid a price.

The first control centre is speech. The second control centre is you notice that in Acts 2:17 it says, “... *Your sons and your daughters shall prophesy* (that will cover speech), *Your young men shall see visions, Your old men shall dream dreams*” – visions and dreams. In Job 33, it says God speaks in dreams and that was a statement by Elihu, the fourth guy who came and there is also in Matthew 2, God spoke to Joseph in a dream to warn him where to bring Jesus to. In the Old Testament, dreams featured a lot. Daniel actually was a dreamer of dreams. Night visions equal dreams. They called that, visions of the night. Nebuchadnezzar had a dream, Pharaoh had a dream, Joseph had a dream.

The thing is that there are several Greek words for dreams. One is the word “*onar*”, that is a sleeping, normal dream. Then there is “*enupnion*” (which is the word here), like a day dream, like between sleep and wakefulness, day dream and then visions, of course you know, there are spiritual visions and there are three types of visions, inner vision, spiritual vision and open vision but whatever it is, it is telling you something. Visions. The second programming is what you see is what you get. First one is what you say is what you get. Otherwise, is what you see is what you receive. This programming is, I can bring the practical details and show how you relate to the body.

We spend about one-third of our lives sleeping, at least. That is a lot of time and in this end time, God is going to energise, so you need less and less sleep, you can do more things and then your four-hour sleep is like eight-hour sleep, but you need to know what happens. Now, these are sleep cycles that happen to every person, whether they are spiritual or not spiritual, these are the normal frequencies. There is the alpha phase that is relaxed, reflecting; beta that is alert, working; theta that is drowsy and ideal sleep. Delta phase sleep is without dreaming, when you are like awake and thinking. Then there is REM sleep. REM stands for rapid eye movement. Today they have discovered that rapid eye movement, your brain is actually processing images but since you see it with your eyes even in your sleep, the muscles are moving, like you see side effects.

Then next one, we have got quite a few. REM sleep is like that, when you are awake, your eyes are open. There is, like a normal person, like every part of your brain is active, like you are awake, except that you lose control of your body, that is amazing. Then you are awake with your eyes closed, it is slightly different. All this have to do with different types of REM sleep. They analyse different stages of REM, but the REM sleep is amazing, almost the same. So, they are all different; stage one, stage two, stage three, stage four.

It is just to see how many cycles, for instance, 14 to 21 pulsations per second, 7 to 14 pulsations, 4 to 7 pulsations, here is about 0.5 to 4 (delta). Instead of pulsations, nowadays they call it hertz. Hertz is one cycle per second. This is between 0.5 to 4 cycles per second. So, beta, alpha, theta, delta. There is a higher one called gamma, which is just fully, actively doing different things but the lowest is delta. These two are your sleep phase or *onar*, *enupnion*.

#### *Visions of the night*

Here is the interesting thing. The Bible calls “dreams” in the Old Testament “visions of the night”. The Bible is right because dreams and visions function in the same sense. So, if those of you wanting to learn open visions, you have got to learn how to see in the spiritual visions or inner visions, and you learn what dreaming is like. As you become more aware of your dreams, you begin to record your dreams and begin to understand the flow of dreams. There is a deep-sleep dream and then there is a relaxed, wakeful stage of dreams. You know how sometimes you have got day-dreams? Sometimes some of you in all-night prayer and you are between sleep and wakefulness, then you might nod off for a few moments, you have got an amazing dream, then come out, that is like a vision. So, God trains your vision to dream first. In the Old Testament sense, a dream and a vision are the same. In terms of technical occurrence, it is different but in terms of quality, it is the same.

If a dream is from God, you get as much of it as God is speaking to you. Of course, the Bible in Ecclesiastes did say that some dreams come from activity. So, you need to differentiate dreams from God, dreams that are reflections from your soul, and dreams that are just processing data, whichever. Again, this is beta (12 to 40 Hz). Notice some of them differ in the cycles a bit but generally the same? Gamma is the highest. Then you have alpha (8 to 12 Hz), theta (4 to 8 Hz) and delta (0 to 4 Hz).

Pascal's Triangle, for those of you who learn Math, is something that will keep coming up in binomial coefficients, which means when you do things like exponential curves or all those things, they will always come out. These are numbers that always come out and integration and calculus – these numbers always come. How they occur is very beautiful. It is like a beauty in itself. You know, when numbers occur in a certain frame, there is a beauty inside. Remember the equation for pi ( $\pi$ )? You could somehow pi into the equation, and it is an equation that keeps on adding altogether.

These are also your Fibonacci numbers. Fibonacci numbers are related to Pascal's equation. Fibonacci numbers are related to the seven Spirits of God? Leaving 1 for God, let us start with 2. 2 is peace. 3 relates to love, on the Fibonacci number, it relates to 4 on that side. Then you have peace, love, joy or glory, power, life, wisdom, mercy. The number for joy or glory is 5, relates to grace. Glory is the fullness of grace. Glory is the fullness of Christ in you. What is grace? God's richness at Christ's expense. So, when you understand the Mathematical number of each of the Spirits of God, you will understand how it works. I treat them all as frequencies.

On the Fibonacci numbers, 8 is power and you notice what 8 is? Resurrection. Every time God talks about power, it relates to resurrection. From Ephesians 1 prayer, all the way to Acts, the power of the resurrection of Christ. Romans 1, the gospel is the power of God for salvation and the gospel is no gospel if there is no resurrection. 1 Corinthians 15, it says without the resurrection, we are nothing. That is why 8 relates to healings and miracles.

I call them the frequencies. Now, the seven Spirits are "growth", anything to do with growth, Fibonacci numbers will come in. The numbers are the same here and in heaven. So, when you go to heaven, you count your fingers, there are ten fingers; one person plus one person; one angel plus one angel (two angels), does not mean suddenly three angels appear when you count. Numbers are the same.

That is why Einstein says an equation is for eternity. When they asked him to be the first President of Israel (because it is an honorary position, the President is an honorary position; it is the Prime Minister who carries all the power), he declined it. Imagine if he had accepted, First President of Israel, Albert Einstein – *wah!* He declined it because he said: "Politics is for a lifetime, but an equation is for eternity". That was his answer.

13 relates to life but I want to go to 21, which relates to wisdom (the number for wisdom is 7) –  $3 \times 7$ . Life, I will explain to you. 13 cannot exist by itself. Behind 13 is  $1 + 12$ . Life can only flow when it is in the order of 12, is actually not 13, is  $12 + 1$ , is the government of God on the earth. That is what life is. Without God's government, there is no life. I say there is another heavenly number!

These Fibonacci numbers are obtained by the curves in Pascal's Triangle. So, leaving 1 for God. 2 is peace. 4 is love. Joy is 8, that is why it connects, "glory" connects to "power". Can you see that? That is why the glory of God contains also the power of God because it touches 8 but you can have the glory. God does not demonstrate any healing power; He just shows His glory but potentially, it is there. So, there is peace, love, glory, and then you have power. 16 is two 8's together and this is the heavenly perspective. All power is the power of God together with the co-operation of man walking in resurrection power – two 8, double 8. Then you have life which is 32, 64 which is wisdom.

So, numbers speak a lot of things in themselves, but behind them, they relate to different things. Now, these are all numbers but what is a number? A number is just a frequency; different frequencies that affect everything. Today, humans have discovered certain frequencies.

#### *The science of resonance*

Now, we go to Schumann's Resonance. This is in Science. This is Prof W O Shumann, 1953, University of Munich and he discovered it because he treated the whole earth as a battery. If the whole earth is a battery, there are many frequencies running around but, in the end, it all comes down to the default frequency of the earth. He discovered that the earth has a pulse and the earth's pulse and frequency in general is 7.83 hertz, 7.83 cycles per second.

You know, today, we can have air pollution, we can have sound pollution, we can have electronic pollution. As we increase in this end time, that is why sometimes in the city you feel different from when you go out into a scenic place by the sea or in the forest, because when you are by the sea, when you measure the frequency of the oceans and the trees, you come to 7.83 Hz. As you come into the city, it is crowded by other frequencies. Today, we have got Wi-Fi and all those things.

Now, what are all these frequencies? This is the measurement of the frequency, hertz per second. Okay, this is to the power of 2 and so the visible light frequency is somewhere here – ultraviolet light. Then it goes lower or higher, wave length in metres and increases in frequency, it induces different things. As you go on one side, it goes to ultraviolet – ultraviolet X-rays and gamma rays. On the other side it is infrared. Then you have radio waves. Then you have all the radio / TV frequencies.

I have a book called *How Frequencies Affect Us*. Today, they will be in denial like cigarettes. If mankind has gone on for another one hundred to two hundred years, they will discover that all the frequencies have side effects on us. That is why Singaporeans, live in a city, although you call it a garden city, but even your garden is all artificially planted but you have got one section (Bukit Timah that side), which is natural forest. However, generally most of you live in the city. It is obvious that somehow it is going to affect you, so you need to acclimatise. It is just like food. If you live in a place like in Antarctica or in the Arctic Circle, can you imagine, the Eskimos have never eaten vegetables because they do not see vegetables, they only eat meat and they survive. Over the long run, it is going to have a genetic effect on you. You will definitely suffer a certain type of genetic sickness or disease that comes about. Everything affects us. Of course, the power of God can overcome all these things.

Looking at all these frequencies, there is so much you cannot see that is affecting you and I. Now, this Prof Schumann, he discovered it and he did one experiment. He built a bunker where he put a few students (young, healthy students), isolated from all frequencies. They had 0 frequency and he monitored them. Of course, they had air and all that still going in. After some time, they all became sick. Now, they were young, healthy fellows from his university. He found that we need a basic frequency to be healthy for everything.

Now, why does a dream happen so powerfully? When you are asleep, your body shuts down. Remember where sin nature is? In your body. So, it shuts down. Some part of you has become unconscious.

There are different ways in which you can adjust that frequency. One is in music, they call it a binaural effect when you put two frequencies on your left and right ear and it only can work for lower frequencies. Let us say one side is about 20 Hz, the other side is about 16 Hz, so

you are hearing two different frequencies, your brain will vibrate at 4 Hz, the difference between them. So, they tested it.

The other frequency, that I came across, is what you call *Music of the Atoms*. There is this scientific guy, it was Steve who is a scientist, I had a good time with him, he researched on frequencies. I said, “Hey, I have been doing this research for years”. So of course, we were discussing about it. Every atom has a frequency and so this guy took the difference between the atoms and frequency and put it into music. He might have, what I call, oxygen, calcium, potassium, and he played it in the music. Quite interesting music and all this music is just frequency.

In another place, they wanted to test whether the frequency is electro-magnetic that affects our brain or is it just sound waves. So, they somehow put a tube and it was just the sound coming near a person’s ear, they found it has no effect. It was not just sound waves; it was electro-magnetic waves when the actual vibration of the, you know, electro-magnetic wave is just like light. It goes right through you and it is just a different frequency that goes through you and it affects your brain as a side effect. It is like a tuning fork. When I hit one tuning fork and another tuning fork as the same, one will vibrate. So, it seems like there is a frequency that is there. When you meditate on the Word, the Word has God’s frequency and you are tuning yourself to that frequency. Behind everything, there is a frequency that is operating.

In the early days of the NASA programme, when they sent astronauts, you can read about the Schumann Resonance, when the astronauts went into space, you know, astronauts, they measure everything. They found that there were so many other frequencies coming in. Gamma rays and all that. What they put was, in the end they put a Schumann Resonator inside all the space shuttles. This is for two things, to “mock-up” the other frequencies and perhaps to resonate the body at a healthier frequency (7.83 Hz) but we need the other frequencies also for different things.

When you do more research on this area, you find that your brain does different things, like, to a certain extent, people who hear classical music, when you play, you find that you can develop a more Mathematical ability. So, you wonder if you could expose your children to music that it has that effect and I had that knowledge when we had our children. So, from

young, I exposed them to classical music. Both are now very intelligent. It has some benefit that helps the brain cells to grow and function and all that.

Everything around you that you see, the shapes and everything, comes from frequencies. Natural shapes I mean. When you see the sand dunes, they are like the air moving on a certain frequency (heat wave), then it creates. When you drop a stone into a pond, it has a frequency. Imagine if you drop a stone into the pond, and as the stone begins to get, you know, the shape, and suddenly you freeze it, you know what will happen? You have the shape of the frequency and remember how they put sand above the boom box and then the boom box plays, and the sand takes a certain shape? The shape is caused by frequency.

All life is a frequency. The difference between heaven and here is frequency. There is a heavenly frequency and there is a body frequency and the second major default. First, is speech. The second major default is a frequency of your internal system and you can tune from the eyes. When you visualise, it is a frequency. “*Yetser*” is a frequency, it is default mode. The Hebrew word “*yetser*” (your “imagination”). Your imagination works best when it is between, is close to the delta phase, between the alpha and theta phase before it falls to the delta. Delta is when you are sound asleep.

Even in the non-Christian world, you know, how busy lives we live today. In the non-Christian world, people who are super-busy and type A personality, when they take time out to just meditate, they can cope with their stress better because your body is under stress of different frequencies. You need to return back to that frequency and the Bible tunes you, everything tunes you to that. Once you set it, you know, every one of us has thought patterns. You know what is producing your thought patterns? Your frequency.

### *Frequencies of the mind*

The more you are renewed, remember renewal of the mind, your mind functions at a certain frequency. The spiritually minded has got a certain frequency. The carnally minded has got a different frequency. The more you renew your mind, the more the frequency changes to the best frequency. In the end, this one is only introduction. In the end, every one of you has a unique frequency, within the range of unique frequency that is uniquely yours. So, you will have to vibrate at the frequency that is according to your nature, your nurture, the spiritual nature and God’s anointing on your life. Once you operate at the optimum area and setting,

everything is in control. Peace comes. Peace is harmony to God, that is there and that is why, surprisingly, sometimes people who are very hard to reach, especially those with problems, drug addicts and all those things, they can slowly change with time, but it takes time. You know why, it takes time for the frequency to sink into you.

It is just like tuning a guitar. When you tune a guitar, you need an outside frequency. When the guitar is new or when you just put the strings into the guitar, the strings are all out of tune. We were all out of tune, we were like a guitar that needs tuning. So, to tune, sometimes you see how people tune, they can tune fast or tune slow and sometimes if they want to be more exact, they use a tuner to look at it. One of the things that they discovered about frequency is there is a debate out there on the internet – between 432 to 440 Hz. They found that 432 Hz for A produces a nicer pattern, but more harmonious and then when they tested the old flute and instruments, they found that their original A, the A that they played in the Bible, in the ancient times was 432 Hz. Today's A is 440 Hz. It started from one German who set it at 440 Hz. That is why next time in all our musical instruments, we will tune them to 432 Hz. So, everything is tuned from A, then B, C, D. All these are frequencies.

Frequencies affect your dream life. Frequency is your dream life. Your brain changes frequencies and then there is a default frequency in your body. Meditation and all this produce the default frequency.

Without God, it takes years for humans using the human methods, but in God and when you understand some of these principles, it is much quicker. Today's technology applies to it through sounds, through music, and all that can help you tune yourself. So, perhaps not all of us have the same type of life. Like I would have grown without music because my parents were poor, so never had the chance to learn the piano, but only when I went to the Seminary. Most of us enjoy listening to music but here is the thing: You can tell a man by the books he reads. You can tell the man by the music he hears. Why do you like certain music? It is your nature. As your nature changes, you like different types of music. As you mature spiritually, you like spiritual music. As a bio feedback, it is both you are being tuned and you liking those things, but you can change. This is your default mode. So, I have given you two big secrets to tune your body.

*Everything has a frequency*

The food you eat, every food has a frequency. If you are a meat eater, it does affect you to a certain extent. You say “But, but, but... isn’t the spirit over everything”? Yes, it is but you need to know how it affects you. Too much food, to the full, affects your frequency. If you are a solid meat eater, your frequency is also different. Today, if you want to make your dog very fierce, feed it raw meat with blood and then once in a while, kill a live chicken and let it eat. Your dog will become fierce. It changes, both psychologically and chemically.

In the same way, everything has a fabric. It is too complex a world. All you need to do is, with whatever help you can, to tune your frequency to it. Fasting does change your frequency. As you begin to allow your inner frequency to come out, but everything in balance, please. Do not go to the extreme. No short cuts. The best is go back to the Word, the Bible.

Does God give us a frequency? Yes. When the Holy Spirit fills you, speaking to one another in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, Ephesians 5:18-19. Aren’t psalms and hymns and spiritual songs frequencies, music? When you read the Word, Colossians 3:16, let the word of Christ dwell richly in you and then same effect, speaking to one another in psalms, hymns and spiritual songs. *Hey*, look, same effect, the frequency of worship, except with the Spirit, you have got one more, Ephesians 5:18-19, making melody in your heart.

# Chapter 11...

## Holiness of Mind

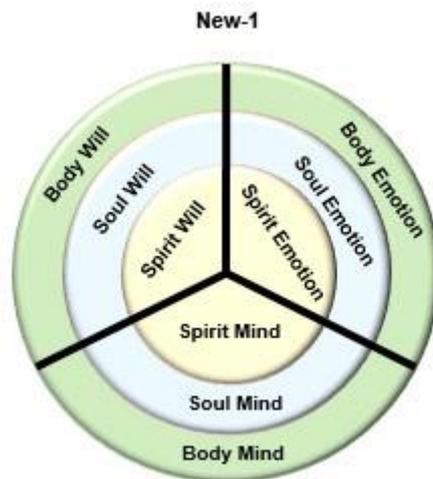


Diagram 1

Let us look at diagram 1 again. When we talk about *Spirit*, *Soul* and *Body*, we talk about *Spirit Will*, *Soul Will* and *Body Will*, and the alignment in it. What we are heading for is what Adam and Eve were like in their spirit, soul and body. They had only one set of spirit, soul and body, and that was in harmony in their spirit, soul and body. Their body worked exactly to their spirit, and their soul was flowing accordingly.

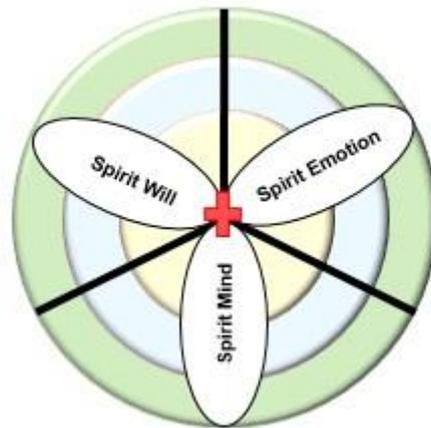


Diagram 2

God was in the centre and that is the harmony that they had. This is the harmony that we are to go back to in Christ Jesus, with Christ in the centre. That can be achieved. Many of us look at this diagram and we say, okay, perhaps we can reach there in heaven. That is not good enough. If you have to reach there in heaven, that means you are not going to see the Rapture. If you want to see the Rapture, you must reach this stage before heaven, while on earth. That

means that generally the second generation can see that but if the first generation gets to live and enter into this day, this energy should energise you all the way to the Rapture. If you can catch hold of this principle and let it renew your spirit, soul and body, because it is based on this, that the natural forces cannot affect you anymore.

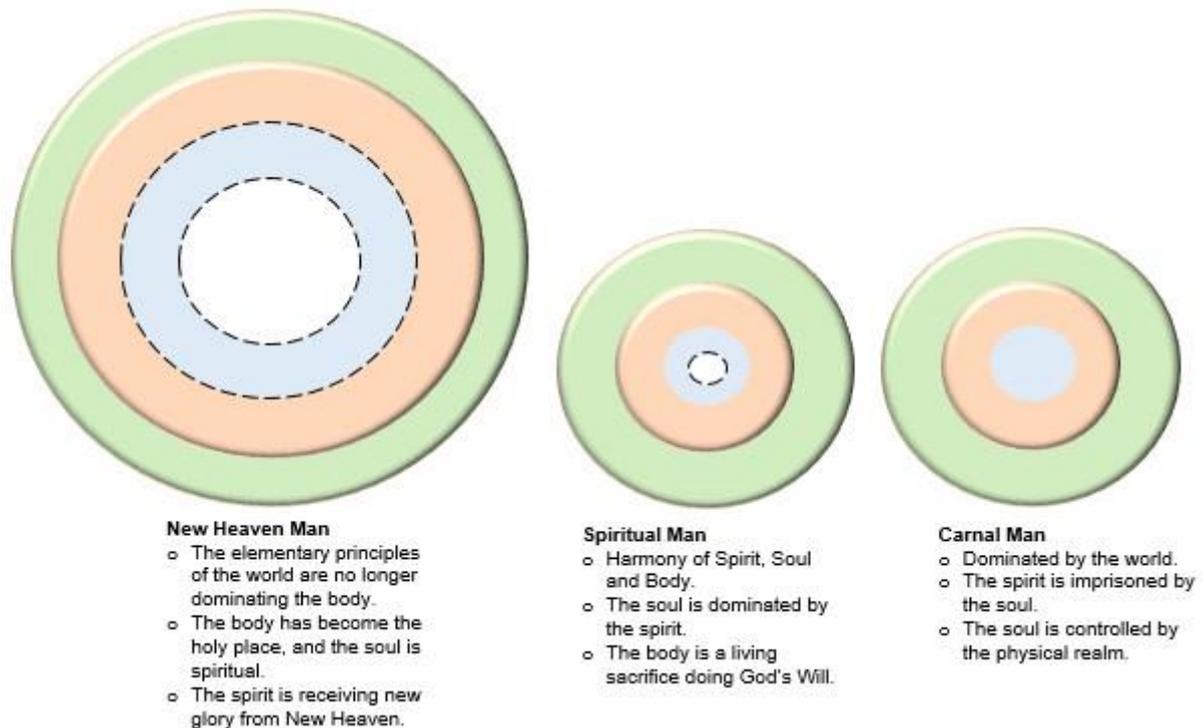


Diagram 3

The *Carnal Man* – as the spirit is enclosed, this is the *Spirit, Soul* and *Body* and the spirit is imprisoned, the spirit is still there, giving and sustaining life to the body but very weak. It is encrusted, it cannot grow. It is just like, you know, if you are a gardener or a horticulturalist, how big a plant can grow depends on how much space you give the plant. That is how the Japanese have this bonsai, because they limit the ability of a big, huge giant tree and those bonsai they grow are quite beautiful but the bonsai, not only do they have to trim the top of the branches, they also have to trim the roots. That is how they keep the bonsai plant small and because a tree is a tree is a tree, some of those trees could grow to be gigantic, their roots could grow huge, searching for nutrition. However, in a bonsai, they limit it. Generally, the plant will die after some time so what they do, they trim the branches. Then once in a while, not that often, otherwise it will die, they have to trim the roots. Can you imagine trimming the roots so that the roots have got just enough to sustain that little plant, but not too much so that it will break the pot? Even if we do not do bonsai planting, some of us have known that if you put your plants into a pot, it already limits its growth. You can only grow as much as the pot allows.

In the same way, the spirit man, when encrusted, cannot grow much. It is like there is not much room to grow. A lot of people's spirits are imprisoned, and they are not conscious even of their spirit man, they are only conscious of their soul and their body.

There is so much into this philosophy. Darwin's theory tells you that you practically do not have a *Spirit* too. Darwin's theory equates you with an ape and to them, the soul is nothing more than the machine of your brain. All your emotions, whatever will and volition, they treat you as no different from the animal. They do not even believe in the animal's soul. They just say that the animal is just an organic computer running around. In Darwinian theory, we are only the physical body. That is all! Then in some philosophies, they recognise that there is a soul, but they cannot see the spirit. They do not understand that there is an existence of the spirit because you cannot describe what you never experience and only when you have experienced that reality, you know there is something beyond you.

In the world where everybody is blind, nobody knows colours exist. After somebody with eyes says there is such a thing as colours, they say what is colour. They would not know because none of them has experienced it. It exists but they do not know that it exists.

In the same way when nobody experiences spiritual things or angels or spiritual encounters, they do not realise that there is an existence there and so with some human philosophies, especially the Greek philosophies. Greek philosophies are divided into two parts: one is Aristotelian and the other is Platonic. Plato more or less believes in the spirit, soul and body but after Aristotle, it became more of the soul and body. They expanded and put part of the spiritual qualities into the soul. From thus forward, even some of the Greek philosophies that the world has come to know of, it is only the soul and body – that there is a soul somewhere; a mind, a soul or something that is out there. They do not recognise the existence of a spirit.

However, 1 Thessalonians 5:23 says that Paul (in his prayer for the Thessalonians) prays that God will preserve their spirit, soul and body. The Bible settles it. The Bible says we are tripartite. We have spirit, soul and body and our spirit is the real us, so you can imagine being crowded out, the real us becomes crowded out by the false physical world and that is what the carnal man is like.

As we become spiritual men and women, then our spirits have grown, and the avenue between the spirit and the soul, there is some relationship, has some contact as man. In that aspect, it becomes harmony of spirit, soul and body. The soul is dominated by the spirit and then the body becomes a living sacrifice to God. This is optimum, and this is good. *The Spiritual Man book I* will bring you there.

In this *The Spiritual Man book II*, it brings you to the next diagram. This is where our goal is that when your physical body disappears and becomes the *Holy Place*. How do you come about, is to remember the three parts of the Tabernacle of Moses? The three parts of the Temple of Solomon that there is the Outer Court, the Holy Place and the Most Holy Place.

### *Behold the Glory*

In a sense, we are the temple of the Holy Spirit. So, our spirit man is the *Holy of Holies*. Then there is the *New Glory of Jerusalem*. This whole thing is your spirit man. Your spirit man is the *Holy of Holies* (the Most Holy Place). Your soul is the *Holy Place*. Your body is the *Outer Court*. So, you have spirit, soul and body. However, what happens in this revival is that your soul has to become like your spirit because when Jesus died on the cross, symbolically He opened the veil between the Most Holy Place and the Holy Place. It is like the separation between the two has disappeared. He opened the veil. 2 Corinthians 3 talks about the veil being opened. It talks about how now we can behold the glory of God.

Long ago, even if you are in the Holy Place, you cannot see the glory of God. Only once a year, on the tenth day of the seventh month which is the Yom Kippur, the Day of Atonement, the High Priest can go into the Most Holy Place. Once Jesus opened it, it is 24 hours a day, 7 days a week. Jesus opened between the spirit and the soul and the purpose is so that the spirit can dominate the soul until the soul becomes spiritualised.

Now, inside us is the *New Glory of Jerusalem*, in our spirit man and then in our soul is the spiritualised soul and our body becomes like an instrument of the Lord, becomes the *Holy Place*. The *Outer Court* is everything else around us. The world becomes the *Outer Court*. So, this is the advancement that we want to achieve.

When you study the word “holiness” in the Bible and we have a series on *Holiness* where we talk about the concept of holiness from Leviticus 27, especially where God says that the tithes

is holy unto Him. Once a year, they will have to say they have to remove their tithes from their house. They use even the word “remove” because it does not belong to the house, it belongs to the house of God, so they have to take it away and put it into the house of God. They are not supposed to hold it back and I have explained in the series on *Holiness*. I have described that holiness is actually ownership by God. When God owns us, that is how we become holy. It explains the meaning of how the tithe is holy, God says the tithe is holy because it belongs to God and holiness is higher than righteousness. You see, when something belongs to you, it is yours but when something belongs to God, He puts it at a higher level. You can be righteous but not holy. To be holy, you must first be righteous, so one includes the other.

For example, the High Priest had to be sanctified to be the High Priest, seven days he had to consecrate himself because God said, “You now belong to Me”. You belong to God. Even when Aaron was being consecrated and two of his sons died (in Leviticus), he was told, “*You cannot cry, you cannot conduct a funeral service now, you cannot attend the funeral service because you are in the middle of seven days. If you do, you will defile the anointing oil and you will die.*” You say, “Wah, sounds so cruel”. You see, that was not a commandment for normal people. Moses said, “*Let the other family members mourn for your two sons, but you cannot. You cannot tear your clothes, you cannot mourn. Because in the presence of God is fullness of joy. And you have to now represent God.*” That was not something that God was going to grieve about. There are some things God grieves about, but this is an incident that is insulting God. God did not grieve about that, God just judged, and his two sons died. That standard was above human. It is alright to mourn, it is alright to cry but now that he belonged to God, He said, “*Aaron, you cannot do that. And you are in the middle of your consecration period*”. That story is found in Leviticus when he began his first priesthood.

### *The concept of holiness*

That is the concept of holiness that is there. We belong to God. I emphasised it in the teaching on *Holiness* because that concept is not much taught, that is why I taught on that but the other old concept of holiness being clean, being righteous, it is still there. Most people’s understanding is holiness is being clean, be holy before God.

In the Old Testament, it does bring that about. Let us look at Exodus 26:33. There are apparently different degrees of holiness because it says: “*And you shall hang the veil from*

*the clasps. Then you shall bring the ark of the Testimony in there, behind the veil. The veil shall be a divider for you between the holy place and the Most Holy*". To differentiate the holy place and the Most Holy. So, there are degrees of holiness and when they made the garments for Aaron to wear (the priestly garments), Exodus 28:2 says, "*And you shall make holy garments for Aaron your brother, for glory and for beauty*". Now, that is bringing something out here.

You all know the expression *the beauty of holiness*. It is found about three times in the Bible, *the beauty of holiness*. David sang about it, Psalms talks about it – they worshipped the Lord in the beauty of holiness. *The beauty of holiness* tells us that holiness is not just cleanliness, holiness is not just ownership. There is another quality. There are three qualities of holiness – there is what I call a consecration and a cleanliness, like freedom from sin (that is why righteousness is included); there is a part where it is ownership by God; there is a part where it becomes beautiful.

For example, if you are sitting on a chair. It is a very practical chair, it is a particular style of chair. Is the chair beautiful? Maybe. You would consider it to be useful and maybe even reasonably nice-looking. However, it is just a chair. To be beautiful is another level, a higher level.

It says that when Aaron wears all these holy garments is so that in the sight of the Lord, he is beautiful. Now, remember this, you know how in the world, we live in quite an unfair fallen world, because in this world, if you are reasonably good-looking, sub-consciously society favours you, although just good-looking is not good enough to bring you a good job or salary, that kind of thing, but they have tested it out in society. For example, an actor dressed up as an ugly-looking woman and then pretended she was struggling to carry things, nobody helped her. Maybe a nice, kind heart might help the person, but generally no but when she was dressed up as a more decent, beautiful, lovely-looking girl and she was struggling, straightaway people came and helped her. How unfair is this world!

Thank God, loveliness and beauty are not based on that from God's perspective. You can be as ugly as a toad because of your genes or because of accident or whatever, but when you love God and you are consecrated to God, God says this is the most beautiful person on the

earth. So, that gives hope for everyone. Anyway, I just want to emphasise the fact that holiness is beautiful. It is beautiful not just to God, but also to the angels.

Each time in the morning when you get up, do not just make yourself naturally beautiful or good-looking, remember, how do you look in the spirit. You might look like a mess because you do everything in the natural but never spend time in prayer, never consecrate your life to God but then it is an opposite world. In the natural world, some people because of their genes, they might be, you know, because they are more well-proportioned, they might look better than others, but they might be horrible sinners and the ugliest of hearts and minds.

*All forms flow from the spirit*

One day, when everything is perfected, what you are is what you are. In other words, all shapes and forms flow from your spirit. There will be no more of this disharmony. Who you are in the spirit will shine out who you are in your natural body. That will come about and that is the process that God is bringing forth. So, I emphasise that there is a quality that brings forth beauty.

There is one more verse that I want to point to. When the Lord tells them about camping and doing different things in the environment, the Lord makes an interesting requirement here: Exodus 31:15. If you were to study all the verses on holiness, some of these verses have a sense of meaning that we need to look at. Exodus 31:15 says, “*Work shall be done for six days, but the seventh is the Sabbath of rest, holy to the LORD...*”. Now, the Sabbath day is a holy day, not just a rest day but a holy day and we know the other teaching, that Sabbath represents Jesus Christ. Jesus becomes the Sabbath personified, the Sabbath which is a chronological time has become a person. The reason God sanctified the Sabbath is that one day we will go back to the place when man will no more work, but man will flow in the works of God and man will enter the place of Hebrews 4:10, we will cease from our own works. It is no longer we but Christ who lives in us. What is born of the flesh is flesh, what is born of the Spirit is spirit and what is done in the flesh is flesh and it does not please God.

In 1 Corinthians 3 when you live your life and you build on wood, hay and stubble, all those burn away. It is better not to do anything than to do something that God does not want you to do. It is better to wait on the Lord and do nothing until God tells you to do something than in your own strength try to do something. It is not acceptable to God.

There is this guy called Howard Pittman. Howard Pittman was quite a reasonably good Christian. He did a lot of good works and charity work. He died and went to a section of heaven and Jesus met him. Then he thought he was going to get all his reward and everything and then in a moment of time as God spoke to him, God showed him that everything that he did was from his own flesh, even Christian things and in a split second, all his works were burnt up. He was very frightened. Then God gave him a second chance to go back to the earth and this time to do what the Lord wants him to do. So, he came back. I think he sold all he had, lived in a caravan and went and preached the gospel for the rest of his life. I am not sure whether he is still alive or not, but that is what he wrote in a few books, about his encounters in the spirit.

Can you imagine, everything that you do in Christian life can be burned away because it was not done in a position of rest, it was done in a position of flesh. What is born of the flesh cannot please God, only what is born of the Spirit. We must make sure, that is why this teaching is important, we must make sure that it comes from our spirit, not from our soul, not from our desire; it must come from our spirit. Only as it comes from our spirit is it worth something? It has to be. Even Jesus emphasised in John 15:5, He says, *“I am the vine, you are the branches. He who abides in Me, and I in him, bears much fruit; for without Me you can do nothing”*. He only asks us to do one thing: Abide in Him, let His words abide in you, and you will bear much fruit. You see, the bearing fruit is based on abiding in Him, waiting on Him.

However, when God does tell you to do something, run with the vision. It is important to fulfill what God asks you to do and then faith needs to rise and walk. That is what God asks us to do. Sometimes we think, well, if God tells you to do something in the spirit, it will be easy. Ask Paul and see. Read 2 Corinthians 11. He did everything that he did because the Lord told him to. Look at how much he suffered, the energy he had to get from the Spirit.

### *Obeying God*

In the natural, it is impossible. So, sometimes when God tells you to do something and obey Him, in the natural, it looks impossible. In the natural, you would not do it, but because He makes you to do it, you do it and you take one step at a time, He opens the rest of the way. When you need to cross the Red Sea, He will part the Red Sea for you. Where there is an impossible situation, He will make the impossible, possible. Where there are not enough

finances, He will provide the finances, when God asks you to do it, but you must be able to go all the way right to the Red Sea. Sometimes you might be at the Jordan River where you must put your foot in first as a symbol of faith.

The Jordan River only parted when the priests stepped in and they might think, okay the Jordan River, what is that compared to the Red Sea. In the Red Sea, Moses just lifted up his rod, and throughout the whole night the wind blew, and the path was cleared for them. What is going to happen now that it is under Joshua? They might expect the same thing, that somebody raises his hand, or somebody raises a rod or lifts up the Ark of the Covenant, and then waits and blows the trumpet until the way is cleared. It is not going to happen that way.

In Joshua's time, the priests saw the river and the Bible tells us at that time the river was at full level. It was raining upstream and the river was at its strongest. Yet the priests, you know, you pray that you be the front priest. Some of you pray, "Oh, let me be the back priest holding the Ark". Be the second one, if anything happens, you know, the first guy drowns first. I am going to ask that God might put you to be the front priest, the one to put your foot in first.

Then, Joshua gave the command "Go", because God did not mark anyone to go into the water first. The priest, remember, the priest belongs to God, the priest is holy. If the priest drowns, it is like something God has lost, so the priest consecrates himself and belongs to God. That is why it is good to belong to God, so if the devil touches you, you say, "Eh, this is God's property". If sickness comes, you say, "Eh, this is God's property". You see, you belong to God, the blessing, the side effect of belonging to God, and if the devil tries to steal anything, you say, "Eh, wait a minute, it is not my property, this is God's property". Very dangerous. God protects His property. When the first guy put his foot in, immediately the Jordan River parted, and he walked right through because the holiness of the Lord was there, and it takes faith when we do what God asks us to do. Besides the commandments on priestly garments, there are other "strange" commandments which God gave to the Israelites when He talked to them about holiness.

#### *Crucified with Christ*

In Galatians 2:20 it says, "*I have been crucified with Christ; it is no longer I who live, but Christ lives in me; and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by faith in the Son of God,*

*who loved me and gave Himself for me*". That is God's commandment and God releases that to Paul. Paul says he is alive, yet it is not him, but it is the Spirit of Christ in him and also it says in 1 Corinthians 15:10, "*But by the grace of God I am what I am, and His grace toward me was not in vain; but I labored more abundantly than they all, yet not I, but the grace of God which was with me*". That is the interesting thing the Lord has for His people in terms of holiness but in terms of all the holiness that the Lord requires in the Old Testament, one of the things that we notice about the holiness is that the holiness is an outward holiness. Remember all the animals and all those, everything was outward. They had to express it in the Old Testament outwardly.

#### *Another level of holiness*

In order to become the heavenly man where heaven lives in you, God requires another level of holiness that far surpasses the Old Testament and that you find when Jesus began His preaching, in the gospel of Matthew. When He preached the Sermon on the Mount, one of the first things Jesus said in His preaching (Matthew 5:21-22) was, "*You have heard that it was said to those of old, 'You shall not murder, and whoever murders will be in danger of the judgment.' But I say to you that whoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgment. And whoever says to his brother, 'Raca!' shall be in danger of the council. But whoever says, 'You fool!' shall be in danger of hell fire*". Then He said in verses 27-2, "*You have heard that it was said to those of old, 'You shall not commit adultery.' But I say to you that whoever looks at a woman to lust for her has already committed adultery with her in his heart. If your right eye causes you to sin, pluck it out and cast it from you...*". So. Jesus brings forth a higher standard and that is because your soul has to become the *Most Holy Place*. Your soul (which contains your mind, your will and your emotions) has now to become the *Most Holy Place*.

Holiness in the physical dimension was not good enough. It was symbolic in the Old Testament. Holiness now has to come to the level of your soul. Your soul has to become the *Most Holy Place*, not just the *Holy Place*, it is now the *Most Holy Place*. It has been raised one level higher. Remember, your spirit becomes heavenly [*New Glory of Jerusalem*], your soul becomes the *Most Holy Place*, your body becomes the *Holy Place*. Everything pushes upwards and this new level of holiness, I call that, holiness of the mind. That is the part that I want to touch on, holiness of the mind and whether it is achievable in this life. Although it covers the will and the emotions, but the main part I want to emphasise is holiness of the

mind. Holiness of the mind, if you have the same concept, where the mind belongs to God, because holiness is ownership by God; and the mind has to be clean of course, because holiness is cleanliness, which is part of it. The mind also has to be beautiful but not like the movie *The Beautiful Mind*. It only talks about the clever mind / the genius mind in a not so good-looking person; so, ugly body, beautiful mind but that is not what the concept is talking about. It is holiness of the mind, the beauty of the mind is a mind that contains God's Word, a mind that is directly a place where God puts His thoughts in.

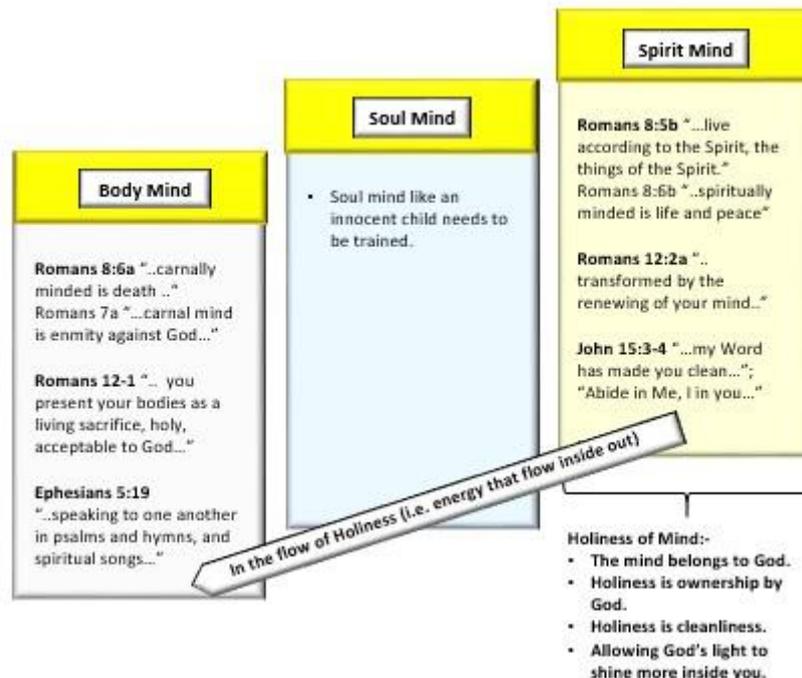


Diagram 4

Now, when I put holiness of the mind, I write these words, I know what some of you are thinking – the mind remains very clean, the mind thinks no bad thoughts, all these things but if you have lived long in this life, you realise that you cannot achieve that by your own strength. You cannot achieve that by your own strength. The only way is for something to keep flowing out from your mind, like for example, water. When you take water from a tap and pour it into a glass, as long as the water is flowing (you can travel anywhere in the world, we have been to many places in our altar-building), as long as the water is flowing, it always will be clean. Wherever the water is not flowing, mud gathers, because no matter how much debris is inside and leaves and all that fall inside, the fresh water always washes it out.

### *The flow of holiness*

The secret of a holy mind is in the flow of holiness. It is not just holiness of the mind, but it is the flow of holiness. Holiness becomes like a river. It is not something static. The only way to

keep your mind clear is some energy that flows from the inside out. Darkness cannot exist when light comes. When light comes, darkness disappears. When you switch off all the lights in a room and someone speaks, you can hear their voice, but there is darkness obviously, so you cannot see them. A mind that is trying to be holy is like that. No matter how you try, dark thoughts will still come. No matter how hard you try. This is the type of mind that most Christians have unfortunately. Jesus, the cross shines in them but they do not have enough light to drive out all the darkness. So, they need to find a way to drive out all the darkness. Is this anything that you do? No, it is something that the Lord does. The same way, holiness of mind is allowing God's light to shine more inside you, if you can learn the way to let God's light shine in you.

In Romans 12:1-2 we see that it says, "*I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that you present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable to God, which is your reasonable service. And do not be conformed to this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind...*". You see, the word "renewing" is "*anakainosis*" in Greek. It comes from two Greek words: "*ana*" (which means "again") and "*kainosis*" (from "*kainos*" which means to be made new). It means to be made new again, again, again, again, again – again to be made new. So, "*anakainosis*" is actually a participle. It is talking about the process of the mind being made new.

Now, the question of the mind being made new, that of the *Spirit Mind*, that of the *Soul Mind*, that of the *Body Mind*. Remember how we identified the *Body Mind* as the source, and the *Soul Mind* is just like an innocent little child who needs to be trained? When it says the mind is to be renewed, which part is the new mind here? The *Spirit Mind* because your *Soul Mind*, you have used it before; your *Body Mind*, you are aware, but it is the *Spirit Mind* that is new. So, when you say something is renewed or new again, the exact translation, you see, when they use the word "renew", the English expression (for some funny reason) is like making something old new. That is our English expression and then it hits us with our English words but in Greek, it means "new again". There is a slight difference – "new again" and "again" and "new again", that means the new mind is dominating the *Soul Mind* and bringing its newness into the *Soul Mind*.

### *Get absorbed by the new*

Now, what happens to a plant when you plant a seed? What happens to the seed? Jesus says unless a seed falls to the ground and dies, it cannot live, correct? Now, what grows is also the old because if you look at the seed very carefully, especially you grow your bean sprout (is the easiest), that seed becomes actually the two things that comes out first (the two leafy things) and then slowly the leaves come out from there and then that thing falls away. So, that thing is still important, it is part of the growth process, it nourishes the whole plant. What happens is that the old disappears into the new. The old gets absorbed by the new. You can use all this vocabulary, but you cannot use the word “replace”. It disappears into the new, it gets absorbed into the new, it is still there in the new, but it is no longer itself.

When a caterpillar becomes a butterfly, is the old caterpillar still there? You strip away the wings, doesn't it look like a caterpillar? Of course, you do not do that, it is cruelty to the insect. You know, if you cut a butterfly, take away its two wings, strip away all its legs, it does look like a skinny little caterpillar, but different because the caterpillar dies away differently. There is something that disappears (the general shell of the caterpillar), but the old caterpillar is inside the butterfly. It disappears into the new. It is still there but it has changed completely, “transformed”, you could say. If that being the case, your *Spirit Mind* has always been your *Spirit Mind*, except it is enlarged. Your *Spirit Mind* has been enlarged into something new but then you need to add Romans 8.

### *Teaching promotes growth*

I enjoy teaching, I also enjoy evangelistic meetings. In evangelistic meetings, you can teach simple messages, and then you just do signs and wonders. That is also quite enjoyable, but teaching is important because teaching trains us. In teaching, we explain how things are done. Everything that is done in evangelistic meetings replaces all the understanding that accumulates in teaching and it is just like if you keep giving a person fish, the person will depend on you all the time for fish. You teach a person to fish and then when the person knows how to fish, he is okay by himself. The same goes with training. Once we understand how to operate the power of God by ourselves, we are fine. That is why the role of a teacher in the church is above the pastor and the evangelist. First, apostles; second, prophets (those two are of the same order as in Ephesians 4); third, teachers – 1 Corinthians 12:28. Whereas in Ephesians 4:11, the order is to the world and third in line is evangelists, then pastors, teachers because the world does not need teaching yet, the world just needs saving but once

the world comes into the church, teaching is very important. Teaching makes you who you are. Teaching helps, you to grow and preaching helps you to come and enter in but teaching helps you to grow.

In Romans 8, it says here in verses 4-6, *“that the righteous requirement of the law might be fulfilled in us who do not walk according to the flesh but according to the Spirit. For those who live according to the flesh set their minds on the things of the flesh, but those who live according to the Spirit, the things of the Spirit. (They set their minds on the things of the Spirit). For to be carnally minded is death, but to be spiritually minded is life and peace”*. So, it gives you two choices.

Definitely God wants holiness of the mind. You see, the next step after Romans 7 is Romans 8, and then it ends with Romans 12 where you have got the new mind. The new mind is, every day is like your new mind is growing. So, what happens is, in Romans 12, your new mind is growing more and more. It starts from Romans 8. It emphasises that we must have a *Spirit Mind*, a *Spirit Mind* which is a holy mind and that is what many people do not emphasise when they teach on the book of Romans. They do not understand that once you move into Romans 8, holiness of the mind is required. It is a new dimension of holiness of the mind and a mind that sets itself on spiritual things and it will produce *Zoe* life and peace. Romans 8:7, *“Because the carnal mind is enmity against God; for it is not subject to the law of God, nor indeed can be”*. Now, here is my question: Where is the carnal mind? Body and soul. Somewhere in the body and the soul. Of body alone? Includes the soul. All right, body and soul.

#### *Carnal minds cannot be renewed*

It says the carnal mind is enmity against God; it neither can be subject to God nor will it ever be. Which means that you can spend one hundred years with it, you still cannot change it. The Bible says something is impossible, let us take it that it is impossible. It is just like sometimes old pots and pans, especially when they use the old type of wood-burning and all that. Some old pots and pans are so black, you cannot polish anymore. The more you wash, also cannot clean them completely and you might have to use steel wool. Actually, it is not washing, it is cutting into the steel. You need steel wool, you put all kinds of things on them, you might need acid, but it might eat up the whole metal too. There is no way you can clean it anymore. It says the carnal mind cannot be renewed. That is what it says. It is enmity against

God. It is not acceptable to God. It more or less says it cannot be renewed. *It is enmity against God; for it is not subject to the law of God, nor indeed can be.* You see, impossible. It is like God says, “Give it up”. Do not try to train it.

It is just like somebody trying to train a wild tiger to be his pet cat. *Oh*, yes, pussy cat, until one-day pussy cat is the only one left. It becomes wild, that is it because its nature is wild, it is not meant for a house pet. You all do strange things to your house pets. Some of you keep dogs or cats. I know some people who keep cats in Singapore because they do not have ground and all that, poor cats, they not only got sterilised, some of the cats even got their claws removed, so that the cats grew up, “*Oh*, what happened to my claws?”.

Long ago, in my first trip to Singapore, where I met some people with cats, I said, “*Eh*, your cat’s claws feel so different”. They were different. The cat had an operation unwillingly of course and it had all its sharp claws removed. It is like having your finger nails removed in an operation. You know, how cats like to scratch things? So, the cats might go, “What happened to my claws”? Definitely that cat cannot catch mice any more. All it can do is, sort of slap the mouse to death. Without the claws, I do not know how that cat is going to catch a mouse. Poor cat.

No matter what you do to the carnal mind, remove its claws and all its tentacles, Romans 8:7 says it cannot be subject to God. It is only to be removed. If your carnal mind is your *Soul Mind* being in bondage to your *Body Mind*, then your new mind is the mind of your spirit flowing outwards. So, renewal of the mind... and here is the thing: Renewal of the mind is not the *Soul Mind* being renewed, it is not the *Body Mind*] being renewed, it is actually the *Spirit Mind* flowing into the *Body Mind*. Didn’t the Bible say it is impossible? It cannot be subject to God.

#### *The new mind*

Since the *Soul Mind* and the *Body Mind* are in cohorts together and this is the new mind, the *Spirit Mind*. This is the new mind. When you say – set your mind on the things of the Spirit – so this is your *Spirit Mind*, your *Spirit Mind* is setting on the things of the Spirit and it is true because only Spirit can contact spirit. So only Spirit can set to the spirit. The soul cannot set to the Spirit because the soul operates in a different frequency and there are things that will turn on frequency. To actualise it, think about it as frequency.

Let us say this frequency is about 31 Hz, to 100 Hz, to 200+ Hz, beyond measurement. That is in the body dimension. Remember all the frequencies that I talked about? There are real frequencies, they are cycles per second, whether they be electromagnetic frequencies or whatever. The low frequency is the delta frequency which is 0 to 4 Hz is your deep sleep phase. Then you have the theta frequency which is about 4 to 8 Hz. Do not blame me for these words, these words were given by the scientists, delta, theta, alpha, beta, gamma. *Delta* is your sleep phase. *Theta* is your drowsy phase. Then you have the *alpha*, that is roughly 8 to 12 Hz. Then you have the other frequency 12 to 40 Hz, this is *beta*. Then there is *gamma*, which is 40 Hz onwards. Some people have reached *gamma*, way beyond measurement.

Alpha onwards is when you are awake. Different wakefulness. The funny thing is this state can be measured, if I put the EEG monitor on you. This activity of the mind can be measured. The reason why most visions happen between sleep and wakefulness is because when they are awake, they can go into the theta phase or the delta phase. I am glad that I have got these words, now I can describe as frequencies and they have tested them. It is not just sound frequencies. It is actually the electromagnetic frequencies that your brain, it has to do with your hyper-chemiflux and its vibrations and sometimes it moves to different parts, depending on the different phase. Why I call this 31 to 100+ Hz is because this is the *gamma* phase. Now, when you reach *gamma* phase, *gamma* is where you almost have a mind over the body.

When the scientists were measuring, remember I talked about them measuring the Tibetan Buddhist monks who went out into sub-zero temperatures in Tibet? The monks meditated, and they were able to, they only wore a thin layer of clothing, they could survive where most people would die of hypothermia. The Dalai Lama was good, and he allowed the scientists to put the EEG monitor on the monks and when they meditated, the scientists found that the monks were able to move into this, after they spent twenty to thirty years practicing that. The young monks could not do it, but the old monks who had spent about twenty to thirty years were able to reach the *theta* phase quite easily. Then when they were out in the cold (and of course the scientists were wearing warm clothing, the monks were just wearing thin clothing), the scientists found that the monks had *gamma* waves that heat up their body, their brain was signaling *gamma* waves.

Then moving away from the Tibetan monks, in case some Christians do not like me because I use this illustration. Illustrations are neutral. I am not saying that that is the way to go. I am

telling you there is a secret way which you could go faster. You do not need to take twenty to thirty years or go to Tibet to do it. I will show you a better way, like Paul says, “I show you a better way”. Although Christians meditate, there is a way in which your meditation can enter this *delta / theta* phase faster, because of Christ’s help, not because of your energy, because of the frequency that comes from God.

Then they also measure people who are top athletes and they want to find out the reason why an athlete is at the peak performance. You know, how people have got peak performance, then they drop, or they go in cycles. When an athlete is at peak performance, when *gamma* waves are being broadcasted in your mind, there is, like what I call suddenly all your five senses are wide awake. It is like you could hear a pin drop. So, it is like all your senses are alive.

Now I know why. You all remember Dannion Brinkley? Dannion Brinkley (in his book) was struck by lightning two times. One time not enough, two times, poor guy. He died first time and went out-of-body experience into what I call the spiritual realm where there are people in charge there. He went to the library section and the monk section where he saw people that dressed like monks and then they sent him back. Before they sent him back, he was allowed to see scenes of the future and then he came back. His story came out on the Discovery channel and all that. Subsequently he became a Christian. So, when he was sharing in church one day, one tiny little old lady looked at him and said, “Young man, when God chose you, He really picked you from the bottom of the barrel, didn’t He”? He was really a worst-case guy, a worldly guy.

After he was struck by lightning, he realised that there is life after death. He was one of those who did not believe in life after death. Then he realised that there is life after death. I bought his book just for research. Now, he is gone off track into the little bit New Age with the sprinkling of Christian, so I do not recommend his explanation of things. Some people have got experience, but they explain it wrongly but looking at his experience, when he came back, he found he has got a “gift”. When they took him to the horse-racing, he could look and know which horse was going to win. Then when people were playing sports and all that, he could look and know who was going to win. *Wow*, some of the Chinese horse-racing gamblers would like to know him today. So, they took him, and they asked him how. He said he saw something, something like a light on them, and so he began to use this “gift” for gambling.

After some time, he felt guilty and he said he was not using the “gift” properly. That was good, and he stopped doing that and he spent his time in the hospice. A hospice is a place where people are given up by the doctors and they are just there waiting until they die. They give them the best care possible until they die. He spent his time there talking to people about life after death. So, he volunteered his time there, he talked to them about how he himself died and came back, and he comforted them so that they were not so frightened to die. So, that was good. Then later on, when some churches called him, he came to the reality of Christianity kind of thing, but I do not think he is a very strong Christian, he is probably still a baby Christian because of wrong teaching but I had shared his story before and I could not explain what he saw. Now I can.

What he saw was a frequency of light, of *gamma* radiation. When they were measuring the monks, you know how fast it was broadcast, the *gamma*. Over 100 Hz until the range that scientists cannot measure. They say could be beyond 200 Hz when their bodies began to heat up, so that normal people die of hypothermia, the monks feel like it is no problem.

At the *gamma* level, you experience some mind over body thing. When they tested some of those gurus and mystics, where they controlled their heart beats and all that, they say that above 100 to 200 Hz they could hardly feel the heartbeat of the person. It is almost like nil. Something has happened, but they are still alive. So, all these possibilities come at the *gamma* level. Top athletes function at gamma level. If you are training for the Olympic Games, this is a training but is a training of something inside you.

#### *The soul levels*

Your soul level, now I can define it with more scientific terms because my Christianity is a bit on the scientific side. This area which is your *alpha* and *beta* would be about 8 to 12 and 13 to 30 Hz. Between that, scientists have measured one section called the *mu waves* (using the Greek word “*mu*”, which is this word for “m”, which is contained within that). They measured it because they found it was a different vibration coming from a different section of the brain. Remember, these are actually electromagnetic waves. They are the same waves as light. If you could see it, you could see a light, you are radiating light all the time, but it is not in the visible range. These are electromagnetic waves and your brain is producing them, but it is so low that it is not easy to detect.

In the Mathematics, in the Pascal's Triangle, numbers are everything. Everything you see around you is made of numbers and I mentioned that the seven Spirits of God are based on these numbers. The  $1$  – we leave it for God. This is the Fibonacci number. This is the heavenly Fibonacci number which we will look at afterwards. Pascal's Triangle is a number that will keep recurring when you have  $X + X + X + Y + Y + Z$  and all those things, these numbers will come out. These are like natural numbers. It is almost like  $\pi$  and “ $e$ ” kind of thing. They will keep coming up in the equation as binomial coefficients.

Now, the addition of this, represents in  $1 + 1$  at an angle =  $2$ , it adds up to the Fibonacci numbers. Fibonacci numbers are numbers, in everything around you, in the trees, in the plants, in everything that grows, that takes shape, it is all Fibonacci numbers. The next number is found by adding up the two numbers before it. Now, remember the law of Fibonacci numbers depends on the other two before. That means the two previous numbers, added together, become your next number, that means it is a stepping stone. If you do not have, like step one, step two, step three, step four. If you do not have step three, you can never go to step four and if you do not have step four, you cannot go to step five. Each step depends on the other. Its existence depends on the other.

### *The seven Spirits of God*

This represents the numbers on the earth of the seven Spirits of God. I said that the seven Spirits of God are the seven churches, that represent peace (number 2), then love (number 3), down to 4. Then you have glory, which is number 5 for grace, while 8 is the number for power. All these are in the Bible. Each number in the Bible is very consistent. 5 is always grace. 3 is always Trinity. 8 is always resurrection. Eight souls. The number of Jesus' name added together becomes 888. Jesus' number is 888. There is power, then you have life. 21 (which is  $3 \times 7$ ) is the number that points to wisdom. 34 is the number for mercy. You might not realise it, but 34 is a very special number, it is a number of the special square or the magic square.

Long ago, they believed that numbers have magic when you can form the numbers together into a certain thing. There is such a thing like a three-thing number. If you could write the numbers one to nine in such a way in a  $3 \times 3$  box, so that diagonally and cross-ways and sideways, and every way it adds up to exactly the same numbers. 1 to 9 – if they could do it in a way that all is equal, they could. So, when you put the numbers 1, 2, then 3; and then the

next row you have 4, 5, 6; and then you have in the bottom row 7, 8, 9 – every number at each corner adds to 15; any direction adds to 15. 1 to 9 adds to 15 – this is called the magic square, in 3.

The number 15 is interesting because 15 ties to the Feast of Tabernacles which is the 15th day of the 7th month. 15th day of the 7th month is always there and so that number is always tied to it, which is why I say it is tied to mercy. Even then, the number 34 is, they just expand it into 4 squares, instead of 3 squares. So, if you have 4 squares, which is 4 x 4, you need 16 numbers. If you can put the 16 numbers in such a way, that in every way it equates the same thing, there is a way to do it and they call it the forwards and backwards thing. It is like if you have two sets of squares, it is very simple to do it. Even the magic square 3, if you know how to move a chess piece like the knight in an L-shape, you could do that.

So here: normally you would have 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10, 11, 12, 13, 14, 15, 16 – 16 pieces correct? 16 squares. Then if you do it backwards, over here: 16, 15, 14, 13, 12, 11, 10, 9, 8, 7, 6, 5, 4, 3, 2, 1. What they do is they take 1 and superimpose on the other. So, it is like two things flow into one another to complete itself. When you put that together, how they do it is they retain the corners. You just retain the corners. The law of Mathematics – there is a formula for it, but the formula basically is you retain the corners, take away these things, so the corners like represent, almost like the glory of God – four corners. When two corners meet, only one can be dominant. So, when the two planes meet, when the X and Y meet, then the X equals to Y, and Y equals to X at that point. You can call it X, you can call it Y, whatever, but one has to be dominant. You take these numbers and superimpose on the blank spots, which means you go backwards here: 16, 15, 14, and then the blank spot here is 12, here is 9, here is 8, here is 5, here is 3, here is 2 – every direction, you get the number 34. People do not realise how special the number 34 is until they study numbers and then see that the number 34 represents the *Spirit of Mercy*. Mercy is complete – you cannot improve on it. Mercy is the covering of God over your life. 34 – that is why it is a special number.

Now, after looking at this side, look at the other side. This is from heaven's perspective. I have got a new one which I will probably give to you to include in the next number. So, 2 is peace, same. Then 4 is love. Peace, love, joy is equal to power, glory. 16 (which is 4 x 4). Then you have 32, 64 and then the next number after 64 where you continue to add the next number onto it, you find that it grows into also mercy. What are these numbers? What are

they for? I find that they resonate as frequencies. It is not exact but the closest you can point to it.

Let us say the frequency of 2 and you have here in the *delta* phase in Philippians 4:7, the peace of God garrisons your heart and your mind. If your heart and your mind are filled with peace and is vibrating at a frequency of peace, *Blessed are the pure in heart, For they shall see God*. That is a spiritual dimension. There is a way in which you are able to go.

I ask myself this question, I sort of ask the Lord, “Lord, if You were on earth and if I were to put EEG cable on You (God forbid), what will be Your frequency”? I dare to ask this question. I got the answer: He will be perfect frequency. Even when He is awake (except God never sleeps but when Jesus was on the Earth, He slept), He can go into this phase and whenever He wants to exercise His power, He can move from here into *gamma* phase, where His whole body is vibrating with the essence of God, if you could measure Him. Of course, He is beyond measurement in every way but that was an interesting question that I had answered, that Jesus when He is awake, He can still vibrate at this phase because He does not have a carnal mind. For Him, wakefulness and sleep are the same.

Here is the thing: Do you know that children under two years old, when they are awake, they still have *delta* phase? Then children up to five years old, when they are awake, still have *theta* phase. Do you know that as you grow older and older, you lose your *delta* and *theta* phase? You have less of it. In fact, some people hardly go into that. They go into REM sleep, close to the *alpha*. REM sleep is like *gamma*. To a certain extent, like the *alpha / beta*. They have found chemicals on people’s bodies. When you are in the *delta* phase, your body produces certain chemicals. Melatonin which actually is dependent on light, but when you are in the *delta* phase, your body produces that. Plus, your body produces what you call human growth hormones. These affect stem cells. That is why a baby has baby skin, a lot of hormones there. Then at the *theta* phase, you produce a lot of chemicals, among them, endorphins. Endorphins are close to oxytocin, which is like what they say is the love chemical. Endorphins are what makes you feel loved and feel pleasure. Endorphins and all those things, which help you feel pleasure. So, when you are well loved, you begin to feel that but in life, as you get rejected more and more, all these phases become all corrupted, you have got something stuck here and not in proper frequency. For Jesus, everything would have been perfect, if you could measure Jesus when He was on earth.

### *Your mind as a frequency*

When we look at all those things, how do we apply them? How far have we gone to holiness of the mind? Okay, think of your mind as a frequency. I downloaded a Science software programme because I do not like to buy all this new age thing. I have got a Science programme which can produce these waves. It can produce in different waves, it can produce in pulses. You know, computers now can have all those things in pulses. So, I experimented with all these things to test all the differences. I found that when your brain sort of is forced into synchronise with any one of those waves, it is like, for example, like long ago, this is using modern technology, it might have taken the monks maybe twenty to thirty years of this training, using meditation, and they visualised only one candle. I listened to the sounds of all these frequencies. You know what the low sound sounds like? It sounds like waves and then at *theta* phase, between *alpha* and *theta*, it can sound like raindrops. Most of the time, when the waves do that, it actually vibrates at about between 7 to 0.5 frequency.

The Science programme has all the frequencies inside but to listen to it, you cannot use MP3. You have to use a wave file. MP3 is like, since the human ear cannot hear below twenty, MP3 takes off the twenty. Since the human ear cannot hear above twenty thousand, so it takes away above twenty thousand. That is why they leave a small little file to transmit into your internet. You cannot listen to this with MP3 because it is below your hearing ability. What you hear is a side effect of it, but you cannot really hear that. So, you have got to listen in the full digital format, which is a wave file, which is a very big format. It would be like your old CD, one CD might take 650 megabytes, you might have 8 songs, and that is it. If you saved it in a wave file, it will still be 650 megabytes whereas if you move it to MP3, the eight songs might just take you, maybe about 30 megabytes or something like that, depending on how small you squeeze it in.

When I consider these areas, then I researched the Bible, I said, “Does the Bible talk about sounds”? Yes. Remember in the garden, it did not just say God was in the garden. You read very carefully. The spiritual dimension produces sounds. When God was in the garden, it was not just His person that was in the garden, but it says here that after God made man, in Genesis 3:8, unfortunately this is after they fell, but you can assume that that was how God was before the fall, “*And they heard the sound* (you see, what was the sound like, they heard the sound) *of the LORD God walking in the garden in the cool of the day...*”. It was not the Lord, but the sound of the Lord. One of the things about heaven is this constant worship. It is

like a vibration for worship. The only time heaven was silent was recorded in the book of Revelation, the judgment of God was about to fall. Suddenly all praise and worship stopped. Silence in heaven and then the judgement of the Lord came forth, otherwise it is continual worship There was in the garden, not just God walking in the garden, the sound of God walking in the garden.

### *Sound of many waters*

I said, “Lord, what was this sound like”? It was the sound of many waters and this many water sound of raindrops, waves sound, the sound of many waters, this is this frequency. The good thing now is we have got scientific instruments, we can actually measure it. Water sound, waves sound, this is all in this *delta / theta* frequency. That is why most of us love to go to the sea. Isn't it very relaxing? When you lie down next to the sea, makes you sleepy. If the babies have baby colic, they just cry until their parents tear at their hair. At the end when the babies grow up, five-year old, all *botak*. So, with colicky babies, if you ever have them, play them wave sounds and raindrop sounds, they will fall asleep.

So, I asked the Lord, “What was this sound like”? I heard it in the spirit: it was the sound of many waters. Remember in the book of Revelation when God spoke, what did John say? Revelation 1:15, “*His feet were like fine brass, as if refined in a furnace, and His voice as the sound of many waters;*”. Is that like the waterfall sound? Something like that. It is almost like watery, like the Gregorian chant, almost like when we sing in the spirit but lower frequency. When the Lord spoke. Here is the thing: God does not speak in English. He does speak English, but heavenly language is not English. God does not use English up there. English is too low a standard for Him. Heavenly language.

Remember how God stipulated that the High Priest's robe was to have a bell and a pomegranate, a bell and a pomegranate, round about the helm of the robe to minister? When the High Priest went in the people could hear him walking around. You know, small-size bells have a nice peal-like sound, almost like belling a cat, it is a nice tinker sound. If you make it correctly, it is around the *theta* phase, like little raindrops, *ting, ting, ting*. Why does God need the High Priest there? Of course, we always think, the theory is that when he died, then no more sound but I am sure God did not think negatively, so that if there was no sound (*ting, ting, ting*), *popped*, he was dead, let us pull on the rope (that was attached to him, to get him out if he died) but part of it was an allegory of the heavenly sound. Unfortunately, today

we do not have the High Priest, bells and all that but if someone makes the exact shape and all that, and you test what is the frequency of the sound, you will find that it is around the *theta* phase, which comes back to the dimension of your soul.

Here is what I found. Unless a person could have this good frequency in the spirit, you can never get the *gamma* outright because, remember, you are building one on the other. Let us say the higher and higher ones belong to the *gamma* phase, you cannot have that if you did not build on the foundation. Now, if the foundation is wrong, everything is wrong and for most people, they do not have good sleep. Isn't it one of the signs of the age of our time? People are having insomnia. Insomnia means you cannot even enter the *delta* phase at all and when you take sleeping pills, you do not really enter this phase, it is just your body gets knocked out. People find it harder and harder to enter this phase. This is the phase that babies and little children (up to 5 years old) function in and deep meditators manage to get to that level.

#### *Danger without the Holy Spirit*

However, here is the precaution: This level without the Holy Spirit is also dangerous because in this level of the spiritual dimension is where demons come in and they will tell you, if you look at a good Science book about all these distinct phases, they tell you the benefits of each phase and they tell you the cons of each phase. Some of those, the common thing around is depression, depression, depression. If you get into the wrong side without God, your depression is even deeper and then you open the door to demons.

In your soul is your mind and your emotions and they both actually work together but most of the time, even in the structure of your brain, the cerebral cortex develops slower than your primary brain. Your primary brain is actually emotional. The structure of your brain, you go back and study the diagram of your brain again, the different sections of your brain, your primary brain stem is emotion-driven. Emotion-driven, thankfully we have got peace, love, joy, all these things.

Now, in the Bible, there is 1 Corinthians 13:13, there is faith, hope and love, correct? Paul says the greatest is love. We settle that. So, of the three of them – faith, hope and love – Paul tells us the greatest is love, so that is settled. Between faith and hope, two left, which one is number two, since love is number one? Okay, here is where we establish. Why does Paul say

love is first? When you use first, second, third, it means that the first is greater and you cannot have the number two without the number one, you cannot have the number three without the number two. In the Bible, it says in Hebrews 11:1, “*Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen*”. It tells you in Hebrews 11:1 that hope is greater than faith because without hope, you cannot have faith because faith takes hope and makes it a substance. So, you actually need hope first, then you can have faith.

Now although 1 Corinthians 13:13 tells me and it is good enough, Romans 5:5 says that, “... *hope does not disappoint, because the love of God has been poured out in our hearts...*” because there is love, hope cannot fail. The word “disappoint” means to lose hope. Hope does not lose hope because there is love. So, hope is dependent on love. It is like without love, there is no hope; without hope, there is no faith but, on this earth, we see the opposite because faith is the one that moves mountain. It looks so powerful.

However, something powerful is made from something very innocuous looking. Atomic bomb, very powerful, made from things that are not normally explosive. If you gather a bit of uranium or plutonium, although it is radioactive, it will not explode by itself. In fact, TNT and dynamite, TNT (stands for Trinitrotoluene) is an explosive liquid, and TNT as a liquid is so explosive that if you shake it, it will explode. Alfred Nobel found that when you mix that liquid (transparent thing) with clay, you can throw it, but it will not explode. You need to burn it to explode it, that is how he invented dynamite from TNT. So, there are some things that are very hard to handle but who would think that uranium / plutonium can be explosive? It does not explode by itself. You need to construct it in a certain way and the explosion it gives is greater than all the normal explosives.

In the same way, whatever creates the atoms and molecules is greater than the molecules. That is why love is greater than hope and faith, and hope is greater than faith, although we see a mixed-bag faith.

#### *Words or thoughts first*

Here is another question: Is God’s thoughts more powerful or God’s Word more powerful? Okay, so examine ourselves. We as humans, you see, we are made in the image of God. Do words exist first or thoughts exist first? Thoughts do. So, you have got the answer. Thoughts exist first, but when thoughts become spoken, they are creative. God has to think first before

He speaks. Why, you think He speaks without thinking? Now, when it says in the beginning was the Word, did the Word say anything? Nothing but all the energy of creation was in Him. Then when all things were made by Him, when the Word spoke, it created but the thing is, we do not realise how powerful God's thoughts are.

Right now, the Ancient of Days is the One radiating frequencies and energy to the Universe. Do you know how the Ancient of Days (which is the control centre of the Universe) controls the Universe? It is the Ancient of Days continually speaking: "Universe, hold your place. Galaxy, hold your place. Orion, Milky Way, hold your place". He did not have to speak. Did you know that the Ancient of Days is also Jesus? The energy of His thoughts is flowing out. By the time He speaks, that is His action, but His being is holding the Universe together. The energy of the Ancient of Days' thoughts flows from His throne all the way to the end of the Universe, felt by angels, felt by spirit beings, and all are receiving from Him. Then there is another level of energy, which is level two, which comes to praise and worship that is being released by the four living creatures. They are all different degrees, but all these are receiving from Him.

You can say it in this way; Why did God give Himself the title the Ancient of Days? "*In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God*". What is *logos*? What is the Word? The Word contains all the essence of thoughts before any thought was spoken, it was in the Word, when He calls Himself the *logos* in John 1:1. What a simple title. The Word. Did the Word speak all of the Word? No, you only hear part of the Word spoken because we have come to understand there is another new universe called New Heaven and New Jerusalem, something like that, not yet created. Wait until He speaks it, then it comes, but it is already in His thoughts. So, His thoughts are more advanced than His words, but we are affected by the energy of His words. Here is the scale done by line: In the spiritual realm, when one day you all go back to heaven, you will notice this. From the Ancient of Days, the greatest energy are His essence and His thoughts. In the dimension where He is, thoughts create. He does not have to speak. Thoughts create, thoughts are real, thoughts are solid. They create.

When you come down from the glory, many, many layers, to the human level (here, the human level) but our thoughts do not seem so powerful. Our words and actions are what made things move. We are in the opposite world because we have lived so long here, we do

not realise the power of thoughts but as we begin to become more heavenly, this is what God wants. God is looking for human vessels here, who will once again capture this concept and understand this concept, that thoughts are the essence of being. The essence of a thought and here it says is even more than a thought. I have got no words to describe, I can only say “the thought before the thought”. I call it the essence of the thought. You say, “*Wah*, Pastor, you go too deep”. I did not go too deep. It is just Hebrews 4:12.

What did Hebrews 4:12 say? *The word of God is living, full of life, is sharper than the two-edged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit.* Now you know why it cuts soul and spirit because they are all different frequencies. When you can put it in proper frequency, then there is harmony. Dividing bones and marrow. You know why bones and marrow, it means your stem cells are being produced, one of the places and discerning the intents of your thoughts. What are intents of your thoughts? That is what I call “the thought before the thought”, the essence of the thought. And here I come up with: What is the essence behind the thoughts? The frequencies. The frequencies of peace, love, joy, etc. If you could bring yourself to the frequency of peace, and not just peace, Jesus says *My peace I give to you* (John 14:27) – Jesus’ peace and Jesus’ joy. If you allow that peace to come into your heart, and you meditate on it, and if that frequency becomes your frequency, then you change.

#### *A new group of people*

Now, what is the first thing that happened in the church? He gave us new tongues and one of the things I found about tongues is when people pray in tongues, it is like the sound of many waters. You know what happens when we pray in tongues? This is where God is building this new group of people called the *Glorious Church*. One: The *Glorious Church* has the frequency of God on their lips in worship and you are given a new tongue. Part of the manifestations of the sons of God is the spirit within you groans and prays. What is the groan like? The groan within you is the groan that comes from the spirit that is coming into harmony, because besides the groan in you in Romans 8, you have Hebrews 2 because the two places talk about the same thing. You say, “Are they”? Yes, they are. Look at Hebrews 2. You know the manifestations of sons of God in Romans 8 but look at Hebrews 2, it tells us in verse 10: “*For it was fitting for Him, for whom are all things and by whom are all things, in bringing many sons to glory...*”. That is the same as Romans 8, except in Romans 8, you have got a groaning and your groaning turns into words when you speak without understanding, for we are weak, but He is strong.

God gives you the essence of thoughts, the essence of emotions. Before emotions come, this is the pure essence itself that can produce the right frequency and emotions, right frequency of thought, right frequency of emotion and right frequency of will (for it is God who, in Philippians 2:13, works in you both to will and to do). So here, God is working in your emotions (Romans 5); God is working in your mind, He renews your mind (Romans 8). Then it says here that in bringing many sons to glory, that He sanctifies us, and then it says in Hebrews 2:12, *“I will declare Your name to My brethren; In the midst of the assembly I will sing praise to You”*. Praise and worship. It is a frequency of praise and worship that comes from you.

What happens when you are filled with the Word? Speaking in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs. What happens when you are filled with the Holy Spirit? Ephesians 5:18-19, *speaking in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, making melody in your heart*. Both come to the same thing: frequency of worship that comes from you. So, when you have this frequency in you, this frequency in you will bring you into the rest, the waves carry you. You do not produce the waves; the waves carry you.

Whenever you sing in the spirit, you notice what happens to you. When you sing in the spirit it is like another dimension. Then when non-Christians hear, they think we are meditating. They think, *“Wah, you spent twenty years with that?”* No, no, no, we just got baptised in the Spirit. Of course, at first your tongue is different, then you speak until eight more times, 8 hours a day or whatever, after some time you learn, and you mature in tongues, you begin to sing in the spirit. You have got to pray in the spirit and you have got to sing in the spirit. When you have a church trained to sing in the spirit, one day we will sing in the spirit 24 hours. Now, when you sing in the spirit, it is exactly getting into this phase. You do not need your twenty years of lotus position. It is very tough. You just sing in the spirit, lie down, walking, whatever you do.

Do you know that dogs and animals can tell how tense you are by the pitch of your voice? The more you are anxious, the higher your pitch. People who have a naturally high-pitch voice, besides genetics, outside of genetics, it is because they are highly stressed and tensed. So, after some time, you enter into His rest (Hebrews 4).

### *The song of the spirit*

Do you know what the song of the spirit in you is like? Making melody in your heart. You think making melody in your heart is your heart singing, you know, singing new song and all that. All those are included in psalms, hymns and spiritual songs. In Ephesians 5:18-19. He is not repeating himself. Psalms, hymns and spiritual songs are already covered. Any new song is already included in psalms. So, what is this making melody in your heart? Making melody is this frequency. God, the Ancient of Days, releases the frequency into us when we are born again. This is the new glory, the Glory of the Father. Then Jesus when He rose from the dead, He entered a new dimension of frequency called the *New Glory* and He also put it into us.

Now, if this wave increases in your life, it is going to carry you through your life. That is why I call the flow of holiness, of mind. If the essence of the thoughts is tuning you, all your thoughts will flow in that direction. All your thoughts will flow in a certain direction. You will naturally think good thoughts. Now, at first your mind has a lot of needs, your old mind is very much alive, but slowly it will begin to calm down when you meditate on the Word. You must cut down all those other noises. Remember, *“I have been crucified with Christ”*.

So, besides the frequency of the song, the frequency of the song depends on how much frequency. You have to silence your body. The silence is obtained from John 15:3, *“My word has made you clean”*. Why, you think the “clean” is what, sweep all the rubbish away? What kind of rubbish? Dust? It is all these wrong frequencies, these noises. The Word of God. If you read the Word long enough, loud enough, frequently enough, persistently enough, there is a quietness that comes into your being. Your mind begins to think in a new way. Something becomes fresh in you and there is more silence. Then you can hear the song louder and louder. When you have both combinations, the waves carry you so that you do not even try to think. Jesus’ thoughts inspire your thoughts. Without struggling you think good thoughts. Without struggling, you think holy thoughts. Without struggling, you think beautiful thoughts - because the frequency carries you.

So, let us enter into that dimension. You can see it is a roundabout route. I told you holiness of the mind, but the key is Christ in you, Holy Spirit in you. Then the other thing, remove all the noise and the only thing left is your new spirit singing away to its heart’s content.

## Chapter 12...

### Heavenly Man

On what it means to be the heavenly man, so we talked about the carnal man now then let us look at the next one. If you follow Watchman Nee's *The Spiritual Man* book, which I call Book I, because mine is Book II, this is what he is trying to get you into, to be a spiritual man. That is why it is called *The Spiritual Man*. For ours, we go one step higher, because this is about the end time, I call you the heavenly man and we go to the *New Glory of Jerusalem*. Once you are born again, you have heaven inside your spirit. Not only do you have a new spirit, you have got heaven in your spirit and that heaven in your spirit can grow. It can grow so big that it fills all of your spirit and then your soul will become so spiritualised, your soul begins to be like the spirit man.

When we talk about the soul, many times we think about why it keeps going off track from God, but Jesus did have a soul. Jesus' soul was very spiritual. Jesus' soul could feel the dimensions of the things of the spirit. In the gospel of John, during the time of Lazarus and all that, before His soul felt all the travail of the spirit, and Jesus here made this statement how His soul, how He could feel some of the sensations of the Spirit. So, Jesus had a soul when He was on the earth and His soul was very spiritual.

Our soul can become like the spirit man and our body can be like the old soul, in other words, it becomes a handle for the soul to flow through. The Outer Court of course is outside. So, this is the picture of the heavenly man that we are aiming for.

#### *Why is it heaven*

Now, what makes heaven, heaven? Simple question. Let me give you one answer. It is *Perfect*. All right, it is perfect, that is why it is heaven. You have got imperfections on this earth. So, *Perfection* is point Number one. There are causes and effects. In the presence of God, there is *Fullness of Joy*, that is an effect.

When sickness comes in front of Jesus, it is healed, it cannot stand. So, we can add *Healing*. Let us identify one by one. How about *Rest*? Also, an effect. How about *Worship*? *Worship*,

it is difficult, so let us pass to the next one. *Rule of God* is because God is there, God rules. Okay, so we can put that down. *Transparent* is because of God's light, also an effect. If you put in *Joy*, you have also got to put in *Love*, because God is love, so there is love. *Light* is another one because God is light, so there is light. These are a lot of effects.

All right, which means we are down to *Presence of God* and *Worship*. Now why can't you differentiate between the two? You cannot say that it is an effect, can you? *Worship* is unique by itself. It is an act. Does God worship Himself?

Okay, what about Hebrews 2? In Hebrews 2, it says here about Jesus, in verse 11 onwards, so we get the context, "*For both He who sanctifies and those who are being sanctified are all of one, for which reason He is not ashamed to call them brethren, saying: 'I will declare Your name to My brethren; ('I' refers to Jesus, 'Your' refers to Father God, 'My brethren' refers to us). In the midst of the assembly I (i.e. Jesus) will sing praise to You'*".

#### *Does God worship*

So, my question: Does God worship Himself? God the Father does not. It is a different dimension of God. It is not as though God the Father worships God. So, when we think about whether God is worshipping the Father, He does not worship Himself. When Jesus is worshipping the Father, is Jesus God? He is the Son of God. Is the Son equal to the Father? Is the Son part of the Trinity? Yes. So, if the Trinity worships the other part of the Trinity, based on this definition, is God worshipping God?

All right, so let me illustrate. You have the Trinity, that is the Father God, the Word and the Spirit. That is God in three dimensions. Remember what we say about Jesus? Jesus is God in the 4th dimension, that is the difference because this is a different manifestation of God. This is God in the created form because God cannot fit into the created form, He is not created, but He came in the form of His creation. He is not created, but He came like human flesh, in the form of His creation. So, Jesus is unique and different. The Trinity remains the Trinity. Now, this fourth dimension of God, Jesus (takes on the name of Jesus) is worshipping the Trinity. The Trinity remains the Trinity. Let us identify this fourth dimension.

When Jesus says that the Father is greater than Him, aren't they funny words to use? He did say that in John 5. Nobody relates all this back to the spiritual man. John 5:19-20, "*Then*

*Jesus answered and said to them, 'Most assuredly, I say to you, the Son can do nothing of Himself, but what He sees the Father do; for whatever He does, the Son also does in like manner. For the Father loves the Son...'*. So, Jesus representing the Son (God) in the fourth dimension seems to be slightly lesser than the Trinity. Slightly lesser than the Trinity because He says He cannot do anything without the Father. That is an interesting statement, right? The Son can do nothing without the Father. Then in John 14:28, *"You have heard Me say to you, 'I am going away and coming back to you'. If you loved Me, you would rejoice because I said, 'I am going to the Father,' for My Father is greater than I"*. Did you see the statement? That puts Jesus in the 4th dimension of God.

You see, many people do not teach the dimensions of God. When Jesus came down to be Jesus, He emptied Himself, based on Philippians 2:7, the kenosis of Christ, which is a whole theological study. He emptied Himself. Jesus took off His "Omnis" (I call it), Omnipotence, Omnipresence, Omniscience. That is why Jesus says that only the Father knows the day of His coming. Jesus surrendered the Omniscience.

However, there is another Jesus (the Word in heaven) and the Father of course. Now, here is the Trinity. The Father is invisible. No one has seen the Father. Even in heaven, the Word which appeared as the Ancient of Days, He is the only thing visible in the Universe. Then when Jesus came down, there were two manifestations of the Word, one was the Word in heaven (which was from the Father, manifestation of the Father); the other was Jesus the Word made flesh. There were two manifestations of the Word. When Jesus came down, the Word was still in heaven. The Seed of the Ancient of Days still exists.

Now, obviously, this manifestation of God is unique and the purpose of this manifestation of God is that God has always wanted His creation to be filled with His fullness, but creation failed. So, God has, by Himself, to enter His creation, that is a marvelous thing. Through Jesus, God entered His creation and thus He became Jesus.

Now, what happened when Jesus went there, up into heaven? There is an additional degree, the name of Jesus (Philippians 2:9) became the name which is above every name. Jesus could go back and merge with the Ancient of Days, and Jesus could come out again and walk everywhere in heaven. They could merge to become one and they could divide into two

beings in manifestation. So, for the first time, you could see two beings. That is why it says Jesus is at the right hand of God. There is an appearance of the right hand of God. In heaven, all these things appear in time dimension, but in heaven, time does not exist. So, in heaven, in Daniel 7, Daniel saw the Son of Man (he called it the Son of Man), *One like the Son of Man*. He was referring to this Jesus as the Son of Man, or who was the Ancient of Days, gave Him the authority. That was this dimension manifesting. Jesus is unique.

The correct answer to the question of Does God worship God? The answer is no. It is the fourth dimension bringing glory to the Trinity. That would have covered it, but it is a very difficult to answer, the fourth dimension and the fourth dimension is slightly different because here it is, the fourth dimension has come to absorb all of us inside the human race. When Jesus worships God in Hebrews 2, you can argue based on exegetical study, the context is He is our captain, He is our brethren, and even within the verse, it says in Hebrews 2:12, *"I will declare Your name to My brethren..."*. Do you notice the words *"My brethren"*? When He was singing praise, He was not trying to sing praise as God. He was singing praise as a created being, that is how low He came down.

#### *God is all the Trinity*

Okay, we need to see God in this manner. You see, God is all the Trinity, He exists. Then when God created the creation, the creation is a circle around Him, contains all the angels and everything and somehow in His creation, God gives free will. God is still connected to His creation. You know how God knows all things? How does God know when a sparrow drops down and dies? Or a leaf that drops in autumn? How does God know? *In Him we live and move and have our being* in Acts 17:28. So, we are in Him all the time, the Spirit part of God is what we exist in. Just like we exist inside air. We are existing inside the Spirit of God in some manner. So, anything that happens, every atom that moves off adjustment, God knows.

If someone were to take a tiny little pin and prick your leg, would you know it? Yes, the rest of your body knows. Your nerves tell you. Every part is connected and even the parts that do not have nerves, your hair does not have nerves, but if somebody were to pull your hair, it will move your nerves where the hair is connected, and you will know that somebody has just pulled your hair. You know Arnold Schwarzenegger? He was a body-builder in those days although he was such a strong man with big muscles and all that, and he would exercise until he felt pain in his muscles. In those early days when he was being interviewed, when he was

hosting the Miss Universe Contest and all that, they asked him “what is the most painful thing”. He said that before they went for all this competition, they had to remove all their hair by waxing it off. They said that was the most painful part. So, when you pull your hair, it can be painful.

Now, because God gives free will, a part of the Universe rebelled. God feels it. So, in Genesis 6:6, it says that God regrets that He made creation. It is more of a problem with translation. When you look at Genesis 6:6, in terms of the perfection of God, I believe the Hebrew word should give a bit of clarity, it says, “*And the LORD was sorry...*”. “Sorry” is to express regret, comes from the word “*naham*”, in essence, it means to breathe strongly, to sigh. Perhaps the best translation, since this is God, would be like the Lord sighed. The Lord sighed because it was painful to bear it. The first thing to do is to understand the Hebrew. When this is understood, there is no imperfection. God is perfect.

#### *The time dimensions*

Then the second question is this. We are looking at a time dimension. We look at it like it is not finished, correct? That is in Genesis 6 but what did God say in Genesis 2? It says God rested. Finished. Even with this thing happening, it was a temporary thing. Inside the completion (the perfection of God), it contains all these. So, the perfection of God is still intact. God does not need to do one tiny thing, even with the Satanic rebellion and even when man fell into sin in the Garden of Eden.

Here is a surprise. When Jesus came, which is the time dimension, it was already included because the Lamb was slain before the foundation of the world. The world did not exist yet, and God has already got the Cross inside. The defeat of Satan was already written, it was in a little book, sealed up, but no one knows about it.

Here is where the perfection of God is. In the perfection of God, if an artist is doing a drawing, the drawing is not finished, right, the drawing is not finished, it does not mean the artist is not perfect but let us say the drawing is actually finished but you cannot see it. So, you cannot see, let us say you cannot see all the green parts, okay, and it is all completed. From our perspective: God looks imperfect but from God’s perspective: it is finished. Perfection means it is finished, it is completed. It includes all the in-between points, from points one to ninety-nine before it reaches one hundred. If one hundred, represents perfection.

Okay, so “perfection”, you have to look from God’s point of view. He has finished in all these things. Now, having answered this question, I am leading you to understand more of this 4th dimension which we entered in with Jesus, and which is a separate little question which leads to more revelation. In Revelation 5, it says there in verse 9, “*And they sang a new song...*”. That was a new song. Heaven has not sung that song until that time. That new song was reserved until Jesus went up and completed His sacrifice. They have been singing in heaven since the day of creation.

You see, we put “Worship” as important, because worship holds the presence of God for the Universe. It is in the worship that we can contain God’s presence. All the four living creatures are releasing this. Remember how your heart has a heartbeat? The heartbeat of the Universe is the four living creatures. They sing “*Holy, Holy, Holy, Lord God Almighty*” and then they start all over again. They sing again and then they worship, and the twenty-four elders cast their crowns before the Lord. Then they start again. So, that is the heart beat of the Universe. Each time they worship, they release a layer of the life of God and then they worship, another layer of the life of God is released. The life of God, the light of God, the energy of God, flows from the worship and the whole Universe could feel the worship from the centre of where God is, right to the edge. It is like God is breathing life into the Universe and the four living creatures are controlling the release of the life. It cannot be released all at once, otherwise the creation will be destroyed. It must be released in frequency, released to one section at a time. That is how worship is taking place but when Jesus rose into heaven, another level was released that was hidden from the creation of the world. Another level was released.

Now jump to Revelation 14, there were the 144,000 and in the mid-Tribulation, they were raptured up, they completed their work on earth. When they completed their work on earth, in verses 2 and 3, “*And I heard a voice from heaven, like the voice of many waters, and like the voice of loud thunder. And I heard the sound of harpists playing their harps. They sang as it were a new song before the throne, before the four living creatures, and the elders; and no one could learn that song except the hundred and forty-four thousand who were redeemed from the earth*”. Now, a song is a song is a song. You can learn the song. When you hear the song, you can hum the song, learn the song, learn the words, learn the music, learn the melody. Why could no one learn that song or sing that song in heaven? I mean when you go to heaven, you could hear them singing it. You will hear the words, you will hear the melody,

but it says, *no one could learn*. Why? The 144,000 can learn but the rest of us cannot so there must be something that the 144,000 have whereby the rest do not have, therefore the song is specialised, the new song, when they are raptured”. It is the resonance of a spirit song, whereby this spirit song is predestined only for the 144,000. So, permanently, no one else can sing that song? It is related to transparency. In heaven, you are what you are. There are no lies, no deceptions in heaven. You cannot be what you are not and so, we do not actually have a proper English word for that, but we will try because we are talking about the heavenly man. Then after, we come down to the earth to see how to tap into heaven on earth.

Now, one of those qualities has to do with, let us call it, it is very hard to find an exact English word, but let us call it the resonance. Unless you have got the same key, you cannot sing in the same key, no matter how you try. Even in the natural, each one of us is born with a certain range of voice and that is because of the physical structure of our voice box, our throat. No matter how you try, there will be certain notes that you cannot reach, and they use the falsetto, which is, they vibrate it through the nasal area and it sounds different. It is not really from the throat. They are vibrating it through some other parts of their nasal cavity. That is why it is called a falsetto but your voice box in your throat has got only a certain range. That one, you build inside you. Now, even if built inside us, some of us are not trained, you could have carried those things; with training, you reach the maximum capacity. So, let us say without training, you use about 60%; with training you use 100%. You might actually say, “*Wah*, now I can sing from the throat”. It was all the time inside you. So, with training, the muscles develop, you could sing low and high and you are able to but, yet you are limited by what you are born with, you are still stuck. There will still be a certain range that some people are born with, which is why sometimes naturally some people are baritone, some people are bass, some people are soprano. Their natural voice is on a higher level.

#### *The resonance of heaven*

In terms of that, there is resonance. However, the resonance in heaven is different. It is based on character, which comes from experience. The other thing that it is based upon, besides character, I would say character is from your side, the other is from creation – something that God has pre-destined in you, something that God has put inside of you. The angels will always be angels, humans will always be humans. Spirit beings have taken that role. You cannot cross species, each one is slightly different. So, your resonance is there. That one, we know for a fact.

Besides that, in heaven, we all do still grow from glory to glory, perfection to perfection. There has to be growth, otherwise if there is no growth, then what is it. The thing about this is, based on this verse that we quoted, in Revelation 14:2-3, apparently what these 144,000 have, besides we did not experience what they experienced, so we cannot sing it and we cannot sing it with meaning. Like if they had sung what they experienced, it would be different to what we experience.

Angels appreciate some of the songs that we sing, like we can sing; *Amazing grace! How sweet the sound, that saved a wretch like me!* We can sing it on earth, we can sing it in heaven, but angels cannot sing that because they have never been blind, they have never been in sin. They can appreciate that song, but their character and nature does not vibrate with the same resonance. It is no more an E key or F or G. It is the key of experience. Can you imagine Gabriel, the archangel singing, *Amazing grace! How sweet the sound, that saved* (or whatever) *an angel like me!?* He cannot sing, *that saved a wretch*, because he is never been like a wretch and here is what happens in heaven. In heaven, you cannot lie. So, if he has sung – *a wretch like me* – he would be lying. It would be a lie, and angels do not lie. It is obvious that something is preventing it.

On the same format, the 144,000 have a unique experience on earth, something that even the Church Age people do not know. We who belong to the Bride sing different songs from them. They are the Tribulation evangelists. They face different things from us. They are all from the twelve tribes of Israel, so they are different, and they will sing their song. They are like the cream of the cream of the cream of the Israelites chosen. The 144,000 – 12,000 from each tribe.

It is just like the Church; the Bride of Christ is the cream of the cream of the cream from the Gentiles Age. God picks us to be the Bride. The 144,000 are there and they have their unique song. To sing that song is to lie and in heaven you cannot lie, so you cannot sing it. The four living creatures who are the best singers in the whole Universe and the twenty-four elders cannot sing. That is for the 144,000 to sing. We also cannot sing. We can hear, we can enjoy.

Now, this unique quality of a song, is the unique quality of a song and worship. What makes heaven, heaven is this song and worship. They need not be in the human voice, but worship is flowing. One of the things you will notice about heaven (when you go to heaven) is music is

everywhere. When you go to the Garden of Eden, every leaf sings, every fruit vibrates with song, every blade of grass sings, but the singing is not necessarily in a human voice, but you can hear a melody coming out. Everything is vibrating with music. What is music? Music is vibrations in order, in synchrony. Music is just vibrations, the C key, the A key (which we prefer 432 Hz, whereas most A key is 440 Hz). It is all based on a set of vibrations. Like half of the vibrations, or a quarter of the vibrations, then becomes A0, A1, A2, A3, A4. Same as C. These are all various levels of vibrations and they are in Mathematical order. We hear it as a beautiful song because it is very orderly, we hear it like music. A song contains music, and everything contains music. Heaven is filled with that. So, I am pointing to how you can name what heaven is, you will come down to two things: God and worship. God and worship are the cause of all things in heaven. Having that, let me establish the whole thing. All over again, I need to draw how something happens.

From heaven you have all the songs that vibrate through the Universe, up to the point when the planet earth is created, it vibrates with the presence of God. That is how everything flows right through and right now, heaven is still sending out its energy. Those who have the heavenly nature in them can hear it, but something happened, as we all know, the earth fell. When the earth fell, the vibration just passed through, and the people on earth did not know or sense it and this vibration is not based on the law of gravity. In the natural, where the further in distance it is, you have an inverse ratio of a square root, where it gets weaker and weaker based on the law of gravity that the further you are from the sun, the gravity is less and less. It is not based on that because this is actually the energy of God, it is the same here as it is right through towards the end. This is how the heavenly thing is. The earth fell; it went out of vibration together with worlds (which are fallen worlds, whatever they are). The fallen worlds are also out of touch and God needs to bring back this vibration.

Now, there is something that happened, as the vibration of God flows through. If everything is one vibration, then everything is just the same. When God created all things, everything has its own vibration. So, angels have their own vibrations, spirit beings have their own vibrations and when God created humans, humans originally have their own vibrations. There are many worlds that God created, each world (X, Y, Z) has its own vibration.

Then there are the four living creatures and then the twenty-four elders, the whole Universe is held by them, the worship flows through them. All the energy goes through them. What

happens is this. When the energy of God that originates from here flows through all the Universe, as is received, when it flows through angels (whatever character of angels), when it comes out from there, it vibrates with the angels' frequency. When it flows, let us say through a spirit being, it vibrates with the spirit being's frequency. That is the uniqueness. When it flows through some of these worlds, let us say 'X World', it vibrates differently. That is how God makes the song of the Universe, so everything becomes a song, the whole creation is like God's symphony. When all the Universe and galaxies were created, they all formed a symphony. The energy came from God and it blew into each one of those orchestras and worlds, and each one produced its own song. It could be like the brass section, the drum section, and all these, the whole galaxies were all symphonies. That was how the perfect world was like. The earth was originally vibrating that way until the earth fell.

Now, because of the fall, we might not be able to take this energy. As a result, sometimes for the lower area, maybe an angel's energy is more receivable for some people, so it is actually a step down. If there are many angels – A1, A2, A3, A4 – and then we can only reach to A5, maybe A5 reaches us, we cannot hear A1 to A4. You could bring it down further. It is a very complex thing that I have simplified for you to capture the whole picture of what is happening in heaven and this is still happening.

### *Jesus is pure God*

Now, just as it comes from heaven, from the earth after Jesus Christ had come, which helps explain Hebrews 2. When Jesus came, Jesus was pure God on our fallen world and at that time, only He was the One who could have the frequency of God but once Jesus rose from the dead, went to heaven, He released the Spirit. Now anyone who is born again has the frequency of Christ in him. Potentially we can hear heaven, but we need to grow in that frequency. The day you and I vibrate with the same frequency of Jesus – we are perfected. The same energy flows. To help us, the angels help us sometimes, they impart their energy into us. The spirit beings also impart their energy into us, other men of God who had developed part of that, impart it into us also. So, everything helps us until we are exactly like Christ, the frequency of Christ. That is the whole goal that God has to restore fallen creation.

Now, let me support all this with scriptures. When Jesus says in Hebrews 2:12 that He will come, and He will sing praise among His brethren, that is Jesus Himself puts His spirit of resonance of praise into each one of us. Then when He sends His Holy Spirit, in Ephesians

5:18-19, “*And do not be drunk with wine, in which is dissipation; but be filled with the Spirit, (So what will happen when you are filled with the spirit?) speaking to one another in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing and making melody in your heart to the Lord*”. Do you notice the song in your heart?

On top of that, you can add Colossians 3:16. When you are filled with the word of Christ, especially Christ, it does not just say “*filled with the word*” (because the word was always present in the Old Covenant), but it says, “*let the word of Christ fill you, dwell richly in you*”. Colossians 3:16-17 – “*Let the word of Christ (only the word of Christ because it has to be Christ’s song) dwell in you richly in all wisdom, teaching and admonishing one another in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing with grace in your hearts to the Lord. And whatever you do in word or deed, do all in the name of the Lord Jesus, giving thanks to God the Father through Him*”. Notice that – psalms and hymns and spiritual songs? The only difference is with the Holy Spirit in Ephesians 5:18-19, with a melody in your heart but both have the same effect.

#### *The vibration of Christ*

The purpose is to raise us to the vibration of Christ so that we will have the same frequency as Jesus. Jesus had that in His life all the time. Jesus has, what I call, the presence of God upon His life and He is fully the Son of God, which we are supposed to become fully, the sons of God, the manifestation of the sons of God. When Jesus was fully the Son of God, everywhere He went on the physical world, because, remember, this physical world once upon a time was singing the praises of God. Everywhere that Jesus went to, He sort of drew out praise and worship from creation. When Jesus was in, let us say maybe in the Mount of Olives or wherever He went, in the Mount of Beatitudes, when Jesus sat on the grass, what happened to the grass? The grass sang. There was a canopy above Jesus. So, when Jesus went near a tree, the tree sang. When Jesus went near a rock, the rock sang. Now, the tree that Jesus cursed was an exception because Jesus Himself said, “*Let no one eat fruit from you ever again*”, finished. Just as He could curse a fig tree, He could have made the fig tree prosper.

Remember, Jesus was like the Ark of Covenant and greater than the Ark of Covenant. If the Ark of Covenant could make a dead stick produce leaves, branches, flowers, fruits overnight, how much more Jesus? Don’t you think Jesus is greater than the Ark of Covenant? Only that

He was the Ark of Covenant with living human flesh. The Ark of Covenant was made of wood, overlaid with gold; Jesus was real human flesh, with the resonance of the glory of God in Him. Wherever Jesus sat in any place, if He sat for long, all the grass would be the brightest green. Then when Jesus got up and went, the grass also sang. It might take some time but that is it and that is why when Jesus went near the ocean or when He went near a boat, all the fish also sang. If the fish could sing in the water, they would have sung in the water. Everywhere, even the water molecules vibrated, that is how Jesus could walk on water because He was in harmony with all the laws of Physics under Him. Jesus could easily just walk on water. However, Jesus worked with a spirit being. To walk on water, you need at least one spirit being. It helps because the water molecules have a certain vibration and spirit beings are, like they dwell in two dimensions. So, Jesus, when He needed a certain melody, all the angels would vibrate it forth for Him, all around, praise and worship that was there; there was a resonance.

I point to all these so that you can see some keys to becoming more like Jesus. Okay, let us look at becoming more like Jesus. Is it just by going to school, training and attending church? More than that, because Jesus is more than a doctrine, Jesus is more than intellectual principle. It contains that. It is the very nature of Jesus to vibrate with the nature of God in praise and worship. So, you must catch the essence of Jesus, that is the spirit of praise and worship where it is back to the spirit of praise and worship.

#### *The spirit of praise and worship*

To understand the spirit of praise and worship, we are: spirit, soul and body. We know that right now your spirit has Jesus in your heart and is vibrating. What does it mean to be filled with the Spirit? This is your soul and body. To be filled with the Spirit means your spirit must fill soul and body, obviously. Then you are filled and overflowing of course to all those around you. Be filled with the Spirit, that is the thing.

Now, for the spirit to fill the soul and the body, here is my question: Does your soul need something? Your spirit is born again, it vibrates with the song of God that wants to come out. For your spirit to fill your soul and then your body, my question is: Does it need something, to draw it out? For something to fill your soul, does your soul need to have something to draw the qualities of your spirit to flow to you? Or is it your spirit just constructs itself it just comes out by itself?

This side is like, for example, in order to have water supply to a building, I will need to have a tank and then the water that is from there flows into the tank. I put the tank as high as possible, then I draw the water from the tank. The tank draws the water first. The other way is I just draw the water in each time, but I do not have a container. Each time I need water, a truck brings the tank here, then I take the water. Then another truck comes, then another truck comes. You need both. The soul needs to be open and the spirit needs to be able to draw. Now, this part is very interesting because if you understand it correctly, then you will know how to progress in your growth. Otherwise you would think, like when you say you meditate on the word and you grow. In Ephesians 3, Paul prays that your inner man will be strengthened, correct? Then when your inner man is strengthened, so everything else, God’s presence dwells in you but if you look at it, every time when God does anything, it needs something of your co-operation on this side. The correct answer is a mixture of both.

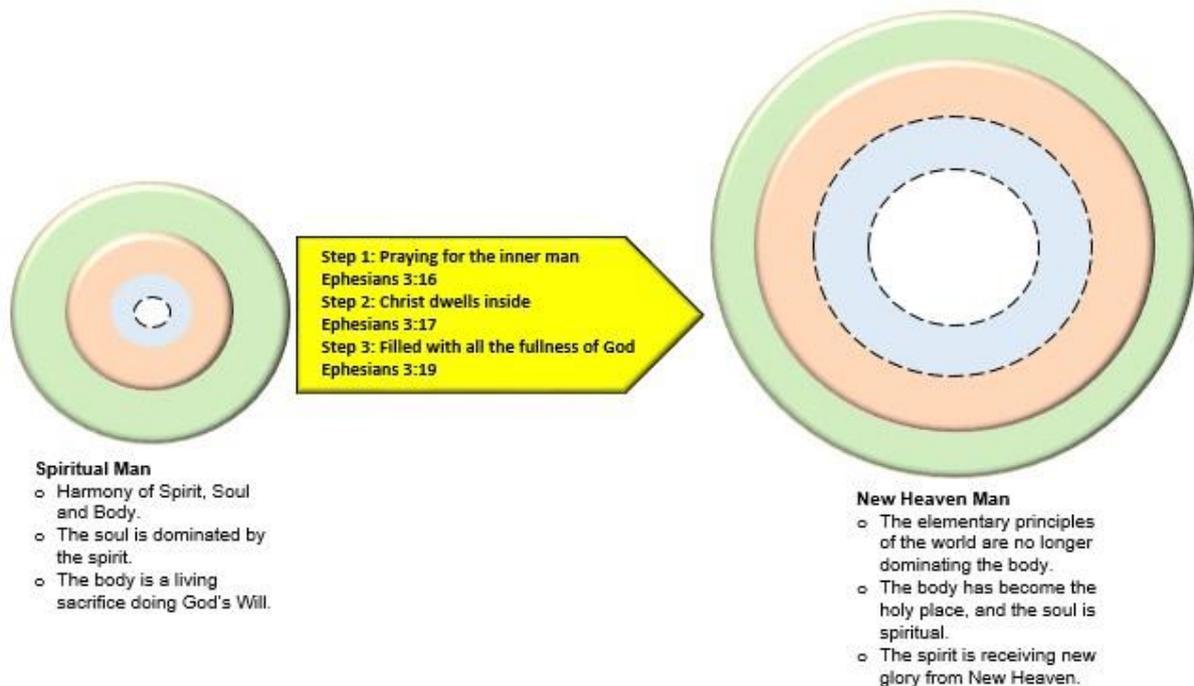


Diagram 1

*The indwelling presence of God*

Look at Ephesians 3:14-19 on the presence of God dwelling in your inner man, *“For this reason I bow my knees to the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, from whom the whole family in heaven and earth is named, that He would grant you, according to the riches of His glory, to be strengthened with might through His Spirit in the inner man, (so something needs to be strengthened here in your inner man) that Christ may dwell in your hearts through faith; that you, being rooted and grounded in love, may be able to comprehend (“katalambano” which is “to receive”) with all the saints what is the width and length and depth and height — to*

*know the love of Christ which passes knowledge; (then the finale) that you may be filled with all the fullness of God.”*

Now, notice there is firstly the prayer. The prayer for the spirit man. Step one. It was Paul’s prayer, which means somebody was praying outside. Don’t forget that part, somebody was outside praying. That was supposedly Paul. So, Paul, whatever his spirit man was, he was praying for the church individually. That is step 1: He was praying for the inner man. His prayer has an effect on them. Then secondly: Christ indwelling. Verse 17, *That Christ may dwell inside*, and that is the presence of God. That was step one. This is step two; Christ dwells inside.

Then in verse 18; There is a “you” there, you may be able to receive, you are enabled – every word there has to do with your soul’s decision, that you will be enabled to have full strength. The words “*may be able*” come from the Greek word “*exischuo*”, “to have full strength”. To be enabled and to “*katalambano*”, so there are two Greek words – you are enabled to receive. One, two (some part of you called the “receiving” part). The “enabling” – let us call it the spirit and soul working together. Okay, that is “enabling” and “receiving”. This part goes out and draws more of the fullness of God. That is step three; Filled with all the fullness of God. You receive the width, length, depth, height. You draw more of God’s love.

Step one did not bring the fullness of love. It was energising your spirit. Step two brought you the presence of Christ. Then the presence of Christ in you enable you to draw more of the love of God into you, step three. So, in Ephesians 3, you have a three-step process, not just a one-step process. You might not be aware of this happening, but I am helping to make you aware of what is happening. There is a three-step process when you are doing that.

Firstly, there is a prayer, whether you pray for yourself; now this represents Paul; it can represent your soul praying for yourself, can represent me praying for you, can represent somebody praying for you (your intercessor). As you know, sometimes the prayers of others do affect us, but you do not depend on the prayers of others. A lot of people depend on our prayers because without our prayers, they cannot be perfected.

### *Pray for others*

So, remember, Friday all-night prayer is important. Do not just go for all-night prayer and pray for me, me, me, my name is Jimmy, my cat, my mouse, my pet, whatever. Your prayers for others can send them a frequency but you must pray correctly. You must pray correctly. You know, how are we going to start growing? When you begin to ask God for souls. Has anybody on Friday all-night prayer asked God for more souls? You see, you do not have because you do not ask.

Now, I am asking but the more I ask, it sends a resonance for the souls to be born. Are you praying for souls to be born again? What did the Lord say when He says the harvest is ripe? What did the Lord say to do? Pray for the Father to send labourers, correct? Are we praying for that? You see, church growth does not just happen because we have campaigns because if you have campaigns and cinema show after cinema show and everybody comes, you do not have church growth. What you have is practical growth which is not what we are interested in. We do not want to lower Christianity when we have more people. Remember, there are certain things that still need to be done. Perhaps we are so absorbed with our own lives, with our own growth that we have not asked and then we need to ask God to give us souls: "Thank You, Lord, bring those souls". As you are doing that, the angels will hear the frequency and they will do their part. So, prayer is important.

Did Paul exercise that? In Galatians 4:19, when the Galatians were about to backslide, Paul says, "... *I labor in birth again until Christ is formed in you,*". You notice the word "again"? Which means Paul prayed for them. Then when they backslide, he prayed again for them that Christ is formed in them.

You see, this part, step 1 is important. That is why I ask the question: Do you need something outside to draw you from the inside? Yes. We need intercessors. Next time we will be raising 1 million intercessors. You need to pray. Remember, your prayer is not begging, when your prayer is in the sense of faith in God, nor are you pushing God. You say, "God, bring all of them on this Sunday". That is a bit too much. Let God and His angels do their work, but your part is just keep believing but someone has to keep believing, someone has to keep praying. That is why when you attend a prayer meeting, you must understand your objective, that you are praying for certain things. *We have not because we ask not.* When we ask, we ask wrongly. We ask for all the wrong things but the most important thing we never ask. So, let

us ask God for souls. Let us ask God for the first one thousand souls. Make us one thousand strong. In all our churches, we want them to start at one thousand strong. Let us reach the first five hundred, then the one thousand and believe God for that.

### *Give thanks to God*

As you persistently and consistently pray and give thanks to God, then the side effects start taking place. Something has to be deposited from outside. The same way, like a lot of the things that I notice God is doing in my life is because I have been praying for them since 1979. Some of the things I probably do not know in fullness what I am asking for. All I know is it is good. I have no idea when I asked that I would like to be translated like Enoch, I have no fullness of the idea of what it meant but now it is becoming more and more clear.

The Word of God produces those desires. That is why when Jesus talks about great faith in Mark 11. He says (Mark 11:24, KJV), *“What things soever ye desire...”*. Why when He says, *“Have the faith of God”* in verse 22, then He has to come down to “desire”? He says, *“Have the faith of God”*, translated as (Mark 11:22, KJV), *“Have faith in God”*. Then He says, *“What things soever ye desire...”*.

Now, the point is, you need to know the right idea of desires. When you desire for the things that are in line with the Word of God, God has to answer. Do not rush God. God has taken thirty years with some of the things that I prayed for, to be answered but He will answer. You must have one point when you start believing.

When did Abraham believe that God will give him a child? Genesis 15. It says God reckoned it as righteousness when God promised him a child. In between, he had some doubts, but at least he was still praying, he still desired. In the end, in Genesis 18, God appeared and said to him, *“Next year you will have one”*. In between, he slightly went off track and had a child with Hagar, not God’s perfect will. He tried to answer God’s prayer, that is what many people do. Many people pray with desire, then they have their Hagar experience. They try to answer God’s prayer in their own way. We are not going to do that. We rest in God and let God answer.

When we pray in the spirit, we might pray for things we do not know of, right, which is important but here is the thing; Many times, whatever you are praying for, you will feel it in

your desire. You might not need the interpretation of tongues but unless someone desires, the prayer does not come forth. That means at a point, let us say you desire to see souls saved, you might not say anything in English, you might not pray in English, but your desire is very strong. When you pray in tongues, you would have covered that but what happens if people do not have the desire? Then your prayer in tongues might be covered under it. Put it this way: Every human being has got desire. Some of the desires are not in line with God. So, your prayer in tongues, you might be telling yourself in tongues, “O God, these are the desires...” because it is not in line with God. Every one of us will have desires. Spiritual aspirations of desires because desires are what is flowing out from inside our spirit but when your desires are in line with God, your tongues will cover them.

### *The Holy Spirit teaches*

That is why the Holy Spirit will teach us how to pray. This is because we desire, and we are weak. We do not know how to reach that, so the Spirit helps us to pray. Desires are very important. Although we are relaxed about it, we are not tensed about it, but when it comes to prayer, all our energy must be there. We must pray, and I am believing God that we will break the five hundred mark, and then the one thousand mark. We need to pray. Without prayer, nothing happens.

Put it this way: Jesus, did He have to pray? Jesus desires, but He still must pray. So, when I am not around, you still come for all-night prayer. You still need to pray in overnight prayer. Do not just come because I am here. That shows the difference whether you have got the spirit of prayer. Now, you might not be able to pray individually, and I have been talking with some of the leaders, I said, “Look, when I am not here, what you all can do is for some of the leaders to gather here in front and pray”. So, when people see you pray, they will pray.

You know why when I am here, people pray? It is because they see me pray. Why do you think sermons have to be from the mouth? Sermons are from your life. If I am not a man of prayer, you think I can make people pray? If I tell people to pray and after preaching on prayer, then I go home, can I make people pray? Paul says you are the epistle that people read. Epistle is a letter. So, I was, you know, I said, “Look, when I am not around, a few of you gather in front here and pray” and you just pray. When people see you pray, they copy because most people are like sheep, sheep need a shepherd. When shepherd prays, sheep pray. When shepherd goes outside and chit chat, all sheep go outside and chit chat. When

shepherd goes fellowship, all sheep go fellowship. People need living sermons. We need people to pray.

Then you need to know what to pray and you have desire and prayer there because it is God who adds to the church. As we pray, then God begins to work, and we might do it once in a while. After a while, we might do it again because we did it in KL long ago, when my church was there, once in a while in all-night prayer, we had prayer drives. What happened in the prayer drives? I find that when we have prayer drives over different areas, then after some time people from those areas start coming to church and finding their way to church. Besides giving out tracts and all those things, but just the prayer, people are drawn, people who are hungry come.

#### *Heaven answers*

So, step one; Is actually from the outside. Then step two; Is from heaven, heaven answers; Christ dwells inside you. Step three; Is both from your inside and from your soul because you receive. It involves your soul and that brings the fullness of God that is there. That is how all things work in the spirit. Which is why the only way in order to get into something, Hebrews 11:6, *“But without faith it is impossible to please Him, for he who comes to God must believe that He is, and that He is a rewarder of those who diligently seek Him”*. There is still something that you need to do. Even talking about entering the rest, Hebrews 4:10, *“For he who has entered His rest has himself also ceased from his works as God did from His”*, you forget verse 11, *“Let us therefore be diligent to enter that rest...”*. Hey, you want to enter the rest. You are praying into the rest. Then once you enter the rest, step two starts happening. Step two results, starts taking place. In all those things, there is also a certain attribute that is necessary on our inside in order for all these things to flow. It is not a begging prayer. It is not an arm-twisting prayer. There is one secret that covers all these things that are there. It is the word *“eucharistia”* in Greek, which is the word “thanksgiving”.

Now, in step one, we do not realise it, but the initiative behind step one is actually an invisible sub-conscious frequency affecting us. That is how you desire but some part of us is acting. How to put ourselves in the position where all this energy that is from God can flow through us and in us? Look at Romans 1. Let us look at the negative side first and we must always keep our focus on God.

Romans 1 tells us how humans fall, and it says here, it begins at the beginning, in verses 18-21, *“For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who suppress the truth in unrighteousness, because what may be known of God is manifest in them, for God has shown it to them. For since the creation of the world His invisible attributes are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, (things that are made, His creations, His angels or other humanoid figures, including humans. We see the creation of God. Humans are made in the image of God. So, everything has some sort of image of God inside, plus general creation. All of them contain the attributes of God), even His eternal power and Godhead, so that they are without excuse, (now, look, what happens), because, although they knew God, (so in a sense, everyone born has a knowledge of God imprinted inside them, even in our fallen state), they did not glorify Him as God, nor were thankful...”*. You see the word *“eucharistia”* (“thankful”)? Very important. You see, the things that are important to keep ourselves sensitive to the frequencies of God, (1) Thanksgiving. Thankful or thanksgiving, it is very important.

#### *Remain sensitive to the heavenly life*

How to keep yourself sensitive to the heavenly life and the life that is flowing from the four living creatures that say “Holy, holy, holy...”? If you are a person who is full of thankfulness, you could literally hear it in your spirit vibrating. Every time the four living creatures say, “Holy, holy, holy, Lord God Almighty...”, then they bow down and worship, you could feel this. Just like if I right now hold your hand and I put my hand over your wrist, I can feel your heartbeat but where my wrist is, where I can feel the heartbeat, is not where my heart is. The distance is at least about 2ft or maybe about half a metre from your heart, but you can still feel it because your arteries are beating with the heartbeat. So, when you are full of thanksgiving, your spirit man can sense the waves of holiness that flow from God. You can literally sense it. The opposite where you can stop hearing that is opposite from thankfulness, when you are no more thankful – *nor were thankful*. Now, there was one point before that – *they did not glorify Him as God*. That comes out again afterward, that is why I leave it first. In Romans 1:21, *“... but became futile in their thoughts, and their foolish hearts were darkened”*. Just two things only. They were darkened.

Remember how darkness comes? Darkness comes when you are no more thankful. Then there is the other point, which comes again in the next verse, *“Professing to be wise, they became fools, and changed the glory of the incorruptible God into an image made like*

*corruptible man — and birds and four-footed animals and creeping things*”. That is the same as in the first part in verse 21, “... *they did not glorify Him as God...*”. You know what is point two? They worship other gods, which breaks the Ten Commandments.

You know what it means when you worship other gods? Remember, all these things are flowing. The thing is flowing to all this creation (humanoids and humans), all this, and then the presence of God is flowing. Instead of looking straight through all these things right at the source, that is supposed to be what it means, you thank God for all these things when you see God. You still see God. You do not — this is *Thou shalt not* — you do not stop and worship the creation. The moment you stop and make this your god (I use the word “theta” for god), darkness comes because you are looking at the wrong source. Even if you were to worship an angel, darkness will still come. Which is why in the midst of all these downloads and revelations, I always emphasise to the Twelve and to all those — Do not sidetrack from who God is. Do not sidetrack to an angel. That is why you can know angels’ names and all those things. Some people get sidetracked and pay attention to the angels. I am aware of the angels and the angels would like you to be aware of them and be communicable, but they want you to be aware of God.

That is how in Colossians, some people started worshipping angels and, in this revival, God already showed me the future because of working with angels so closely, some people will find out some angels’ names and pray to the angels’ name. We have not reached that stage yet but the revival of anything produces its own extremes. You know why we will never go astray? Because we will go by the written Word of God. That is the only way. So, do not just because you know some angels’ names or whatever and you start praying to them. Although I pray that you pray for God to strengthen your angels, so that they can strengthen you, but they are not magical qualities. They are created beings. You must always see God. So, when the angels are working, I would like to hear what the angels are carrying from God. God must always be in the picture. I have seen how, you know, how those who learn from history will never repeat the mistakes of history. Those who do not learn from history are cursed to repeat the same thing that history does.

#### *Beware of extremes*

Haven’t you seen in all the revivals how people moved to extremes? When the Faith Movement came in Kenneth E Hagin’s time, there was a group who went to the extreme,

called Hyper Faith, where they went against medicine and did not take medicine. I forgot who the other people were. It is a good thing that even if I knew, I will not mention their names. Kenneth E Hagin was one of those balanced ones. He did not go against medicine, did not go against anything, but he preached the Word. However, there is a whole core group that rejected medicine and they died – Hyper Faith and then, of course, you have got the group that took the move and put it to the extreme, and a group that went against the move and they called Kenneth E Hagin a cult. So, you have got the two extremes.

Now, I am aware that we are at the beginning of this move and I am aware what humans can do, how humans will either push it to one extreme or they will go to the other extreme and reject it. We must always be aware that we must be balanced and not allow extremes. So, when I see extremes, I say, *hey*, chop, cut it there, hold it there and pull it back, when people go to different extremes.

So, the problem in Romans 1, you know how darkness came, when they limited it to creation and they started worshipping other gods, which included worship of any angels. Or if the angels begin to take more of your attention than God Himself, you begin to break the Ten Commandments. I know the angels very well and let me tell you, angels would want you to pay attention to God. Angels do not mind. They have been working invisibly since the time of Noah when humans lost open vision. So, they know how to work invisibly, but all they want, is for you to be aware of what they have come to bring, the frequency they come to bring to help you into God and they come alongside us to help us in our relationship with God, not to take away from God. Same as spirit beings. We know the names of the spirit beings and all those things. It is for us to be aware of what their energising factor is and the end result, your eyes must only be on Jesus. Your eyes should not be trying to visualise angels. Blessed are the pure in heart for they shall see angels? Wrong! Matthew 5:8, “*Blessed are the pure in heart, For they shall see God*”. Let me tell you why seeing God is important, because when you see God, more light comes; more light comes, you will see more angels. Remember how I talked about turning off all the lights? The less light, you can only see dimly; the more light, you can see clearer. If I were to turn off all the lights except one tiny one, you cannot even see each other’s faces. It is the light that helps you recognise each person.

It is important for us to remember these are the two qualities for step one, step two, step three to work. You must always hold on to these qualities and those of you who are privileged to have visions of the Father or have seen the Father, always when you pray, centre on the Father. Centre on the Father. You are seated in heavenly places in Christ Jesus. So, as you centre on the Father and you worship Him, everything else falls in line and remember Colossians 3:16 and Ephesians 5:18-19 so the song that God gives to you will flow out.

*Express thankfulness in songs*

In all these steps, here is where they are all tied together in a sub-point. When you are thankful, you express your thankfulness in songs. That is why the Holy Spirit fills you. Remember your soul and your spirit? When the Holy Spirit fills you, it has to be from the spirit first, obviously. So, Ephesians 5:18-19, is your spirit; Colossians 3:16, is the word. When it says – *Let the word of Christ dwell in you* – it includes of course spirit because the word is spiritual. Jesus says, (John 6:63) “*My words are spirit and they are life*”. However, when you read Romans 7, the word is for the soul. How else will your soul become the spiritual soul? Because the soul has the word of God and the word of God comes into your flesh. Remember Hebrews 4:12, *The word of God is sharper than any two-edged sword, dividing asunder soul and spirit*. Now, to be able to divide asunder means your spirit could separate the two and bones and marrow. So, the word of God affects spirit, soul and body. That is how it could draw the things out from you but remember, all these songs, all those things, you must be thankful.

Ok, who wrote the book of Psalms? Some are David’s, some are some singers’. Remember, different singers. Who put the whole book of Psalms together? King Hezekiah, he collected all of David’s songs and all those things and you know the imprint, the signature he put, Psalm 120 to Psalm 134 (15 psalms)? Remember he was given 15 years? So, Psalms 120 to 134 have this title: *A Song of Ascents* (a song of decree). You count them as 15, because when Hezekiah became a proud man (you know, God can use you and you become proud), he nearly died. Isaiah said, “*Prepare to die, go home*”. He said, “*O God, I have been serving you...*”, and then God said, “*Okay, give you 15 more years*”. The fifteen years God gave him, he took every one of them with thankfulness.

If you know that you have got only fifteen years to live, each year is precious and every year he purposely had got one psalm that was for that year, for fifteen years, fifteen psalms. He

might have or might not have written the music himself, but he chose them. He was the one instrumental to put the whole one hundred psalms together. Without him, you will not have the book of Psalms. It would be scattered all over the place. It would be there somewhere and scattered, but he put the whole thing together because every year that he had to live, he was thankful to God.

Let us be better than Hezekiah. Every day say, “Thank You, Lord for life”. When you get up in the morning, “Thank You, Lord, for life”. One of the things, you know, depression is a lot in the world nowadays. You know how to stop depression? Be thankful. Depression is worry (partly worry, partly fear). You still can breathe, right? Thank God for that. You still have got two arms and two legs? Thank God for that. You know some people do not have arms or legs? You are still healthy? Thank God for that. When you live a life of thanksgiving, and then some of you say, “Ah, not enough money, not enough money”. Hey, wait, wait, you are still alive, right? Thank God for that. Whatever little money you have, thank God for that. Whatever job you have, you say I wish I have another, you keep wishing and wishing until you are so depressed. Thank God for what you have, and God will give you more. In any situation, give thanks. You know, the thing about thanksgiving – the pauper to the king can give thanks. You cannot say you cannot give thanks.

You know how David gave thanks? “*As long as I am alive, I give thanks*”. And you know what David said? “*The dead cannot praise you*”. So, to David, as long as he was alive, he praised God. Now, think about the times David gave thanks. He gave thanks after he had fallen into sin, he repented. He gave thanks when Saul was chasing him. Correct? You look at some of the Psalms, it says this is the psalm written when David was running away from King Saul. People running away, why would they want to sing? He ran and in whatever situation, he sang, and he sang because he learned to have a thankful heart.

You can give thanks for whatever situation you are in. Thank God for where we are also today. Thank God in every situation. When you are thankful, there is no room for depression. The cure for depression, thanksgiving. Isaiah 61:3, *The garment of praise for the spirit of heaviness*. The spirit of heaviness includes depression. Garment of praise and worship, thanksgiving. That is the key to being sensitive to all the frequencies of God. When you focus too much on people, too much of other things, too much of future, then you get depressed.

This also applies to non-Christians, except their thanksgiving is of a lower level. This principle applies to every human. Except as Christians, here is the key, you have got a higher level here. Your thanksgiving enters into the praise and worship of the Lord. Is Jesus a thankful person? Yes. Do you remember the five loaves and two fishes? He just gave thanks and if you look even in the non-Christian world, people who are grateful out there are very nice people. People who are ungrateful, they are never nice people and we should be shameful if we know Jesus, know God, know all these things about God, even though we have our own sufferings as Christians, we still cannot be thankful. Something is very wrong. Thankfulness is the key thing. Point two is very important. Do not let anything replace God in your life. Not even a man or woman, not even your loved ones must get first place. Nor an angel, nor a spirit being. Not even a church. The church is an expression of God, but your eyes are only on God. As long as you can see God through all those things, you become grateful for all those things.

#### *Worship God only*

So, this worship is we must worship God. You can be loyal to COG, but do not dare worship COG. The same way, if you hear some Christians talking, it looks like they are worshipping sometimes some denominations. Pride comes in. We must only worship God. Do not replace God with anything. When your eyes are only on God and you are thankful, you are in the right frequency. In the right frequency, you can hear God and, you know, on point two, Jesus also helps us.

In Christ, you are seated at the right hand of God. You should be able to see God easier. You are right there beside God. People asked me: “What do I visualise when I worship”? Visualise yourself seated in the presence of God in Christ Jesus. Then you are worshipping from the very throne room of God, giving praise and honour to God. That is the key in tuning to be the heavenly man because when you have these two [Thanksgiving & Worship], our conclusion is: Heaven vibrates with the vibrations of God. When you are fully tuned, you vibrate with heaven’s frequency. So, on the planet earth, they have enough people vibrating with heaven’s frequency. Jesus says *the kingdom of God ...* In Matthew 13, He calls it *the kingdom of heaven*. Heaven comes down on earth and when heaven is in you, this canopy of heaven is there, the Ark of Covenant. So, when you go to picnic and sit down, the grass is always greener around you. Anywhere you go, the presence of God has the Obed-Edom effect and right wherever you are, you carry that, and Satan cannot come near.

## Chapter 13...

### Heavenly Qualities

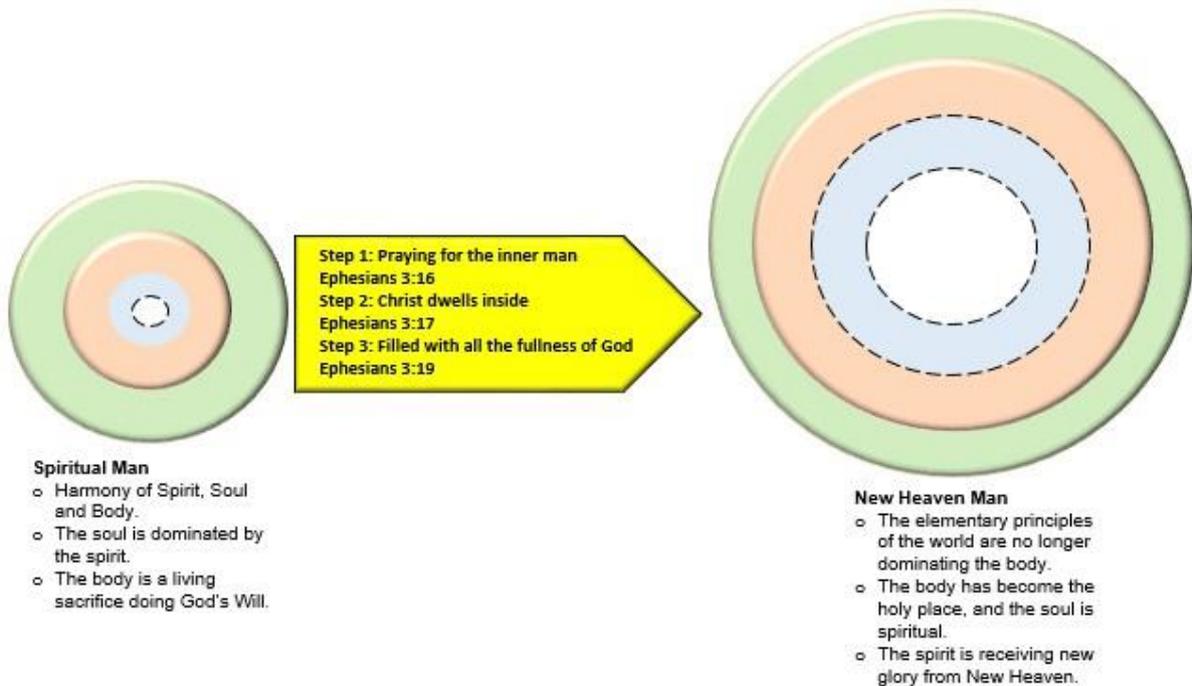


Diagram 1

Now, again, we look at the *New Heaven Man* diagram. We talk about this new diagram, where we are, and we have a glimpse of the new glory in heaven. We are growing from the spiritual man to the heavenly man. The glorious church will be like this. We are not the glorious church yet - just victorious church, you can conquer the enemy. Glorious church is without spot, without wrinkle. I have come to understand more and more, Ephesians 5:27, the Lord Jesus is preparing a Bride, without spot, without wrinkle, without blemish, it applies to spirit, soul and body (all three areas). That is why the church is really transformed to be very much like Christ Jesus and we have the glory of God upon our lives. That is our inheritance and privilege to enjoy in this time of the power of the Age to come. Praise God.

Why do you think Jesus has a treasurer? You may answer: Because He has got lots of money but why does He have a treasurer? Any other reasons? Remember Judas Iscariot was His treasurer. In fact, if it were some of us that were operating the administration for Jesus, we would not have chosen Judas too, because it would be treacherous. So, for the Lord, it is not just important to get a job done. You see, we humans are very goal-orientated, but for the

Lord, both getting the job done and the privilege of the vessel doing the job are important. That is why it is a different concept altogether.

Like for example, Bible Study, we just do three, four or five songs, right? I could have done a few songs and then teach in Bible Study but why don't I do it? Sometimes on Sunday, I like to lead worship. After I take over, I still lead worship because I love to worship. I love to bring people a bit deeper into the worship. Although we have a great worship team that has been doing a wonderful job, but everyone brings the worship. You will always bring the worship to where you are spiritually. So, whenever I lead a worship and continue the worship, it is not because of anything, it is because I need the worship to take on my character before I preach and minister. Everyone always ministers from one's character. It puts the DNA into the worship and that is the importance of it. So, because it puts a different DNA into it, that is why it feels different also. The anointing is always there, but it feels different. The reason why we have different people doing different things is not just to get the job done. If I want to get the job done, I could just select one person to do it all the time, but it is because of the vessels being trained in the process.

When Jesus selected Judas Iscariot, do you think Jesus was just interested in the administration of the finance, or was Jesus also interested in the training of Judas? The answer is so obvious. It was for the training of Judas Iscariot, right? There could be a lot of others. Remember one of His disciples was a tax collector? Under normal circumstances, in any company, he would be the logical person to select, after all he handled money and he was a tax collector and he had been handling money all the time, he would be the logical person.

#### *God tests and trains us*

Everything that we do for God, no matter how small, from doing the little things (the sound system, ushering, all those things), a little thing in which God tests and trains us. Yes, there could even be training from the Lord. From the human side, not much to train, you know, just greet people but from the Lord's side, the Lord is watching how your heart functions and how you can grow. Then once in a while, the Lord sends a test. You say, "How does the Lord send a test when you are just doing a simple thing? Who can persecute an usher"? Well, it so happens God can allow a very troublesome person to deal with to come and approach you and that is your test.

In everything, God is interested in the job and in the person doing the job because if you think very logically like that, even before us, there were a lot of people who were effective in bringing souls before all of us came into Christianity and in the ministry of Smith Wigglesworth, John G Lake and all those. All God has to do is let them live longer until the whole world is won. They can do the job to the finish line. The rest of us just sing hallelujah. Why does God let them die and then God has to start all over again with someone? Or people like Kathryn Kuhlman? Then she died and then God must start all over again raising another person who has a vision of miracles or the burden for miracles. It looks like arduous work because God is not interested in just getting the job done. If He really wanted to get the job done, He would have used His angels. We humans just stand aside, and God says, “Ah, all of you are so slow, step aside”. Let the angels finish the job, the entire world will be won but it is because of the process of training us too.

However, the question on why Jesus got a treasurer is not fully answered. It is very difficult to answer. Recently, having dialogue with Jesus, I could see more glimpses into His life. We got a little glimpse into the panorama of the New Testament and the panorama of the New Testament which we have already released, we mentioned about how when Jesus was working as a carpenter, He went for a few trips outside of Nazareth. During the few trips (altar building trips), you know how He supported Himself? He had a carpenter’s bag. It is a brownish colour leather bag that Jesus had with Him. Jesus had a little bag, not when He was in ministry, but when He was a carpenter. That little bag that He took is a little carpenter’s bag with all the carpenter’s tools. In His altar building trips (during the time when He was about 26, 27, 28, 29, before 30, Jesus used to go to various places and build altars), Jesus still needed to eat. He did not need to eat, but He ceremoniously needed to eat. He ate very little though. He needed a shelter over His head although He did not mind sleeping anywhere. Jesus would go to a place and He would be led by the Spirit and He would know some people who needed carpentry there and He worked in their place for lodging and food.

#### *Jesus did not touch money*

Here is the thing I noticed, when I keep looking very carefully at what Jesus is trying to show me, during His entire life, He never touched money. Remember a tax collector came during His ministry? He asked Peter to do it. It is like Jesus did not, He was symbolic also of God, He did not want to touch anything or have anything to do with anything that humans invented. His standard is higher. I did not say that you have to live that way because if you

live that way, think about all those things that you do not have right now. First thing to go is your laptop computer and your phones but Jesus was a resemblance of, is like He would be like an angel, just transferred from heaven and He lived like on earth, just using natural things. I said, “Why do you do that, Lord”? The Lord said, “To show forth the difference between the world and heaven”.

Even in its symbolism, it does not mean that when Jesus touched money or used money, it is wrong. Obviously, Paul used money. Paul worked for money and Paul rented a house in Acts 28:30, things that Jesus did not do but the people of the world, including Christians in the world, who operate in the world, we need organisations, we need to register a church, we need to sign contracts for buildings or buy buildings and all that in the future, so all those things but Jesus withdrew from all those things. I was surprised when the Lord showed me that throughout His whole life He never used money.

How did the people pay Him in the carpenter’s shop? Jesus would just say, “*Oh*, pass the money to My brothers”. He would not handle it. Jesus would not even own a wallet for money. I did not say that we are going to do this. That is too extreme a Christianity, but I want you to know the extent that Jesus took it. I said, “Lord, why don’t You use money and handle money? You do not even want to work for money”. It is almost like Jesus gave His work free, and then they gave food and lodging free back to Him because Jesus says He is a symbol of heaven.

Money was invented by man. Anything that was touched by humans, to a different extent, is something that Jesus did not get involved in at all. Did not even want to because He focused on heaven. Now, we do not have to go as extreme as Him because there is only one Jesus. Everything that He did was a symbol, even where He chose to be born. Everything was a symbol and there is only one Jesus. However, we need to learn from His principles – how on the earth we must have a detachment from the world and express it out as much as we can without neglecting our responsibilities and our stewardship of finance and money.

Now, the people in the Bible handled money. The fact that handling money is not wrong is because Jesus told Peter to handle the taxes. Obviously, it needed to be done. As we enter into the end time, there are a lot of things that we need to understand, that we have to stay

away from the things of the world, and it becomes more and more clear as we progress in this glorious church.

### *Become unworldly*

In John 17, Jesus' prayer is like a summary to show forth how unworldly He expects us to be. Yes, the word is "unworldly" and you see in Romans 12:1-2, it tells you to; *present your bodies as a living sacrifice and let your mind be transformed and do not be conformed to the world.* "Do not" (the word). Do not be like the world, we are told. You all know that verse in Romans 12:2 but it is not so often used, Jesus says in John 17:6, *"I have manifested Your name to the men whom You have given Me out of the world. (We are a people given out of the world.) They were Yours, You gave them to Me, and they have kept Your word"*.

We now belong to Jesus. John 17 is especially about the glorious church, how unworldly we must become, and indeed, not only will God help us to become more unworldly, we will become more heavenly, "unworldly" is the negative side, but the positive side is "more heavenly". I have to sometimes use the negative because the negative thing sometimes strikes stronger in people – being unworldly – then you know what it means because sometimes when you talk about "heavenly", people do not realise being heavenly is being unworldly, not like the world nor conformed to the world.

Remember, we were taken out of the world, we were supposed to have been taken out of the world and given especially to Jesus. He is only talking about His Bride especially, particularly His disciples and His Bride. Then He says in verse 9, *"I pray for them. I do not pray for the world..."*. Wah, this is a strong statement. He does not care about the system in the world, the things of this world, because they are subject to God anyway, although the Bible says God so loved the world that He gave His only begotten Son, we know that John 3:16 refers to people. God did not just send His Son for the sand, the ocean and the mountains. That verse refers to people. I believe that as we enter the last days, as the wheat separates from the tares, there will be more of a distinction. You know how you can recognise the tares and the wheat? Besides their fruit and before their fruit came. We will be heavenly and unworldly. Tares are worldly and looking only for the things of this world because their heart is not born in heaven yet and more and more the differentiation will come.

We have lived so long in this modern Christianity of nearly two hundred years, in fact one hundred years of the twentieth century have made Christianity worldlier, until today we cannot differentiate between a worldly Christian and a spiritual Christian. We see the two as one. There are many churches from the pulpit that are preaching success from the world equals spirituality. Isn't that what they are preaching today? So, in that way, you cannot differentiate spirituality from worldliness anymore. The two are so linked. We have confused some principles in the Bible. Yes, spiritual principles will bring you prosperity and worldly success. Obviously, we have got scriptures for that. Genesis 12:1-2, Joshua 1:8, Psalm 1 and Deuteronomy 28:1-14, obviously, but yet while you have all those successes, your success is only a side effect for you.

Was Job a worldly man? No but he was super-successful. Remember Job was the richest man in the East. Was Abraham a successful, rich man? Yes, but was he worldly? No. Was Daniel a successful man? Yes. Was he worldly? No. Was David a successful man? He was. Was he worldly? No. You know what most of his money was set aside for? The temple. Most of his wealth was invested in the temple that Solomon was going to build. He spent his lifetime accumulating wealth to be used for God.

Let us be practical about it. I tell this often: How much money do you need to live? Actually, not that much. You do need money to live but up to a certain level, it is only about better food, better housing, better transportation, better clothes, correct? It is only those things. You do not actually need a lot of money to live. You need sufficient money. In each country, there are always different things and the costs are different but why then do people keep striving for millions and millions of dollars? Now they know that the end time is coming and a lot of them when they hear this message, anyway this message must go all over the world, and I have been asking them: Why are you still saving money for your great grand-children? Your wealth should be for yourself, have sufficient for your loved ones and family to take care of them, but not extensively. Then, the rest used for the kingdom of God because you cannot take it home with you. You will have no reward if you die leaving \$1 billion in the bank and in your whole life you have only given to God \$10 million. You know, that \$1 billion is not counted in heaven. Only that \$10 million is counted and God says you have given \$10 million, of course if you have given with the right attitude.

“Unworldliness” is not much preached in today’s church because we cannot differentiate anymore but this is the message of the end time, *The Heavenly Man*. The fact is this, that people are afraid to be unworldly because they fear that by being spiritual, they have seen a lot of spiritual people, they are poor like a church mouse. Maybe poorer than the church mice, at least the mice still have got the furs to keep them warm. You have looked at the wrong examples. Look at the Bible examples, every spiritual man was well provided for, including Jesus Christ.

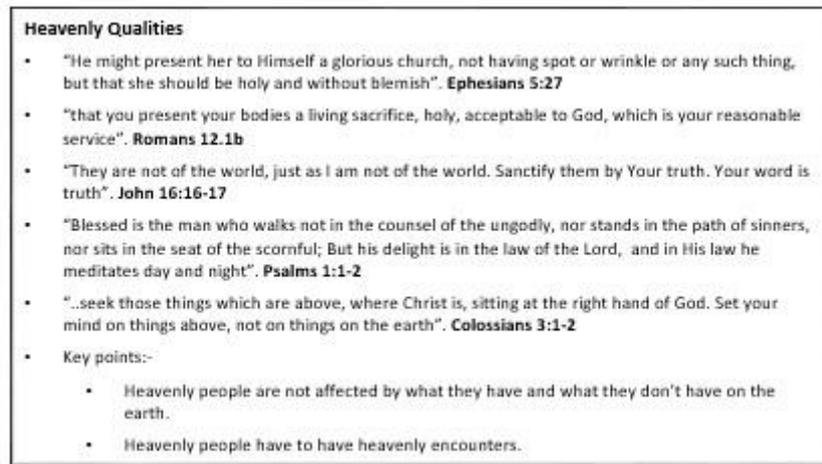


Diagram 2

So, we have taken that truth in the twentieth century and instead of emphasising on heaven, we emphasise on worldly success. It is like getting a car and you say, you know, what makes the car go? The wheels. Of course, the wheels must move but the wheels of the car are not what runs the car. The heart of the car is in the engine. It is the engine that generates the propulsion system. It is the same way to say, you know, that worldly success is the aim. Do not aim at that. Aim at being heavenly and spiritual. Worldly success is the wheels, the side effect.

In John 17:11, “*Now I am no longer in the world, but these are in the world* (talking about His disciples and also pointing to us), *and I come to You, Holy Father, keep through Your name those whom You have given Me, that they may be one as We are*”. Now, the Father is in heaven. In fact, heaven is made by the Father. Jesus is in heaven. When you are one with Jesus and you are absolutely one, you cannot have one atom of worldliness. You can live in the world, but you cannot have even one atom of worldliness.

### *The frequency of the world*

Every time you contact the world, there is something of the frequency of the world that creeps on you and you need to know what Jesus meant by the washing of your feet. How to keep yourself clean, spirit, soul and body? The laws of cleanliness in the Old Testament transfer into the New. We still have the laws of cleanliness in the New Testament, but they operate at a different level. There is a way that we could observe not just holiness but the laws of clean and unclean. Remember, the moment you touch and do things of the world, it is unclean.

Now we come back to this fact: You know why Jesus did not want to touch money? The concept itself is unclean to heaven. *Wah*, quickly throw away your money. Haven't you read the verse about filthy lucre? Do you know that is in the Bible? Paul used that word. It is an old word, but it means, it is like there is a smell of the world on it. Do you know heaven does not need money? It was invented on this earth. We need to use it on this earth when we live on this earth, but Jesus was so symbolic that He did not want to be unclean, touched by it. There is a message inside this concept.

By all means, handle all the money. It does not mean that after that, we have got no more volunteers to count money. You say, "Wait I count, count, count, I become worldlier". The symbolism is this, you need to be aware so that you do not let the frequencies slowly eat you up, which means if you spend your life thinking about money. Budgeting is good. I budget, I always cut the coat according to the cloth and always economise according to what I have. It is important to be responsible, it is important to budget, it is important to live within your means. However, too much of it makes you unclean, when you begin to think, "How do I spend the money and what I am going to do"? That is too much. There is a line which we are not aware of. There is a line.

Until Jesus began to show me His life, I said, "Lord, You really kept from the world" because Jesus was teaching me not just about holiness. You see, this revival is on holiness but in holiness, Jesus was still teaching me about being clean and unclean. Remember when Jesus washed Peter's feet? He said, "*He who is washed is already clean*". Then He said, "*But not all of you are clean*", implying Judas Iscariot. Then Jesus turned around and said, "*This you will do to one another*".

### *The message of humility*

Besides the message of humility, there is a message about every time you go out into the world, you must wash your feet. That means every time you have gone to work, when you come back, do not just work late and come back tired, with the frequencies of the world still in you. That is why you cannot ascend to heaven. You are like a chicken that has forgotten how to fly, only good enough for Kentucky Fried Chicken. Have you seen chickens that can fly? Most of the Kentucky Fried Chickens are raised as factory hens. If you let those chickens out, they can only walk, walk, cannot fly high but if you go to some kampong somewhere, some village somewhere, *oh*, those chickens can fly to the tree because they are a different type of chickens (they have *chickenealogy*). They are bred out there and their wings have been well used and if you chased those chickens, you will be surprised that the chickens go to the tree. Never thought chickens can fly to the tree? Of course, they cannot fly like the eagle, but they still can fly.

When we are in this earth, we need to realise there are some things you can touch and handle but not too much. To overdo will give you a frequency of the world. Then it will be hard to ascend, to go up.

John 17:14, *“I have given them Your word; (And He did not say the devil, He did not say the fallen angels, He did not say the demons; He said He has given the word to them. Did you notice that?) and the world has hated them because they are not of the world, just as I am not of the world”*. Does the world hate you? *Oh*, the world loves you, you are too close to it. I did not say that you purposely make the world hate you. You know, you stand out there and say, “Come out world, hate me, fulfil this scripture”. I did not ask you to do that, same as do not go out and purposely look for persecution.

If you cannot differentiate between you and the world, you are of the world. In fact, there is a song (very famous), they always sing “We are the world...”. It is used every time when they need fund raising or some campaign somewhere, “We are the world...”. You know, that is not our song. Definitely not our song. We are citizens of heaven. Not that we do not get involved in things of this earth, we only get involved in as much as it is necessary and that is all, not too much.

It is just like when people ask me; “Do you buy insurance”? You think I am so spiritual that I do not buy insurance? No, I need car insurance. Then some insurance is necessary, so I buy it when it is necessary, when it is compulsory. There was a particular trip that was very funny. I forgot, one of those trips somewhere, you know, when you buy an airline ticket, they will ask you whether you want insurance or not, and it depends on the culture you grow up in. You see, from a third world country, getting a ticket is already good enough but when you grow up in a first world country, the insurance and components are part of it, but I do not have to buy it. Of course, when you buy your ticket with a credit card, it already comes with insurance, so you try to minimise your expenditure but sometimes for practical reasons, when I sense that there is a possible case of some delay, then I will just add a little insurance, so that it covers me for that. So far, it has not happened, but sometimes, occasionally. So, do I buy insurance? Yes, but I do not buy insurance excessively. Of course, some people who sell insurance are going to come after me and say, “Pastor, it is our livelihood you are talking about”. So sorry, folks. Anyway, the people of the world need lots of insurance.

Here is a little joke about insurance, about those who are selling insurance. Would you have sold insurance to Jesus? Would Jesus have bought insurance? No, Jesus is the insurance! Okay, He does not need an underwriter. The Father actually underwrites Him, the Father insures Jesus.

### *Remain balanced*

In everything, there is balance. There is such a thing as too much. Like for example, how many clothes do you all have in your cupboard? Do you need too many, too few? How many pairs of shoes do you wear? Too many, too few? Now, the definition of too many and too few is different for everyone. I could go to your house and say, “What are these one hundred pairs of shoes doing here”? You say, “This is just nice”. Okay, fine, I always give a little bit of allowance for ladies.

There was once a dinner conversation in Australia. Someone was commenting on a sister, “You know, she bought one more bag”. He comes from a lineage of shopkeepers. Every time we go out together, I would say, “You are in charge of the bill”. Everyone pays to him and he would count by the cents. So, I say, “ladies, give some allowance”. How many colours are there in a rainbow? Seven plus a few shades. Their bags are part of their dressing and their shoes are also part of their clothing. I wear black shoes most of the time because it matches

with any colour. I have got a lot of spare shoes that are still wrapped up because the design goes off, so when I buy, I say, okay, this is going to run out, once I get used to this type of thing, so I keep it there, but I only open two at a time, one for official wear and one for unofficial wear. I wear this same thing when I go out for meetings and all that. I notice, of course, my dressing is different from some of you. Some of you might have only one flip-flop for everything. There is such a thing as too much and this is the wonderful thing. As you grow in the Lord, you need less and less. Once a year, just go through your clothes, see those things that you do not wear, that is also a reminder for me to do it, just give it away. Or if you need hard cash, sell it or whatever. In John 17:16, Jesus says, *“They are not of the world, just as I am not of the world”*. He treats the world as something separate.

You know, the world hates. The world naturally hates. This has not happened much in the twentieth century, as Christians get more and more worldly. They are so worldly now, they get into a lot of worldly things, but the day is coming, even in America, the day is coming when it will be unlawful to preach the gospel. Yes, in America, close to the time of the Civil War, during the Civil War. So, the time is coming that way and we need to be bold in what God asks us to do. This is just to illustrate the area of worldliness about how unworldly we are to be, and the world is a separate thing, like we are witnessing to the world, we are sent out there into the world. There are many other places in John 17 that are worldly.

#### *Do not worry*

Let us look at Colossians 3:1-2, *“If then you were raised with Christ, seek those things which are above, where Christ is, sitting at the right hand of God. Set your mind on things above, not on things on the earth”*. This is in tune with Matthew 6, where Jesus says, *“Do not worry about food, clothing and shelter”*. He mentions *“do not worry”* so many times. He says, *“Do not be like the Gentiles”*. Do not worry, worry. He says, *“Do not be like the people of the world”*. We are different. We learn to give thanks for whatever we have. If you live in a little rented room, praise the Lord. If you live in your own apartment, praise the Lord. If you live in a more upmarket apartment, praise the Lord. If you have or you do not have, praise the Lord.

You see, heavenly people are not affected. These are the qualities of heavenly people. Number one, in Heavenly people are not affected by what they have and what they do not have on the earth. They are heavenly, so it does not affect them, it does not make them

anxious, it does not make them cry, weep, desire, moan. Must fast 40 days so that you have a better apartment, wasting of energy. You cannot fast 40 days? Can fast 40 days, but in the 40 days spend 5 minutes on getting the other apartment, but all the rest of 40 days that you may grow and be like Jesus. You see, how people waste energy in the wrong thing? They go on crusades that waste energy and we have got only X amount of energy and X amount of time. It is important to keep this focus. You are not affected, and you do not get emotional. Do not get emotional when the meteorite accidentally comes and hits your beloved car. In the first place, how dare you use “beloved” for cars and if you cry because your beloved car got wrecked, you are too emotionally attached to it. If you cry when you lose a place to stay, you are too affected by the world. You have gone too emotionally into the world.

### *Remove emotional attachment*

There are certain things that you live free from them. This is the way we are teaching you: Live free from emotional attachment to the things of this world. If you have them, fine; if you do not have them, fine; praise the Lord. Your happiness does not depend on those things. Basically, you must release. Let go of your emotions. I did not say let go legally, I did not say let go physically. You can still hold on to your money or whatever assets you have, but please let go emotionally and that is the reason why you could not live in heaven because every time you try to fly, when God wants to bring you, you fall back to the earth. You wonder what that is. Then you try again, you pray, you fast, the heavenly frequency comes that makes you want to vibrate, change to a specific gravity, then you vibrate. Then something pulls you back, you wonder what that is, and you cannot see the string that keeps pulling you back. You know why, it is invisible to you. You ask how can the world be seen? No, because of camouflage, you are so used to seeing the world as neutral, so you cannot see the string that ties you to the world. Until you become heavenly, you can see the umbilical cords that people tie to the world.

You know the worst-case scenario? There are even departed dead humans who are so tied to the earth. When they die, they do not deserve hell yet, they are the intermediate realm ones, they are still bound to the earth. Some of them are actually still walking around, going to work, coming back, going to their house, coming back. Their house has already been sold (three/four owners) and they still think it is their house and they still come and go back, and they still go to their place of work. You know, they feel like they are in a dream. The thing they forget is they never eat. So, in the ghost month, maybe they feast a little while, then they

remember to eat or whatever. They are so worldly, when they die, they are still stuck on the earth. They are called earthbound spirits. They are not demons. If you have got spiritual eyes and the Lord opens your eyes, you will see them once in a while. For some of them, time has passed, one hundred years have passed. In fact, in the United States White House, when we were there, I saw three, but there was one (I forgot what year, I think it was in the 1600s) of their Presidents, who died many years ago, now it is the number forty-five, so he would be around, probably number seventeen. He is so earthbound, he is still there. He does not deserve hell, but he is still there, hanging around the White House. So, there are a lot of earthbound spirits that sometimes I see, and I ask, “what is this guy doing here”? The angels are trying to get them to go to school in the spiritual realm and they are still not going. So earthbound. If you think there are such beings like that, how much more when they are still alive, the state and the condition of people. We need to be detached emotionally from the world. The world does not stir you emotionally. Your happiness does not depend on that. That is the first thing about being heavenly, you are not affected, and you do not pursue those things on this earth.

Some thought when they die, they either go to heaven or hell. They say, “what do you mean by earthbound”? *Ah*, because the spiritual boundary crosses back. Where is hell? Hell is inside the earth, right? So, from the earth, all the way to the heaven, there are spiritual planes. They are at the earth plane level. It is of two dimensions. We humans are here on the earth and there is a dimension of the spirit. So, between here to hell are many, many dimensions also. There is an outskirts of hell area also. I call it different dimensions.

### *The energy of emotions*

Remember our soul has mind, emotions and will. Those three things so do not waste them on the world. This world is a passing world. Remember what the Bible calls this world? James calls it a mist that passes away soon. Everything in this world is a mist, they are not real. Do not waste emotions on that. The energy of emotions can give to something more precious, your loved ones. They are more precious than silver and gold. To love another person, to love your family, to love your loved ones, to love your disciples, to love those whom you are helping, to love people, that is a better investment for your love. You must love. I always say the world got it wrong. The world loves things and uses people; we love people and use things.

Things are to be used. When it is not used, you just offer it for use. Like on Sunday, you know, I have got a spare guitar, Mark plays the guitar, that is my personal guitar. The church has its own guitar, but I say, “no, it is sitting there, it is an honour for me to see it being used for worship”. Things are to be used, things are to be offered to the Lord to be used. When things are used, people are loved. That is the correct way to invest your emotions. You can tell whether people are worldly or not in some of these areas. There is a detachment. Heavenly people are different from the people of the world. They have a detachment from this world.

Second point: Heavenly people have to have heavenly encounters. It has to be as real to you as here on the earthly plane. Heaven is real and is interacting in your life right now, and especially now. God sends His energising, with more energising, there are more heavenly things intersecting on this earth. There are several other points that are there. One of those which I mentioned, that there are things that are invisible that are more valuable than things that are visible, and heavenly people can differentiate that, like the concepts of love, care or kind words spoken.

Do you know that in heaven when you are there, even when you are out in things you did not know, God is watching you or God is recording your life all the time? When you are out, let us say in the MRT or when you are there, and you are queuing and then you are rude to someone just because he is too close. All those things are not bad examples. Then when you are just being kind to somebody or you help a person that nobody is helping, maybe the person stumbles and falls and you go to help. There was one time when I was in the MRT and then this person fainted, so the natural thing was I quickly grabbed the person’s bag because it was going all over the place. Good thing another young man was also there. Since the young man was doing the job, I did not intervene, I just held the person’s things, otherwise the things would be all scattered. Then when finally, the person got up and sat on the chair, I passed him his things. Small little thing is important because people are more important than things.

Here is the thing: Your journey is as important as the destination. Change your life. Our life is always so goal-orientated. You know, it is good to be goal-orientated. If you know me, you know I am very goal-orientated, but my goals are spiritual goals. You never hear me talking about having a goal of what kind of car I drive, what kind of house I live in and all those

things. You never hear me talk about that. Those are not my goals. Those are fringe benefits. Of course, you know, as the church grows and all that, as things prosper, you know, you have a reasonably good car, but I have already made my choice. I definitely will not have top, top, top of the range. So goodbye Lamborghini, goodbye Mercedes, goodbye BMW. I am quite happy with a Volvo. Or when they invent electric cars, I might be interested in those things. We might have our own car factory next time, of course, with six million people but it is important for us to understand that when a person is very goal-orientated, he can lose sight of everything. Too goal-orientated becomes selfish. Remember, the goal is the destination; the journey is as important.

You want to reach the destination doing the right thing. If you keep doing the wrong thing to reach the destination and you finally reach the destination by hook or by crook, when you reach the destination by all the words and terrible things, guess what you become? You become a devil. Each time you do something bad, you become more devilish, finally, congratulations, you have got to your destination, but you also have become a devil. You want to reach your destination and become an angel. By doing all the right things and then you reach your destination because you are being transformed. Remember my first question that I asked you: Why did God choose Judas Iscariot to be the treasurer? Judas was only interested in himself. He was a typical self-absorbed person. The thing about this world is that this world has got a lot of typical self-absorbed people who are successful, who write books, who conduct seminars and they teach more self-absorbed people, because people are caught in this rat race. Do not join the rat race, because if you join it, there is no way out. They will keep changing your goal.

Have you noticed that the computers keep on improving, the power keeps on doubling, but the price is always the same? You know why? They still want to sell at that price even though they can sell you the old one, and they have got the old one at the old price. They want the profit margin that is there. So, it is always a thousand something. When will the computer ever become \$10? Will it ever? I doubt it. Will it be as cheap as buying an apple? No, because they try to keep that range.

In the same way, it is a rat race. They keep changing the goal. Once when you come out, they say, you know, your goal is to have a house, a car. Then after you have a house and a car, you want a better house and a better car. Then after a better house and a better car, no good, better

house, better car, better suburb. They keep on changing. The rat race keeps on going around and round until dying also die still chasing something.

There was one particular incident, when I was a pastor in Malaysia at one time and we had conducted many miracle services, many funerals, many weddings, but there was one funeral that I did not conduct. One of the members' relatives (a distant relative) told me this story, a true story. So, it is about a third witness's account. He said one of their relations died, and they were asking what kind of funeral service they could or could not do. They said this person died and he was not really a rich person, generally wealthy but not rich-rich, probably middle-class rich. He was dying, but you know what this person said with his last breath? In Hokkien - "*Lui, lui, lui*" which means "money, money, money"! Up to his last breath he still wanted more money.

Think about all the multi-billionaires, you know, if you are a billionaire, you cannot spend enough today. More than enough. Still want more money? What is that for? To change the world, to be known as the changer of the world. Why? They are after fame. Something of the rat race that is re-invented for you to go after. In the first place, you are not a rat. Do not join the rat race. We have got another race, the one in Hebrews 12:1. It is called the sheep race. How does the sheep race work? The sheep race does not work by all of us running against each other. The sheep race is how the sheep are changed and transformed during the journey. The journey is as important to them.

So, detach ourselves from the people of the world but what about people, for example, our family members who do not want to walk in God's way but still walk in disruptive ways? In the Scripture, Jesus mother and brothers came to look for Him and Jesus said something like '*According to those who do the will of My Father is My mother and My brothers*', something like that. Also, He said that *he who loves father or mother more than Him is not worthy of Him*. So, how do we actually detach from this kind of thing, especially when our family members involved? In Psalm 1 there is also for family members and non-family members, which means that if my family members are worldly, sit in the seat of the scornful, I will not fellowship with them much.

I come from a family of six children. My elder sister has gone home to be with the Lord. My father has also gone home to be with the Lord. Some of them now have got extended families

and all that. When I went into the ministry, I did not have much time to spend for family. I understand the Bible says “Honour your father and mother” that kind of thing and I gave them whatever honour I could, but I have the other siblings who are closer to them or sitting in the same seating. So, I get close to my family depending on how spiritual they are. Of course, by now, all of them are born again but still some of them, when they get family issues, when they fight about mom’s money, I say goodbye, no time for those things. You guys go and fight, I do not want to fight, I am not even concerned. I will put in a few words of advice and all that. On my last trip when I went back, I saw my brother, so I gave him a good talk. I said, “Look, family is more important than money. So, do not get angry at this sister because of this and that. Family is more important than all those things”. I would minimise my contact with my family if my own family were worldly. You do what you call “minimum necessary” so you know it is there but then, after a certain age, when you have got your own family, it is understood that everyone lives separately. I have done my share, the last time when I used to bring all of them together for a meal, chit chat together whenever I could but I will apply Psalm 1 also to family.

It sounds cruel, but Jesus made that statement and Mary was not angry at Jesus. Mary was just new to Jesus’ concept. Remember, it was made in the early part of Jesus’ ministry and so here was her son Jesus, she loved him very much, and then there was this crowded house, most likely in Capernaum, and of course to get in, they just said, “Please tell Jesus that we are here”. However, Jesus was in the midst of ministry. Jesus’ one statement – “*Who are my mother? Who are my brethren?*”. He says, “*Those who do the will of God*”. Then He looked at the disciples and said, “*These are My mother and My brothers*”. That one statement changed Mary. She understood. When it comes to God, God comes first. She cannot use her blood relationship with Jesus or relationship with Jesus to enter into any area of the ministry-wise, which you will find in our church it is the same thing.

Not all senior pastors do this though. When the church grows, a lot of them, their families, their loved ones, all carry weight and when the church grows, they put everybody, it is “*kakinang*” (meaning all in the family) and the Board comprises all family members. Looks like a family dynasty. However, because of my principles, if my children do not have the calling, they are not involved. They will have their place. I will be a good father to them and that is it. Like I used to tell people: my wife was not a senior pastor so do not bring all the problems through her, thinking that by going to her, you can come to me. You will get a big rebuke

from me. Then you will learn your lesson and you know, people are happier that way. They say, praise the Lord, he is running the church because he is anointed. Otherwise, in some churches, the wife is running the church, not the husband and you would not want me to make any church decision based on something that I discussed, based on the family thing. A church decision has to be based solely on church principles and Bible principles. Once people can trust, that is it. It is a different style of running, different leadership that comes forth. So, family is important, and you need to fulfil God's covenant to do with them. I will make sure that somebody is taking care of my mother there. Is she being cared for? Does she have enough? All those things. Basics, but still Psalm 1 is higher.

Involvements with friends are the same thing. With friendship, the closer you come to God, you might lose some friends. Some friends just do not want to hang out with you, especially those who like to go out and pub on Friday night, when you say, "Sorry, now we have Friday all-night prayer. You go out there, you get drunk with wine; we here, we get drunk with spiritual wine, so different type of wine. So, this is our spiritual pub, which is a different thing, we hang around differently". You might lose some friends, but you will gain some new ones, you will establish new ones in the Lord.

It is a hard thing. At first, it was hard for my family to accept it, but they accepted it in the end. Sometimes I pulled a bit more distant, especially when I noticed all the negative things coming up. I pulled a bit more distant, so I used to visit about once in 3 months. Then when I hear all these things, I say, okay, do not disturb my time, until those things die. So, I will wait 12 months, things like that, according to their walk with the Lord which is there.

You remember my first question, right? Why did God appoint Judas to be the treasurer? Behind the "why", there is a lot of teaching. He was training Judas, He was not interested in the job. Money, you can have any time. Even if Judas stole all His money, He still had more money coming in. So, money was like nothing to Jesus although we need to be a good steward, do not go overboard but He was detached emotionally.

### *Impartations*

My next question: Remember the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, that when Adam and Eve ate of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, something happened. When Adam and Eve ate of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil and they realised that they were

naked and all those things, the knowledge of evil came. Did the knowledge of evil come from the fruit they ate or from the breaking of God's commandment, which has nothing to do with the fruit that they ate? In other words, the fruit of the tree actually imparted knowledge, right? Tree of knowledge imparts knowledge; tree of life imparts life. So, you expect that when they ate, something was imparted. Did the impartation come from the tree itself, that realisation that they were naked, the knowledge of sin? Or did it come from, they remembered, "Ah, God told me not to do this"? Answer: Breaking the law because when they broke the law, they lost their covering. Okay, when they broke the law, they lost their covering. Then, did the tree give them anything? Zero. Now, let us say nobody touched the tree or anything, an angel came and ate from the tree. After all, God never said that the angels could not eat. An angel came and ate from the tree. Would that tree have imparted something good? In other words, was the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, good? It is a good tree. It must be good because God made it. What did the good tree give? It would have given them knowledge, right? It is the tree of knowledge after all. Their eyes were opened. You see, the tree opened their eyes, but their eyes were not supposed to be opened yet.

In Genesis 1, when God made everything that was there, in verse 29, this is after God made Adam and Eve (in verse 27), so it is recorded two times, "*And God said, 'See, I have given you every herb that yields seed which is on the face of all the earth, and every tree whose fruit yields seed; to you it shall be for food'*". Do you notice the word "every tree"? Then in verse 30, "*Also, to every beast of the earth, to every bird of the air, and to everything that creeps on the earth, in which there is life, I have given every green herb for food'; and it was so*". Especially in verse 29, can you see the word "every tree" (*every tree whose fruit yields seed; to you it shall be for food*)? Looks like God let them actually eat every tree.

Then in Genesis 2, when God made man, in verses 16-17, this is before the woman came, "*And the LORD God commanded the man, saying, 'Of every tree of the garden you may freely eat; but of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil...'*". Now, when you contrast Genesis 1 and Genesis 2, here is the thing: In chapter 1, did God say they can eat of every tree? Yes. Then in chapter 2, He says "*every tree... but...*", did something happen between chapters 1 and 2? God did say every tree in chapter 1, every tree that bears fruit is food for you because of this, there is a wrong theory that comes, there are people who do research and they try to give the answer.

### *Wrong theories*

One of the wrong theories, wrong one, remember this is the wrong one, is that God actually made Adam and the woman from the dust. Then that woman rebelled and then the second one (in chapter 2), God took from Adam's side, who then became Eve. They called the first one "Lilith". So, there was a Lilith before there was an Eve and those who try to prove it look for the legend and the mystical explanation of the Jews. The Jews do have a little story about Lilith. You read about Lilith, that she was created before Eve. All these are nonsensical, wrong!

However, we are still left with this thing. You have to explain about that tree. Why in chapter 1 can eat all, but in chapter 2 can eat all but one? Something happened, the devil infiltrated the garden. How? The serpent was taught by the devil. I described in another teaching what the serpent looks like? The serpent does not have a nose (it has two holes for the nose), its head has no hair and its tongue is blackish, forked but it is like a humanoid, it has got two arms, two legs, and it walks. That serpent was an infiltration from the rebellion of Satan.

What was Satan doing when God re-created the earth? Remember this earth was his headquarters, he was watching, correct? The Bible does not tell us a lot of things that the devil did. It only gives a clue, suddenly there is something in Ezekiel 28. If you do not have Ezekiel 28 and Isaiah 14, you would not know the background of the devil. It is all hidden.

Do you know where we get the story of one-third rebellion? Not from Genesis. From Revelation 12 where it is the only scripture that mentions one-third and yet it is very well established in Christian doctrine but that is where the scriptures are. You see, when you study a doctrine, you need to know where the doctrine came from, the history of the doctrine, which verses support it and all those things.

Now, the devil was watching all those things. He was looking for a way to infiltrate and he was not allowed to go in as a fallen angel or send his fallen angel or send his *kaki tangan* (accomplice). The devil took whatever was from the fallen world (creatures that had already fallen, fell with them), put something up and when God put all the animals in the kingdom, the devil put his foot in. So, it is like when God created all the animals and all that, of course God could have stopped him, God knew what he was doing. The devil, you know, while God was creating all the creatures there, the devil came and then slowly went and put one inside,

the serpent was Satan's creation. Satan could not create. Satan sort of twisted it, infiltrated and this was what happened. Of course, this part is extra-Biblical, but it does not contradict the Bible. It actually explains the difference between Genesis 1 and 2 and 3. The serpent ate from that tree of knowledge. Of course, it could eat the fruit, God says it is for all the animals. The snake did not belong to the file; it is like Satan grew it in. In fact, when Adam saw the serpent, he was like, in Malay we say, *terkejut* (shocked) for a while. He was stunned, *eh*, where did this animal come from, and he knew it had nothing to do with him because God does not make a horrible creature like that. However, because it is still part of God's original fallen world and all those things, God still controls it and it becomes the snake today. That is why some of the leftover things and all that (like cockroaches, insects, the lower things), God just allows them to function. Heaven does not have them. They only exist on this fallen earth.

So, after the serpent ate that, God warned Adam: That tree, do not eat because something changed in that tree when the serpent ate of it. Something changed in the tree. Something changed when the serpent touched it. God said, "Not for you" because..., now, God cannot create evil, so originally it was the tree of the knowledge of good. Then the filthy hand went into it and the serpent ate of it. Whether the serpent went in like somebody eating durian. Have you seen people spit while eating durian? So, whatever thing, it changed the tree and it changed the serpent.

Before the fall, Adam was supposed to guard the Garden of Eden. God gave him a word – "*tend it*"? After all, there was nothing that needed to tend, let it grow by itself behind the word "tend" is the word "watch". He was to watch over it. Adam has not seen evil before, that is why he could not recognise the serpent. When he saw it, he *terkejut* (shocked), He did not know what to do with this guy. He said, "I am not supposed to name it, but I do not know why it is walking around". Do not forget, in those days, they all had open vision. He saw a lot of angels come and go, come and go, even God was walking around. So, when this funny creature walked around, he said, "*Huh*, interesting". He continued his work. After that, God said, "Do not eat". That explains the little difference, and why the tree is also now in Genesis 2 called "*good and evil*". Evil has touched it. It is not meant for the devil and the rebellion, but evil has touched it and changed it. So, it is good to add the '*Do Not Touch*', which means it is good that Eve does not go around and say, "*Wah*, what nice leaves". Actually, it has very nice-looking leaves.

So now the creation story is slightly different. You thought that God just creates, then He puts, after He has created everything, He puts one tree in a place where Adam can notice it, Eve can notice it, and every time they pass by, God says “Remember, from that one: cannot eat; all those: can eat; from this one: cannot eat”. It is only placed to test them. It sounds a little bit small for God though, but there is a story behind it and all this, you can get it from the heavenly archives. Go to heaven and search it for yourself.

### *How to access heaven*

Okay, I have got to conclude on how to access heaven. Now, heaven intersects on this earth. In the olden days, before open vision was removed, humans could access and see heavenly angels to and fro. All this thing happened but as sin nature began to take over, the lineage of Adam after Noah’s time began to see less and less but if you look into your Bible and we have done teachings on this before, God still reserves a way in which we access heaven, even in our fallen nature. It would not be fair if God did not give us enough tools, correct? It is a very simple thing called “dreams”. Dreams have always been ordained because, what is a dream? A dream is a set of thoughts and impressions that can be caused by REM sleep. There are two types of dreams. There is a dream that can be caused by activity, that is, it is just your thoughts processing and the thing about frequencies. There is a frequency when you have got REM sleep. REM stands for Rapid Eye Movement. That is when you are actually dreaming. You are seeing images.

The images can come (in Ecclesiastes 5:7) from a multitude of dreams, *“For in the multitude of dreams and many words there is also vanity...”*. Also, in Ecclesiastes 5:3, *“For a dream comes through much activity, And a fool’s voice is known by his many words”*. In other words, the words are useless, so the dreams are more like activities of your daily life. It creeps into your dreams and is like the brain processing all the images that have been downloading into your life. I usually call these dreams “soul dreams” and I usually say they are still important. If you remember a dream, even if it is from this sector, it is important because if you process a lot of soul dreams in that area, it shows where your soul is. It shows that those images are seen from your soul side. It is still important to analyse your soul, but not the messages from God.

God says in Job 33:15-18, *“In a dream, in a vision of the night, When deep sleep falls upon men, While slumbering on their beds, Then He opens the ears of men, And seals their*

*instruction. (You see, heaven still gives you daily instructions). In order to turn man from his deed, And conceal pride from man, He keeps back his soul from the Pit, And his life from perishing by the sword*". Now we check if this verse is true or not. Yes, because outside of the Bible, in the Book of Jasher and some of the Books of Adam and Eve and the early writings, these also cover the life of Abraham. Abraham was a dreamer of dreams. A lot of his messages – he got from God. Some are visions. He just heard a voice, sometimes he saw a light, but most of the time he had a dream. Before he entered Egypt, you know why he was frightened? Because he had a dream. He had a dream about some trees and how a certain tree was chopped down and a certain tree was spared, and the dream interpretation was the tree that was chopped down was him and the other tree was his wife. That is why he became frightened of being killed. So, those are in the Apocryphal file.

Here in the Bible, Genesis 20:3, God came to Abimelech in a dream to warn him and said, *"Indeed you are a dead man because of the woman whom you have taken, for she is a man's wife"*. Actually, that was Sarah. God was protecting Abimelech through a dream. Fair enough, God did and then Abimelech said that he did not know. If he knew, he would not have done it. God said, "That is why I am telling you now". You see, there is some goodness in him, so God spoke to him. God said (verse 6): *"Yes, I know that you did this in the integrity of your heart. (Notice He did exactly what Job 33 says)? For I also withheld you from sinning..."*. Now the dream was telling him, and he remembered the dream.

Then you all remember Jacob? He had a dream. Genesis 31:10, *"And it happened, at the time when the flocks conceived, that I lifted my eyes and saw in a dream, and behold, the rams which leaped upon the flocks were streaked, speckled, and gray-spotted"*. He had a dream about his animals and what to do about them and then in verse 11, *"Then the Angel of God spoke to me in a dream, saying, 'Jacob.' And I said, 'Here I am'"*. Then when Laban was going after Jacob when he just took off and ran, because Laban had bad intentions, he was going to be fierce and maybe violent, Laban was not a good guy, but yet God said (Job 33 – God will warn them), in verse 24: *"But God had come to Laban the Syrian in a dream by night, and said to him, 'Be careful that you speak to Jacob neither good nor bad'"*, Just do not cross the line.

Then you all know Genesis 37:9, Joseph had a dream. Then Pharaoh had a dream. Why did God give Pharaoh a dream? Because the lives of many were at stake; in fact, not just for

Egypt because of Egypt, all the surrounding lands were also saved from the famine. You see, God is interested in lives and people. He made people. Don't you think that today where people are in power or position, if there is some goodness in their heart, God will still try to tell them, heaven will send messages to them and try to direct them in the right path, how much more we who are believers? Then you have the butler and the baker. They each had their dream – one dreamt that he was going to die; one dreamt that he was going to be released and that miraculous interpretation was what set Joseph out for the future. So, there are a lot of dreams all the time in the Bible, besides Pharaoh's dreams.

In Judges 7:13, Gideon, besides testing God with all those things, he also heard a man telling a dream. Also, God said (Numbers 12:6, when He rebuked Miriam and Aaron), *“Then He said, ‘Hear now My words: If there is a prophet among you, I, the LORD, make Myself known to him in a vision; I speak to him in a dream’”*.

Then 1 Kings 3:5, after Solomon offered a thousand burnt offerings, Solomon was not really a spiritual man, he was more like a man of the world, that kind of thing, but he had a heart for God when he was young. He became a more and more worldly man. You see, Solomon is another typical example: “Do not have too much of the world”. Solomon should have only had one wife. Why did he have to add nine hundred and ninety-nine to make it one thousand? He had seven hundred wives and three hundred concubines (one thousand of them). I can tell you: It is a very noisy house. Why must Solomon have so many horses? So much worldly things and these are the things that turned him away. He was not detached from the world but when he was young, his heart was for God. It says in 1 Kings 3:5, God appeared to him in a dream by night. That was how he got his wisdom, in a dream.

Of course, Nebuchadnezzar (in Daniel's time) had a dream, and you know some of the visions that Daniel had. It was called visions of the night and it also says in a dream. Then there was Joseph, who was an adoptive father of Jesus, had four dreams. In dreams, the angel spoke to him. Pontius Pilate's wife had a dream that Pontius Pilate was in a dangerous position. At that time if he did the wrong thing, he would be condemned for the injustice in eternity. Imagine if you were sitting on the judgment seat of Jesus. Why do you think Pontius Pilate suddenly wanted to release Jesus? You think he is a good man? You read the history of Pontius Pilate. He was not a good guy. His wife had a dream, the message of the dream was the man he was judging is innocent and Pontius Pilate took water, in front of them (which

heaven records for eternity, otherwise Pontius Pilate would have been gone) and washed his hands in public and he said, “The blood of this man (because he knew he was innocent) is on you (on the Jews)”. So, the curse of sentencing Jesus to death came upon the Jews. That is why they suffered so much. A dream that his wife had and warned him because the case of Jesus was all over, if they have papers, it would be all over in the internet, and also in Twitter, and in Facebook. It was big news of that time.

The Bible says when the Holy Spirit comes, in Acts 2:17, old men shall dream dreams; young men shall see visions. That is why talked about the frequencies because I was trying to give you something tangible and practical that can help tune you to this simple level, elementary level I call it, of contact point with the spiritual world. How? When your conscious mind ticks, then you are dreaming but now this is to help you remember dreams. Listening to the frequency or that level of music, it will produce certain dreams and will help you to remember.

#### *God's communications*

So, do you hear heaven? Yes, you do. This is the elementary way He speaks to the whole planet now. You see, when humans lost open vision, God must replace with something else, dreams. We have more than dreams. We have a lot of other things like the voice of the Holy Spirit and all those things but let us not neglect this most elementary thing: Start a book to record your dreams. Or your impressions that God gives to you like thoughts, the revelations. Sometimes it is not through seeing, sometimes it is a feeling. Like when you pray, you feel somebody on your right and you feel some message coming in. As you begin to journal and write these things down, God knows you are receiving the messages.

You know, nowadays when they send emails, which I disable on my email anyway, so no point doing that on mine, when you send an email, sometimes there is a way where your email can send itself back, to know whether the email has been read or not, returned/received kind of thing, so it is automatic, but normally I disable mine, so if you send, you would not know but for most people, it tells them that it has been read and when. God knows that you are getting the message when you start writing it down. Also pray that you receive the interpretation of dreams, which is a gift that God gave to Daniel.

## Chapter 14...

### Renewing of the Mind – Part 1

Romans 8:6-8, “*For to be carnally minded is death, but to be spiritually minded is life and peace. Because the carnal mind is enmity against God; for it is not subject to the law of God, nor indeed can be. So then, those who are in the flesh cannot please God*”. It says something about the mind here, that the carnal mind (in verse 7) is enmity against God. The word “enmity”, in direct opposition and hatred even. It just cannot be together. There is nothing you can do about it – *it is not subject to the law of God, nor indeed can be*. Now, if God has given up on the carnal mind, obviously we should not place faith in the carnal mind. The Bible says there is nothing you can do about it. It just has to be got rid of; it just must be removed.

Then we look at Romans 12:2, especially, “*And do not be conformed to this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind...*”, which is the word “*nous*” here. The Bible says that there is nothing you can do about the carnal mind, and yet you have got to renew your mind. How are we going to do that? Okay, tell me what you all know: *by the renewing of your mind*. Let us have some answers. I am sure you all have read the scriptures many times and you know in your Christian life that you need to renew your mind. How many times preachers have preached to renew your mind, renew your mind, renew your mind and we know that we need to renew our mind but how is that processed and what do we do about the renewing of our mind? How do you all renew your mind? Our soul has a mind. Remember, spirit, soul and body. Our body also has a mind of its own. So, spirit has a mind, soul has a mind, and body has a mind. Now, do we get rid of the soul mind? Let us make it clearer. Do we or do we not get rid of the soul mind? The soul mind is still there so what is the carnal mind then? Let me show you in Romans 8:7, “*Because the carnal mind is enmity against God; (You see the word “against”?) for it is not subject to the law of God, nor indeed can be*”. That means it is impossible for the carnal mind to be trained. You can whip it and whip it and whip it, it still will not change.

So, based on the context of Romans 8, which says that the carnal mind, I know it talks about the spiritual mind which can be in line with the mind of Christ, but we are not worried about

that because the spiritual mind is in line with the mind of Christ. We have no problems with that. The problem we have is Romans 8 to Romans 12. In Romans 8, you see, here is the contrast, Romans 8:7 says it cannot be subject to the law of God, nor can it ever be; then Romans 12:2 tells us to renew our mind. Can you see that, *renewing of your mind*?

### *Defining the carnal mind*

How do those scriptures work together if one chapter says, “it is no good” and one chapter says “renew”? Now, obviously when it says “renew”, it is replacing something. So, how do those two chapters work together, because they are in your Bible (one in chapter 8 and one in chapter 12)? The reason we cannot answer properly is because we have not defined where and what is the carnal mind. Without defining what is the carnal mind, now, how can we do renewal or get rid of it if we do not define what is the carnal mind? You see the problem, we have not defined the carnal mind. To define the carnal mind, we need to express whether the carnal mind can be influenced by the body, but it can also function on its own. It can have inputs from other souls around us. We can read philosophies, read wrong teachings, read things that are against God’s Word. Then that is not being influenced by the body, it is being influenced by teachings that we received from outside. So, soul can also influence soul. Definitely the carnal mind is not in the spirit.

Okay, there are people out in the world, they have souls. Is their soul mind carnal? All unbelievers have a carnal mind in their soul. When you are born again, you are taking up slightly, maybe 1% from the spirit part touching the soul. Then as you grow, it could be 20% or 25% onwards - renewed. Paul was very specific in certain things. He says that sin is in the body. That is 100%, Romans 7, you cannot run away from that, but the carnal mind is not in the body. You know why, because the decision-making is the soul, although the body has a will, the body has emotions (these are in the background). Here is the thing: Sin is in the body, but the carnal mind is somewhere in the soul. The body mind functions at the sub-conscious level, like your body is smart enough to know what to eat, what not to eat, so when you eat the wrong thing, your body reacts.

Pregnant women have a sub-conscious body mind functioning. That is why pregnant women have urges to eat unusual things sometimes. I read a real case of how a pregnant woman started to have a desire to eat clay and did not know why. Then when the scientists tried to understand, they realised, when they checked her body, that she was lacking in a certain

mineral. The body knows, the body has an analysis inside that says “okay, that is the mineral I need” but of course it is wrong. You should not be eating clay, but you can see the body does not know better. It is just sending a signal – give me mineral, give me mineral and then the side effect is, sub-consciously, you start having a craving. Many times, when pregnant women crave certain food, their natural soul mind does not know what is in the food.

Sometimes you know what is inside because you read an article that analyses what is in avocado, what is in a banana, what is in all these things but let us say you lack potassium. Your body knows which food has got potassium. You do not know unless you read but when the body tastes it, straightaway it knows. That is the power of the body mind. It straightaway can analyse everything but it has no way to teach you and tell you. It is just like instinct. The body has a mind and knowledge of its own, has an ability to react.

To help you, if we put the carnal mind inside the soul, there is a Romans 8 hanging, that it cannot, nothing can be done with it, it needs to be cut off. We need to see how to mitigate that, but we have to put the carnal mind somewhere. Psalm 23, *The Lord restores my soul*. Also 3 John,  *prospers my soul*. Then Romans 8 says you cannot do anything. Then how could it be? That is why people try to push it to the body. I understand that because Romans 8 says you cannot do anything with it but if it is in the *Soul Mind*, then what is the problem that we have there? What is the carnal mind? You see, we have to define the carnal mind. If you do not define what and where, how can you move to Romans 12? How can you fight something that you have not defined?

#### *A war consists of a battle*

Like, for example, if let us say any country goes to war (which we pray for peace), but when any general or any leader goes to war, think about it, what is the most important thing? Know thy enemy, correct? How can you fight an enemy you do not know? Suddenly you have got a missile here, a missile there, you do not even know where the capital of the country is, you do not know what weapons they have, you do not know where they are firing from, you do not know what their weaknesses are, you do not know what their soldiers are like – the more you know the enemy, the more you know how to deal with that. So, that is why the Bible says we should not be naive; it says *be wise as serpents and harmless as doves* (Matthew 10:16). That means you need to know your enemy. What the serpent knows, we can know, but we do not have to do those things. We have to know the enemy.

To fight a war, to win a battle, a war consists of a battle. Sometimes one or two battles determine the outcome of the whole war. Like if you conquer the capital of a country, it is almost gone. If you conquer the resources of a country, you just have to wait until it collapses. When you win some strategic battles, you know you will win the war. A war won without a battle, you must decide what battles to fight and where to fight. Sometimes the enemy wastes its time fighting in all the wrong places. You let them waste their resources and people, then you strike strategically. When you fight a war, people die, so you have got to protect your citizens and soldiers, and you try to minimise your casualties and your losses, because resources are limited. Nobody has unlimited resources except God. You will have to make use of the best resources to fight. That is why in the world's history records, there are many battles and wars. Sometimes a group of small people win over much more powerful enemies. Besides God helping them, they have good strategies and knowledge of what to do.

Long ago, before they have bombs, airplanes and tanks, everything was with bows and arrows, spears, swords and shields, and soldiers. In that kind of battle, even if you have got a big army, but the battle is limited to a small area, like in a valley or in a narrow path, and you have ten thousand soldiers, but you can only send them one hundred at a time. If I have one thousand soldiers, I can make you fight at a certain place, it gives me a better chance but if it is an open valley, when one thousand against ten thousand, there is no way, you surround me, that is it. So, I do not let you surround me. Can you see, you need to know the enemy, you need to know the terrain, you need to choose where to fight to win.

The reason why many Christians are not winning the fight and renewing their minds is they have not defined the enemy. Go and read any Christian book that talks about the carnal mind. Does it tell you where the carnal mind is? It does not define it.

Why did Paul say, "*set your mind*"? Now, let us look at that verse again in Romans 8. In verse 6: "*For to be carnally minded is death* (it will produce death, so if you set it to produce death, it will produce death), *but to be spiritually minded is life and peace*". Now, it says in verse 7: "*Because the carnal mind is enmity against God* (enmity – something in opposition, full of hatred and hostility against God); *for it is not subject to the law of God, nor indeed can be*". What about this end part here, *nor indeed can be*? Does it mean that you can still change the inclination? Or is it something there that is locked, that you cannot get rid of? According

to that verse, it is locked. So, there is still something there that is locked, that seems to be dangerous and that is why we are still trying to define what it is.

Let us say if I am facing one way, then I am facing the other way, there is no way that I can face two ways, but the Bible seems to say you can face two ways. What if you can face two ways? Then you have got a problem. You can only face one way, then it is right. Now, let us analyse with reality. Can you have two minds? There is a scripture for that, “double-minded”. Notice how I answer questions? I must bring it back to the Bible because you are not interested in any philosophy that I might have, you are not interested in what the world says. At the end of the day we want to find out what the Bible says. Since the Bible says that a double-minded man is unstable in all his ways, the Bible seems to say there can exist in a person two minds at the same time. Don’t you sometimes have the thoughts talk to you and then sometimes you have another set of thoughts? Can you see that our problem is we are not defining things properly?

If we put the carnal mind in the *Soul*, we are saying that the whole *Soul* is not clean, there is something that is stuck there. This is what the carnal mind is, since when you put all the scriptures together and you are trying to move on, trying to be renewed, this is what the carnal mind is. The carnal mind is a cancer. It is a cancer not of the body; it is a cancer of the soul. Can you renew the cells and cancer? No, correct? It is a good analogy. These are my new parables, so I can use Science fiction, I can use different things. The carnal mind is like a cancer.

Cancer, there is only one treatment, get rid of it by whatever means, either we cut it off through micro-surgery or we blast it with radiation (that is what radiation is trying to do). You know why they use radiation? They are sending things to kill the cells. They are not trying to get the cells to change, thou cannot renew thy cancer cells. In fact, the cancer cell is feeding from you. The cancer cell was once upon a time your cell, that something changed the program of the cell and the cancer cell is powerful because cells only live a short time, but the cancer cell has learned to live in such a way that before it dies, it gives signals to other cells to keep producing more and more. So, the cancer is a growth and it keeps growing, taking all the nutrition that you eat. The cancer cell is actually feeding from you – all the food you eat, all the proteins you eat, all the nutrition. Your cells are also taking but the cancer is in your body and is taking too.

The only difference is the carnal mind is in your soul and the Bible says it cannot be renewed. It is always some part of you. Now, here is the dangerous thing: The Bible uses the word “enmity”. The Greek word for “enmity” is the word “*echthra*” which comes from the word, like it is in direct opposition or hatred, and it is used in several ways. It is used in Galatians 5:20 as “hatred”. It is translated in Romans 8:7 and Luke 23:12 as “enmity”. Mainly “enmity” but the one in Galatians 5:20 is interesting – the word “hatred” – that is the same Greek word. Now, if they have translated it as “enmity”, you know, all these are sins of the flesh, but “enmity” to something, so they make it stronger – “hatred” – because inside it, it contains hate.

### *Crucified in Christ*

Although we say our old man is crucified in Christ, some parts have died, some parts have been chopped off, but inside there, somewhere on your inside, sometimes you hear Christians when they turn away from God or they backslide, they even use words, like they do not like God anymore, actually some use the word “hate” God. They get so discouraged and down, that they blame God. Where did it come from? From the carnal mind, there is a cancer that was never removed. So, can you see that we need an operation here?

When you are born again, your whole spirit is new, but the Bible never says you have a new soul. So, you have got a new spirit but an old soul with the body you came with. Something needs to be done with the soul. Sometimes God (by His grace) does a little bit more in your soul but then, there are some parts that need to be dealt with and you might say, “Why doesn’t God just deal with everything”?

Remember the land of Canaan? Who did the fighting? The Israelites. Now, God was also fighting with them. Without God, they could not win. The Lord told them, “You are going to fight against nations mightier than you. Their weapons are better, and they are trained in warfare”. The Israelites just came out from Egypt and they were still learning. They were not even a nation yet and they had to fight against the mightier nations. Some of them were of bigger size. Remember when they saw the Anakims, they all panicked? They said, “*Wah*, they are so big, how to fight against them”?

Sometimes small is not bad, you know, if a person is really that tall, no doubt you make sure you do not get squashed like an ant, but it is very hard for him to catch you if you run fast enough, then his legs get chopped down and he falls down.

There is a cancer inside the soul. This cancer of the carnal mind is for you and God to remove, not just God removing it for you and you cannot do it in your own strength. It is like the Israelites going in to do battle, though they held the sword in their hands, it was not the sword in their hands that won. When you read the book of Joshua, you will find that more people died from the hailstones, and then God also sent the enemies bees, more people died from all those things than from the sword. So, God actually helped them, but God would not help them until they did their part, until they stepped into the land of Canaan, drew the sword and must not be afraid. So, the soul, is a co-operation with you and God, both. That is why you need to do something. Now, you see, something has to do with the soul. Can you see now that definition helps you answer?

Hebrews 4:12 says the Word of God is sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, bones and marrow, and it discerns the intents and thoughts of your heart. Now, then you have a cancer there. You have to remove that. That is why the sword has to come in. It is to cut somewhere on your inside and start taking it out. Remember it says you cannot renew it? You cannot try to use it. Romans 8:7 prevents it.

Now, that part of your other soul mind that is not cancerous, you can renew it. You still can renew it but let us look at what is actually being made new. There are some parts of your soul that must be just got rid of. You cannot have those things anymore. We want to find out what they are. Those things that need to be dealt with obviously, that is where the renewal has to take place.

However, before that, we have to get back to Romans 8:7, you have the word “enmity” there. The first thing to look at is the word “mind”. You see, our conclusion must come back to the Bible. I must not just give you a concept. I must prove to you that the concept came from the Word. Do you know that they use a different Greek word for “mind” in Romans 8 as opposed to Romans 12? I have already punched it for you just now but let me punch this: Spiritual mind is “*phronema*”, carnal mind is also “*phronema*”, from the word “*phroneo*” (that is, “minded”). “*Phroneo*” is a verb, “mind” is a noun, the product of a carnal mind is “*phroneo*”,

so it is a “*phronema*”. Here is the carnal mind (the *phronema*). Whenever they use the word “*phronema*” or “*phroneo*”, they always use the word “set”, which is not in the Greek. So, we have here, the word “*phroneo*” is a verb; the word “*phronema*” is the result of “*phroneo*”. One is a verb, one is a noun. Sometimes it looks the same, but it is not. Like he ran, he is running, did you see the run. So “run” is now used as a noun, the result of the running but when he is running – I say, he runs; he ran; or he is running, but that is a movement, an action word. Then later on, the run has become the race actually (the more accurate word). The word “*phroneo*” is a verb that implies a setting.

### *Set your mind*

That is why when you look over at Colossians 3:2, “*Set your mind...*”, the word “your”, obviously there is a word for “your” in Greek but it is connected to the word “*phroneo*”. *Set your mind* – is the word “*phroneo*”, a derivation of it in a second person and using the word “*phroneo*”. *Set your mind* – they only use one Greek word. Inside the Greek word, they change the ending, include the “you” and then because of the word “*phroneo*”, it involves a setting. So, it says “*Set your mind on things above...*”.

This is the thing: Some things, when you have set them, cannot be unset. I have got an allegory for you. You know, there were those days when you bought CDs and DVDs and you put in your computer, and nowadays you use USB stick that is different. USB stick so you can write over and over again but CDs and DVDs, there are two types. There is one, “write once” and that is it. There is another type that you can write over and over again, at least many, many times. There’s a limit to how many times you can write over and over again, but you can keep on writing on it. Very few of us spend money buying those things because CDs are so cheap. Just write once and keep it. If you do not want it, throw away, get a new one and you rewrite, correct? When the CD-ROMs and all that were invented, they sold you those two. Then they gave you one, maybe a free one that was re-writable, which you seldom used because after some time, the “write once”, once it was full, could not write again because there is a limit. I believe it is 650 megabytes. Once you have written it (650 megabytes written), you could not write again, you could not undo.

There is something here, there is a part of you in your soul mind, that when you set it, you set certain things when you set long enough and continue to use that setting, it is permanent, it is

like a “write once” kind of thing, it is like a CD, although it is not “write once”, but it has entered into a state where it cannot be undone.

What is a cancer cell? A cancer cell is just a program, a program in your cell that has gone wrong. Some of it are affected by many things. There are one thousand and one reasons for cancer. There are many causes for cancer, that is why it is not so easy to find a cure for cancer, because you might find the cure for one cancer, but not another cancer. There are so many causes and there are so many cells that can go cancerous. As far as we know today, cancer can be caused by carcinogens, chemicals that you infuse and after some time they pollute, and the pollution enters your cells and it triggers a change in your DNA. DNA is just a program in your cells. It triggers a change that is permanently changed. Why do people smoke cigarettes and get lung cancer? Because the lung cells, everyday happy go lucky, then you start smoking, then every time you smoke, not only you cough, your lung cells also cough, one day you breathe too much of the cigarette smoke, they change (“I have got enough”), so they become cancerous. The DNA is changed. The thing about it is once it is changed, it cannot be unchanged. It has been reprogrammed. So, that would be a carcinogen. Cigarette smoke is a carcinogen.

Food that you eat might contain chemicals that are not good for you. Today they are adding a lot of chemicals that are untested. It is all for money. The world is run just for money. It is advisable that if you want to live a healthy life, do not trust every chemical, read the label. Today, farming uses chemicals, food uses chemicals, you know, sometimes when they give you something, there is a lot of artificial flavouring. By the way, sometimes when you buy an ice-cream, let us say durian flavour, it might have no durian inside. All chemicals will produce a flavour. Of course, nowadays there are ice-creams that are really made from durians. In olden days, when they have durian-flavour ice-cream, you look at it, no durian. You say, “How do they produce the smell, the taste”? It is all chemicals but as mankind progresses, we discover that the chemicals are causing other problems and so people are now going towards the organics more and more, which is good, but it is still slightly unaffordable for many because some of the organics are very expensive. Wait until the world changes, until the world goes back. Long, long ago, the organics were cheap. They did not need all the chemicals to produce food, because it was expensive to produce chemicals. Now there is so much of it, now organics become very little. Wait until it is reversed. Once the tsunami comes, the world will reach that natural state again.

There are carcinogens that come from chemicals, and there is also carcinogen that comes from your own stress, your own negative thinking. Do you know that every negative thought produces chemicals and every positive thought produces chemicals? You need scriptures for that? *A merry heart does good like medicine. The joy of the Lord is your strength*, because when you rejoice, and you are positive, all the positive chemicals flow through you. The next time if you ever want to think about a negative thought, remember, hold your horses. You are flooding your body with all kinds of chemicals and all the stress in your soul.

Some people, they might eat healthily, be careful about everything and still die of cancer because there are one thousand and one causes. It might be because he is a very stressed guy, never relaxed. You see, every time he goes and buys food, he is very tensed; when he is cooking, he is very tensed; in everything, he is very tensed. Then the other guy who smokes cigarettes, although he is poisoning himself, he counteracts with it (not that I am recommending all those things, please do not smoke, smoking is not good for you), he is so relaxed, joyful, easy-going and has forgiveness, whereas this guy has unforgiveness. The other guy is just cheerful, and he says life is short, enjoy, *yeah* kind of thing, you know, he is a positive guy. This guy who is so careful dies early, whereas this other guy who is seventy years old is still smoking and you are waiting for him to die. Instead, this guy dies at forty-five, this other guy lives. So, some people say, *que sera sera*, whatever will be will be, his DNA is good, his DNA is bad. That is another thing, can be caused by weaknesses in your DNA. There are also flaws in your DNA that you have inherited from your parents. So, there are 1,001 causes. Do not simplify something that is already complex.

Then there is also the radiation cause. In Australia, they will tell you not to go into the sun because the Australians love the sun. Here, in Singapore, you use umbrellas. I have not found a Singaporean who goes out into the sun and says *ahhh*, but you will find all the Australians do, because you do not have winter here. Once you experience winter, you will love when the sun comes out. When the sun comes out, they go out and lie down in the sun. Have you seen some of them? Pure white skin, go into the sun, come back looking like red lobsters. Have you cooked prawns and lobsters? They are all darkish in colour. So, they tell you that if you do that too often, you will get skin cancer. So, what happens? Radiation.

Remember the Chernobyl disaster in Russia? Remember they calculated how many people will die? However, they do not know when they are going to die, where they are going to die,

how they are going to die. Some of them probably died because of Chernobyl. Now, not only the people living around that area, because the smoke went to parts of Europe and the people are breathing in without knowing it. Then fifty years later they die, and nobody can connect it because too many things have come between, but they do know, and they calculate the average number of more people who are going to die because of that one incident. Sometimes it is because of the things human beings do to the earth. There are one thousand and one causes.

Romans 8:7 tells you the carnal mind cannot be unprogrammed but what was causing it? The verse in 2 Corinthians 10:4-5, *“For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal* (I do not like the way they use the word “carnal”. Do you notice that there is already an association? It tells you what causes carnality. There are carnal things that are fighting against. *“are not carnal”* and it is the same Greek word for “carnal”) *but mighty in God for pulling down* (1) *strongholds, casting down* (2) *arguments and* (3) *every high thing that exalts itself against the knowledge of God* (every elevated thing; in other words, “every high thing” is a thing that is false, that tries to take the place of God and against the knowledge of God), *bringing every thought...*”. Suddenly he uses the word “thought” and it is the word “*pneuma*”. “*Pneuma*” is from “*nous*” – renew your “mind”, remember “*nous*”? So “*nous*” is a noun for the general mind that functions. “*Pneuma*” is the derivation of the thinking of “*nous*”.

He says that we must pull down strongholds, cast down arguments, and remove every high thing that exalts itself against the knowledge of God. Do you know Paul just classified for you what is causing the cancer here? Suddenly, we are looking at the Bible more carefully and relating the verses that we never understood before. That is the good thing about studying the Bible. There are three things that have to be renewed. Do you notice these three things that you cannot renew them, that cannot be renewed? These are all enemies. Can you see that “strongholds” is an enemy? Can you see that “arguments” is an enemy? Can you see that “every high thing that exalts itself” is an enemy? These are equal to Romans 8.

You see, whenever you have got a problem in the Bible, look for other places that might have it. Now in 2 Corinthians 10:4-5, it is harder to find because the words are not the same Greek words. It does not even have the word “mind” inside, but it does have the word “thought”. It does have the word “carnal”. If you were to explore what carnality is, here is something to do

with carnality and what makes the thing carnal? Strongholds, arguments, and every high thing that exalts itself against the knowledge of God.

*When thoughts are strongholds*

Now, what are strongholds? All these have to do with thoughts. Thoughts can become cancerous. When a thought is a stronghold, it must be broken down, like the walls of Jericho. When a thought is an argument, now, it uses the word “arguments” which means it *logismos*. The word “*logismos*” in Greek is used many times when Paul was out debating in the synagogues. You know why, he has to prove that Jesus is the Christ.

Why when we have Bible Study, is it that many times, in my preaching and teaching, the people who love the preaching and teaching the most are doctors, lawyers, university people, educated people? You know why, because I am like Paul, I am arguing on behalf of God in order to throw down the wrong argument and prove that God’s argument is the best. I love to debate. Anything that the atheists can throw, we need to be able to answer. The answer we give them is *logismos* against *logismos*. They have their logic (from the word, where we get “logic” from, “*logismos*”), we have our logic.

The atheists say, “there is no God”; we say, “there is a God”. Our argument is different from theirs. Then they say, “prove to me that there is a God”. We do not even try to prove, we say, “prove to me that there is no God” and then we go out. Why spend our time trying to prove something when what we prove they are not going to listen to anyway? Why should we be on the defense? They should be defending why there is no God because even the animals seem to believe in a high entity (in their god), and men by default believe in a higher entity. Have you found any atheist in the Amazon Jungle? No, they believe in spirits and higher powers.

Atheist is a modern development. You go to any culture that is not touched by modern civilisation, they believe in a higher power. They might not call it God, they might call it a spirit, a being, an entity. Their cultures are rich. There are more people believing in God than those who do not believe in God. So, why should we who believe in God prove it? You prove that there is no God. “Well, I cannot see it”. Well, there are a lot of things you cannot see it but it still exists. “Ah...” In every proof that he gives, you can run it down until he is reduced to nothing. That is the purpose for *logismos*. Then he realises and we tell him, “Look, we can give you a thousand reasons why there is more evidence that there is a God, the order, what

we call the things like that; when you go out on the street and you find a watch, it did not come together by accident; life does not come together by accident; it is not an accident or fluke that suddenly we are where we are, that we have this intelligence, we have this ability and our tongues are different from all the animals”. They might say 99% or 99.9% or so of your genes and your DNA is like the animals, like the apes. They say yes but all you need is a little difference because it is just a body that we use but even the body is so special, we are one of the animals who have opposing tongues, even our tongues are special. The apes cannot do that; their tongues cannot do that.

There are a lot of little things we can point to, but when we look at the atheists and all those things, we are throwing down their arguments. What was Paul doing in the synagogue? He was showing to them that Jesus is the Messiah and when they went against him, you know how did Paul prove it? This scripture, that scripture, this scripture, then they say *arrh*. We have to throw down arguments.

Strongholds are thoughts that have become doctrines that have become life principles that run. You know what is a stronghold? A stronghold is like a castle and it is like the people based their whole life in there. The good thing (by the mercies of God) is, today, among the good things, even with people who do not know God, they have some principles that are Biblical, like “Do not do evil; do good and good things will return to you”. People believe in that. At least that is closer to Biblical if they do not know God yet and generally if men seek after good things, they will always end up with the Ten Commandments, even if they do not have a Moses to bring the Commandments to them. They might have a wise man, or a philosopher and he will end up with something close to the Ten Commandments, maybe slightly different, in a different way.

We realise that a stronghold is like a boat. At first it takes time to build the boat. So, when building the boat, it is not a stronghold yet but when the boat becomes a ship or canoe, that can take you somewhere. Now, what happens when you begin using the boat? Your whole life depends on the boat. If the boat sinks, everyone in the boat dies. The building of it then is very important. It takes time for a stronghold to be built. It does not come overnight.

There are principles in your life that have become strongholds and if those principles are wrong, the only thing you can do is to chop them off and say “I will not believe this way.

These are all wrong”. Sometimes you do not understand yet because you have not developed new strongholds that are from God, but we do not call them strongholds, we differentiate. You have not developed new life principles but as you develop new life principles, all those strongholds will be gone. However, before you can develop, you must just not listen to them anymore, even if your father taught you, even if your grandfather taught you, even if your great-grandfather taught you, even if they have been carried down and it is your tradition. If the tradition is wrong, get rid of it. Change to something, new life principles and these will be your new strongholds in God.

Then the arguments. Arguments are the things that are developing into doctrines, that will influence you. It is arguments that build the strongholds. They are in the process. You can slowly tear them down but do not exalt every high thing or every thought that is against the knowledge of God, anything that is prideful, anything that comes from the enemy.

#### *The devil deceives*

In the Bible it talks about the doctrines of demons. Remember doctrines of demons? Demons are giving false teaching. The devil deceives by false teaching, false knowledge and false revelation. A lot of cults come from false revelation. Some religions are built around the false appearance. It is all false knowledge, false revelation, false doctrine that replaces God. That is the third area.

Now, you can see, those things have to be chopped, chopped, chopped, which answers the question: Hebrews 4:12. Why do we need to divide soul and spirit? After all, the spirit is new, but the soul has to be renewed. So, you have to isolate your soul in order to treat your soul. The spirit only needs to grow, but the soul needs a lot of TLC (tender loving care). There is a renewal to be built into the soul.

Some people’s soul mind has no doctrine. We need good doctrines, we need life principles, we need those things to build our lives around. Even to believe in nothing is to believe in something. There is no such thing as believing in nothing. It is a doctrine. It is a belief system. We have to develop a new belief system that is there. That is the basic thing and if you think that is all, look at 2 Corinthians 7:1. Now, all these verses will become clear. It says: “*Therefore, having these promises, beloved, let us cleanse ourselves from all filthiness of the flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God*”.

Now, it says there is filthiness of the flesh and spirit. You say, “Where did that come from? What is filthiness in the spirit?” The answer is found in 2 Corinthians 10:4-5. The third type of thoughts. First are strongholds, second is arguments. You know what the third is? Every high thing that exalts itself against the knowledge of God. That is spiritual knowledge, doctrine of understanding that is from the enemy, it is unclean, it is filthy and since we have read the things that can pollute us, that come from, the source of it, you see, 2 Corinthians 7:1 says the source of it is spiritual because Satan does try to give false knowledge.

I read many things, I am a sponge for knowledge, but I do not just take all knowledge, I do research everything. I have a book which is about the life of Edgar Cayce, the hero of the New Age kind of thing. You know Edgar Cayce? He is not in the Lord and has totally got things wrong. Do you know that in his early life, Edgar Cayce was a born-again Christian? He even met up with D L Moody. You know who D L Moody is? He is an evangelist. Edgar Cayce was born with a special gift. He could put a book in his pillow, sleep on it, and the next day, he had absorbed everything in the book. *Wah*, imagine studying for your exams. That was his special gift from the Lord. Sadly, no one advised him. All the people just said, “I would have asked him and have him sleep with the Bible”. *Wow*, all the Bible knowledge goes into him. So, in his story, he talked about how he went to work as a salesman. They had a big sales book, so when he was newly employed, he slept on it, and he could tell the person every detail, every price, and everything. You know, some people have got photographic memory? That was a tremendous gift and so through time, he found something peculiar. He found that he was able to sleep talk, it is like something took over and he could tell people their sickness, disease and when people asked, he could answer their questions. It is like another spirit had come and that part is like what I call a little bit greyish, so it depends.

Remember, when you open yourself to the spirit dimension, sometimes good spirits from the lowest part of heaven might try to help but there are also bad spirits. People do not know that the spiritual world has got good spirits and bad spirits. They think the spiritual world is all good. There are demons and all those things that are there and when Edgar Cayce opened himself to that, at first, he was curing a lot of people and there were a lot of documented cases, the knowledge that came from him. Of course, I can look back and look at his life. In the spirit, I see some angels who were working with him at first and those angels imparted to him the knowledge because those angels had been working with a lot of the doctors and physicians of earlier days, so they could take that knowledge and impart it into him but one

day, everything changed. Instead of people telling him about their ailment and sickness, they asked him about what the world was like over there (the spiritual world) and that was when he tapped into the wrong knowledge and that was where he began to have wrong teaching that was not in line with the Bible. You see, every revelation must be checked with the Bible. If it is against the Bible, you have to look at the source because there is every high thing that exalts itself, not with, but against the knowledge of God which is in the Bible.

He started going off track when he started talking to the spirits, and these spirits began to teach him about reincarnation and all those things. Let me tell you why it is wrong because I examined the doctrine. Even in his case study (he had a lot of case studies), some people claimed to be reincarnation of Alexander the Great or some great men and women in history. In his log of cases, there were at least two people who saw him, who claimed to be the same person in history and you know that is impossible even in reincarnation doctrine, because in reincarnation doctrine, the same person lives again and again and again, they died, came back; died, came back; died, came back but only one person at a time. So, you cannot have two of the same person. Can you see that? It is against the doctrine of reincarnation but that proves that the doctrine is incorrect because many people like to think of themselves as famous people in history. Nobody wants to remember himself as the bad guy in history and he is the reincarnation of that guy, he would not.

Firstly, the Bible says it is appointed for every man to die once, and after that comes the judgment. There is no reincarnation. The Bible says it. Once. That is, it. You say what about the knowledge they have from two areas: from familiar spirits that have come, or sometimes the knowledge is passed down through DNA in some ways, that somehow all the memories come to the surface. Or it can come also by what I call in the soul realm, because in the soul realm a thought or a memory can remain for some time, depending on its strength. Do you know that the sound we speak can be recorded? Nature records everything. Remember, they said “*these stones are witness to a memorial*”, in the Bible (Joshua 4:7)? So, a thought can remain quite long in what I call the thought dimension, that is why it needs to be removed.

Jesus in Matthew 16:11 warned the disciples to beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees. He said, and they did not understand, so He explained (in Matthew 16:12) that it is the doctrine of the Pharisees and Sadducees had the wrong teaching. When Jesus was preaching (in Mark 1:27), the people said, “*What is this? What new doctrine is this?*”? You

see, Jesus was bringing a new doctrine. Jesus says (in John 7:16), *“My doctrine is not Mine, but His who sent Me”*. You say, “I did not know Jesus came to give doctrine”. Doctrines are important. Do you know why the anti-Charismatics are still anti-Charismatics even though we have gone past the Charismatic Movement? Wrong doctrine. They select only the scriptures they like, explain them in a different way and they lock themselves into that. What makes a person who is anti-Charismatic not move into the Charismatic Movement? He believes the wrong doctrine. The wrong doctrine keeps him in that mould.

### *The apostolic doctrine*

In Acts 2:42 when the church was renewed, it says, *“And they continued steadfastly in the apostles’ doctrine...”*. So, there is an apostolic doctrine, which is the proper teaching that the Lord has given. Paul, in speaking to Timothy in 2 Timothy 3:16, *“All Scripture (that is why the Bible is important) is given by inspiration of God and is profitable (that means it is good) for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness”*.

Then Paul talks about sound doctrine to Titus (in Titus 1:9), *“holding fast the faithful word as he has been taught, that he may be able, by sound doctrine, both to exhort and convict those who contradict”*. Then he says, “sound doctrine” again in Titus 2:1. He tells Titus (in Titus 2:7) – *“In all things showing yourself to be a pattern of good works; in doctrine showing integrity, reverence, incorruptibility”*. He says (in Titus 2:10), *“... that they may adorn the doctrine of God...”*. So, he talks about the doctrine of God.

Now, remember in Hebrews 6, the elementary principles. You know what they call them? In Hebrews 6:2, *“of the doctrine of baptisms, of laying on of hands, of resurrection of the dead, and of eternal judgment”*. They call them “doctrine”. We call them “Foundational Teaching”. The Bible calls it “doctrine”. Then 2 John 9, *“Whoever transgresses and does not abide in the doctrine of Christ does not have God. He who abides in the doctrine of Christ has both the Father and the Son”*.

Then in Revelation 2:14 (remember all the wrong things, the enemy comes, Balaam’s doctrine), *“But I have a few things against you, because you have there those who hold the doctrine of Balaam, who taught Balak to put a stumbling block...”*. Then in verse 15: *“Thus you also have those who hold the doctrine of the Nicolaitans...”*. There you have it, they use the word “doctrine” in the negative, “doctrine” in the positive, and that is an important thing

to differentiate. It can be good, it can be bad, but it is a warning for us in order not to go to the wrong division.

### *The doctrines of demons*

Now, the doctrines of demons, 1 Timothy 4:1, “*Now the Spirit expressly says that in latter times some will depart from the faith, giving heed to deceiving spirits and doctrines of demons,*”. This, is the prophecy about this end time. That is why we still need the Word of God, “*some will depart from the faith*”, that means they were once in God, and why will they ever depart, because it says here, “*giving heed to deceiving spirits and doctrines of demons*”. So, there are wrong doctrines and right doctrines. We are to beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees, and the doctrines of demons. This is how demons cause cancer in the soul. The demons first give you the wrong preaching, the wrong doctrine.

By the way, do you know why Michal (daughter of Saul) reacted to David in unforgiveness, pain and all those things, right? However, as a human, she had struggled. Michal was once in love with David. You read the story. It was a love story gone down the drain. Once upon a time, they were young, and they fell in love. David had to kill two hundred Philistines as the dowry (strange dowry in those days) to be able to marry Michal. Actually, the dowry invention was invented by Saul who was not a good man. He was hoping that David would get killed. He was a bad guy. That is why he said for the dowry a hundred foreskins of the Philistines. What? Aren't you glad that you do not have uncle Saul as your father-in-law? Where are you going to get a hundred foreskins of the Philistines? Obviously, David was going to kill them. You think they were going to volunteer? He asks, “Volunteers”? No, he had to kill them. It is a horrible sight, every time he killed and stripped them. He did not kill 100, he killed 200. In those days, they did not have plastic bags, so he told his father-in-law, “Here they are”. Also, do not forget, he probably did not wash and clean them with antiseptic or whatever, he just filled the whole bag, full of blood but for the lovers, nice story and they lived happily ever after for some time, until Saul chased David out and Michal protected him. She made the dummy on the bed to pretend that David was there. She really loved David. You know what she should have done? She should have left with him, never to leave his side. David ran away. From that day onwards, they were never together. Saul took his daughter and gave her to another man and so David was gone, things went sideways and downwards. Then by the time David came back from all his wilderness trips, he not only was different, he came back with two wives. By then he had Abigail and another girl? When the time came, it

was already many years. He was the king over Judah for seven years, then in Hebron. He still did not get Michal. She was already remarried and there was her other husband and then when Abner came and said he had come to deliver the ten tribes back to David, you know what David's condition was? That was a personal condition: "I want Michal back". So, Abner went back, split the family again and remember Michal's new husband loved her, he cried all the way when Abner took her and brought her to David. When Michal came, David was a different man.

What people cannot see in the spirit is this: She had a lot of hurts, wounds and all that. Of course, she expected that when David asked for her, that he would just be with her. In those days, you know, their standard was much lower. At first, she had David to herself. Now she says, *wah*, he had all these wives plus she already had a broken marriage second time round. We can understand her emotions, we can understand all those things, but it was still wrong of her to react on the most spiritual occasion. She used that occasion to burst out but by the time she burst out, that was not when she was angry at David; she was angry all along. That was only on this occasion.

In the spirit, it was a demon that came and sat on her shoulder, that whispered all the wrong things to her. The demon told her that David was the one who killed Saul. Actually, David did not kill Saul. He had two chances to kill Saul, but he never killed Saul. Saul actually fell on his own sword, partially half-dead, then the Amalekite came and killed him. She began to put all the blame on David. It was a demon. So, one fine day, on a spiritual occasion, she reacted and behind it was because all those times that she was there, the demon was feeding her all those things.

Jezebel had two evil spirits working with her. There were two evil spirits. One was sitting on her shoulder whispering. The one on her shoulder was not so powerful. The more powerful one was giving her all the wrong things and they had the doctrine of Baal. All the wrong doctrine, wrong worship and the demons whispering all those things, doctrines of demons.

False revelation, false doctrine. Why do we call it "doctrine"? A doctrine will have some *logismos*. Remember, I have already quoted to you, 2 Corinthians 10:4-5, what are the arguments? The Greek word for "arguments" is "*logismos*". Doctrine means that they have

some logic too, but the logic is flawed. It looks very clever until the Spirit of God exposes it and then God anoints a teacher to tear it down. That is what a teacher is for.

### *The need for fivefold teachers*

There are very few teachers in the body of Christ, because you know why, we put all the teachers in Sunday schools and we call them teachers but there are fivefold teachers. How many people come to God and go to Bible school? You look at any Bible school, you say, “How many of you believe that you are called to be an evangelist? How many are prophets? How many of you are apostles? How many are pastors? How many are teachers?”? Sunday school teachers. See, it takes the fivefold calling of a teacher to use *logismos* to tear down the false arguments of the enemy, because the teacher goes line by line and looks at every one of your logic. It is just like a computer programmer. You know, a computer programmer can programme a few things wrongly. Then you have got to look and say, “I think this section of the code is wrong”. See, that is what a teacher does. “The other parts are very logical, but this is the part”. In computer programming, it is pure logic. A command has to be there and when you command it to do something, you must also command it as to when to shut it down. Every single thing is a command.

We need more fivefold teachers but how many people say, “I am called to be a Bible teacher”? Do you know Paul’s calling? He was an apostle, evangelist, teacher. That is why he could reason in the synagogue. Do you think that he did it just because he was an apostle? No. How come Peter was not doing that? Peter was an apostle. You need an apostle combined with a teacher, then you can move into that. Although there was an apostolic doctrine, Peter had something that came from the Lord that he could also do that but Paul even more, because he had a “teacher’s calling” in him.

That is why we come back to the Word of God. Why do we need the Word of God? Let us look at 2 Corinthians 7:1 where we took the part from. Now, we have to treat this. We are talking about the renewal of the mind and how this mind is renewed, so it is the *Soul Mind* that needs to be renewed, the *Spirit Mind* does not need renewal, the *Body Mind* has now become the temple, dedicated to God and it is this *Soul Mind*, that needs renewal.

### *The cleansing processes*

Now in 2 Corinthians 7:1, *“Therefore, having these promises, (So he tells you how to remove it) beloved, let us cleanse (the word “cleanse” is “katharizo”) ourselves from all filthiness (so there is a way to remove all filthiness) of the flesh and spirit...”*. How come he left out the soul? Why didn't he say spirit, soul and body? The flesh is a combination of soul and body mixed together, because the flesh is your soul, the flesh is also the carnal thing on your mind. The Greek word for “flesh” is carnal, which is actually flesh, which is “karne” in Latin. It has to do with the angle where it is no good anymore. The part of the soul that has become too fleshly needs to be cut off, needs to be chopped off, so only the Word can cleanse (“katharizo”).

In John 15:3, Jesus told His disciples, *“My word has made you katharizo”*. However, there is more to it, so we have to turn to John 15 to learn how to cure the soul, the cancer of the carnal mind. First, you have to cut it away by God's Word. You have to not just listen only but build new doctrines from the Word of God. John 15:1-3 (Jesus says here), *“I am the true vine, and My Father is the vinedresser. (Now, I am going to use the word “katharizo” into English, so you know it is the same word). Every branch in Me that does not bear fruit He takes away; and every branch that bears fruit He prunes (katharizo), that it may bear more fruit. You are already clean (katharizo) because of the word which I have spoken to you”*. Notice, there are two *katharizo* processes? One is in the past tense, He says, *“You are already katharizo”*. Then in one – He says, *“After you bear fruit, you need another period of katharizo, so you can bear even more fruit.”* Do you see the two processes of *katharizo*? There is one that takes place when we are born again. Remember, Paul says in 2 Corinthians 7:1, *“Therefore, having these promises, beloved, let us cleanse ourselves...”*. So, he was talking about a cleansing process every time they bear fruit and there was a cleansing process even before they were launched into the ministry.

The day that you were born again, some things fell, some Jericho walls in your life fell, some arguments fell and definitely, those things that exalt themselves against the knowledge of God, to accept Christ, you must reject those things. That is the interesting thing, because Jesus cannot be just added into your life as another god among your gods. To accept Jesus, you must reject every high thing. That is why a lot of non-Christians find it hard to accept Christian doctrines. They say, *“Why must you all say that to accept Christ, you cannot have any other gods”?* The Bible says so. *“Why don't we just add to it”?* Because Jesus says, *“I*

*am the way, the truth, and the life. No one comes to the Father except through Me*". Jesus says no one comes to the Father except through Him. There is no other way to God and we can only say we apologise it is like that but that is what Jesus says. When you follow Jesus, you must follow everything that He says. It did not come from us, it came from Christ.

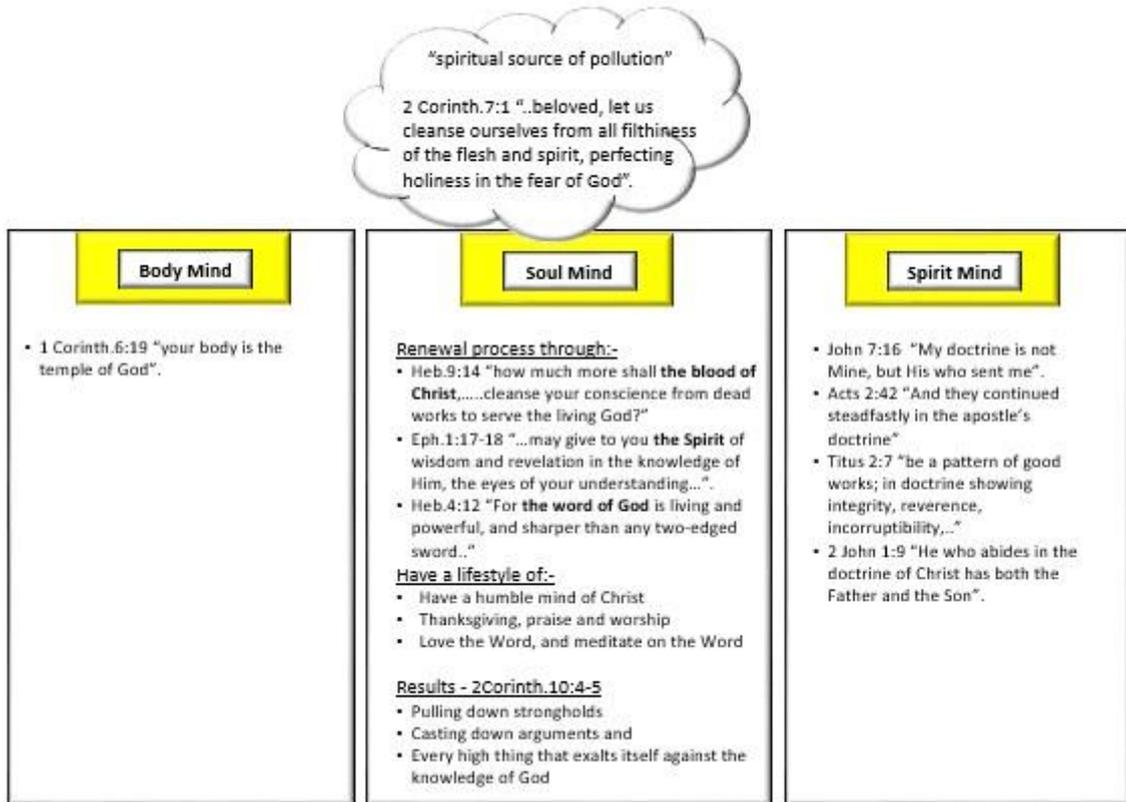


Diagram 1

Now, that one will hit every person hard until pride falls. It is something like the Jericho walls; cannot be renewed; must chop, chop, remove. Remember the three things – (1) every high thing that exalts itself against the knowledge of God, i.e. doctrines of demons; (2) arguments that are not consistent with the Bible, that produce the wrong things; (3) strongholds that have already been absorbed must be chopped and removed.

We learn to reject those things and listen to the new things. The practical process of that. In 1 Corinthians 2:1, Paul talks about two different types of wisdom. He says he did not come with excellence of speech or of wisdom declaring the testimony of God. He says in verses 4 to 5, "*And my speech and my preaching were not with persuasive words of human wisdom, but in demonstration of the Spirit and of power, that your faith should not be in the wisdom of men but in the power of God*". So again, you need the demonstration of God's power.

He does speak with wisdom, but he says in verses 6 to 8, *“However, we speak wisdom among those who are mature, yet not the wisdom of this age, nor of the rulers of this age, (nor of the rulers of this age, he is not talking about humans. He says it is not coming from demons who have their own perverted wisdom. Remember, wise as serpents, serpent’s wisdom. He says not of serpent’s wisdom) who are coming to nothing. But we speak the wisdom of God in a mystery, the hidden wisdom which God ordained before the ages for our glory, which none of the rulers of this age knew; for had they known, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory”*. So, the demons did not realise it, otherwise they would not have crucified Jesus. They did not realise. Something was hidden from them.

Remember the book, Pilgrim’s Progress? One of the people in Pilgrim’s Progress was called Mr. Worldly Wiseman. Remember? Mr. Worldly Wiseman cannot enter because he cannot accept the cross. Paul says the cross is a stumbling block to the Jews and foolishness to the Greeks. Looks foolish to accept Christ but that is the price. You must humble yourself first and acknowledge God as God and Jesus Christ as Lord and Saviour. All your logic must crumble to the dust first. Remember, Paul was an intelligent man, highly educated. What Paul called all his knowledge and the things of this life? Philippians 3:8, he counts it all dung or rubbish for the knowledge of Christ Jesus. Notice, he says he does not speak the high wisdom to those who are not matured yet? You know why? They cannot handle it yet. They must first walk in humility and be a disciple first. There is a cleansing process for them. When Jesus says, *“My word has made you clean”*, He spent nearly three years with them. He did not make that statement at the beginning. He did not say, *“Come and be My disciples”*. They came and then the next day He said, *“My word has made you clean”*. The devil did not know the Word. There is a time process. That, my friends, is the renewal.

What are we renewing? Removing is easier, building is harder. We could remove all the things from your house (the chairs and everything). We could tear out the carpet and everything but putting in the new is another thing. Nowadays they can knock down a building very fast. Nowadays they can build fast too, but generally it takes time. It might look fast because they have used modern technology, or they have spent a lot of time planning.

In China they are building a 10-storey - 20-storey building in weeks, that kind of thing. It looks fast but the planning to do it has taken many years. Do you know they are using all the knowledge / the calculations, because if one thing goes wrong, the whole thing is wrong, but

those things have been developed over decades? That is where the time was spent and what they do is actually like a certain Mathematical thing with all the calculations, the measurements, all must be right. Then the factory produces those parts, like a Lego block, and then assemble it together. If you miss by a few centimetres, the thing might not work properly, and you might have to force the shape, a few centimetres at a time, so that it does not go out of shape. Their precision must be very good. Though you see the building, what you see is not the building, it is the assembling. If it includes the building, it must include the architectural plan, the planning, the process and all those blueprints, the design, calculations and all those things, you will find that it still takes a long time. So, before they ever build one little Lego block, unless it is the same building they have used, then it is different but if they have to build something new, and you need different parts to be multiplied, there is a whole calculation – the weight, the tension and everything, because everything is going to be screwed together but in general, most buildings take some time.

That is why the Bible says, *do not be conformed to this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind* – and they use the word “*anakainosis*” for “renewal”. “*Ana*” is the word that means again and again and again and again. Over three years’ discipleship. That is why sometimes when people ask me, “How long does it take for discipleship”? I always say Jesus took three years, three years I think is the minimum that is required. Then you could change the person over time – discipleship. Paul, when he went away and came back – he spent three years in Arabia – he was measured in years. So, the first point is the Word of God, but the Word of God is applied through a time process, it is measured in years and it is measured on a daily basis.

Look at how Jesus used the word “clean” when He washed the disciples’ feet. That is found in the gospel of John, when He was washing their feet. In John 13:8, “*Peter said to Him, ‘You shall never wash my feet!’* (Here is where the teaching comes). *Jesus answered him, ‘If I do not wash you, you have no part with Me.’* *Simon Peter said to Him, ‘Lord, not my feet only, but also my hands and my head!’* (This guy is funny; don’t you think so? When Jesus took a towel and girded Himself and was going to wash his feet, Peter protested). *Jesus said to him, He who is bathed needs only to wash his feet, but is completely clean; and you are clean, but not all of you’.* (Jesus was telling Peter “you are clean except your feet”, because in those days they did not have boots like ours, they wore sandals. That is why He said only his feet needed cleaning. Then He turned it into a spiritual thing, *you are clean, but not all of*

you). *For He knew who would betray Him; therefore He said, 'You are not all clean'.* Wait a minute, is He now talking about spiritual cleaning or physical cleaning? Spiritual, right? Anybody thinks it is still natural? Cannot be, because otherwise He is saying that Judas is smelly and physically unclean. No, no, no.

In fact, among the disciples, Judas was one of the very clean ones. If any rough fellow, it would be more Peter and the gang and among the most well-dressed disciples was Matthew, the tax collector. Matthew was among the fashionable disciples, always well-dressed. Peter, remember they wore long garments in those days, and Peter was so used to a certain style. He would be, like in India, where you have the sarong, something that looks like a sarong; a sarong goes to your ankles. He would fold the sarong half-way and then wrapped it round himself, like trousers, and then tied it there. You know why they do it? Because when wearing a long robe, it is difficult to bend and squat down. Don't tell me Peter wore a long robe to go fishing? When you go into the water, you are already wet. To be a fisherman, you cannot be wearing your long sarong, even if the sarong is in fashion. You take it to half-length and tie it up. That was the usual fashion of Peter. I would say he was not among the most well-dressed. So, we have here, Jesus is talking about spiritual uncleanliness.

In Matthew 6, Jesus says "*do not worry*" many times. He says your worrying cannot even add one cubit to your stature. It does nothing. At the end, He says "*sufficient unto the day is the evil thereof*". He uses the word "evil". He uses the word for the day that is evil. This is what happened. As long as this world exists in its condition and heaven is not on earth yet so every day you go out to work, you read the newspapers, you read things on the internet, you see anything until the uncleanliness hits you, just by being in the world. The feet are only symbolic. Jesus did say one day you will understand this and the day has come, because every day the moment you contact the world, uncleanliness tries to cling, like dirt to your feet. So, there is the second process of *katharizo* which is the daily process. It is the only thing that keeps your thoughts and your heart pure.

#### *Meditate on the Word*

Every day we need to get back into the Word. Have you noticed that Bible reading is always daily? Psalm 1:2, you shall meditate day and night. Why it does not say once a month? Why twice a day, day and night? Because in the day to give you strength; in the night to still continue giving you strength. You know why, every day from the time you wake up to the

time you sleep, thoughts come to you. When you are alive, you have thoughts. Not all thoughts are good thoughts, especially when you confront the world. The world's thoughts straightaway come in and sometimes they come in innocently, you did not realise those are worldly thoughts but when you get back into the Word, the Word removes that. If you do not have the Word to keep on building your doctrine and your own power, instead of strongholds and the thoughts that exalt God, not thoughts that go against God, over time they subtly build something wrongly. If you do not watch it, if you do not have a daily *katharizo*, something is built in you.

Like how do you know every day if you like certain food? Generally fasting is good and generally watch your health, but once in a while, like in Singapore, a favourite food, like *bak kwa*, but *bak kwa* is not really healthy. It is still nice to eat. In the morning, when you get up, you put two slices of bread and *bak kwa*. Or sometimes you use meat floss, so the meat floss with bread is nice to eat, especially if you put thick butter or margarine but you know that if you eat like that every day, it is not healthy. So, that is the thing, the knowledge of it and you can handle it because your body can handle it.

You do not want to go to the extreme, *wah*, everything cannot, cannot, cannot. Chicken rice also cannot. Why? All chickens are injected. *Huh*. How about vegetables? *Oh*, vegetables have pesticides. *Huh*. How about fruits? Fruits also have pesticides. *Huh*. Can you please tell me what else can I eat, besides manna from heaven? So, everything that you eat has some poison. Some people say eat fish, fish is good. Now the fish are all poisonous, there is a lot of mercury in the ocean. They have even tested people who eat fish every day. Do you know they have tested in Australia? Some of those who eat fish every day, their mercury level was higher than normal and once the mercury gets into your body, it is very hard to get rid of, so some of them are killing themselves. In almost everything, there is a poison. So, generally you eat well, you live well, you are careful, but life is life, you pray that God covers you in those areas, so that once in a while you can still enjoy your *bak kwa*. You do not say, “*Aiyoh*, poisonous, if I eat this, another three cancers might pop up thirty years later”. Do not think like that. The minimum you have is at least Mark 16, the poison that is here, neutralised. See, you are not preaching the gospel. Then take your *bak kwa*, preach your gospel and eat it. Anyway, I am just teasing.

In your normal Christian life, in everything, there is a balancing of that. In the same way, when you go out to work, every day when you read the papers or you read the news or you see something or you hear something, and then when you are out in the secular world, all kinds of teaching and principles, some might not be close to the Bible, some might be neutral, all these need to be sorted out. That is why you need the daily cleansing – day and night – you must come back to the Word. Then you have your overall training where the Word comes into your life and the Word builds into you.

So, there you are, Part one of renewal of the mind. We have sorted out the problem and you know what it is. There are some things that must be removed; chop, chop. Then there are some things that need to be built. These two main points, I emphasise “removal” because there are some things which must be removed which are still there. You know it is there when you have hatred against God. Remember, “enmity” is the word “hatred”. When you produce things that say, “I do not want God anymore”, produce things like “I do not desire God anymore”, then those things are still stuck in you, not removed. It might take you 3 years to remove those things, but they have to be removed. Jesus says, “My word has made you clean”.

What is renewal? Renewal is to remove some old things and then bring in some new ones. Building new strongholds, new doctrines and new knowledge, that is the renewal.

## Chapter 15...

### Renewing of the Mind – Part 2

In Romans 8:6, *“For to be carnally minded is death, but to be spiritually minded is life and peace. Because the carnal mind is enmity against God; for it is not subject to the law of God, nor indeed can be. So then, those who are in the flesh cannot please God”*. So, Romans 8:6 says to be carnally minded is death. Do not forget Paul is writing to Christians, which means it is possible for Christians to be carnally minded but to be spiritually minded is life and peace, the “life” there is the word “*zoe*”; “peace” of course is the word “*eirene*”, it talks about the spiritual life of God. Can you imagine that this life that we have is just a biological life, but it is our spirit that sustains our physical body? If we have more spiritual life, it will produce more health, more healing and more supernatural things.

I believe that (you know, the manifestation of the sons of God, when the sons of God grow up) we will reach the stage where we are no more bothered or governed by the elements of the earth. I also believe it is just a matter of more of the life of God. It is just like a child growing, when a child is very small, it is still subject to different things. The difference between a child and an adult is the physical life, in natural illustration so the difference between a spiritual child and a spiritual adult is the growth, the growth of spiritual life in all that it entails. The more life we have, the more power we have over the elements and the physical things of this life. We are so used to being subject to this physical life that we do not realise that we can be ultimately free from it, free from all the laws that govern this natural world, for we were once upon a time not governed by it. We were actually above it. It was when Adam fell that we came under it.

I asked the question about how Romans 8 relates to Romans 12 because I asked you what it means to renew the mind. It says in Romans 8:7, *“Because the carnal mind is enmity against God; for it is not subject to the law of God, nor indeed can be”*. That means there is something about the carnal mind that it cannot be renewed. You cannot renew a carnal mind. There is no possibility. It will violate verse 7. The carnal mind needs to be cut out and removed from us.

There is no doubt that we all had a carnal mind. The carnal mind is not in the spirit because the spirit is born again and the carnal mind, we have deduced, is not just the body mind but the soul is involved. The difference between Romans 8 and Romans 12 is in the Greek words.

They use a different word for mind. The word for mind in both “spiritual” and “carnal” is the word “*phroneo*” and the product of it here is “*phronema*”, so *phronema* is the product of *phroneo* both for *Spiritual Mind* and carnal mind, they use the word “*phroneo*”. Whereas in Romans 12:2 when it says to renew your mind, “*And do not be conformed to this world, but be transformed* (the word “transformed” is “*metamorphoomai*”) *by the renewing of your mind...*”. That word “mind” is the word “*nous*” and there are two different sets of minds. *Nous* is the general word for mind. *Phroneo* is like a setting inside the mind, so *phroneo* is a sub-set inside the mind. Like the word “mind” which is the word “*nous*” contains different things. Your mind has a “*dianoia*” aspect, there is a *dianoia* part of your mind.

For example, let us pretend a whole glass is your mind. Let us say it is part of your soul. Generally, we divide it into three sections. You have your soul. Now, we all know that the body (we divide the body into *Body Emotion*, *Body Mind* and *Body Will*) is more complex than that. You have Neurologists studying the nerves, you have Osteologists studying the bones and all the different complex parts of our body, it is a whole system in itself. Some parts of our physical body are not even fully understood.

I do not pay attention to some things until sometime when I visit. I am always a sponge for knowledge. When people talk, I listen. When I was in Sam’s house, I saw he had a baby trampoline. So, I asked, “Does that help”? Sam told me about how he got it because he was told that it helps with the lymph glands. I said, “Okay, that is the area I have not researched”. I research a lot of things, but I never researched on that. I did a research after that. I went back and read about the lymph glands and all those things.

I saw that certain small animals have their own pump, like a heart, for the lymph glands. Then I discovered that the lymph gland is actually like your rubbish chute inside your HDB apartment, which gets rid of all your rubbish that needs to be carried away. So, every part of your body is giving out carbon dioxide and all the raw materials that are toxic and the lymph gland is a secondary level. There are the arteries that bring out the oxygen and then through the capillaries and then the veins that take back after giving out the oxygen, but that is just

taking back the carbon dioxide and other things. They also serve the lymph glands. In smaller animals, it seems that the lymph glands in the smaller mammals have a pump, like a heart, and it is only in humans that the lymph moves by a valve and pressure system, that means it is a one-way street. So, when you cross over, you cannot go backwards. There is a valve that prevents that. You can imagine that if you are not moving, your lymph glands actually move, by movement, which means that if you are in the office, having an 8-hour job sitting down all the time, you automatically are not healthy because your lymph glands function by catching the movements and making the rubbish move out of you, which is why it is true that trampoline does help. Later on, Sam gave me a trampoline, so it is in my house and I jump. I try to jump every day about 5 to 10 minutes. It is interesting. Anyway, it is just one example of how complex the body is.

That is why those who tend to have a bit of physical activity, like walking or all those things in their lives, they tend not to get sick. Even if you are a healthy person and if you stop removing the toxins from you, you will definitely get sick anyway. Do not care about what type of food you eat or how good it is, you will get sick. It is just like in your HDB apartment or in your house, if they stop removing the rubbish, it is piling up. At a certain point, sicknesses will come and we all know in our modern civilisation how important hygiene is because long ago before they understood hygiene, people used to die by diarrhea and bubonic plague and all kinds of things that are caused by the rubbish and the mice came and the ticks of the mice carried the bubonic plague and all those different things but when society cleaned them up, the sicknesses also disappeared.

So, when you pile up the rubbish in your life, sicknesses will come no matter how you try, which means that if you have an office job that is 8 hours a day sitting down, you do have to compensate by moving your body for 10 to 15 minutes or do some exercise. That is important, but everything has a balance. You can also over-exercise, like some people over-exercised and then they died, also died early. So, there is a bit of balance in all things.

### *Complexity of the soul*

You see, the body is very complex, each is a whole study in itself. The soul is very complex too and this is just an example of what the soul can be. Not your spirit, your soul, we are talking about your soul. Within your soul are emotions and will. Let us leave the emotions and will part, because we are concentrating on renewing your mind. There is a part in your

soul, let us say looking at a section of your soul, that is the mind, then there is one part of your mind that handles what I call “*phroneo*” (setting), that handles the setting; then there is another part, that is the “*dianoia*”, that handles the visual aspect and there are many, many other aspects, like we have studied on *The Mind Series III*, studying all the positioning of the Greek words for mind.

We now just focus on *phroneo* and *dianoia* which consist of a part of your mind. *Nous* is the whole thing, the whole thing inside you that is a part of your mind. So, looking at your *phroneo*. Let us say there are different parts of your *phroneo*. *Phroneo* is like a crystallisation. Now, let me illustrate it a bit more differently. Let us say the whole glass now represents the mind, so there is visualisation, it can be good *phroneo* but there can be a part of you that is a bad *phroneo* that is stuck inside you.

The Greek word in Romans 8:6-7, the *phronema* – if you are spiritually minded, that produces life and peace. Now, how is it that something in your soul can produce something in your spirit? Have you seen the association? Romans 8 again, it says very clearly in verses 6 and 7. Verse 6 says, “*For to be carnally minded is death, but to be spiritually minded is life (zoe) and peace (eirene)*”. Now, *zoe* has to do with spiritual life. So, how is it that a *phronema* can produce spiritual life? How is that possible? Soul is soul, spirit is spirit.

Now, there are good *phroneo* and bad *phroneo* inside of us. What the Bible says is this, when you are born again, there are some parts of you that are good *phroneo* and there are some parts of you that are good *dianoia*. Now, it does not mean you cannot develop further. You can develop further. Then there are some parts of you that are bad *phroneo* and bad *dianoia*. To do this, I need to give you all the scriptures. I have already given you Romans 8:6. Let me also give you Ephesians 1 and then Ephesians 3.

Look at Ephesians 1:17-18, “*that the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give to you the spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of Him, the eyes of your understanding (dianoia, so your dianoia has eyes and you can see) being enlightened; that you may know what is the hope of His calling*”. Notice that your *dianoia* needs to be flooded with light to see. We need light to see. So, the spiritual light needs to come into the mind in some way but when you are a contextual reader, you do not just consider that verse, you have to also look at chapter 4. In Ephesians 4, Paul speaks about the new man. When he speaks

about the new man, he touches a bit about the old man, in verses 17 to 18, “*This I say, therefore, and testify in the Lord, that you should no longer walk as the rest of the Gentiles walk, in the futility of their mind* (notice the word “mind”, it is the *nous*, so it is a general mind), *having their understanding (dianoia) darkened*”. Can you see the contrast here, how Ephesians 1:18 contrasts with Ephesians 4:18?

In Ephesians 1:18, the Holy Spirit fills your *dianoia* with light, so you know the hope of His calling. In Ephesians 4:18, before you come to know God, and it is talking about those who walk in the world, they also have a *dianoia*, their *dianoia* is darkened and is separated from the life of God. When you are separated from the life of God, then it becomes the work of the enemy. So, you can imagine, there is a dark side and there is a light side. It says that the dark part needs to be destroyed. There is no way you can renew it. It needs to be excised and removed away. Some things are like a cancer that need to be removed. That is where the word of God comes in. Only the word is sharper than a two-edged sword that can cut right through the spirit and the soul, but you also find a clue in Romans 8:6. Remember, it says to be spiritually minded, so let us take the *phroneo*, it says to be spiritually *phroneo* or *phronema*, is life and peace.

#### *Spiritually minded produces zoe*

How is the part of the soul producing life and peace? We are just talking about Romans 8:6. We know it produces *zoe*. Spiritually minded produces *zoe* and it is definitely talking about your soul. How is it possible that a part of your *phroneo* (which I took from part of your soul) produces *zoe* (life) and *eirene* (peace)? Let us say it comes like light comes on a stone, when the light comes on it, there is some part of the stone that is shiny. Sometimes it shines in certain sections.

The *phroneo* part of your soul is like a tube, when properly connected, it is a channel of spiritual life into your soul and thus into your body. That is why it talks about to be spiritually *phroneo*, so there is a *phroneo* part of you that connects to the spirit. Then there is a *dianoia* part of you, which Ephesians 1:18 says the light of God shines, so there is understanding. Do not forget also that in Hebrews 8:10 and Hebrews 10:16, the word “mind” is the word “*dianoia*” – that God will write in your *dianoia* and write in your heart, and He will put in your *dianoia* and put in your heart. So, He is putting something inside. The *dianoia* seems to be the receptacle to receive; the *phroneo* seems to be the connector, the connection between

the spirit and the soul. That is why it can bring forth life. For those who set their *phroneo* on the things of the Spirit, they have *zoe* life and the peace of God and peace is the beginning of heaven: the first heaven – peace, love, glory. So, it is like it is a connection to heaven. To understand a bit more of that, Colossians 3:2 tells us to set our *phroneo* on heaven and not on earth and it particularly uses the word “*phroneo*”. There is a part of you that can actually connect like an umbilical cord to heaven, connection to heaven.

You know that sometimes people talk about people with out-of-body experience, when their spirit comes out, that no matter where they go, their spirit is still connected by the “silver cord” to their whole soul. Like it is an umbilical cord where it can go very long, you can see it is like a wireless connection. Long ago, we did not have wireless, so we did not understand about wireless connections but when there is a wireless connection, people can walk past, and the connection is still there because long ago you thought that everyone who comes out of his/her body has an umbilical cord. So, if one thousand people have out-of-body experience and they go over twists and turns, all will get stuck, do not know which one to come back to, all will get caught but when you look at a wireless connection, each one has a program and the difference is, you can have a wireless connection and I can bring a portable wireless connection and both will be working simultaneously. You can see mine, but if you do not have a password, you cannot log on and I can see yours, but if I do not have a password, I cannot log on. You can log on to one at a time. It cannot, like log on to both at the same time, although in higher programs, they have found a way to do that but in general programming in computer, you can only log on to one at a time.

In the same way, the connection is always there. *Phroneo* of your part is the setting that builds the connection. Having defined it very clearly, the reason we are looking in detail is that we have talked about the renewing of the mind, but people do not know how to renew their mind. They thought that renewing the mind is just to take a whole bowl, empty the stones out, scrub every stone, scrub the whole bowl, then put the stones back together again. It is not exactly like that. There are some things that have to be removed and all the time we have to be careful of these two things, which now I teach on Part Two.

#### *Spiritual source of pollution*

In 2 Corinthians 7:1, “*Therefore, having these promises, beloved, let us cleanse ourselves from all filthiness of the flesh and spirit...*”. We always say, “How can? What can pollute the

spirit”? It is not talking about the pollution that comes into our born-again spirit, but it says that there is a spiritual source of pollution.

Remember the dark side of the *phroneo*? Just as the good side of your *phroneo* can connect to the good spiritual dimension, the dark part of your *phroneo* connects to the spiritual darkness and it is drawing spiritual darkness into your life and Jesus talks about spiritual darkness like a substance. He says in Matthew (in the Sermon on the Mount) that if your eye is dark, great is the darkness. It is like a spiritual darkness has drawn into your eyes. If you could search out the things, the dark grows darker. Remember what it says about the carnal mind? The carnal mind produces death and it is not talking about physical death. It will result in physical death, but the carnal mind is connected to spiritual death. Romans 8:6, if you are carnally minded, it is connected to darkness; if you are spiritually minded, it is connected to God’s life.

Then you ask the question; Are both connected at the same time? Here is the thing: It says the carnal mind cannot be renewed. It is an enmity against God. It needs to be pulled down and destroyed because there is something. Then you say, “*Wah*, am I losing brain cells when that is removed”? We are not talking about brain cells; we are talking about cancerous growth.

When you have a cancerous growth and it is removed, it looks better. You know how sometimes when people have a benign growth in their body. So, do not worry about removing your carnal *phroneo*. It is a cancerous growth and since the Bible says it cannot be renewed, it has to be chopped, chopped, cut. We talked about how 2 Corinthians 7 leads to 2 Corinthians 10, pulling down strongholds, casting down arguments and every high thing that exalts itself against the knowledge of God. You see, pulling it down is like destroying it.

In 2 Corinthians 10:4, it talks about *the weapons of our warfare are not carnal but mighty in God for pulling down strongholds*. Now, the words “pulling down” in Greek is “*kathairesis*”, it means figuratively extinction, destruction, complete removal, the extinguishing of it, it is not just tearing it down. You see, destruction, a pulling down, demolition, complete removal. So, it is like demolishing the carnal mind, taking it out. Wouldn’t you call it a stronghold if it is connected to evil power? It is. So, remember the carnal mind connects to evil power. It is not neutral. You thought there is such a thing as neutral.

So, here is the question, “can I have a spiritual mind and a carnal mind at the same time”? Yes, in Matthew 16:16 when Peter answered Jesus; “*You are the Christ, the Son of the living God.*”, that part of it was good. Then the second part, using his carnal mind, he said Jesus should not go to the cross, that part of him, that was his carnal mind. The book of James says do not be double-minded. Now you can see what the meaning of the renewing of the mind is, correct? Can you see what the renewing of the mind is?

How do you destroy the *phroneo*, and I have not touched on the *dianoia yet*, how do you destroy it? Chop, chop, says the Word of God, correct? It is easier said than done. Practice? The first thing is to recognise the source of the thoughts, but some thoughts are so subtle, you do not know the source. Do you know that not all your thoughts are from you? If you do not realise that now, you are still a real baby. Do you realise that not all your thoughts are from you? This is basic Christianity 101. If you do not know that, gone case. Here is the fact. Not all your thoughts are from you. There are good thoughts that are not from you that come from God. There are bad thoughts that are not from you that come from the enemy. The problem is, you also have your own thoughts.

#### *Holy Spirit working inside thoughts*

In Matthew 16:15, obviously when Jesus said: “*But who do you say that I am*”? The thoughts were flowing. The Holy Spirit was giving thoughts. Remember Jesus says that the Holy Spirit will bring to your mind the words that He speaks (John 14, 15 & 16). So, obviously the Holy Spirit is working in your thoughts also. He is bringing the things that Jesus says that is in line with His word to your remembrance. He brings to your remembrance. Remembering is a thought process. He will bring to your remembrance. So, it is a direct scripture that talks about how the Holy Spirit is working inside your thoughts and those thoughts, the source is not yours. It is the Holy Spirit bringing the word to you, bringing things that are in line with the Word.

The same process was in Peter (when the Spirit of the Father said): “*You are the Christ, the Son of the living God.*”, and he spoke it out. He obeyed the thoughts and that was it, in Matthew 16 but the very next moment, he began to think in the natural and the natural thoughts were because for a long time their theology told them, they had been trained and it would be like something dark also. It is their natural argument that the Messiah is a Jewish

Messiah and a Jewish King, something like King David, and it is a natural kingdom. That was the wrong reasoning that was passed down the ages over time.

You have to watch it because sometimes you inherit not just culture. I respect all cultures, I respect all races but anything that is not in line with the Word, we have to watch out. Not only do cultures get passed down, but traditions and traditional interpretations and thinking also. Now, you think that going to every church is safe? In this time that we live in, some churches are giving wrong teaching. Soon in ten or twenty years' time, the apostate church will become stronger and they will really teach things that are anti-Bible and anti-Christ. It is all through teaching that people are bound. Why is it that in a time like ours, there are Christians still who do not accept speaking in tongues and the Charismatic Movement? If they were just freshly born again, do you think they will go against it? No because for many years, they have been taught against it.

Look at it this way. Where did denominations come from? We did not make the denominations. They are passed down from generation to generation. So, when the missionaries came, if the missionaries had just come and said all who believe in Christ are all one together, we will have no denomination but when you have Pentecostal missionaries come in, they set up Pentecostal churches; when you have Baptist missionaries come in, they set up Baptist churches; when you have Methodist missionaries come in, they set up Methodist churches; and when you have Catholic missionaries come in, they set up Catholic churches. So, they bring their quarrels, which are over thousands of years back, into our nations and society and then we inherit them, we believe them, and we defend them. We never questioned, we never went back to the Bible.

In the same way, sometimes you can be born into a culture or born into any situation, not only do you have to watch the culture, but you have to watch and be careful in case the culture carries the wrong teaching. By tradition, Peter was brought up understanding that the Messiah would be an earthly king. All the years that he had been following Jesus, it remained a part of him. It was an unrenewed part that was still there. One day it burst forth. When Jesus revealed Himself as the Messiah and people believed that He was the Messiah, and he said: *"You are the Christ, the Son of the living God"* – he got blessed – *"... that you are Peter, and on this rock I will build My church... And I will give you the keys of the kingdom of heaven..."*, he was blessed (Matthew 16:18-19). After the blessing and then Jesus started

telling something that was against their theology, Jesus said that the Messiah must die – that was against their theology. He was to be a king, but He was to be killed. Peter could not understand that, and he rebuked Jesus. Can you think about that? In a few seconds, he got big-headed. He just got blessed by Jesus, now he thought he was superman. He dared to rebuke Jesus. The Greek word actually says he rebuked Jesus. *Wah*, do not know what it was like to rebuke Jesus. The word “rebuked” actually means “scolding” Jesus. *Wah*, scolding Jesus. Yes, he was literally scolding Jesus, and because of this theology. Remember what did Jesus said? “*Get behind Me, Satan*”! The origin of that argument and thoughts was Satanic. So, besides the *phroneo*, that is part of it that has to be renewed. Peter must have been stunned. In Matthew 16, a few minutes ago, he was yielding to the Spirit; after that he was yielding to the wrong thoughts.

You see, *phroneo* is interesting. If you do not know what is inside, that is why it says in 2 Corinthians 7:1, to be aware of the things that pollute from the spirit. Now you know they are not affecting your spirit man. They are affecting your *phroneo* which is the carnal part. Only God knows what is hidden inside that still has to be removed. Now you know what is the renewal of the mind? There are two processes – one is to remove, as far as the east is from the west, some things; the other is to clean it up, wash it, renew it and give it a new purpose, let light come upon it. There are two processes in renewal of the mind. Some things cannot be renewed by the carnal mind, like arguments have to be cast down, things that are not in line with the Word have to be pulled down and removed.

In Hebrews 9, the writer talks about the blood of Jesus and he contrasts the blood of bulls and goats with the blood of Jesus. That is fine but when he talks about the cleansing by the blood, he talks about more than just forgiveness of sin. Look at verse 14: “*how much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered Himself without spot to God, cleanse your conscience from dead works to serve the living God*”?

#### *What is conscience*

Now we are going to talk about your conscience and compare Watchman Nee’s description of conscience with the understanding of what is conscience. Remember, Watchman Nee says that conscience is inside your spirit man and, if you remember, the three circles that he drew – *Spirit, Soul and Body*. In the *Soul*, he has the *Emotions, Will and Mind*. Inside the *Spirit* – *Conscience, Intuition and Communion*.

It tells us in Hebrews 9:14, the blood of Christ cleanses your conscience (it is talking about Christians) from dead works. How is that possible in Watchman Nee's version? Watchman Nee says your conscience is part of your spirit and I thought your spirit is born again, not cleansed, correct? If your spirit is born again, you have got a new spirit. I used to ask what happened to the old one? It just got swallowed up, disappeared. God did not come to cleanse your spirit, God came to give you a new birth. He did come to cleanse us with the blood of Jesus. So, what then is the meaning?

*Conscience, Intuition and Communion* – *Intuition* is actually more of mind; *Communion*, we put to the will; *Conscience* relates to emotions – if this is your spirit, how do you understand Watchman Nee's Book I with Hebrews 9:14? How shall the blood of Jesus cleanse your conscience from dead works? That is the first question. There is a second question. Hebrews 9:14 – how shall Jesus' blood cleanse your conscience from dead works to serve the living God? Can you see that when you go into details with *The Spiritual Man – Book I*, going by his definition, you will still get stuck? This is because you know that the spirit man was not just cleansed, it disappeared, and you have got a new spirit.

Here is my second question. How to explain Hebrews 9:14 if Watchman Nee was incorrect in putting the conscience to the spirit? Could the conscience actually be a part of your soul? Is your conscience a part of your soul or a part of your spirit? Something that you were never asked to think about before, maybe?

Can you see that we are struggling with *The Spiritual Man Book I* because we are pushing the boundaries? Normally, a natural law or spiritual law or spiritual understanding serves you until you push the boundaries. Newton's law was okay until they discovered that the speed of light can change with going through a different substance and they found that light can bend when passing through gravity and so you need Einstein's theory of relativity to explain certain things, that Newtonian law could not explain.

In a similar way, if the conscience is not in the spirit, then where is it? Is it in the soul? You have got only one choice actually, left only the soul. Now, when you study about the conscience, and let us say you take the word "conscience", okay, we can easily find all the Greek words for it. Let us look at the Greek word for "conscience" which is "*suneidesis*". When you look at the word "conscience", you realise that when you study it, it does say in

Timothy that we need to have a good conscience. In 1 Timothy 4:2, “*speaking lies in hypocrisy, having their own conscience seared* (Does it mean that their spirit is seared?) *with a hot iron*”, *seared with a hot iron* (must be one word), so it is “*kauteriazō*” (to cauterize, to burn it and cut it at the same time, so you cannot feel anything).

Let us look at the bad guy first, one at a time, we just need one verse at a time. When they say that the bad guys had their conscience seared with a hot iron, is that part of their soul or their spirit? Here is the thing: I can show you that the conscience seems closer to the soul than the spirit. That is why I do not use the word “conscience” anymore in *The Spiritual Man Book II* for the spirit. You see, we have read Watchman Nee’s book and we took it as Bible. No question was asked but has anyone studied every single verse with the word “conscience” to see whether that diagram he drew, which we have never questioned, is right? We accepted it for twenty to thirty years of Christian life because someone had done the research for us, but we did not check the data. Now we are re-examining the data to see whether the data is correctly interpreted, which is a fair research and we are seeing that, *hey*, wait a minute, here in 1 Timothy 4:2, it looks like their soul is seared, not their spirit is seared.

Look at this word “conscience”. I know there is this verse in Romans 14. Paul is talking about those who are weak and he says that some who are weak, some people feel that it is right to only eat vegetables, some people say you can eat everything, that is in Romans 14:1-2, “*Receive one who is weak in the faith (he calls him weak in the faith), but not to disputes over doubtful things. For one believes he may eat all things, but he who is weak eats only vegetables*”. Then some only observe one day as the Sabbath day, but some treat that every day is a holy day. Who is right, who is wrong? Paul is already using the word “weak”, saying that the weak one is not more but less right. In other words, all things are sanctified. So, the weak one is actually the guy who looks like the stronger one because the guy says he only eats vegetables. He looks like the stronger one spiritually, but Paul calls him the weak one because his understanding is not so clear.

Then when you look over at 1 Corinthians 8:4-5, “*Therefore concerning the eating of things offered to idols, we know that an idol is nothing in the world, and that there is no other God but one. For even if there are so-called gods...*”, (Even if there are gods, they are false gods anyway). Then in verse 7, “*However, there is not in everyone that knowledge; for some, with consciousness* (I show you the Greek word, “consciousness” is the word “conscience”, same

Greek word “*suneidesis*”. It is translated as “consciousness” but it is the same Greek word “*suneidesis*”. So, some, with conscience / consciousness) *of the idol, until now eat it as a thing offered to an idol; and their conscience (he is talking about Christians, their conscience), being weak, is defiled*”. Can you see the word “defiled”? Same as the word “soiled”.

Here, it is interesting. Three times the word “conscience” is used, these are the same Greek word for verse 7 (two words); verse 10, “... *will not the conscience (suneidesis) of him who is weak be emboldened to eat those things offered...*”. Now, based on these words, doesn't it tell you that the conscience is just a consciousness? Consciousness is a part of your soul. It looks like a spiritual part, but I am trying to show how the soul can behave like the spirit when it is good, and the soul can behave wrongly when it is wrongly taught.

Then we look at other verses for “conscience”, besides these verses. You see, we always support every understanding with the Bible. These are not my interpretation. These are the only way where you can put all those verses together. Here is another one in 1 Timothy 1:5, “*Now the purpose of the commandment is love from a pure heart, from a good conscience, and from sincere faith*”. Then you have a few in Timothy. 1 Timothy 1:19, “*having faith and a good conscience...*”, implying you can have faith and a bad conscience. Can you see that the conscience, although it can be used by God, just like the soul can be used by God, it can also be your worst enemy?

Where, then, is the inner witness? Inner witness is different from conscience. Is it in the spirit or the soul? It is in the spirit. Kenneth E Hagin has a different way, he did not call it conscience. He called it the inward witness which is a different thing. Inward witness is this: Inward witness either senses the grief of the Spirit or the joy of the Spirit. It is sensing the spiritual sensing. Conscience is different. I have shown that a conscience can be wrongly trained.

Having understood all this background, now we go back to Hebrews 9:14 to understand that verse more. Now, can you see that this refers to renewal of the mind? If I prove to you that conscience is a part of your soul, then your soul is the part that needs renewal. That is the part that needs renewal. It tells this: The blood of Jesus cleanses your consciousness. The word “conscience” is translated as “consciousness” in 1 Corinthians 8:7, “*suneidesis*”. Hebrews

9:14, "... cleanse your conscience from dead works to serve the living God"? So, can you see that renewal of the mind is not just by the word, but is also by the blood of the Lamb, if you read Hebrews 9:14 correctly.

Here is, we are coming to the conclusion now. We have to come out with the formula on how to renew our mind but before we come out with the formula, we will examine the very inner pieces of what is in renewal. You see, there are some parts and let us take your conscience which should be another part of you. Let us say this is the part of your conscience, which is another part of your consciousness, does not matter which part of the soul it belongs to, whether it is emotions or will or mind, it does not matter, after all the soul works, integrates things together but your conscience, which can work with the spirit, I am sure it can work with the spirit. Remember the Romans 2 category? Why are some people able to keep the law in their conscience? Because at a certain point, their conscience was trained.

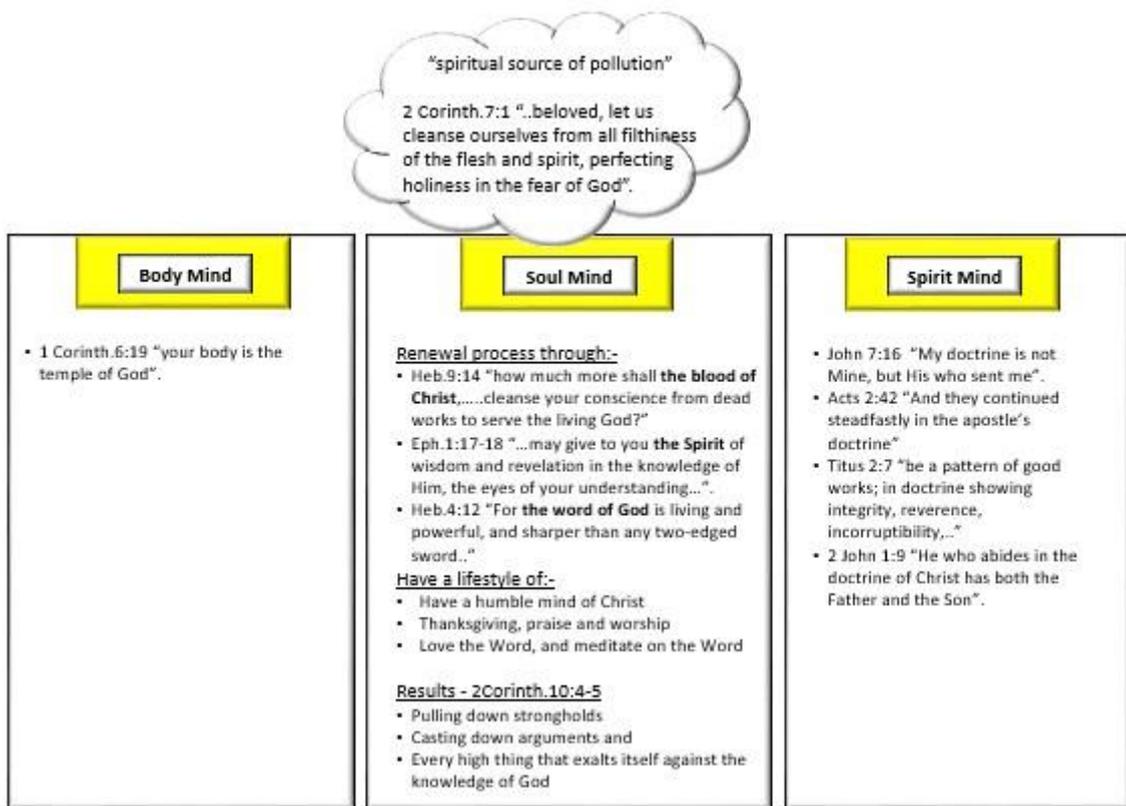


Diagram 1

*The conscience has to be trained*

Here is the matter. The conscience has to be trained because right and wrong are trained into us by the Ten Commandments – whether you got it through Moses Law, or through your father’s upbringing, or through your society, or through some ancient cultural edict that is

like the Ten Commandments, or from any religious upbringing. You were trained what is right and wrong from small and as you are trained in what is right and wrong, your conscience begins to be used for that later in your life. Now, it is possible, and this is a very cruel thing, that from young a child begins to have his conscience trained wrongly but without training, can the conscience pick up right and wrong? That is the question you must be able to answer right now. Without training, does the conscience know right and wrong?

Apparently, before sin came, before any pollution, we need to ask this question: How did the conscience become trained bad? Definitely, all these forces work together. You see, we have now different things. You have your good *phroneo* and bad *phroneo*. You have your good *dianoia* and bad *dianoia*. You have your white conscience blackened. So, they are all inside you. There is the bad, there is the good, all struggling. The Bible says that before bad came, we all once knew God. John 1:4 tells us, “*In Him was life, and the life was the light of men*”. So, somewhere, God used to shine.

In Romans 7:9, Paul says before the law came he was alive. Every child born into this earth has a very tender spirit, soul and body. In other words, his soul is like his spirit, before sin nature took over. His soul is very much like his spirit. Until the law came, then he died. So, at one point, all these things do not exist. That is a child. Then slowly, through wrong teaching and wrong *phroneo*, darkness starts coming in; wrong influence, the sin conscience starts coming in; wrong *dianoia*, the wrong visualisation, all come in and he ends up with that.

In Hebrews, it was written to Christians, it was written for Christians. Paul said to the Christians (in Hebrews 9:14), *how much more shall the blood of Jesus Christ cleanse your conscience from dead works*. Now, in that cross is death or dead. Works is a god. Now, what are dead works?

Here is the thing: Hebrews 6:1 (talking about the foundational principles), “*Therefore, leaving the discussion of the elementary principles of Christ, let us go on to perfection, not laying again the foundation of repentance from dead works...*”. Dead works are works that produce death, the more you do it, the more you die. Life works are works that produce life, the more you are in it, the more life comes out. So, dead works are not works that do not exist. Dead works are full of energy – energy from evil. Life works are full of energy from God.

Remember, that the spiritual mind is life and peace. Remember, the carnal mind is death, it results in death. Now, when the carnal mind starts doing things, what are those things? Dead works. Carnal mind will tell you to do things. Everything produced by the carnal mind is dead and full of death, inspired by death, linked to death, produces death. Although there are two different Greek words – one is the word “*thanatos*” and the other is “*nekros*”, but *nekros* is more like the dead-dead, it is really an exhibition of something like the skeleton. Dead works, a lot of efforts, but dead works.

Just to show that a lot of efforts can go into dead works, let me give you an example. Revelation 3:1, “*And to the angel of the church in Sardis, (Remember, Sardis is the church of life.) write, ‘These things says He who has the seven Spirits of God and the seven stars: ‘I know your works, that you have a name that you are alive, but you are dead’*”’. Can you see that? They are dead – *nekros* – and they are doing a lot of things but everything that they have done is useless. So, dead works are not no works, dead works are not zero works. Dead works can look like good works. The difference between dead works and good works is sometimes not obvious, but inwardly it is obvious, outwardly it is not.

For example, two persons can go to Africa. One can go because God calls him; the other because he is looking for gold and jewelry for the dictator. One is dead, one is alive. Outwardly they both make the journey, but their purpose and their motivation are totally different. One will produce more death. The jewels, the gold and the money that he earns, all from bloodshed, from suffering and misery, are dead works and there is a curse involved. The other is alive and there is a blessing involved. So, dead works are not zero works. Dead works are the source of evil.

#### *Cleanse your conscience*

So, we keep coming back to Hebrews 9:14 because we need to understand this very thoroughly, “*how much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered Himself without spot to God, cleanse your conscience...*”? I like the word “cleanse”, “*katharizo*”, sometimes it is used for the word “purge” (the purge is to thoroughly filter and remove). So. there are two processes of renewal of the mind, one is through the word, the other is through the blood but there is one more. It takes three to bear witness.

Now, we come to the conclusion. Renewal of the mind takes the power of the Spirit, the power of the word and the power of the blood. All the time, many of us have been thinking, *oh*, renewal is just the word of God because we all have in mind Hebrews 4:12, that is all we have but there is a lot of process involved. Renewal of the mind has to do with truth. You see, what is wrong with this *phroneo* [carnal mind]? It is based on a lie. What is wrong with this argument? It is based on a lie. What is wrong with this conscience? It is based on a lie. What is wrong with this *dianoia*? It is based on a lie. Can you see that?

What is right about this *phroneo*, the spiritual mind? It is based on the truth. You say, “But the word is truth”. Yes, the Spirit is also truth. Didn’t the Holy Spirit’s title call Him the Spirit of Truth? There is the Spirit of Truth, the Word of Truth, and Jesus says, “*I am the way, the truth, and the life*”. So, His blood contains truth. This is based on truth – *dianoia* – the light of God shines, and *dianoia* needs the spirit of wisdom and revelation to enlighten, to flood it with light. Then, of course, the good conscience and that is the part, in the cleansing of the conscience, it can be renewed, so the bad is removed, washed completely, purged away, left only the good conscience.

Now, we can see the process of renewal very clearly. Many people think that they can just be renewed by only one source. You need all three. It is called, in 1 John 5:7, the three witnesses in heaven, the Father, the Word and the Holy Spirit. On the earth, 1 John 5:8, there is the witness of the Blood, the witness of the Spirit, and the witness of the Water (the Word).

#### *What is a witness*

What is a witness? In the Old Testament sense, two or three witnesses witness to the truth, whether it is the true event or the true incident or the true word that is spoken. You say, “I heard the person said that”, ‘This is the truth,’ said the witness, “I was there when he said it. I was there when he did it”. You see, they are witnessing to the truth. So, the Word, the Blood and the Spirit witness to the truth.

The blood cleanses and washes white as snow. The blood also corrects us in a sense. You know what is the conscience of dead works? What is the conscience built around dead works? It means your conscience tells you it is wrong, but it is right, and your conscience tells you it is right, but it is wrong but the conscience that is cleansed, it tells you what is right is right; it tells you what is wrong is wrong.

In Christianity, we have a lot of Christians who believe that what they have done is right, but in the judgment seat, they will find that what they have done is wrong and then we judge people saying that what they did is wrong when we do not know what was going on in their heart, perhaps they were doing something correctly, and maybe there might be a flaw here, but inside they could be doing something correctly. Or we just judge outwardly, and we say, “I think the person is wrong in doing those things”. Or like, I am not talking about the Ten Commandments thing, let us say people have their opinions and they might say, “I think this is not the right way to do it”. However, it might be the right way, or it might be the wrong way.

Where is your conscience? A weak conscience cannot tell; a conscience in dead works cannot tell. Can you see that we need the blood of the Lamb? It is the blood that we need. Any teaching that lessens the power of the blood – it is not talking about blood for salvation anymore – this is the blood so that you can tell right from wrong and do you know that there is something that still condemns you when God says it is all right? There is something that God says it is all right, and you are saying that it is wrong. There is something that you say it is right, but your real conscience says it is wrong. How do we change that sensing? The blood. The blood will set you free. You say, “How dare my conscience tells me that”! This is because it has been programmed by dead works. Over time, it has been programmed. It has been programmed to tell you that those things are wrong when they might not even be wrong or right; they might be neutral.

Let me give some examples of church history. Long, long ago, when human beings started going to the water to swim, just a few hundred years ago, and they had public swimming pools. In Pentecostal history book, a group of Pentecostals were saying that it was wrong for men and women to swim together, and they made doctrines out of it. Today, none of your conscience feels that it is wrong. The only thing is to be properly attired, correct?

If you go to India today, in many of the churches, the men sit with the men, the ladies sit with the ladies, even if they are married. One fine day somebody came, and it was a couple and they sat together. The whole church looked at them. “*Huh*, atrocity, I cannot see that”! What happened? Their conscience had been trained differently but to God, it was no big deal.

### *Dead works can be dangerous*

Can you see that dead works can be dangerous? This is because it takes all your energy, fighting like a Pharisee over small little molecules when you are not focusing on light, and those things produce death, instead of producing life. It is possible that we need to grow to this level to be able to handle this verse from Titus 1:15, “*To the pure all things are pure...*”. So, it is like if you really are pure. Jesus went and sat with sinners and ate with them. The Pharisees said, “How dare He”? The Pharisees, arbiters of the Jewish law, said that it was wrong. Jesus sat with tax collectors, Jesus mixed with Gentiles, Jesus spoke to the Samaritan woman (John 4). The dead conscience says this is all wrong. Can you see the contrast?

A lot of time your self-righteousness builds condemnation to the point that you cannot move forward. So, here is the thing: A true Christian does not walk with condemnation. I did not say that we might be perfect. If you do falter, you have got 1 John 1:9. If you do sin, confess your sins, *God is faithful and just to forgive you your sins*. We have to be cleansed from that stage of conscience.

The first renewal of the mind is the power of the blood and it is very important because if the blood does not remove the condemnation and the things that you thought were right or wrong, you will constantly live like a Pharisee and at the end of the day you thought you have achieved much, but at the end of the day, you will find that you did not achieve much. You will produce a lot of death and some life, instead of producing all life, because your conscience is like this and not like that. It is the blood. We need the blood each time to cleanse us and cleanse us and cleanse us. Sometimes another Christian challenge you, because the Christian says, “*Eh, this is all right*”. You say, “Are you sure this is all right”? He challenges you. Now, sometimes he could be a false Christian, he could be the devil trying to deceive you, but you have got to go back to the blood of the Lamb.

The first thing you can see is you have to start afresh again, that is why he that enters the kingdom of God must start as a little child. If you start your Christian life as an old man, an educated man or woman, and a grown up, you have started wrongly. Your Christian life must start from a baby, then it is easy to retrain you. Do not bring your idiosyncrasies, do not bring your concepts of Christianity, do not bring all your things into your Christianity, do not bring all your denominational things, do not bring all your cultural things into it. Start as a little baby and from there God can teach you. When you try to start from the top, you are wrong.

That is why Jesus says out of the mouth of babes He has perfected praise, which is why Jesus also says that He has revealed the mysteries of God to babes because you do not start there, you start as a babe. You start with a clean slate.

Look at Peter in Matthew 16, such a revelation of Christ. He should have allowed that revelation to unveil his thinking. If Jesus is the Christ, the Son of the living God, it cannot be an earthly empire. So, somehow that revelation and the reasoning were in discord and he was still holding on to that when he should have let go. So, we need the cleansing power of the blood.

The things that convict you, the things that condemn you, the things that give you permission, is your conscience full of dead works. It needs the purging of the blood until it can feel right as right and wrong as wrong, purely and the blood can only work when you are before God like a little child. Proud people cannot come to know the Lord, they must humble themselves. Worldly-wise people cannot come to know the Lord, the cross is foolishness to the wise, they must humble themselves. The only way for the blood to help us and the blood to cleanse us, we come like a little child and say, "God, teach me Your ways". Humble yourself, let God teach you afresh His new ways. God will teach you the new way, the way that is a holiness way, not a sinful way, but the highway of holiness is higher than the world can make you walk, because the world's way of righteousness and lawfulness and correctness are based on laws. God's ways are based on principles and Spirit. The world thinks that something is right when it is done religiously. God says something is right when it is done from love. Jesus broke outwardly some Pharisees' laws, He healed on the Sabbath, He touched unclean people when He healed them. You know, by the law, you cannot touch an unclean person, you will be unclean. Jesus mixed with the sinners, all things that were sacrosanct to the Pharisees.

### *Be humble like a child*

The way to renew our mind, number one: Humble ourselves like a child, to ask the blood of Christ to cleanse and renew us and continue to examine what we think is right and wrong, not based on ourselves, not based on what we have been fed, but based on love and His Word.

Secondly: The Spirit. There is a way in which we must approach the dimension of the Spirit to humble ourselves and the way into right start is with *eucharistia*. I point to Romans 1; how did the mind stop being renewed? It talks about those who stop walking with God. It says in

verses 20-21, *“For since the creation of the world His invisible attributes are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even His eternal power and Godhead, so that they are without excuse, because, although they knew God, they did not glorify Him as God, nor were thankful, but became futile in their thoughts, and their foolish hearts were darkened”*.

Now, remember what happened first? (a) They did not glorify God. (b) They were not thankful. Then they became darkened. What you want is not darkness, you want light. For light to flow, you must enter His gates with thanksgiving and His courts with praise and before His throne with worship. This is what they failed to do. When they could see God, instead of recognising God, they made images of God from the animals, and then they worshipped these as God and they were not thankful to God, they were thankful to other objects. So, they had no thankfulness of heart to the Lord. These were things that made them darkened.

The Bible tells you: It is the will of God to give thanks in everything, 1 Thessalonians 5:18, in everything give thanks; for this is the will of God concerning you. Isn't that interesting that it is connected to the other part that is the will of God? Let me look at two scriptures and compare it. In 1 Thessalonians 5:17-18, *“pray without ceasing, in everything give thanks; for this is the will of God in Christ Jesus for you”*. The will is for you to be always in thanksgiving. Then you compare that, which many people do not compare, with Romans 12:2, *“And do not be conformed to this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind, that you may prove what is that good and acceptable and perfect will of God”*. Can you see the will of God there? Both are actually talking about renewal of the mind.

#### *The Spirit is easily grieved*

However, the renewal of the mind that we are talking about is the part that is by the Spirit, that is Ephesians 1:17-18 where Paul prays that the spirit of wisdom and revelation will enlighten them, will flood them with light. Since it is the Spirit that gives life, the Spirit can be easily grieved. So, how do we put ourselves in a position where the Spirit can keep shining in our lives, something that God cannot force us to do? Give thanks.

Then you can see the difference between light and darkness. To remain in light and darkness is so simple, so simple that we miss the truth. The more you complain, the more you walk

into darkness. Every word you say, *aiyah, aiyah, aiyah*, I do not know why God is this way, so you speak bad about God, you speak bad, speak bad, then you are walking into darkness without knowing it and the more you go into darkness, the more your *dianoia* gets darkened.

No matter how far, you could be deep in the deep darkness, so in your deep darkness, you cry “I will give thanks”, slowly you step out, you do not feel like it, you say “I choose to give thanks”, and you step out. Like Job, you struggle. You are suffering all kinds of torment. Remember Job? He ended up actually complaining, that is why he had to repent but yet there was some good thing about him. He said (Job 13:15), “*Though He slay me, yet will I trust Him...*”. The only thing Job did not stop doing was to worship God and you keep worshipping, give thanks, give thanks, choose to give thanks, you are walking back into the light and if you keep giving thanks, your mind is a different mind.

#### *The measurement of mind renewal*

How do I know whether the mind is renewed? How do you tell people when their mind is renewed? Very easy. You see whether they are complainers or thanks-givers. This is the measurement, not to say that you cannot analyse the problem, sometimes you have got to talk about problems to solve the problems, but you can talk about problems without being a complainer. You can be a leader who work things out without being a complainer. Haven't you read throughout the whole Bible, complainers always die? In the wilderness, you know who died, right? All those who complained. No water, *Aiyah*, no water! No food, *Aiyah*, no food! Then when there is food, *Aiyah*, why every day manna, where is the meat? They all died. They could have given thanks. So simple, so profound, yet so ignored.

How difficult is it just to say “Father, I love You”? I have resolved this in my life that I pray that I pass it on to you, no matter what happens in life, always say that you still love God. Whether God answers your prayers or does not answer your prayers, you say, “Father God, I will still love You”. Isn't that Shadrach's, Meshach's and Abednego's attitude? They said, “*My God can save me but if My God does not save me and I have to die, I will still love Him*”. So, you start with loving God, because when you love God, all things work together for good for those who love Him. You choose to tell God you love Him in all circumstances. Yes, I can understand. Some of you might be going through very tough circumstances, but here is the thing. The tougher your circumstances and you still say you love God, that carries more

meaning than when you have everything going easy in your life and you say you love Him. Can you see that?

Everything you go through in life is only challenging you in one thing: your love for God but then when you make a permanent covenant decision in your heart, which I have made, no matter what the situation, my first and last words will be “I love You, O God”. No matter what, no matter whether it is easy, or it is hard, it is tough, or it is flowing, and no matter what you are suffering through, what you are going through, the one thing the devil cannot rob you of is “I love you, Lord, and I lift up my voice...”. The devil will say, “*Wah*, I threw my best missile and he is still singing”!

You remember there were two fellows in the Bible who did that? Paul and Silas, Acts 16, in the Philippian jail. What suffering did they go through? Imprisonment wrongly, beaten and sore, black and blue, cuts, legs chained to the wall, looks like no way out, they sang praises, even at midnight. The other prisoners might say, “Well, this is a change”. Every other prisoner moaned and complained. Maybe they felt pain but instead of saying “*Aiyoh!*”, they would rather say “*Hallelujah!*” and God brought them a great victory. That is the second renewal of the mind.

The first is the mind must be humble. You know, that one you can find the Greek word. The word is “*tapeinos*”, together with the word “mind”, having the humble mind of Christ. You know what that is? That is the first one: The blood of the Lamb. It has to do with relationship with the Lord.

When you are with Jesus, remember who you are talking to. You are talking to the Master, the Lord, who bought you with His precious blood. You do not own anything, and you do not have any rights. You were deserving of hell. He bought every part of you, spirit, soul and body. When you talk to Him, He is the Master, humble yourself. When you face the blood, when you look at the blood, that is the blood that saves you and me. Humility and childlikeness.

When you are faced with the Spirit, you draw near and worship with thanksgiving, praise and love for God. When you keep worshipping, your mind has been renewed, your mind has been changed. You see, this is the will of God. There is a general will of God. You must be in the

general will, then He will give you the specific will, correct? You must always be in the general will of God, then the specific will, will come. You say, “God has not revealed the specific will”, but you know what is the general will, to love Him, to worship Him.

Remember when the young man says, “Master, what must I do to inherit eternal life”? (Mark 10:17); Jesus says, “You know the commandments” (love God and all those things); and he says, “I have done these from my youth.”? The Bible puts one verse there (very sweet little verse): Mark 10:21 – “*Then Jesus, looking at him, loved him...*”. You remember that sweet little verse? You know, there are sweet little Bible verses that are put there. Just like John 3:16 does not sound right without the “so”, the “so” makes the difference. You say, “For God loved the world that He gave His only begotten Son...” but it says, “*For God so loved the world...*”. You see, the “so” makes it sweeter. You take away the “so”, it just sounds a little bit not so deep. “*For God so...*”.

Here is another verse in Mark 10, the sweet little verse is put there just to gain our attention. Nothing in the Bible is recorded without a purpose. It says here in verse 20, when the young man says, “*Teacher, all these things I have kept from my youth*”. (Verse 21) “*Then Jesus, looking at him, loved him...*”. Hey, wait a minute, doesn’t Jesus love all of us? Doesn’t Jesus love all the time? Yes, but that caught Jesus’ attention when he said, “I have followed from my youth” but then he still did not respond to Jesus’ love. He could have responded: “Yes, I will love you, my Master; I will love You more than silver and gold” and followed Him.

If you want to gain Jesus’ attention, sing when you are sad; sing when you are in pain; sing when you are fighting sickness; sing when you have got no answer; sing when you are in the wilderness; sing when you are between the rock and the hard place because that shows how much you still love Him. After all these things, I press you, I pressure you and you still say, “I will yet love You”, You will gain the Father’s attention. Didn’t the Bible say in John 4:23, “... *for the Father is seeking such to worship Him.*”? Yes, He does.

In Hebrews 4:12, that *the word of God is sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing asunder soul and spirit, and not only soul and spirit, bone and marrow, and not only bone and marrow, it is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.* So, it is examining everything in your life. That is where the word comes, which is what the normal renewal that you all know. That is why I leave it to the last because you all know point three, it says the

word discerns our thoughts, the word checks us and so some of you are using point three, point three, point three, but you never have points one and two. You never know that the blood also renews your mind and your conscience which affects your mind and you never know that the Spirit is important. There you are reading the word, reading the word, but what happens if you have got point 3, but you do not have points one and two?

This is what you are doing. Every day you read, you read the Meditation booklet like a robot and finish in half-an-hour. Then after that, every day complain, complain, complain. Not only that, then you are very proud, God should have done that, God should do this, you think your righteousness earns you something. “We have been fasting for so long. Do not know why God .... God should have answered by now, do not know why no answer”. Then sometimes you cannot get angry with God because you cannot see God, so you get angry with the Pastor. You are angry with the leaders. “Do not know why you tell me to fast”! Are you angry with me, angry with God, angry with yourself?

When you apply point 3 and you do not have points one and two, can you see how much it is cancelling your renewal? That is why you need all three. The blood renews your conscience, cleanse your conscience. The Spirit enlightens your *dianoia* and the word discerns the thoughts and intents of your heart. Only through the three witnesses of 1 John 5 can we truly be renewed and thus you are set on the path of super-renewal. Hallelujah!

## Chapter 16...

### The Heart and the Mind

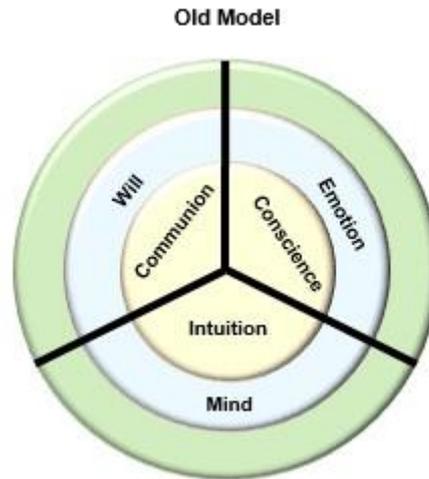


Diagram 1

*Intuition* is the word that Watchman Nee used, but I suggest that he might have used slightly different Chinese words. The true meanings of the Chinese words might have been lost in translation.

We talked about *Conscience* and from the Greek word “*suneidesis*” we talked about that we need to be cleansed (Hebrews 9:14) from a conscience that is dead. Now, a dead conscience functions differently from a living conscience. A dead conscience tells you things are wrong when they should be right, and right when they should be wrong. Whereas in born again conscience – we can say “consciousness”, you have got a new level of consciousness. Once you are cleansed from your old right and wrong versus the things that are right according to God’s word, then your conscience would be able to function better.

We have not used the word “conscience”, but I will just flow in the meantime with the old view. First of all, let us look at Hebrews 9:14, “*how much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered Himself without spot to God, cleanse your conscience from dead works...* “. The blood of Jesus needs to cleanse our conscience.

Even though in Romans 1, it talks about the Romans 2 category who obeyed God (in Romans 2), who somehow obeyed the law of God, following their conscience as much as possible and

they managed not to be lost, so that is the minimum they had, that at least they were not lost and they managed to reach a place in the spiritual world, and we can say, they were saved among those who did not get a chance to hear about Jesus but they were saved by living their lives according to their conscience. In the end, it is still the conscience that has to be enlightened by Christ.

Look at the logical thing. No one can be saved without Jesus, correct? In John 14:6, He tells us that He is the way, the truth, and the life. So, no one can go to the Father God, which implies that anyone who is saved by his conscience, he must have a little bit of light in him. The key is actually not our conscience, the key is actually the light of God. In John 1:9, it talks about when Jesus came, He lighted every man who comes to the world, and so everyone, the Greek word is “*pas*” (every), so everyone is lighted by the light of God. They might not recognise it is Jesus, they might have thought it is their own knowledge, they might have thought it is their own ability, but it is still the light of God. Hebrews 9:14, “*how much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered Himself without spot to God, cleanse your conscience from dead works to serve the living God*”?

I define a dead conscience as a conscience where, of course, sometimes what is right, it tells you what is right and what is wrong, it tells you what is wrong, but a dead conscience is a conscience that does not give life anymore. Anything that does not give life gives death, which means that the dead conscience tells you something is right that is wrong and tells you what is wrong is right. So, it is like opposite. It functions like opposite. Since the opposite of life is death, the opposite of a dead conscience from a good conscience would be its opposite report; it is reporting things wrongly.

#### *The Word comes first*

A lot of Christians rely on their conscience but let me give you one piece of advice: The Word comes first before your conscience because the conscience is trained by the Word and if you have not been trained by the Word, there will be some things that you feel that are wrong in your consciousness. Our new word for conscience is “consciousness”, so I use it interchangeably and it has been used interchangeably in 1 Corinthians 8, verses 7 and 10.

Sometimes your consciousness tells you that it is wrong, but the Word says it is right. You are wrong, and the Word is right. You may say, “*Oh, I do not have a dead conscience*”.

Incorrect. Everyone who needs to be born again has a measure of deadness in his conscience, even the most upright and righteous person in our human eyes, *“for all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God”*, Romans 3:23.

The moment sin came, death came, correct? Do not forget, the only fault that Eve did was to take of the fruit together with Adam and Adam also took it. Adam took it because he wanted to flow along, and Eve asked him to. That was the only sin. There was no breaking of the Ten Commandments *per se* because there were no Ten Commandments given. It was just the Lord said, “Do not eat” and then they ate. Of course, they did not know the implications of so many things but that error, we are still feeling it in humanity. Everyone born in Adam under the fall is born in sin and every evil that you see in the world today is produced by that one act.

In your eyes when you look at worldly people or general people, you think they are upright and righteous before they come to know the Lord and you say, *wah*, their conscience must be very good. Nobody’s conscience is very good. At most, their conscience is reasonably good that it keeps them from losing their salvation or it keeps them from going to hell. That is, it but even the best of the best among us has some deadness in his conscience and that is something that, if you do not want to admit it, God cannot renew you.

It is important for us to realise that there are some things that you think are right but are wrong, and there are some things that you think are wrong but are right. You can be deceived by your own consciousness or your conscience (the dead part). For that reason, Hebrews 9:14 says *“... cleanse your conscience from dead works to serve the living God”*? You see, you cannot serve the living God unless you are cleansed in your conscience or in your consciousness (on your inside).

The good thing about Hebrews is that it also does have, later on when you read, it is talking about other aspects but before I go to that, let us look at Hebrews 10:22. This is one step further. He is writing to Christians, not non-Christians. *“let us draw near with a true heart in full assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience* (Did you notice the word “our” there? Which means it includes the Apostle Paul talking, the writer of this. He says *our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience) and our bodies washed with pure water”*.

### *A dead conscience*

Now, a dead conscience does not tell you what is right and what is wrong; it just does not function properly. Sometimes it tells you the opposite, right is wrong, wrong is right, but an evil conscience goes further. An evil conscience tells you what is wrong is absolutely right. It has turned evil. Your own conscience is fighting against you at this rate.

Just like I have illustrated before, we humans are not capable of walking in a straight line without external guidance. If we drop you in a desert, or drop you in the Arctic Circle or Antarctica, where everything looks the same around you, you will be lost. If you walk in a straight line, thinking you are walking in a straight line, because nobody has yet found why. All humans put different pressure on their right leg from their left leg. Some are stronger in the right leg, some are stronger in the left leg and the slight difference in pressure that you walk with means that while you might think that you are walking in a straight line, you are actually slightly curved, and as you curve, it is only how curved it is before you make a full circle. Thus, to walk in a straight line, you need something external. You say “okay, I will walk between this sand dune and that sand dune”, or that palm tree and that direction, or the stars to guide you, and you keep walking in a straight line. You need an external guidance to walk in a straight line.

Ever since the fall of man, until you have a perfect spirit, soul and body (I repeat; perfect spirit, soul and body), you cannot rely on just your internal senses. Now, this teaching is important because we do have something called the inward witness. I think I have to spend some time on that but before that, let me remind you that even the inward witness is something that confirms the Word. It is not something that confirms your own conviction. If the Word goes against you, you are wrong, the Word is right, no matter how right you feel.

Isn't it true that out there in the world, sometimes they make this statement: How can it be so wrong when it feels so good? There are a lot of things that seem to feel good temporarily, but actually are wrong and there are some things that are good that seem to be not so good, like, for example, some herbs are good for our body, but who likes to eat herbs? Our tastes have changed.

So just like our taste buds have changed, our conscience has been affected but what is good for us? You know, we humans, our taste buds love oil. Without the taste of either animal oil

or fat or natural oil, the food does not taste good. Our senses react to the oil inside and the best *fried kway teow* must always have the effect. It is the aroma and the smell. It produces something in us, our fallen sense of taste. The same with our taste buds, the same with our conscience.

So here is one step: evil conscience but there is a good part here too. Look at Hebrews 13:18, “*Pray for us; for we are confident that we have a good conscience...*”. Can you see that? It says, “Pray for us; I think our conscience is good, I think we are heading in the right direction”. Can you see that the conscience is reliable, but the conscience needs to be checked all the time?

It is just like the GPS when the GPS is not updated, can show you the wrong thing. I remember one time when I was using the GPS in Parramatta and it was an older GPS that I used and then as I was following it, that was when I was living in Canberra, we went to Parramatta in Sydney, there was a particular road, the GPS said to go straight, I said there is no road there, the GPS said to go straight, could not. Somehow it was not updated. Perhaps long ago there was a road, but the building is there. So, in the same way, you have to constantly make sure that things are updated up to the point or accurate. When the satellite signals stop working, the GPS is gone. It is relying on the Global Positioning Satellite System.

Even the writer of Hebrews speaks about conscience, “*Pray for us; for we are confident that we have a good conscience...*”. Now, he has a bit of confidence, but the conscience needs to be trained. A dead conscience is a conscience that is in darkness. An evil conscience is in even greater darkness. A good conscience is a conscience that is in the light. If there is a good conscience, it implies that there is a bad conscience. If there is a dead conscience, it implies that there is a living conscience. If there is an evil conscience, it implies that there is a holy conscience that is there. So, the opposites are always true in all these things.

#### *What makes a good conscience*

What makes a good conscience? We do know that sometimes, and here is the theological logic to the point, we do know in Romans 2 that some people are justified (you can use those words) because they live according to their conscience. It says in Romans 2:14-15 (I call it the Romans 2 category), “*for when Gentiles, who do not have the law, by nature do the*

*things in the law* (not all the time but whenever they do so, Paul says even without the law when they do so), *these, although not having the law, are a law to themselves, who show* (when they do correctly, they show) *the work of the law written in their hearts, their conscience also bearing witness, and between themselves their thoughts (logismos – logical thoughts) accusing or else excusing them*". So, he is talking about sometimes in some area, and then God will judge the person according to his conscience.

He is not saying in Romans 2 that they get it 100% right, he is not saying that. He is saying, look at the context, he is saying that whenever they get it right, it is because the law is still working in their hearts and at that point they are right. Even when he says that, he is putting the conscience lower than the law, lower than the word. We will always need something outside. For this group of people, in a sense they might escape the judgement of God if really all their lives they are following their conscience, where he says there is a possibility of that.

Now, to be consistent with theology, no one can be saved without Jesus, which implies they might not know that it is Jesus, but it is the light of Jesus shining on them. After all, the law was fulfilled in Jesus. Jesus is the law Himself. The laws that are revealed are a small revelation about Jesus. All the Law and the Prophets point to Jesus. So, everything ends in Jesus. They would have some measure of the light of Jesus without knowing it is Jesus. It is just like some people have a good conscience without believing in a God. They are not acknowledging the source of their good conscience, but they might actually have a good conscience. One need not know the source to function in the light.

Long, long ago, before mankind understood about the sun, the moon and the stars, they had always used sunlight and in the night time they might use fire as light to help them, without understanding what makes a fire (that is, combustion happening, that oxygen is being consumed by various methods). So, they might not understand it, but they used it.

If we conclude that, that is where we go to the gospel of John. John 1, we look at this particular verse where it says that Jesus is the Light. John was the witness to the Light (verse 7). Verse 9 – *"That was the true Light* (talking about Jesus who is the Word) *which gives light to every man* (Can you see the word "every"? In Greek, "*pas*" which means "everything", every human being) *coming into the world*". Everyone who is born on the earth as a human being has the light. This light is in their conscience. Now, that light can be dim,

that light can be strong and, in the end, how good our conscience is, depending on how good it is as a mirror to mirror the light of God. The mirror can be corrupted, the mirror can be broken, seared, then you cannot see it clearly. It is only as good as it is kept in tune with God.

It is just like, for example, a guitar needs to be tuned. A piano, needs to be tuned. Everything needs to be tuned, for everything goes out of tune, wear and tear, temperature expansion / contraction, and then the tension slowly loosens, everything goes out of tune. It needs constantly to be tuned back.

So, here is the thing: Our conscience needs to be tuned. I remember the first time after I was born again and had been in the Baptist church for some time, the first time when I encountered the Charismatics, it was the first time that I saw people lift up their hands to worship. I had never done it before. So, at the Charismatics meeting, I was a Baptist and I was lifting up my hands. I just wanted to feel what it was like. It felt so strange, it felt awkward, it felt abnormal, but the problem was me. There are things that your consciousness and your mind and your experience tell you and make you feel, like “I think this is wrong”, but it is because you are not trained yet. Your conscience is not trained yet and it needs retuning and retraining in order for it to be examined. What is the training? The training is actually very simple, the light.

#### *A weak conscience*

The conscience is the spirit-consciousness; the mind is the soul-consciousness; so, we have different levels of consciousness. I call it the *Spirit Mind* that is there. There is; a *Spirit Will*, a *Spirit Mind*, a *Spirit Emotion*. Mind and emotion, these two work together. I have talked about *Intuition* and *Communion*. Then the area of *Conscience*. We call it emotions. Your emotions sense things, and then your mind – now, I am not differentiating the two yet; I am showing the two working together because the Greek for “conscience” is the word “*suneidesis*” and you find it in 1 Corinthians 8:7, “*However, there is not in everyone that knowledge (knowledge – that is why I relate it to “mind” for a moment); for some, with consciousness of the idol, until now eat it as a thing offered to an idol; and their conscience (suneidesis), being weak...*”. So, you can have a weak conscience.

So many words. You never realised that there are so many adjectives tied to conscience. Dead conscience (cleansed from dead conscience), evil conscience, good conscience, and

weak conscience (which implies there could be a strong conscience). By the way, the word “consciousness” here is also “*suneidesis*”. Can you see that the word “conscience” is translated in the same verse into two different English words? One is translated as “consciousness of the idol” and the other is “internal consciousness”.

So, because it is translated as “consciousness”, conscience lies together with your emotions and your mind because you have a consciousness, so it applies to your thought. When they talk about “consciousness of the idol”, they are talking about how the persons (in their knowledge, in their mind) regard an idol. That is a mental perspective. Perhaps there are some emotions involved. From childhood maybe, they have seen idols and all that, and they have been taught to worship idols, so they have an emotional connection, or they have a mental thing. They are taught that these are former gods, or these are powerful demons or whatever. Then they still have an incorrect knowledge and that incorrect knowledge corrupts their conscience and that is what happens to their conscience.

So, I have now whacked your conscience. You say, “Wah, cannot rely on my conscience”? Yes, you must only rely on the Word, but I go further than that. The main thing is not just the word. What makes your consciousness strong? It is the light that comes from the Word. You see, I tie everything together with the word “light”. It is light inside you. The brighter the light can come into you, the greater your conscience and your inward witness. The less the light is inside you, the less you can rely on your conscience. Which is why in some things, where in the multitude of counselors, there is safety (Proverbs 11:14).

You know how the early church decided on the Gentiles question? They had a full conference in Acts 15. Could they make a decision by themselves, one person? Maybe they might get it wrong or get it right, but they got everybody to discuss together. James, the elder was there (not James the Apostle), Peter was there, Paul was there, Silas was there, Barnabas was there. All the Apostles were there with the exception of James who was already killed in Acts 12. So, there was a meeting where they all met together, they tried to sense what the Spirit was telling them, and then they tried to sense what the Word was saying, and then they tried to sense in their conscience what was right and what was wrong, and then they made a decision.

Can you see that it was not made by one man? Can you see now that when you have got one thousand people, one thousand people might sense differently with their conscience?

Secondly, can you see that if you have got one thousand people, thousand people might sense differently with their inward witness because even their inward witness needs to grow to what is wrong and what is right.

### *Keep the light*

Behind everything is one word: Light, the more light that you have. Now, light is a very strange thing to use because you might be exposed to the light, but the light is not in you but in the presence of the light, you can see clearly what is right and wrong. Then when you go outside the light, you cannot see very clearly anymore because you do not have the battery ability to keep the light in you. To have the battery ability to keep the light, we must grow spiritually. The more we grow spiritually, the more we will know, which comes back down to the word here... and here I am trying to write off the understanding of the mind, the conscience, the emotions, how everything relates together.

Now we go to Ephesians 1:17-18. How does God give us more knowledge, conscience, wisdom, understanding, stronger inward witness, stronger conscience? Besides the bad one that needs to be cleansed and washed away, it still needs strengthening. It says (in Paul's prayer for them) in Ephesians 1:17-18, *"that the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give to you the spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of Him, the eyes of your understanding (dianoia) being enlightened..."*.

I like the word "enlightened". "Enlightened" is from the word "light" (*"photizo"*) where we get the word "photon" e.g. photosynthesis. A lot of English words come from Greek. The word *"photizo"* means to shed rays, i.e. to shine or (transitively) to brighten up (literally or figuratively), enlighten, illuminate, bring to or give light, make to see and several usages of it. We do not go to the full definition but suffice for us to know that it is from the word *"photizo"* which is the root word for "light" and when the light has come, we know we are conscious of it. The "knowing" will be the word *"ginosko"* (if I am not wrong). *"Oida"*. It is interesting they use the word *"oida"*. Now, the word "know" is the word *"oida"*. *"Oida"*, actually is to have seen or perceived – to see from the inside, hence to know.

Look over at Ephesians 4, talking about the Gentiles who once upon a time... In Ephesians 4:18, *"having their understanding darkened..."*. Now, this is opposite from Ephesians 1:17 to 18. The word "understanding" is the word *"dianoia"*, same Greek word in Ephesians 1:18 but

now their *dianoia* is darkened (“*skotizo*” – to obscure, to darken, to be covered with darkness).

Here is the opposite thing happening: When darkness happens, your conscience slowly becomes inoperable; your inward witness is also not so strong in sensing. Everything relates back to one word – light – how much of the light of Jesus we have on the inside. Sometimes by coming to a place of prayer meeting or to a worship or to any place where God’s light is shining – do you know that God’s light shines differently in every place? Whenever God’s light, although the physical eyes cannot see, but when God’s light is shining very powerfully, if you get into the presence of that light, you can see it clearly but the more you get into that presence, you must absorb that light. When that light becomes your light on your inside, remember I taught you how to pray for the internal light to shine in depth, then your conscience is good, your inward witness is strong, and then you can rely on that.

You say what about the Word? The song, *Thy word is a lamp unto my feet and a light unto my path*. Can you see that the Word has to become the light? Because there are many people reading the Bible as a story and it has not become the light. Non-Christians study it as a subject in a Catholic school or a Christian school. They might have something from it. The difference is the attitude to the Bible. The moment your mind closes up and says it is a story book, what you read is a story, every time the light tries to come in, you block it, you block it. So, you can read the same word and it does not produce light. Isn’t it strange?

You all know that before being born again and after born again, the Bible looks different. Same Bible. Let us take that it is the same English translation, it did not change the translation, it is different and here is the other thing: Before baptism in the Spirit and after baptism in the Spirit, also looks different. Before more understanding and before you grow even more, you grow 3 more years and read the Bible, also different. Can you see that the Bible remains the same but how much light you can derive from the Bible is still somewhat dependent on you? So, where is the control factor?

We say that the word gives light and somehow how much we can take from the word depends on how much light we can get from the word. Our conscience depends on the light and our mind depends on the light. If the mind is darkened, it is finished. In the end, it is something in your heart and your mind, that you must switch on for the Word to work.

Let me point to 2 Corinthians 4 where Paul talks about a situation where the gospel is preached but the light is not shining, so that you know that my illustration is straight from the Bible. In chapter 3, verse 18, it ends with how we are being transformed from glory to glory by beholding Jesus. 2 Corinthians 4:1-2, *“Therefore, since we have this ministry, as we have received mercy, we do not lose heart. But we have renounced the hidden things of shame, not walking in craftiness nor handling the word of God deceitfully, but by manifestation of the truth commending ourselves to every man’s (here’s the word) conscience...”*.

You see, the conscience is being trained everywhere in the Bible and they are appealing to people’s conscience as the light is shining on them. That is why when the people were under the light of God shining, when Peter preached (in Acts 2) one sermon, three thousand of them cried out “What shall we do to be saved”? However, before they cried out, the Bible says one thing, they were pricked in their heart. Their conscience was suddenly awakened but what was their conscience? Their conscience was dead, their conscience was bad. Why was it functioning only at that time? Because they were under a great light. Remember I talked about coming to a great light? If they had been far away, they did not hear the sermon. If they were not in Jerusalem that day, their conscience would not be pricked at all. On that day, seeing the signs of God, hearing the things that God said, in the spirit world, it was like a big, giant light was shining and they were basking under the light. As Peter was speaking, light was flowing, and that light was awakening their conscience. Their conscience was so dark that they could not see and at the end of the preaching, their conscience was wide awake, and their conscience was saying, “This is right, I am wrong. Help me, help me”. They said, “What shall we do to be saved”? Immediately they got salvation, the light became permanent. Thus, they began their walk with God. Can you see that everything comes back to the Word? One word; Light.

Now, let us continue reading. 2 Corinthians 4:3-4, *“But even if our gospel is veiled, it is veiled to those who are perishing, whose minds the god of this age has blinded...”*. Can you see that? The world is the same, but when 10 people hear it, if 5 of them are blinded, the word that is light, *thy word is a lamp unto my feet and a light to my path* – does nothing to them because something is in their mind blocking them, the enemy. It says, *“whose minds (the Greek word for “mind” is “pneuma”, which is just a general word, it is actually more their thoughts) the god of this age has blinded, who do not believe, lest the light of the gospel*

*of the glory of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine on them*". So, Satan can put something in a person's mind.

If you get ten people listening to even Jesus Himself, they will all go away with different results. You cannot blame Jesus. Jesus is the same yesterday, today and forever. His love is also unconditional. He loves everyone equally. His light never diminishes but why so many different results? Because the hearts and the minds of some are not open, so the light cannot shine. That is why Paul says he commends himself to their conscience and he prays that the light that they have will shine and awaken their conscience.

Can you see that it is more than conscience? The conscience is depending on something else. In Science, when you study something, you always try to look at the source. Even in Medicine, they do the same thing. If you have got a headache, there are one thousand and one things that cause a headache. If you have got a fever, there are one thousand and one things that cause a fever. Correct? You must look at the source before you can be cured. In Science, they try to determine the origin of something, how it is caused, not just the symptoms.

In the same way, if conscience is dependent on something else, you want to find out what is the thing that affects it. It is just like they say there is velocity and there is acceleration, or there is speed and there is velocity. Velocity and acceleration. Acceleration causes velocity, velocity is a better measurement, and then it has what we call speed. Speed is relative, but velocity is intrinsic. You know the difference between speed and velocity, although they look the same to a human person? The earth does not seem to be speeding, but it is travelling at a velocity in space. Can you see that? Speed is relative, velocity is internal. Internally, the earth is actually moving and turning at a great velocity. That is why when they send rockets into space, let us say the earth is turning one way, they will not send the rocket the opposite way. They will try to flow with the same direction of the earth's rotation to gain the speed. So, the earth is already at a certain velocity, when they jump off, it has the same velocity at the point of jump off. It is just like when you jump off (I don't recommend it), if you jump off a train, if the train is travelling at 70 kph, at the point when you jump, even though you might be standing still on the train, when at the point that you jump, your intrinsic velocity is 70 kph. If you could speed that up, you actually are taking off from 70 kph. That is why when they send rockets, they actually made use of the direction that the earth is moving. If you do not believe, check every rocket site, check all the different countries that send rockets. They need

to know. If you do the opposite, you are going against the velocity. In Science, you must get at the source.

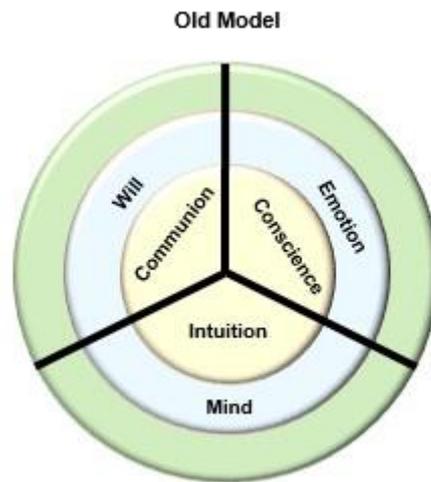
In the same way, in Christianity and in growing spiritually, you must get at the source. You do not want just to treat the symptoms, you want to know how to change, how to become like God, how to walk with Christ and if the conscience is dependent on something else, you want to know what is the something else. It is the Word. It seems that something else will affect the Word and the something else is being attacked by the devil, the enemy.

Look at what Paul talks about them in 2 Corinthians 3:13. He says about these people (the Israelites), *“unlike Moses, who put a veil over his face so that the children of Israel could not look steadily at the end of what was passing away”*. Do you notice the whole illustration is also about light – the light that came on Moses’ face? Now he is using it in a different illustration and then he says (verse 14): *“But their minds (the word “minds” is the word “pneuma”, their thoughts) were blinded. For until this day (as Paul was writing to the Corinthians) the same veil remains unlifted in the reading of the Old Testament, because the veil is taken away in Christ”*. Can you see before Christ and after Christ is different? Of course, the veil is removed in Christ but read further (verse 15): *“But even to this day, when Moses is read, a veil lies on their heart”*. Here is the strangest thing: Everything revolves around the condition of the heart. If you have a hardened heart, the Word does not seep in. *Wah*, everything revolves around the heart.

#### *The setting of the heart*

So, it is not just the Word. The Word is important. In the renewal of the mind, the Word is important, but I can tell you: I can give homework to everyone, let us say there are thirty people, I can give homework to thirty people and they do the same meditation every day. By logical extension, after twelve months, you think everybody will grow that much equally and let us take it that if you add one more scenario, that everyone is equal spiritually, then you think that they could maintain that. Same Word, different effect and that one we need to treat, and it has a different effect because the heart is different. If the heart is not set properly, it affects the reception of the Word. There is such a thing as the setting of the heart. However, what is the heart? We have already defined it long ago. “Spirit and soul”. Correct?

Now, remember, Watchman Nee defines the heart as the soul plus one-third of the spirit, which he calls the conscience. Kenneth E Hagin defines the heart as three parts of the spirit (all of the spirit) and let us say it is tripartite all the way and that is it. Kenneth E Hagin defines the heart as just the spirit. Watchman Nee defines the heart as the soul plus one-third of the spirit. We define the heart as both the spirit and the soul functioning together. Now, that makes it complicated because now the heart has got two factors.



*Diagram 1*

By the way, you think your physical heart is simple? No, very complicated, it has four chambers, with valves inside pumping, everything must go to the right chamber and come out from a different chamber. If something goes wrong, then you have got a heart problem. Eating too much high-cholesterol food also gives you a problem. Not enough exercise, that also gives you a problem. So, our heart has four chambers.

The spiritual heart has two main chambers, but in the two main chambers, one is in the soul and one is in the spirit and, you know, your physical heart has four chambers. You know what the four chambers are? One in and one out, correct? The other: one out and one in. Same. same – four chambers – one in and one out in your spirit; one in and one out in your soul.

Now, in the physical heart with four chambers, the heart has a heartbeat. All the four chambers can be working perfectly, but no heartbeat, also no use. Something is firing the heartbeat, electrical signals from your brain, it is the automatic system. Nowadays, you have got the heart pacer, which is a battery shooting your heart thousands of times every day. Let us say your heart beats seventy-two times per minute, I have got a funny feeling, actually in

the long run it is no good for the heart but what to do, that is the best they can do since their heart is so weak and their life is limited. The best is to always go natural but if any one of the chambers of the heart is not functioning properly, you have a heart problem, whether it is the output or the input.

The same with the spiritual heart. There must be a way that the inflow can be good, and the outflow can be good. In your soul, the inflow must be good, and the outflow must be good. That is where the heart and the Word work together.

Now, finally you come back to Hebrews 4:12 with a different perspective. Can you see all the perspectives that work together now? *“For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart”*. The word “word” here is the word “*logos*”.

*Logos* is the inflow. The word is spirit. John 6:63, Jesus says, *“My word is spirit and is life.”* The Word of God is not just black ink on paper or fonts on a white screen. The Word is actually spirit and life. It happens to be recorded in many types of media, digital, physical, audio, video, whatever. The Word (the *logos*) is the inflow. If you do not have the inflow, it does not work.

#### *The rhema*

You know what the outflow is? The *rhema*. When is it flowing out from us? Ephesians 6:17, *“And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God”*. The sword of the Spirit here is the Word of God (*rhema*). Can you see the Word of God (*rhema*)? Now, that is flowing out from you, the *rhema* of God is flowing out from you. So, it must flow in you, then it flows out from you.

The inflow is inflow to the spirit, outflow is outflow from the spirit but when it flows out from the spirit, you can verbalise it with your lips. It outflows to your soul also. Remember the four chambers in the heart? The chambers are connected. The upper and lower chambers are connected and then the two chambers are still connected. There must be a connection between the spirit and the soul. So, inflow is *logos*, outflow is *rhema*.

Just like some people's heart does not work very well, so the heart works very hard to pump. Do you know that when you have high-cholesterol, what happens is the tube of the valves and all that becomes thinner? That is because a lot of clogged cholesterol blocks the tubes, that is why they have what they call, they put the thing in to push it through, the stent.

You know that according to Physics, when something becomes narrow, it creates higher pressure. That is what they use in a gardening hose. You have to water the grass all the time. So, when you are watering the grass, there is a setting where you can set it to easy flow or high setting. Then *wow*, the water goes out fast. Same water. You change the pressure by making it narrow. It is just like in a traffic jam, a lot of people in the traffic jam, everything slows down because we do not want an accident but in molecules, they do not slow down, the pressure pushes them further. The pressure of the water goes higher. If you have got a small problem with it, then of course the pressure is a lot, and then the rate of flow is all affected. Or weak veins, the opposite condition, your blood pressure is too low. Too low not good, too high not good, must be just right. This is called the Goldilocks zone. You say, "Who is Goldilocks"? You all forgot the story? One little girl called Goldilocks. She saw a table with three chairs and on the table, were three bowls of porridge, one for Papa Bear, one for Mama Bear and one for Baby Bear. One was too hot, one was too cold, and one was just right. So, you want to be the just right one. Not too fast, not too slow, but just right. Not too high, not too low, but just right. Then the flow is there.

Sometimes when you do things, your heart will increase the rate. If you wear a heart monitor, you can see that your heart rate can go up and down. A lot of it is sub-conscious, but your consciousness has some control. You are conscious. You can relax and sort of lower your heartbeat by relaxing a bit. So, you have got to learn to do that. So, we have finished with the two chambers in the spirit.

Here is the soul. Let us go back to Hebrews 4:12, "*For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit...*".

Now that you understand this, you know why you have got to keep the soul and spirit separate, just like you have got to keep the four chambers separate? Some people's valve has

got backflow. They become weak. You must keep all the chambers separate for full function, healthy function.

You know that spirit is spirit. You know that soul is soul. There are some things you need to do in the soul and some things you need to do in the spirit. God makes our soul too and each has its purpose and function. The Word of God divides soul and spirit, and joints and marrow (refer to your body) and is a (here is the part where you begin to divide the soul) discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

“Thoughts” is the word “*enthumesis*”, comes from the Greek word. The root word is “*thumos*” – *thumos* is the word for fire. Remember how we got the word “thermos flask”? It used the Greek word “*thumos*” for heat. Although now a thermos flask can keep cold as well as the heat because of the vacuum in between, but originally it was to keep things warm. In those days, we invented the thermos flask before we invented the fridge, and then before we invented cold things. A thermos flask originally was to keep your coffee warm for a long time or keep whatever you want warm for a long time. The word “thermos” comes from “heat” or “fire”. This refers to the emotional section of your soul, the emotions.

You see, your will just chooses but you have got emotions and, you know, the other part of your mind, normally called the intellect. The intellect involves more, intellect has got many parts of your mind. Here, the Greek word for thoughts is “*enthumesis*”, which is an unusual word by the way. The normal word for thoughts is “*pneuma*” and sometimes the word for thoughts is “*dialogismos*”, it is from the root word “*logis*”, where we get the English word “logic”. “*Dialogismos*” has been translated as “reasoning”. Paul reasoned in the synagogue. The root word is “*logismos*”. He reasoned. So, *dialogismos* is logical reasoning, what we call the IQ (Intelligence Quotient), intellectual capability, where  $A = B = C$ , therefore A must be equal to C, that kind of thing. It is a logical procession.

The other part of the mind is the word “*dianoia*”, that is the visual part of your mind, it conceives things; it is closer to your imagination. When I say, “black cat”, it is words, but it produces a picture. When I say, “black cat”, your mind does not type like a typewriter, black cat, your mind does not do that, right? Unless your mind is very special, when I say, “black cat”, you see the words “black cat”. No, when I say, “black cat”, your mind paints a picture. Now, let me say “furry black cat, 10ft big”. You see, it changes because I am producing a

picture using words, that is another part of your mind. That part of your mind is called the *dianoia*.

Can you see, you have got two valves? One is your emotional section, the other is your intellectual section but your mind has two sections in itself. It has an intellectual component and it also has a visual component. There is a visual mind and a logical mind. All our schooling system is based on logical mind, correct? Our present Greek system that we have learned is logical mind. That is why we measure IQ – the ability to see things and make a conclusion, what is related to what, and this picture is related to that but then in some schools they train the visual mind. If you go to an art school, it is visual. If you go to an architectural school, you need visual, but you need some logic. The training of the visual mind is less than the training of the logical mind but to be healthy, you need both the visual mind and the logical mind to be trained.

Sometimes when we were in the car, when I used to go for chess club long ago, we would tease each other. In those days we used the old system, instead of e4 e5 kind of thing. This is the matrix system now. Long ago, you pawn to king 4, you pawn to queen 4. So, we would call out the moves and, in our mind, we would see the chess board moving and whoever missed a thing, we would say, you know, like, knight to c4 checkmate. “What checkmate? Are you sure”? Nobody has an actual pawn, according to the mind but you have got to keep a record. So, it trains the visual element. Some games do train you properly, visualisation and logical thinking. That is why we train children now with games, touch, play, all the five senses and all that. So, all this training is important.

There are two areas in your mind but let us look at the word here. “Thoughts” is “*enthumesis*”, more of your emotional side. Here is the unusual word, it is the word “*ennoia*” and it is used only two times in the Bible. It is used in 1 Peter 4:1, “*Therefore, since Christ suffered for us in the flesh, arm yourselves also with the same mind (ennoia), for he who has suffered in the flesh has ceased from sin*”.

Hebrews 4:12, “... *and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents (ennoia) of the heart*”. The word “*ennoia*” of the heart. Obviously, can you see it here? The Word of God comes, cuts and separates soul and spirit, and then it discerns (lots of discerning, “*kritikos*”). It is

separating the emotional section (good and bad), the logical / visual section (good and bad). Can you see that – Hebrews 4:12 – from a different perspective?

*The heart is more important*

However, I have to support with more scriptures this illustration of the four chambers of the heart. Look at Hebrews 8. Can you see now, with this new illustration that I gave to you, what God does to us when we are born again? Now you know why this in the heart is more important than anything? The Word is still an instrument, the Holy Spirit is still an instrument. Remember the Holy Spirit needs to give light. Without light, we cannot function. The Word needs to be a sword to cut us and clean us. You are cleaned by the word, “*katharizo*” us.

Quoting from Matthew 5:8, “*Blessed are the pure in heart...*”, the word “pure” is “*katharizo*”. Then you have John 15:3, Jesus told His disciples: “*You are already clean because of the word which I have spoken to you*”. The word “clean” is the same Greek word “*katharizo*”. By the way, in John 15:1-5, the word “prune” or “cut” is the word “*katharizo*”. Even after you bear fruit, you still need *katharizo*. The next time God does something in your life, God raises up something from your life, after that you are happy, you know, you have got lots of fruit, then you come near to the throne of God, there is an angel sharpening, and you say what is that for. For cutting you up. “But, but, but, I was successful”. Yes, did you not read the Word? After you bear fruit, prune. Yes, some more *katharizo*. Can you see now that after you bear fruit, you need some more light and cutting? Then it continues.

Now, if you have a fruit tree, or you go to some orchard, or you have a little plant or tomato plant in your backyard or in your balcony or somewhere in your kitchen, or some other plant ... I cannot use apple trees or durian trees (too big, you have got to go to Malaysia or to the jungle somewhere). If you look at the tree that bears fruit, all the fruit come from fresh branches, not from the old. You say, “But, but, but...”. Look carefully. On the old plant, the shoot shoots up and that is where the fruit comes out. The next fresh fruit is not going to come from the same place. It has to come from another new shoot. It is always a new shoot that bears fruit. Something like the banana plant, good for one time. You all know what banana plants are like?

I have seen a lot of banana plants while living in Malaysia. We had quite a few banana plants in the railway quarters where we lived. All kinds of bananas. My neighbour had a whole group of that, nearly fifty banana plants, different types. Every time it bears fruit, finished, that is it. It will not bear fruit again. It is a one-time thing. They have to slice and chop it at the right place, and the new shoot will grow, and that new shoot will produce the new fruit. If they do not do it, it will keep having leaves and all that, but there is no more fruit. Good for one-time thing.

Every fruit tree is like a mini banana plant. You need a new shoot, except it could be so small that you cannot see but grapes specially. That is why Jesus illustrated with grapes. In a grape plant, they must always trim it, so that the new shoot will produce the fruit. Even when it bears the fruit, they must still trim off the excess section so that all the nourishment that the plant soaks in can go to the fruit. A lot of skill is needed to produce good fruit.

So here in Hebrews 8:10, *“For this is the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel after those days, says the LORD: I will put My laws in their mind and write them on their hearts...”*. Now, you might ask: Why, when the heart includes the mind, must He separate them out, like mind and heart? Because sometimes there is a need for repetition. Here is the word *“dianoia”* for the word *“mind”*.

Like, for example, I can say that the blood vessel has to go into, has to flow into your heart, and touch and flow into one of the upper chambers, right? I am describing your heart by repeating the upper chamber. If the upper chamber has a separate name, I might say, I name it A, B, C, D. I might say it flows into your heart, then it moves into room A. I am still talking about the same thing. It is still within the heart, but I am isolating one section now because that section is very important. I want you to look at the Greek words very carefully. *“... I will put My laws in their mind (dianoia, and you know that is the visual part of your mind) and write them on their hearts; (“heart” is the normal Greek word “kardia”, where we get the word “cardiology”) and I will be their God, and they shall be My people”*.

Now, I repeat. The writing is generally in the heart, and in this particular case, the writing is happening in the spirit, because God is Spirit. When God writes, He writes in the spirit, but He is putting things in your soul mind (the *dianoia*) which is the connection. Since the word *“dianoia”* refers to the visual part, here is the way you approach God. You approach God

visually first and not intellectually. This is totally opposite from what you learned when you were a young Christian.

You know what I learned as a young Christian? I was brought up under The Navigators (Baptists work very well with The Navigators). First thing you learn is why Jesus died for you, understand, and then they draw a diagram and all those things, He died for sinners. The logic of who God is, the logic of the Bible, you see, they give you logic and our whole entire Christianity is built on a platform of pure logic. You know what is theology? Theology is seeing God and putting God in the perspective of logical reasoning, except it might be so deep that, you know, not everybody can think that deep, but it is still pure logic.

We have not been taught properly that the first thing is this: Even in Ephesians 1:17 to 18 when it says the spirit of wisdom and revelation will come upon you *“that you may know”*, the word “know” is the word *“oida”*. There are several words for “know”. The common one is the word *“ginosko”*, which is the “know” in the mind. They choose the word *“oida”*, means to see. It is also a word for “know”, translated as “know” many times but the root word is from the word, more of the seeing part of knowing. Sometimes people say, “Yes, I see”, that means it is an understanding, something came together and so the process of writing is there.

Now, in Hebrews 10, it repeats it, but it is slightly different, verse 16, *“This is the covenant that I will make with them after those days, says the LORD: I will put My laws into their hearts, and in their minds I will write them”*. Can you see that it is different? It is reversed. Just now was putting in their mind and writing on their hearts. Now it is putting into their hearts and writing in their minds.

Can you see these are the four chambers that work? Everything physical is a picture of things spiritual. I have been in Christianity for very long and no one has illustrated the physical heart with the spiritual heart because they are linked. The reason they cannot see is because they cannot see that the heart has four chambers – two for the soul, two for the spirit. As long as you cannot see the chambers, you cannot see the illustration. The two chambers are important – remember, one is just “in” and one is just “out”.

The light comes from God which is the electrical signal but when you understand how it flows, think about the benefit of knowing how your blood flows. One of the most important

veins flow out, the one for your whole body actually comes out from there. The Aorta. The aorta comes out. That is why when they kill a person, they chop there, finished. The aorta comes out from there, then it takes a certain curve, then it goes to your whole body. It comes out from one section of the ventricle of the heart for your whole body but the pumping in is also very important. The blood must flow in and flow out. If any part of the four chambers of the heart goes wrong, the whole thing goes haywire.

Now, the whole heart and how it functions with the light (which is the Holy Spirit, the light of the Holy Spirit shining) and with the Word of God which is super-important. The Bible puts it in Hebrews 8, your mind does not think so much at first; let your heart rule first. Let your heart be renewed to what is good, what is right first; thinking comes later.

You say, "Prove it, brother". Proverbs 3:5-6, "*Trust in the LORD with all your heart, And lean not on your own understanding; In all your ways acknowledge Him, And He shall direct your paths*". What happens if you lean on your own understanding first? Finished. We must always let the heart rule first and so God however is writing on the heart. When He is writing on the heart, you know what He is working on? Your consciousness, your conscience and inward witness.

#### *The world is in darkness*

Remember, our conscience and inward witness are very important because that is the little battery that you take in your daily life. It is just like the world is a cave without lights. You will need to go in with your torchlight. The world is in darkness. Didn't the Bible say that? The world is in darkness. You need your little torchlight. Jesus says you are the light of the world. Now, your light will depend upon your torchlight and your torchlight is your spirit man, how strong your spirit man is, depends on growth. When you are born again, like the illustration in Acts 2 (which is the real thing), the flame of God came on them; they lighted up their flames of fire, tongues of fire, so God sets the fire inside you, called the inward witness (the anointing within). The anointing within is like a fire, torchlight, but that still needs training.

What Hebrews 8 and Hebrews 10 are talking about are the same thing as 1 John 2:27 where you receive the inward witness and you do not need that any man teach you. Didn't Hebrews 8 and Hebrews 10 say the same thing that you do not need anyone to teach you? However,

before you reach that perspective, you must have that trained in you. It is not overnight, otherwise you would not need teaching.

There are a lot of teachings in the Bible. In Acts, they started with the apostles' doctrine and all these things and they kept growing. They needed people like Paul to write epistles to teach them, to guide them. Many times, they did not know what to do. Corinthians, their conscience told them the wrong things, they did a lot of wrong things. They needed teaching all the time, training.

Here, the world is in a dark place and you have a light in your heart, but God is writing in your consciousness and as He is writing and writing, when He has finished section by section, remember, it is like fruiting a tree. When you bear fruit, then you are pruned again and so when something is received, while it is being received, your mind (*dianoia*) needs to do only one thing, to see and to visualise.

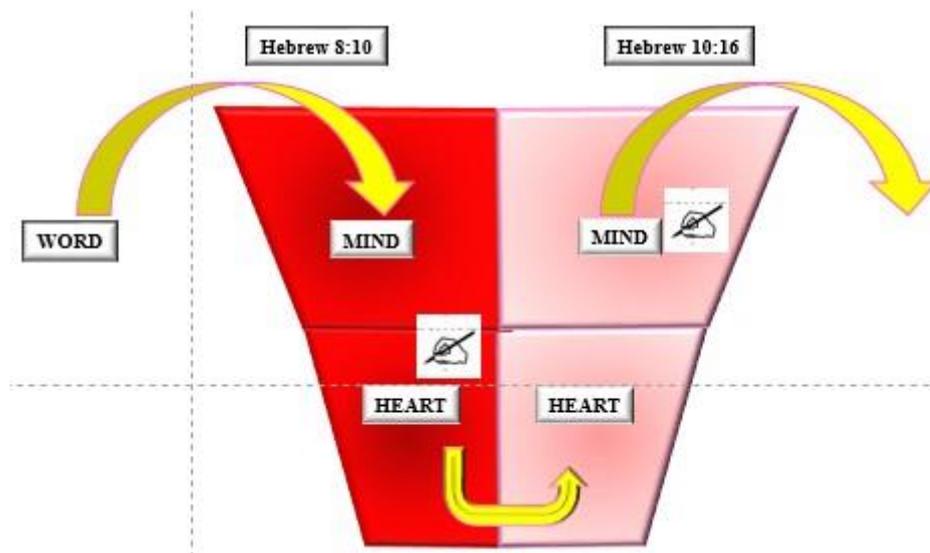


Diagram 2

Then in Hebrews 10. Let us take it step by step. The soul cycle is repeated. When you study about the heart in your school days (in Science and Biology) or in university where you go deeper, you have got to study step by step. The blood in the ventricles and the valves keep flowing, so you have got to start from one section. Same, the Bible is trying to tell you: start from Hebrews 8 first. There it goes that God is putting things inside you and then He is writing things into your spirit and then when that is complete, one cycle comes out, He begins to now put into your heart and write in your mind.

“Writing” is the Greek word “*graphie*” and writing implies the logical sequence, because when you write, you need logic, A, B, C, D, E, F, G, from Alpha to Omega. You are using words in the logical sequence. Language has a certain logic about it, although there are exceptional cases, in enunciation and all those things but using alphabets is like using numbers. Long ago, they used alphabets for the numbering system. The moment you use alphabets in writing it is a logical system, although writing could once upon a time grow from a pictorial system, but the logic comes later.

### *Visualise before logic*

The visualisation comes first, then the logic comes but the logic can only come after God starts putting things into your heart. There are things that God starts putting. Now, the word “put” implies that you just receive it wholesale, do not use your mind yet. Then your mind is slowly being renewed. This is how the renewal of the mind continues. You just receive in your mind because it has to go through you, it has to go through your soul, then it is slowly being soaked into the heart.

Okay, first step. Let me illustrate. So first, the Word comes in. Remember the illustration of 2 Corinthians 4? The Word comes in, so it comes, let us divide this into two sections, it comes, it is put inside you. Okay, your mind has to receive it first. You have got to hear the Word. How can they be saved unless they hear and how can they preach unless they are sent, etc, Romans 10. So, you hear the Word – do nothing – it is in line with the Bible, that is all you need to know. You only need to know one thing: believe but which part of you does the believing? Your heart. The mind actually does not do the believing; it is the heart. When we talk about believing, it always refers to the heart.

The word is put in your mind, it is still slowly getting into your heart because the heart has many doubts. Is it true? Is it right? Can you see the writing is going on now? It is sinking there, and you are trying to digest the revelation. That is your heartbeat *lah*. Can you see that it takes time for absorption? Now, you know what I mean by absorption? Absorption is to keep it there, do not let anything steal it. While it is trying to be absorbed, the devil will try to steal it, gone, finished. Then all the things you read in Mark 4 about the different types of ground, the whole parable is about different types of heart. So, it says that some believe for a season, some even feel emotional, they rejoice but they have got no more roots. The Bible says let it grow roots, correct? It needs time to grow roots. You leave it there for some time.

Roots do not come overnight. You think this one is *towgay* (bean sprouts)? Of course, some *towgays* grow within a week but it is talking about plants here. This is more like the durian tree. It takes time to grow. The roots need to come, you see it is writing, it is writing, it is writing, finally it really is all settled. It becomes like a part of you. Now nobody can take it out. It is a tree planted.

You know, in Australia, they have a very interesting law. If the tree is within your garden, you are responsible for it, to chop down at your own expense. If the tree is outside, in a public property, then the Council or the Government is in charge of that. Now, here is the thing: You know, how when you live in a country with lots of greenery, seeds fly around. Sometimes you see small little trees trying to come up. When the tree is small, within a certain height, in the public, outside, not your compound, anything in your compound, you are responsible, you can do what you want, but if it is outside your compound, the little shrub is up to 6 / 7 ft tall, you go out and do gardening, you say, *huh*, this tree is in the midst. If that shrub is allowed to grow into a tree, and is tall, strong and big, above a certain height, they go by height, if you chop it, you just broke the law. You have got no right to chop it. You must call the Council because it is now big and strong, it is now Council's property. Of course, some people still do it secretly but legally, you are supposed to get permission even to cut that tree. To trim the tree, you must get permission. I know because we have experienced it ourselves. When we had a house in Canberra, there was a large tree in the backyard and we had to trim it and then there was a large tree outside. We thought we were going to work on it and then somebody told us, "*Eh*, you cannot take that down". I said, "Why"? "It is above a certain height". *Wah*, I said, "Got height *ah*? Okay". So, if you do not get rid of it while it was short, when it grows up to a certain height, it is Council's property now. You cannot touch it, even if it is a slim, tiny, tall tree.

So, there is a stage when the word grows and is in your heart and your spirit where God wants it to be, it is a tree, nothing can take that tree out. Can you see it has been written? Having been written now, all those things are going to be now your light. It transfers into the next chamber and in this chamber, it begins to attract things into it because light attracts light and remember when you have that light now flowing inside you too.

As long as you have that light, before that, it was like one size; let us say it grew to another size. Now, that is like two different torches. Every time you hear the same Word, your

absorption is like that; before that, the absorption was like one thing, because it has grown, and it keeps growing. That is how what happens in your heart is related to the Word of God. As it grows in you, it attracts all the exact level of light shining. As it attracts, because these are more things that you need and grow, as it attracts new things, now it will remain there as it is because God is putting more things in. So, it is attracting things – with the measure you use, so the measure is attracted to you. You know, as God puts more things in so as it attracts, and you are now functioning at a certain level, it is that attractive spiritual force, then it begins to bubble up again to the other chamber.

Now, for the other chamber, on the other side, it is a different sequence. Just now it was just putting; here cannot, this is now your mind being changed because this side is being changed to the permanent. This is where it is yours, if you have it, it is yours. If this part can change into this part of you, in heaven you are different. You know how some people have got more light, some people have got less light? The more it is written into you, this is who you are in heaven. Can you see the sequence, the flow that is there, in the four chambers of the heart?

Now, there is a way in which you need to be able to concentrate and visualise. They first discovered alpha waves, then beta, then gamma. Later on, then they discovered delta and theta. That is why the Greek word is not synchronised in logic because of the discovery but I have already said alpha is between sleep and wakefulness.

I can control my brainwaves. You can control your brainwaves like you are controlling your thoughts and your heartbeats. According to the frequencies, when you close your eyes and open your eyes, it is different, but you could just focus on one thing in your thoughts. I enter into deep delta and theta, that is where I go to heaven. I can just go there and come back at will. There are several techniques that I use to do this.

Can you see this is *dianoia*? So, putting to practice, you need scientific instruments, doing what Hebrews 8 says, God puts in your *dianoia*. You are not using your reasoning part. Again, I say, if you use your reasoning part, it is very hard to move, but there is a state where you need to use your reasoning, otherwise you will be deceived. God gives us two parts of the mind, *dianoia* and *dialogismos*. You need the *dialogismos* to keep you from deception, to reason, to see whether it is in line with the Word but receiving stage – when you are receiving a revelation, you cannot use it, your *dialogismos* is a hindrance. When you are

trying to reason. Is it right? Is it wrong? Finished. Remember that your conscience has to be trained, inward witness has to be trained. You have to put yourself into the reception mode. However, it is not a blank mind. I repeat, I tell you why: It is not a blank mind. A blank mind is a devil's workshop. I do not recommend people to blank their mind. You have to have something.

Can you see, *dianoia*? The only way to access the spiritual realm is between sleep and wakefulness, and as calm as possible. That is the stage where, *You will keep him in perfect peace, Whose mind is stayed on You*, there is a process, staying.

### *Getting into God's presence*

The way I get into God's presence is usually not through my logical mind. Your logical mind is used for Bible study, reasoning and analysing. There are two things to do when you receive downloads and revelation. You cannot be questioning God while He is talking to you. You must first download everything, then you are allowed to reason, you are allowed to question. I am not the type of Christian who do not advocate Christianity without logic. No, I am not because Paul reasoned in the synagogue. God says, "Come, reason with Me". So, God gives us the power to reason.

There is an essential part to keep us from deception, by studying the Word but the two must work together. You see, some people can work with the anointing upon, but they do not know how to work with the anointing within. Some people can be very good in moving in the Spirit, but they are not good in teaching the Word. You need both in order to be balanced. Of course, where people who can move in the Spirit, some of them come out with wrong doctrines because their analysis power is not good enough. They form doctrines by their experience rather than by the Word. Some of the weirdest teaching come out from people like that. They know how to move in the Spirit, but they do not know how to use reasoning.

We need to be able to do both. However, you must know how to keep the two chambers separate. When you are with God, do not use your reasoning. When you are with God, you have got to enjoy God. Okay, when two people who love each other spend time together, are they going to reason? Before they marry and before they do things, they have got to discuss, correct? They reason, they budget, how much this cost, but when they are enjoying themselves and they are in company, they cannot be using their logic. They must put that

aside to enjoy each other's company. If you analyse your food too much, you cannot enjoy your food.

In the same way, there is a time when you relax, and you enjoy God's presence and then God tells you a lot of things. You just receive and receive. In revelation, receiving mode, your logical mind is your greatest hindrance, so you must put that aside and your imagination mind, your *dianoia* must be the most open. That is for receiving and sometimes you do not just receive through visual, you receive through words, but you are just hearing words, hearing thoughts that flow through you. You are just a channel. After you receive, then you go back and analyse the data. While analysing, you are no more receiving. Now, sometimes while analysing, you can still receive when you learn how to differentiate. You keep the two chambers separate, you still can do that but when you start, you need to separate and you analyse. You check back. Okay, is this revelation in line with the Word? Is this glorifying Jesus? Is this leading me to darkness or to light? Is it bringing me closer to Jesus or away from Jesus? Then you examine scriptures, where in the Bible is this and all those things. Then you need this analysis. Then when you have both, your mind is renewed and grows. So, you need both.

In regard to brainwaves at different frequencies, that can be monitored by machines, if a person is not healthy and taking a lot of medication or whatever, but as long as he focuses, it will show this. The brainwave is separate from anything else. This can happen to Taoism, Hinduism, as long as they focus. This is because the brainwave is neutral in itself. What you interpret from the brainwaves is a different thing. It is just like a heartbeat. A heartbeat might be 72 beats per minute and you can interpret various things from it but then there is a law of average. You know, in different places people's heartbeats might work differently or they are doing different work. So, if their heart is beating fast, if you do not look at the data carefully and you do not analyse correctly, it might be because they are actually working very hard or they are running, or they are pounding on the track, so it is normal for the heart to beat fast. If, however, you do not realise they are pounding on the track, you look at the data, you might think they are sick or highly tensed. So, the data is important. The data itself is neutral. You have got to apply the data. So, this thing, whether Christian or non-Christian, it is the same for the brainwaves. That is the thing about the brainwave thing. It is neutral.

However, here is the common thing: When we all sleep, we move into theta and delta, whether Christian or non-Christian and it is at that stage, according to the Bible in Job 33, when a person sleeps, God puts instructions into him. Remember, God spoke to Nebuchadnezzar in dreams, God also spoke to Pharaoh in dreams, but it was Joseph, anointed by the Lord, who interpreted the dreams for Pharaoh and knew the meaning of the dreams. God does speak to everyone but only those who have a covenant with God, those who walk with God, can understand and interpret God's meaning, what He is trying to say. So, that is the difference between covenant people and non-covenant people. There is no fast way to do this because everyone must find their place.

For some people, they love gardening, or playing the guitar, that relaxes them. So, you have got to find something that you are emotionally connected with. Let us say that some people have a certain hobby or thoughts that make them happy and relaxed. Everyone needs to find their own 'happy' place. Perhaps, you know, another person who has been attacked by a plant before, so the moment they visualise it, *ah*, the thing will be spiky, if there is such a thing. Just imagining. So, everyone is different.

There are some general principles though. Visual and sounds and relaxation. Which is why you need to keep relaxed, that kind of thing, because it can affect your breathing. That is why sometimes God speaks to you in the shower because for some people, they are so highly tensed, from wakefulness to sleep. The only time they relax a bit is when they go for a shower, and they sing "Hallelujah...". Then God starts speaking to them. So, you have to find a place where you can be still and know that He is God but what is still the Bible principle?

### *The training of the mind*

This is actually the real training of the mind. You thought training of the mind was to make you very clever, you can understand ten types of theology, read twenty theological books and understand them. That is a secondary thing. The most important training of your mind is to be able to hear God and receive the *logos* and then the *rhema* (God speaking into you). That is the training, so the main training is to have the mind of Christ.

What do you think Jesus' mind looks like? Jesus has to have brainwaves, for He came as a man. He must have all the delta, theta, alpha, beta and gamma waves. Perfect peace, one straight line. One straight line, except when He functions, He needs to actually move up in

the brainwaves. Jesus probably in any area He wants to move, He will move perfectly. So, if I were to connect up the machine to read Jesus' brainwaves, I believe Jesus' brainwaves will be like music, will be very synchronised, in whichever area. So, in the end, life is a flow of music and you can hear God, you can hear music from heaven.

I can be meditating, then consciously go to heaven but on the machine, it shows that my brainwaves go in one straight line and then it went up sharply. The sharp thing – it is my focus point. I went to delta and then I just went to my mansion for a while and then I came back but I was like in a sleep phase. So, I can be looking at you and go into the sleep state. Am I still conscious? Well, whatever it is, that is there.

So, now you know training of the mind is not making your mind cleverer or anything. Whatever cleverness, God can give it to you. Psalm 119:99 to 100, *He can give you more understanding than all your teachers*, but the training of the mind is the mind full of the peace of God, filled with the love of God (love thinks no evil). The training of the mind is to have the mind full of peace, love and joy. Do you know that depression is not just your emotions, depression is also mental thoughts? A lot of people need medicine to help them with depression. A lot of people suffer from depression because they do not have joy.

So, the three things: peace, love and joy in your mind and flowing through you. That is the atmosphere in which you can relate to God. The training of the mind is to train your mind to that level. That is the spirit mind. What is true spirit? Love, joy, peace – these are the eternal source of everything. Let it be in your soul.

## Chapter 17...

### The Soul and Emotions

Now, in Hebrews 8, it tells us here in verses 10-11, *“For this is the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel after those days, says the LORD: I will put My laws in their mind and write them on their hearts; and I will be their God, and they shall be My people. None of them shall teach his neighbor, and none his brother, saying, ‘Know the LORD,’ for all shall know Me, from the least of them to the greatest of them”*. Notice the things about the mind and the heart? It says in verse 10, *“... I will put My laws in their mind and write them on their hearts...”*. Now, putting is easier than writing. Writing talks about a process that is there.

Then in Hebrews 10:16, *“This is the covenant that I will make with them after those days, says the LORD: I will (notice the difference) put My laws into their hearts, and in their minds I will write them”*. Now, there are two different processes that are going on and you will notice that if you look at the cross-reference, that is taken from Jeremiah 31:33 and when you look back at the passage that we read just now, Hebrews 8:10, *“For this is the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel after those days, says the LORD: I will put My laws in their mind and write them on their hearts; and I will be their God, and they shall be My people”*. It is actually referring to the same chapter in Jeremiah because that is the only passage that talks about that. Yet in the New Testament, He makes it slightly different.

Everything in the natural is a symbol of something in the spiritual. Now going back to the heart, let us take the blood. The blood goes out, the blood comes in, the blood goes out again. So, your heart has these four chambers that are there. The heart pumps in the blood, pumps out the blood, and there is the main aorta where the fresh blood comes out. It goes out, then comes back all the way in again, and then it continues back to the lungs, from the lungs it comes back, and it comes back in. So, there is a cycle that is there.

The red colour of course is the fresh blood with oxygen. There is the blood coming back in the veins, going out in the arteries, coming back in the veins. Then it goes out to the left and right lungs, comes back again, the fresh oxygenated blood comes in again. The heart has two

upper chambers (right and left atria) and two lower chambers (right and left ventricles). Then from the two lower chambers, it goes out again. That is the basic diagram that you have. So, the heart is divided into four chambers and between the upper and lower chambers are the valves. Now, what is happening is, this illustrates Hebrews 8 and 10 but we have got to start from somewhere. We have the “fresh” blood coming in, so this upper chamber will represent your mind. This also represents your mind. This represents your heart because if you look carefully, it is the lower ventricle that pumps blood out and pushes it out and so, when you first were born again, your mind was just a vehicle for the Word of God to come through. You did not understand much, you did not know much, but yet your mind was involved, because of a conscious decision. You have to make a decision.

### *Obey Jesus' Words*

Jesus did not ask you to understand Him first. All He asked is you believe what He is telling you. The understanding comes later because if you try to understand Him first before you accept Him, you will never reach Him. That is why He puts it in the mind, it is just like the blood is put into the upper chamber, on the left side (left atrium). All He does is push it to the heart.

Now, you see the heart and the process that takes place because these two sections, between the right side and the left side, is a world of difference because the right side never actually contacts the left side. It contacts the right upper and lower chambers. After going through the whole body, then it comes back again down to the right upper and lower chambers, after going through every part of your physical body. So, the heart has to do the writing. This is Hebrews 8.

There is a process which, after you are born again, you just receive, your mind just accepts, then it pushes into your heart, and your heart (representing the spirit part of you), the three circles. Your soul which is your mind part just receives it, then somewhere in your spirit which is born again, it begins to change your life. It is just like the blood is being pumped through your aorta into all the different parts of your body. Your born-again experience has to be rewriting your whole life, but it is from your heart that it rewrites.

In our normal heartbeat, every heartbeat is doing the pumping but let us slow down the process for us to examine, that the process of the spiritual born-again experience changing us

begins to be written in our lives. A lot of things have to be rewritten, a lot of the way we do things, the way we understand things, and so there is a rewriting, not from the mind, but deep inside our heart, somewhere on the inside, things are changing. That is Hebrews 8.

*The heart affects the body*

Then as it begins to affect all the rest of our system, like the heart affects the rest of our body, the process begins to come in again and this time it comes into your mind and this is where the mind comes in, there is work that has to be done. The mind, it pushes here and then all this right ventricle does, it pushes it out to the lungs. Now, the lungs represent your prayer life, your worship life, your relationship with God that continues to oxygenate your life. This is a different process by which when it comes in, now that your mind has been rearranged, and as your life is rearranged, understanding is slowly coming, what it means, what are the changes. As your understanding is changing, between these places, is a process and as it slowly changes, and you begin to understand, then you allow it to flow right through back into the heart. The right ventricle begins to pump out to the lungs. Remember, that the blood needs oxygen, it cannot stop there, that is why it is blue, it needs oxygen. The left side is red and so that is part of the process.

The blood goes to the lungs, and from the lungs back to the heart, and from the heart to the body through the aorta and all the different parts it comes from and where it goes to. That is the standard heart and how the blood is flowing. This represents Hebrews 10 and the other side represents Hebrews 8. Hebrews 8 is where the oxygen flows forth because if ever you try to think first and understand before you act, you are trying to use the oxygen. This is not used for oxygen. This is used for you coming to God. Whenever you want to understand something, you must come to God. It is God who gives the understanding.

Ephesians 1:17-18, Paul prayed for them: that the Spirit will give them wisdom and revelation, that their eyes of understanding will be opened and enlightened, that they may know. Haven't you noticed that the knowing part, you need to come to God? So, it is like you lack oxygen and you need to come to God for the knowledge, for the mind to benefit.

In Luke 24, the Lord spoke to His disciples, then He did something to them. He opened their understanding and He blessed them. Then from that day onwards, they understood the scriptures, their minds started understanding. You need to come to the Lord, just as the blue

blood needs to get the oxygen, to get into oxygenated blood again. This one is a need; this whole thing is a need. You have a mental need to understand. Throughout the whole Bible, understanding has been by impartation.

Why is it that in James 1, if any man lacks wisdom, let him ask of God? You see, that is the mind part. It needs to learn to ask and why do we have scriptures like Proverbs 3:5-6? *“Trust in the LORD with all your heart, And lean not on your own understanding; In all your ways acknowledge Him, And He shall direct your paths”*. God’s thoughts are higher than our thoughts, so we need to acquire His thoughts and His understanding.

Then you have scriptures or stories about Solomon. Solomon asked for wisdom and that wisdom that God gave him, God gave him understanding about everything from birds and bees and plants and everything else. You see, the understanding comes when you receive oxygen. The only role in the mind is that the mind needs to ask. That is the process.

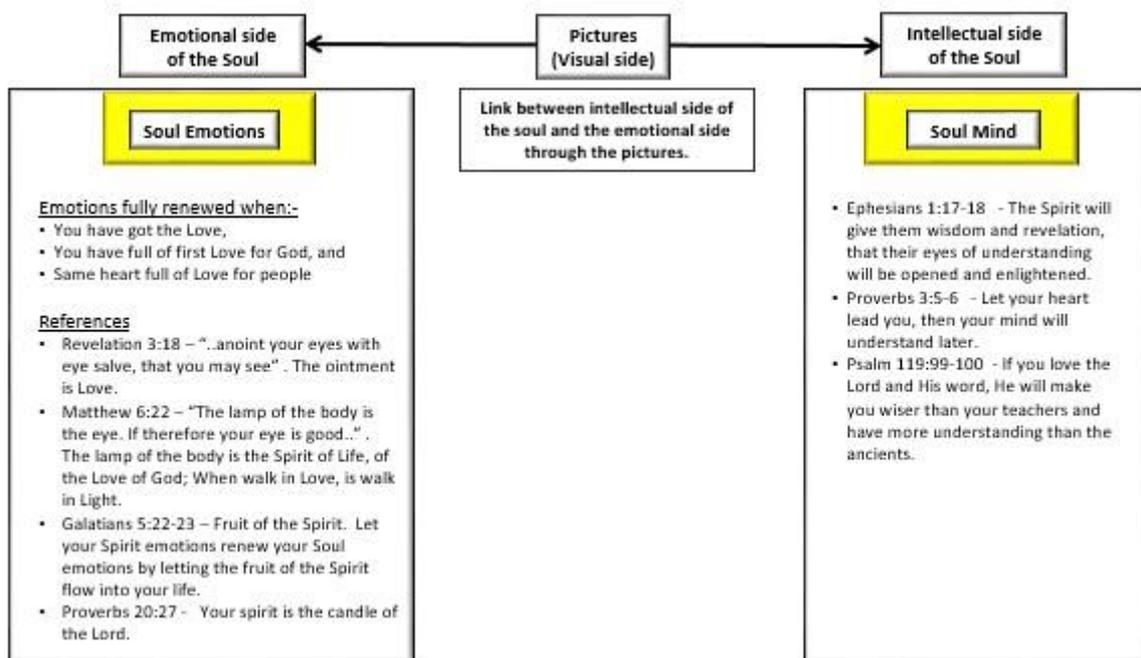
#### *Love God first*

Then you have Daniel 1. Daniel sought God because he loved God first. He did not ask for understanding. He just chose to love God and he did not want to violate the Jewish custom even though their temple did not exist anymore. He still loved God and he wanted to please God the way that he knew how to please God. When he chose to please God and not to eat the king’s food, mind you, it was very tempting. If Nebuchadnezzar had his ways, he would have all the keys there, *Foo Tow Kee, Kentucky*, whatever, all the delicious food, which is very hard to resist but, yet Daniel chose not to go for those things because a lot of those are Gentiles’ food, unclean. Remember, it was still Old Testament and by pleasing the Lord, the Bible tells us, God gave him, and his three friends wisdom and they had ten times the wisdom. Remember, they were studying secular books. The wisdom did not just apply to spiritual things. They were studying the Babylonian and the Caldean literature and they surpassed all the young men by ten times, if you measure their IQ, it would be they were ten times greater in understanding than them. This is talking about studying in the secular world because his was the secular university that they went to and wisdom comes from God.

You see, God needs to rewrite our thinking, rewrite the wisdom in our lives. You see, this is what God asks you: Obey first, then He will slowly rewrite your thinking. Proverbs 3:5-6 is applied. Let your heart lead you, then your mind will later understand, and God does want

our mind to understand but He says: obey first. Follow your heart and then later your mind will understand. The understanding comes later so you can know some things in your heart and do not understand yet and still obey God.

That is why Christianity is a fair thing. Look at it this way, if Christianity depends on your understanding before obedience, then only the intelligent people can please God. Did you realise that? Those who are smart will please God. Those who are not smart are finished. Thank God, that is not so. God is fair. Everyone has a sense of a heart and there is no IQ test for heart. Some people might not do well in the IQ test, they might do better in the EQ test, yet they might actually know the right thing to do. Some very smart people might not know the right thing to do, whereas somebody who is very simple and humble, who did not go to school, might know the right thing to do and then he can please God. You see, God has made it a very fair system. Everyone can please Him.



*Diagram 1*

Here is the thing: God also makes it that if people walk with Him, He will give them the intelligence. Does not matter where you start from. You look at verses like Psalm 119:99 to 100, it says that if you love the Lord and His Word, He will make you wiser than your teachers and have more understanding than the ancients. God can give wisdom. You have enough verses in the Bible showing us people praying for wisdom and they got it, Daniel 1, Ephesians 1, James 1, three sections, good enough. Wisdom can be asked from God. So, that

is why this part is the renewal of the mind process, that you need to flow properly in that area.

So, now you see the red blood from the lungs, it starts from the lungs, oxygen comes from God, so the oxygen-rich blood comes from the lungs, goes inside the left atrium, comes out from the left ventricle, goes out to your whole body; the oxygen-poor blood comes back to the right atrium, goes to the right ventricle, then it goes back to the lungs.

Now, which part actually does the main work? It is the lower ventricles, right? The upper atrium and the ventricle. So, up here they call it the atrium, just like a building, the lower is the ventricle. The atrium only pumps to the ventricle. The only job of the atrium is to put it to the next chamber. Can you see that? That is the only job of the upper chamber, just put it down to the lower chamber, on both sides. Most of the work is by this ventricle, especially the left one, it has to pump the blood to your whole body, and then it comes back there, the right atrium only has to pump to the next chamber and then the right ventricle also has to work hard. It has to pump it all the way to the lungs and then from the lungs, it must keep the momentum going so that it flows from the lungs back to the other side. Can you see that the job of these two upper chambers is just to put the blood into the two lower chambers?

*Your mind serves your heart*

Your mind serves your heart, not your heart serves your mind. I repeat: Your mind serves your heart, not your heart serves your mind. So, no matter how renewed your mind is, your mind serves your heart. Your soul serves your spirit, not your spirit serves your soul. It is always that way and so whenever you use your thinking, thank God for the ability to think. Thank God for the ability to be conscious; thank God for the ability to analyse; thank God for the mind, the consciousness that you have but the mind must always say what the heart says. Don't you ever dare do anything by just your mind telling you. You see, we have never been taught that but now we have to renew our mind to understand. No matter how great your mind is, no matter how renewed your mind is, even if you are twenty years down the road, even if you are one year before the Rapture and you are really the perfect church, your mind serves your heart. Your heart is the king and the queen if you want to call it. Your mind is only the prime minister. Your heart is your king and queen. Always remember that.

Every time you have an impression in you, check. Is this from your heart or your mind? Then you might say what is the purpose of the mind? The mind serves the heart. The purpose of the mind is that you enjoy the conscious experience.

If you talk to the right and left atria, you say, “Are you enjoying yourselves, boys”? The right and left atria say, “Yes, we are enjoying ourselves”. “By the way, what are you doing”? “All we are doing,” say the right and left atria, “is that we are only relating to the ventricles”. “Are you happy, boys”? “Yes, we are”.

Now, what happens if the left atrium decides to bypass the left ventricle? It says, “I want to rule the whole body”. There will be an upset and the left atrium says, “Get rid of this guy, since you are the oxygenated blood, let me do the pumping, let me control the whole body”. That is what you are doing in your life when you want your life to be ruled by the mind.

Even though I am an intellectual person, I love logic, I love Math’s, I love reasoning, I always remember, at the end of the day, in all my decision-making, it has to be based on the heart. No matter how intelligent the mind, how sharp the mind, can be ten times, one hundred times greater than what Daniel’s was, since you are in the New Testament age, the mind serves the heart. The mind gives you an added pleasure, the pleasure of knowing, the pleasure of understanding, the pleasure of enjoying all that God is.

The left and the right atria serve the left and the right ventricles and all that they do is, the more understanding that they have, the more they can serve here because they know how to pass it through. Remember, they have to learn to pass everything through. If they do not pass everything through, something will go wrong with your heart, on both sides. So, that is the picture of Hebrews 8 and 10 that you have, and, in this part, the mind begins to gain understanding because it realises that it needs God. The only way to reach God is not directly either. With the blood, it is only through the right ventricle to the lungs – to get more oxygen supply and you leave the control of the body to the spirit. The soul serves as your conscious pleasure and experience; the spirit relates to the body. That is the way God has designed us to be.

We are looking at the soul. This is part of the study of the mind, the renewing of the mind process. There is still a lot more to talk on, but I have got to cover every area of the shape of

the spirit, soul and body. We talked a lot about the *Spirit Mind* and the *Soul Mind*. Now I want to talk about the *Spirit Emotion* and the *Soul Emotion*. When we talk about the *Spirit Emotion* and the *Soul Emotion*, I have got a few questions to ask you.

First, if emotion and intellect go into a fight, who wins? Emotion always wins, so emotion is the big gorilla, so it will always win. Okay, fair enough but before that, actually there is a relationship between the two.

### *The three components*

As I mentioned, words contain several things. Words have an intellectual component, an emotional component and a pictorial component. Every word. Words are reality. A thought is just a form of words. Words can be written down, words can be in your mind. When I say a black dog, there is an intellectual component because the word “black” defines the colour, the word “dog” defines the species of animal, so there is an intellectual component. Then the words “black dog” paint a picture of a black dog in your mind, so there is a picture in words and “black dog” has an emotional component. If you love dogs, then for you is a black dog, so cute but if you hate dogs and you have been bitten by dogs before or you are frightened of dogs, “black dog”, *oh*, you imagine a frightening bull-like dog with sharp teeth about to bite you. So, that is the emotional connotation.

Water is water. The intellectual component is hydrogen oxide (H<sub>2</sub>O), but water paints a picture and you can think about what water looks like, some crystal-clear thing. Then water has an emotional component. Like if you are afraid of the sea and you were nearly drowned before, when you think about going near water, you are frightened because you have an emotional relationship with water.

Every word contains an intellectual component, an emotional component and a visual component. They are related in that manner. In that way, I want to show that the different parts of your spirit and your soul. Let us look at your soul first. They are related to each other.

Now, here is the thing, when you think about a black dog, there are many species of dogs, then when you think about a black dog, when I say, “black dog”, you have a picture of a black dog. What “black dog” did you see? It is not a very nice dog, maybe. How big is your black dog? You might imagine it to be the bigger breed. *Oh*, the big one, frightening, because

you do not like dogs. Did you have a bad experience with dogs before? Yes. See, that produces a picture. Everyone will have a different picture. Notice the emotional component.

Now, here is the thing: There is an emotional component, there is an intellectual component and they are both producing pictures in you. A picture can convey different things. When you look at a picture, it might make you think of something; when you look at a picture, you might feel something, correct? So, there is a connection between your intellect and your emotion. The connection is the picture.

Let me show in the scriptures here, that the intellectual component can be pictorial. Look at Ephesians 1:17-18, “*that the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give to you the spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of Him, the eyes (notice the eyes, not of your emotions) of your understanding...*”. The word “understanding” is “*dianoia*”, the word “*dia*” means “through”, it is a prefix added to the word; the word “*noia*” comes from the root-word “*nous*”, which means understanding. I have shown you that inside your intellect, there is a visual component, but the visual component is very, very deep inside. That is why they use words like “*dia*” or “*noia*” – it is a very deep part of your component. Sometimes you can think intellectually without actually seeing a picture, or the picture is hard to come by. You know, words like *Supercalifragilisticexpialidocious*, what picture are you thinking? What does it mean in the first place? It is very hard to think because it is just a pure word. It has not resolved itself into a picture yet but through time, you might associate it, you know why, when I say that word, you remember Mary Poppins, correct? Isn’t what you learned that word from? You remember the movie and they made it into a song because it is one of the longest words in the English language. So, that is your emotional component. There is a pictorial element that is there but the actual meaning of the word, nobody knows. It is describing some sense of feeling. It has not resolved itself but every word in the depth of your imagination is linked to a picture. It produces a picture. Now, can you think of a word that has no picture?

#### *Words create pictures*

What about numbers? Okay, those are pictures too. Number seven, at first there is no picture but the number seven is a picture because the number seven in Chinese looks different. The number seven has a picture but the picture is different in Chinese and is different from the English. Can you see? The number is a picture but there is also a further association where

the number seven can mean something for somebody. It could be the birthday. It could be your birthdate or your favourite number. Then the emotional component is there. Even the numbers need a picture to represent them.

What about a colour? The word “colour” itself needs more explanation but when you think of “colour”, do you all see colours? Yes. So, that is also a picture. It is still varied but it is still a picture. It is a generalised colour, correct? Most people are thinking about rainbow colours, more than one colour. In your imagination, that is still your picture.

Can you see that it is very hard to say a word without a picture? Although I put to you the Mary Poppins’ word “*Supercalifragilisticexpialidocious*”, it is a long word, the picture is yet to be formed, but the picture I have is always Mary Poppins and the movie. So, it is slightly off in relationship.

Sometimes people have an association to things that are not real. For example, why should someone be afraid of water? Water is just H<sub>2</sub>O but the experience of it creates a different emotion. It might create darkness in their lives because they see pictures of darkness.

Like, when I said, “black dog”. What kind of dog you can imagine was the breed? I did not mention whether it was a fierce dog. I could have said “very fierce, big, giant black dog”. I could have said that but if I just say, “black dog”, I leave it to you to fill in the blanks and you fill in the blanks with some of your own components. We are always filling in the blanks all the time. We fill in the blanks from our own information that is there. That is an important understanding to see how your mind works, that every word has a pictorial representation.

Now, here is the thing: “Jesus”. Can you see that you are trying to visualise? Some of you have never seen Jesus, you find it hard to go into detail, but it will still produce something in you and it will produce a feeling in you. “Father God”. Now, which exists first? The word or the reality of the word? In other words, did a black dog exist first before we talk about “black dog”? I am talking about in reality. Like, if I say something that you have never seen before, there is a fruit in Australia, I forgot what its name is, it is grown in many gardens, it grows in bunches. They do not have it here in Asia.

What does a fig leaf look like? What about an apple tree? Small, big, what shape? Does it have jagged leaves? Cherry tree? Do cherry leaves look like apple leaves? Only the colour, not the shape. Smaller? Do you see the leaves are jagged? That is apple leaves. Look at the cherry leaves, very similar.

It is hard to know unless you know the picture but remember, they exist, and these are our descriptions of them. They must exist. If they do not exist, how can we describe them? Description is our honour and appreciation of something that exists. It exists; therefore, we invent vocabularies for it. The word “leaves” describes the leaves of a plant. What is the word “leaf” in Chinese? “*Yezhi*”. In Malay, it is “*daun*”. These are different languages describing one reality. We use different descriptions to describe the same reality. The reality has to exist first, then we describe them.

Now, sometimes the reality does not exist in a culture, so they have got no words for it. Like, for example, in some African languages, there is no word for snow. How do I know that? When I was reading about the Wycliffe Bible Translators, how their goal was to translate the Bible into every language in the whole world, every tribe in every country and nation, when they were translating the Bible into some of the tribal languages in Africa, they could not find the word for snow. The people have not seen snow. Snow does not exist to them. They have never encountered snow, so as far as they are concerned, it never exists. You know how the translators translate it? The word “snow” is in the Bible, *God washed their sins as white as coconut*. They had to do it, so they did it that way. “... *as white as the inside of the coconut*”. The people do not understand. If you describe snow, they say what is that?

Just like, the word “manna” in the Bible. You know what that word means? That word just means, “What is it?”. It has become a word but when the thing dropped down from heaven, they went out in the morning to gather, they said, “Mana? Mana? Mana?”. Everybody said, “Yes, yes, this is mana, mana, mana”. Now it becomes “manna”, a nice word, heavenly manna. Initially, it just meant “What is it?”.

Like, for example, if a person has a name called *Liak Bo Kiew*, we Chinese know the meaning of the word. You introduce the person to an European guy and you say, “This is Mr. Liak Bo Kiew”, but every time when a Chinese guy hears it, he laughs. Why? Because he knows the meaning, but the westerner wonders why he is laughing. That is his name. You

know the difference? One knows the meaning, one does not know. The word “manna” just means “What is it?”.

I am trying to show you that until you contact and experience the reality, there is no word to describe it. Remember, we are talking about human languages because in heaven, human languages are just a shadow. The heavenly language describes so detailed its frequency, its colour, everything in one sound. Sounds are like words.

Here is the thing, it must exist in your experience. Like for some African tribes, the word “snow” does not exist. In their whole experience, in their culture, passed down by their forefathers, since the time they got lost from the three sons of Noah and all spread over the earth, and the earth divided, and everyone went separately, they do not have a word for snow because it does not exist but when you begin to contact a group of people who understand snow, you begin to learn a new reality. So sometimes when I talk to some people from places who have never seen snow, one of their desires is they would like to see snow. I was that way when I was growing up in Malaysia. I have not seen snow before so one of the things is I want to see snow. Until you live in a snowy place, then you want to see the sun.

In the Eskimo culture, now they have the word “inuit” which is closer to their language. They are the Inuit people. They have between five to ten words for snow. You know why, every day when they wake up, they see snow. So, what kind of snow? Slosly snow, dry snow, fresh snow, hard snow, soft snow. When they say, do not walk on the “snow”, what they mean is do not walk on the soft snow, but they might say, walk on the “snow”, that might be a word for hard snow. They have different words because every day they encounter different realities. You walk on soft snow, you might die. Life and death. So, can you see, in a culture where snow is a reality and they hardly see green grass, if you are an Inuit, every day when you go out, where do you find green grass? Most of the time you see snow. You live in the igloo, made from ice, which is another word that they have. They have many words describing H<sub>2</sub>O in a different form because that is their culture and their reality.

Can you see that it must exist first? Then your experience describes it, that is there. So, that reality that exists, now, here is where I will bring you closer to the Bible. The reality of something that exists is firstly a shape and a form, created by God of course, through God’s Word. Now, that shape or form is the true reality and your description of it depends on how

good you are describing it. Remember the three blind men talking about the elephant? “An elephant is like a wall” – said the blind man because he was touching the elephant’s side. Was he right? He was right. “An elephant is like a tree” – because he was hugging the elephant’s leg. “An elephant is like a rope” – because he was holding the elephant’s tail. Were all three, right? Yes, all three were right, but they did not describe the whole elephant.

### *Get the whole picture*

You might have to take a little bit of each one, then you get the whole picture, a better picture. Like they say a picture paints a thousand words and let me take you one step further. Reality might need a thousand pictures to describe it because you have got to see from all angles.

You know, like in Australia, there is Ayers Rock. Do you know that you can drive around Ayers Rock? As you drive around, it is still the same big rock, but it has different angles. At each angle, it looks slightly different.

Some buildings, from a certain direction, like in Singapore, I think next to us, a few buildings away, there is a building that looks like a sword (thin, flat building), down the road here, two of them together, called the Gateway. For a long time, because of *fengshui*, the plot of land across the Gateway, no one ever uses it. Then some Chinese guy built a building on that land, directly across because of his belief in *fengshui*, he built a building right in between the two swords, you know, the brown building. As you look at a certain angle, where the two sharp buildings meet, he was so scared that it is like a sword, he built the building exactly in between. So even the buildings are fighting and then there is another building then between them is a plot of land and that plot of land was recently given to a joint venture between the Malaysian Government and the Singapore Government by the Railway Agreement, where the Singapore Government took over all the Malaysian railway land and exchanged it for that piece of building and that piece of building is right between the two swords. You know how they built that building? Because of their belief in *fengshui*, where the building faces the swords, they built a shield, and the building is still under construction. If you look at the picture of the building, where the swords touch the land area of the building, it is built like a shield, a curved thing. It is just like if the thin building is a sword and is piercing them, the shield protects them. Even in Singapore buildings have stories, all because of this *fengshui* thing. Interesting stories.

From a certain angle, the thin building that is called the Gateway, all you see is a thin little line and I have been up in one of these buildings before because Turkish airline office is in there. I was interested, and I wondered how the corner part looks like. You know, like what kind of desk will you put there, how will you use that space on the inside. It might look nice on the outside, but how are you going to use that space on the inside? Don't tell me you want to put an office clerk there, doing his work by putting stamps or whatever that is but here is the thing: From different angles and different pictures, that building looks different. Then when you drive along Beach Road, here you see the whole building, but from a certain angle, all you see is a thin shape.

Sometimes you need more than one picture to see the reality that is there. So, pictures are good. Pictures begin to contact the reality. That is why some people go to some place like Turkey, where they did not speak English, it can be difficult to communicate. Some of you might want to eat chicken so you have to get inventive so then they got the message but even funnier, one of them, might want to eat eggs, so that illustration is interesting. However, for the sake of communication, all the signs and pictures, they hopefully get it eventually.

Can you see that there is a reality and you are describing that reality with different pictures, different signs, different ways, and pictures are important because there is a link between the intellectual side of your soul and the emotional side through the pictures. Pictures convey emotions, pictures convey an intellectual quality, but you might need, like they say, a thousand words to describe that one picture. There is an emotion that is there and then based on that, you realise, like I ask you the question: when your emotion and intellect fight, that the gorilla is your emotion. That is the Hebrew root word for soul. You see, we study spirit, soul and body, but I am surprised that nobody digs into the root word. Watchman Nee did not do that. A lot of books that write about spirit, soul and body, they never look into the root word for soul. This is basic Christianity 101. Spirit, soul and body, nobody bothers to look. We have already looked at the root word for spirit, which is "*ruach*" in Hebrew and "*pneuma*" in Greek.

Let us look at the root word for soul, when God first created man's soul. Genesis 2:7, "*And the LORD God formed man... and man became a living being*". Oh, no wonder, "*man became a living being*". It did not translate it as "soul", no wonder the English cannot find it, but it is the same English word, translated differently as "being". It is the Hebrew word

“*nephesh*”, which means life but behind the meaning of the word “life” is also the meaning, if you look at the words here, which means breathing creature or breath. Then you say what is the word “*ruach*”. *Ruach* means wind but more of bigger breaths so these are the smaller breaths – *nephesh*, which means the breath of life. In Genesis 19:20, “... (*is it not a little one?*) and my soul shall live”. The word “soul” is “*nephesh*”, just means breath.

Let us look at the New Testament, the Greek word “*psuche*”, Matthew 16:26. The root word “*psuche*”, breath. The original word, I can do a deeper study, but suffice it to say that the word “soul” comes from the word, something that is breathing life.

### *Soul is more emotional*

The word “soul” itself is used more towards the emotional side than the intellectual side, although in Watchman Nee’s study in this series on *Spirit, Soul and Body*, he did say that the soul thinks. What Watchman Nee did not do is he did not list out how many times the word “soul” has been translated and whether 90% of the time it is translated in the emotional side or 10% in the intellectual. He did not do these statistics but if you do the statistics of the word “soul” and its usage by humans, whether the soul thinks, or the soul feels, or the soul has an emotional element, you will find that for the word “soul”: 90% of the time it leans towards the emotional aspect. That to us in our modern study is important, because we do not just want to know what the soul does and classify it.

You see, our modern Science is a bit more exact and precise. Like, for example, if I say what do you normally eat? Then, you tell me that normally you would eat some meat, some chicken, some pork, you do not quite like beef, some noodles and all that, then I have a rough idea of what you eat but then, what I did not analyse is how many times a day and a week and a month do you eat pork, do you eat fish. Now, those are the statistics that I do not have. I only know what you eat so if you only eat fish three times a month, you say yes you did eat fish, I would not know that it is only three times. I might take it that it is all equally divided. Can you see the difference? However, if you eat fish only once a month, and most of the time you eat your favourite *char siu* and roast pork, then it tells me more of the food you like. You see, I am not giving it equal attention and you are not giving it equal attention and that makes the difference.

In the same way, when we analyse in this study, that if the “soul” is used many times (and I challenge you to double check it), in both the Old and New Testament usage, it is as if there

is a feeling creature more than a thinking creature. Then it gives you credence to the fact that the general use is heavier on the emotional side if that is 90%, and 10% on the intellectual side, not diminishing the intellectual side, but more of the Bible usage that is there. It is important for us to know. You say why should we know this fact? Because you have a soul and you want to know how to train that soul. Psalm 103:1, “*Bless the LORD, O my soul...*”, and you need to know how your soul works. If your soul is leaning 90% of the time towards the emotional side, it is affected by emotions, then you know that there is a person who is highly intellectual with very little emotions, it is actually the 10% variety and his soul is almost lost, in his own life, by his own standard. To be full, you need to experience the soul in every dimension and I find from the percentages, both in the Old and New Testament, that the soul leans towards the emotions, which supports your answer. Remember I said any Bible scriptures. I asked: If the emotion fights with the intellect, who wins?

How about the will? How many percent is it mentioned? As the will in the emotions, the will part. The will can actually overwrite both. That is why I am teaching on the will separately. I have not touched on the will yet. The will and I am teaching separately because it is special. No matter how overwhelmed, how much you want to give up, how much of your emotions are killing you, in everything you say I will, still you win, which is a special thing that I have got to teach.

We are just bringing you from the intellectual side, on renewal of the mind; now we are into the emotional side, on how to renew our emotions because we need to renew our emotions as much as the mind. I need to point to certain peculiarities and qualities of the emotions, so that we know how important it is for it to be renewed. The renewing is the same process. Just like you let your spirit mind renew your soul mind, you let your spirit emotions renew your soul emotions and the spirit emotions, you know, Galatians 5:22-23, love, joy, peace, longsuffering, kindness, goodness, faithfulness, gentleness, self-control (all the fruit of the Spirit), let them flow into your life. The technical words, the technical studies, we all know, but we need the practical aspects on how to actually bring it into reality in our lives.

The first reality that I establish here is that we humans actually lean heavily towards the emotional basis of life, greater than the intellectual basis. Would you agree that Solomon was a very clever man, with high IQ? If we test him with Intelligence Quotient, he would pass but what was his failure? It is his emotional weakness, a man who needed three hundred wives

and seven hundred concubines and none could satisfy him! Won't you think that he was a gorilla in his intellect and a mouse in his emotions because he never developed them? He failed because of his emotions. Would you agree? He was smart, he wrote Ecclesiastes as an observation of a very wise man, a wise man without much knowledge of God. As a result, the main verse in Ecclesiastes is "*Vanity of vanities, all is vanity*". Sad life. The end result is all his wisdom never made him happy.

### *The pursuit of happiness*

Of course, you cannot find happiness with intellect. You can only find happiness in Jesus. A relationship with God will make you happy. That is why there are a lot of people in the world with high IQs but are they happy? Sometimes a person with a lower IQ is the happiest man on earth. Which life would you prefer? That man up there, unhappy, every day is a misery, very hard to get up in the morning, cannot sleep at night, and the other guy enjoys life, doesn't understand much but very happy. That life is better, if that life knows God of course but the truth is to understand both aspects and to be able to be wherever you are, whether intellectual or not so intellectual, emotional or not so emotional, and still loves God and is happy. Isn't that what everyone wants, the pursuit of happiness? People pursue happiness in different ways, some through money and then they lose themselves; some through education also lose themselves; some through worldly pleasures also lose themselves because the only happiness that you can find is the happiness in God and in Jesus, when the creation returns back to the Creator. The greatest joy, greatest peace, greatest love story you could ever have is coming back to God. That is important for us to know.

Now, Abraham was a very good man and he was a man of faith. There were a few things that Abraham did that we all do remember? Heaven doesn't record it, but our Bible here records it. He told a lie when he went to Egypt. He lied again when he went to King Abimelech, among the Philistines. It was not God's perfect will for him to have Ishmael. You look at all his failures, would you recognise that it is because of his emotions? He feared for his life when he went to Egypt. He feared for his life when he went to King Abimelech. There was emotional turmoil in his house when he had Ishmael, there was unhappiness that crept in.

David, a man after God's own heart, a lover of God, singer of psalms, wonderful anointed King, slayer of Goliath, he also failed. The Bible records his failure with Bathsheba. The Bible records his failure when he first brought the Ark in because he did not read the Bible

and he did it wrongly. The Bible records his failure when he numbered Israel. Would you not say that his failures were also his emotions? In the Bathsheba case, it is obvious. In the numbering of Israel, it is obvious, pride, achievement, I have got to number them. Pride is after all both emotions and intellect, but it is more on the emotional side. When he was so happy that they had conquered Jerusalem and so excited that he was going to bring the Ark in, he forgot to check the Bible on how to do it. In their excitement, their intention was good, but nobody checked with the Bible and they let the emotional excitement ignore, neglect and go against the Word and somebody died, Uzzah died.

A lot of the things in the Bible are emotions. Emotions get in the way. Emotions get in the way of intellect. Emotions get in the way of many things. Unless your will (which can be strengthened by your love for God) chooses, your emotions overwhelm you like a big, mighty tsunami and storm so we do need to renew our emotions.

*Let emotions be tuned*

Now, there is a connection. Remember I taught about how there is a connection between your intellect and imagination? Remember I said the picture is the connection, the picture that paints, is it a reality? I discover several things. Number one; we lean heavily on the emotional side because human existence is specially given for the sake, emotions are given for the sake of enjoyment of this life. Without emotions, you cannot also enjoy this life. Unfortunately, the same emotions of having enjoyed are the same emotions that feel pain. You know, when you stroke your nerves, *ah*, so nice; you get a good massage, nice. Press it a little bit more, squeeze it a little bit harder, the same nerves give you pain. The same nerves that give you pleasure give you pain. The power to taste pleasure is the same power that causes pain. You know, all the sufferings that the world is going through right now, the pain, the misery, the depression, are because the emotions have not been tuned to feel the right things. Thus, we feel the negative things and we are depressed. We need to let the emotions be tuned and renewed to God.

Here is the thing: There are different levels of intellect, conscious mind, sub-conscious mind, lower conscious mind, super conscious mind, and all these (lower and lower). Deep inside your mind is the picture, the imagination but for emotion, it is directly linked to the picture. When you look at the word “eyes” (of course, you can do the singular too, but let us do the word “eyes”), you will find that your eyes are linked directly to your emotions. Isn’t there a

saying that your eyes are the window to your soul? Why? When I look into your eyes, can I see letters A, B, C, D, E? No, because your eyes express your feeling. In fact, your whole face does, but your eyes more than any other. One of the things about the enemy (the devil) and the fallen angels is they can do any disguise they want to. In the end times, they will have the ability to actually camouflage and take shapes and forms but one thing they cannot hide: are the eyes. They cannot hide their evil eyes because the eyes are the windows to the soul.

I found this and here it is to help you. You will notice this. People, unfortunately in this life, who lean towards the intellectual side tend to see very few visions. Those who see a lot of visions have seen their emotional side develop. When you develop, (you have got to develop), your spirit, soul and body, and then within your soul, you have got will, emotions and intellect. You must develop all three equally, will, emotions and intellect but life is never fair and life in the fallen world causes us to be topsy-turvy. So, sometimes and also because of your inherent DNA that you inherited, plus your training before you came, plus the limitations God set on your life to train you in some areas and all that. Like sometimes when you want to concentrate on hearing, you have got to close your eyes. Like when you want to really concentrate and hear a certain type of music and appreciate it, you close your eyes because your extra senses are hindering the development one way or the other. Sometimes in life, this life that you all came into, you have struggled in certain senses because God is training you in others. Unfortunately to train in others, to train in one, the others must be lesser for a time until you are fully developed.

#### *The emotions and the intellect*

When you develop your intellect more and more, and you go above the visual, because in today's world, they are not very visual sometimes, they are more IQ type, like reasoning (*dialogismos*), not *dianoia* type, the world begins to first get rid of your imagination, call your imagination childish, and look at your imagination as something from your childishness rather than something to be developed. So, you lean towards the heavy intellectual, reasoning, logical side. The more you lean on that side, the more you lose your ability to see. Then there are some of us who are strong on the emotional side and you might not admit that you are emotional but here is the thing: If you see visions easily, you are emotional. I did not say it is a bad thing. You just need to know what is happening. Everything is good, and everything is beautiful, but you need to learn how to balance.

So those of you who see visions easily, you need to develop your ability to reason without losing this side.  $A = B$ ,  $B = C$ , therefore  $A = C$ . Your ability to see and reason, to balance this side and those who develop on the intellectual side, you must develop on your emotional side before you can see visions because visions are felt first before they are seen. It resides in your emotional sector because your emotions link directly to pictures.

How do you express an emotion, either sound or picture or action, correct? How else can you express your emotions, besides words? Let us not talk about words here. Sounds, actions, pictures. You say, "I hate it"! Paint it all black. Pictures, sounds but since reality is painted by pictures, the pictures' role is there.

Let us look at some scriptures that talk about the word "eyes". Let us look at the first temptation that was there in Genesis 3:6, "*So when the woman saw that the tree was good for food, that it was pleasant to the eyes, and a tree desirable to make one wise, she took of its fruit and ate...*". Now, in what part of that is there a reasoning? Was she trying to be wise, that means she reasoned, "*Hmm, if I eat this, I will really be like God. Hmm, really, I really want to be like God.*"? Was this thinking, thinking, thinking that made her eat? Or was it she saw, *wah*, eyes open, *wah, wah*, it is good, *wah*, and she ate it? So, there was not much thinking, thinking; there was much more feeling – feels good, that looks good, it is good, and she ate it. Can you see the first temptation? It was this emotional side. To be able to see that *it was good for food*, it was not a thinking process, it was a feeling process. To be able to see that *it was pleasant to the eyes*, it was not a thinking, it was a feeling side. To see this tree, *wah*, can make me wise, there might be a little bit of thinking, but not so much thinking, that is the only part that has a little bit of thinking. It is overwhelmed by the eyes. It straight goes to the eyes and hits the emotions. *Wah*, this is nice, like a puff of smoke or drug that say, *hor*, nice, more on the feeling side.

Will people take drugs if they do not feel good? They take it because they want to feel good. It is a feeling; it is not a reasoning. By reasoning, they should not take it because it destroys them. Just like recently they came up with that thing, you know, processed meats cause cancer, processed meats are carcinogenic and then cooked meat, definitely carcinogenic, it is a carcinogen. So, suddenly everybody wants to be vegetarians. Do not worry, we are back to those days when they said all eggs cause high cholesterol. After twenty years of avoiding eggs, only to discover that inside the egg is an anti-cholesterol agent.

You know why, the Bible cannot be wrong. It is God who allows us to eat meat. You say, “But the Bible says we eat vegetables” but that was before the fall. After Noah, God allows the eating of meat because there is no way you can get all your nourishment and proteins in the fallen world by just eating vegetables. There is no way. So, Science is always this way: they discover some things, they have not discovered other things. There you have it. Remember barbecued meat was the priest’s diet?

Humans are reacting here and there, but I use that as an illustration to show that knowledge is still progressing. Then when people look at something, they have different emotional reactions to it, but you need to be able to understand that the eyes connect to the emotions and build your feelings there.

*Grief of mind creates poor eyesight*

Now, we are going to go more direct, I have got a lot of verses but because of time, I challenge you to check the word “eyes” and look at every verse. It is always directly linked to emotions. A lot of times. Such that long, long ago, I had a sermon that links poor eyesight to emotional sadness. Remember Isaac was a very, very sad man, especially after Jacob went away? He had grief of mind and the grief of mind became poor eyesight, so the two were linked together.

Let me go directly to the verse. Look at 1 John 2:16, “*For all that is in the world the lust of the flesh* (Is that feeling or thinking, thinking, thinking? Definitely feeling.), *the lust of the eyes* (Is that thinking or feeling, feeling, feeling?), *and the pride of life is not of the Father but is of the world*”. Can you see, all three are leaning heavily on the emotional side and these include all the sins of the world? Isn’t the devil attacking your emotions? *Oh, yes.*

I have taught about the “plastic tree” in sermons, (who is like Satan’s right-hand man). He attacks through anger and emotions, negative emotions. Jesus when He talked about emotions in the Sermon on the Mount, He linked anger and cursing to hell fire and in Ephesians 4:26, it says do not let the sun go down on your anger. Then immediately after that, it says give no room to Satan. Suddenly Satan comes in, when it talks about something that is anger or negative emotion, because you can see that. Would you agree that all the sins of the world are included here, lust of the flesh, lust of the eyes, pride of life, everything is summarised under

these three headings? They all lean heavily towards emotions. Now you know how important it is to renew your emotions.

You say, “Pastor, please, help me, help me to see clearly”. Yes, tonight we will tell you. 1 John 2:11 (your secret key), “*But he who hates his brother is in darkness and walks in darkness, and does not know where he is going, because the darkness has blinded his eyes*”. Can you see the word “eyes” there? He is not just talking about natural eyes, of course. Spiritual eyes. This is in 1 John. He gives you a solution. When you walk in love, you walk in the light. When you do not walk in love, you walk in darkness and walking in darkness equals blindness. *Blessed are the pure in heart*, He might as well say, *blessed are those with the love of God in their hearts* because the love of God is pure.

*Trust is deeper than intellect*

If you want to see visions, feel the love of God first. You say, “I am not able to feel, I am not a feeling man, I am a faith man, I have learned about the three parts of the train”. Yes, which part? “Faith is the engine, fact is the next carriage behind, and the last carriage is feeling”. *Oh* yes, that is good, but your faith is an intellectual faith, not the faith of the heart, because the root word behind the word “faith” is the word “trust”. Trust is not something just intellectual. Trust is something you exercise with your heart. It involves some intellectual component in knowing about God’s love, but trust is deeper than just an intellectual component.

So, we have that if darkness equals lack of love, it equals blindness, the opposite is true. Love equals light, it equals open spiritual eyes. I have given you the key, that the more you walk in love, the more you will be able to see, the more you are able to see the dimension of the spirit. Remember, seeing sees the reality. If the three blind men, touching the elephant, could see, they would have described the elephant perfectly. Seeing sort of captures the whole picture, like the camera. It captures the reality.

Like some of you might have gone to the Eiffel Tower. I have not, yet. The only time I will go there is to plant a church, but I know what Paris looks like. How? Through video, through pictures. How many of you have been to Ayers Rock? Some of you have not, but you know what Ayers Rock looks like. How do you know? Through pictures. A picture but you must make sure it is a real picture. Some people can put false pictures on the internet, now with photoshop and all those things.

Remember nowadays a lot of people get married through online dating. So, online, they might take a picture of themselves twenty years ago. Then they say that's MIRL (Made in Real Life). Then they say, "Where are you? *Huh*"? Then the person says, "I am her/him". "*Huh*"? Then they meet and say, "You are not like this person". Then they quarrel and fought because "Why did you put your old self here? Why is your real one not like that"? That is how manipulative people can con people because they might put a different picture of themselves online. This is their virtual self and your virtual self looks so innocent and sweet and the real person is about probably three hundred pounds, overweight, with a lot of love handles all over. He looks like Jabba the Hutt. So, reality versus the picture.

However, God does not deceive. What God says, it is true. A picture that the Bible paints, it is true. We trust the photography of the Bible. The Bible says love is the true camera that you can see all things. The love of God is pure, holy and thinks no evil. Can you see, it is love that affects your thinking, not your thinking that affects your love?

*The lamp of the body is the eye*

In this area, besides looking at the word "eyes", when you look at the word "eye" (singular), you find that in the New Testament it brings you to the gospel of Matthew where Jesus says this word (Matthew 6:22), "*The lamp of the body is the eye...*". You all know this verse. The question is what does the eye represent? When you read this verse, what is the eye? What does it mean when you say the eye is good? *Ya lah*, good eyesight. No, no, Jesus is not talking about physical things, otherwise all those with bad eyesight cannot become good. He cannot be talking about physical. Cannot be physical because otherwise bad eyesight means you are in sin, then finished.

Now, if you read on, it is interesting (Matthew 6:22-23), "*The lamp of the body is the eye. If therefore your eye is good, your whole body will be full of light. But if your eye is bad, your whole body will be full of darkness. If therefore the light that is in you is darkness, how great is that darkness*"! So, if you say that the eye is the soul, then do you mean in verse 23 that if the soul is bad? If you say that the eye is an image, then are you saying in verse 23 that if the image is bad? If you say that the eye is the heart, then are you saying in verse 23 that the heart is bad? What is the eye? Let us define the eye.

Firstly, is it possible to be half-light and half-darkness? The understanding, yes. On focus, is it possible that you can see, focus on some things, but there could be a few things not focused on correctly? Does it mean that there is a mixture of good and bad? Remember Jesus used the word “good” here. Now, Jesus’ sermons are very, very intricate. It builds one upon the other so when Jesus talks about good and bad here, He does talk about something else. When you understand what it means to be good or to be bad, then you will understand what it means when Jesus talks about the good eye or the bad eye.

Look at Matthew 7:17-20, *“Even so, every good tree bears good fruit, but a bad tree bears bad fruit. A good tree cannot bear bad fruit, nor can a bad tree bear good fruit. (The two are anathema to each other). Every tree that does not bear good fruit is cut down and thrown into the fire. Therefore by their fruits you will know them”*. Now, here is the statement He said, a tree is either good or bad. Is there a half-way in between? No, right? It is either good or bad, there is no half-way.

Now, He is talking about human beings because in the context He is talking about false prophets and all the bad guys. Can a person be inherently good or inherently bad and there is no in-between? A good person might make mistakes. David was a good person. Psalm 37:23 to 24, *The steps of a good man are ordered by the LORD... Though he fall, he shall not be utterly cast down...*. So, I did not say that a good person is perfect. Neither did I say a bad person is perfect in his badness; he might show some good, but a tree is either good or bad and He applies it to human beings. You are either good or bad, there is no in-between. Isn’t that what Jesus is saying? He says eventually if you are good, whatever comes out of you will be good. If you are bad, no matter how good you look, it will still be bad. So, Jesus here is using the absolute. Absolute, there is no mucking around by half-way. You are either good or bad. You bring it back to Matthew 6:22 to 23 where He says the eye is either good or bad. He is using the absolute here, not relative, absolute. It is either good or bad.

#### *What is a good tree or bad tree*

To understand what a good eye is, you need to understand what a good tree is, to understand what a good tree or bad tree is. Now, when I ask you this question, “are you a good person”? You must be able to answer the question, “Good. Thank you”, because if you are bad, you will not hear. Can you imagine the Antichrist hearing this sermon? All of the sermons are free online, the Antichrist can download them if he wants to. So, you are inherently good or

inherently bad, which means that there is something deeper that is affecting the goodness and the badness. There is something deeper. Then you add the words of Jesus from Mark 10:18. *There is no one good except God. Ah, you are coming closer to the answer. There is no one good except God.*

You have to take all of the context and Jesus did say there is no one good except God, which means that all our goodness comes from God. That is why we can have this confidence: If God is in us and with us, who can be against us? That is, if God is in you, you are assured of success. That is, if you have given your life to God and you have died in Christ, your old man, every bad part of you, your sinful nature, the part that wants to do all the wrong things, the evil part of you if there is any left – is crucified on the cross and you have been born again. The essence of the goodness is Spirit but, in the end, the sense of it comes back down, the one who has understanding of this is the Apostle John. He understood that the world is divided between God's love and know God's love; God's life and know God's life; God's Spirit and know God's Spirit, absolute.

Which means that you go back to that chapter. What makes a good tree good? Because God is inside, because God's life is inside, because God's Spirit is inside. However, do not forget this most important thing: Because God's love is inside. You know why, we were called enemies of God, Romans 5: while we were enemies of God, God loved us, because we were incapable of love. Anything that is incapable of God's love is an enemy of God. We have to reply with the absolute and John replies with the absolute. Anything that does not have God's love is in darkness. If anyone walks without love, he or she walks in darkness. Absolute is God's love. In Romans 5:1, *"Therefore, having been justified by faith, we have peace with God..."*, (you go down the line) and we go through all those tribulations because God has shed His love in our hearts.

The life of God: What does the life of God feel like? It feels like love. The feeling part of God's life is love. If you want to feel life, feel love. Isn't it true, all the different types of love in the world and even if human beings have an iota of love in that small part, they are feeling the life that God created? This whole planet was based on, *God so loved the world*. Every tree, every rock, every creation was made out of God's love. It was meant to operate in God's love. We have taken the world and turned it in many different ways outside of God's will, outside of God's love, used it for evil, used it for self and used it for sin. Satan has taken it

and used it for himself, everything outside of God's love. So, it comes back to the love of God and then when you look back again in Matthew 6:22, "*The lamp of the body is the eye. If therefore your eye is good...*". The lamp of the body is the Spirit. The lamp of the body, which is the correct statement, is the life, is the Spirit of life, of the love of God.

### *Life, light and Spirit*

Life, light and Spirit are all talking about the same thing because the life of God is the light of God but the whole story began with: *For God so loved the world*. It was the heartbeat of God's love. The Bible says God is Spirit, the Bible says God is love. The word "is" is applied and the lamp of the body is the love of God in us that keeps our hearts focused. If therefore your eye, which is the love of God in you, is good, the love and the life of God (because love and life are the same), your whole body will be full of light.

Another verse that points to this is 1John. Didn't 1John say that if you walk in love, you walk in light? How do you get your whole body full of light? By walking in love. Didn't 1 John interpret this verse for you? It says if you walk in darkness, you walk in hate, you hate your brother, you are in darkness, there is no more light, absolutely no light. 1John tells you this in a different way. If in your life, your love has gone bad, there is no more love, you love other things, you see, the love can go bad. When you take that love, we have been made to love God and to love others whom God loves, you can take that love and turn it into a selfish love, take that love to love things, take that love to love pleasure, the love has gone bad. It has to be something that can go bad. Can you see that? The eye has to have the ability to go bad. Spirit going bad, that is hard to condemn but love going bad, yes, because when you turn that love into love for anything except love for God and love for others, that love has gone bad. Then you are full of darkness without the light or the love in you.

Now, what are the synonyms Biblically of light? Life and love, correct? Didn't we always say love, light and life are the same substance? There are different angles when you are looking at the same substance, the substance that comes from God, it is light; the substance that comes from God, it is love. Those three words in the theology of God are synonyms. Love, light and life are synonyms. He is talking about that, which brings you to the next verse, that is why you cannot serve two masters because you will hate one and love the other. You cannot love two at same time and that is the word "*agape*" love. Can you see that Matthew 6:24 answers the question? That is the context. Life, light and love are the same

substance. You cannot take that love and divide it into two masters, then that love has gone bad because the part that you give to one will become hate for the other. You must keep it only for God.

*First love belongs to God*

First love belongs to God and no one else. Without God being first, it is in vain that you love any other person or thing. To God belongs our first love. That, my friends, is the eye of the heart because this eye can look at the wrong thing. There has to be something that can look at the wrong thing and become bad.

Every verse needs other verses to interpret. I have a thousand other verses that can show this, but the clearest is from 1John. The difference between light and darkness is love. You have got five chapters of it in 1John but here in the same context, it says you cannot love two, you cannot serve God and mammon. You must only serve one. Your first love must only be for God. At any time, you lose your first love, Jesus has only one word for you, like He gave to the Ephesians: “Repent”!

Why do we need to repent when you still are faithful in many other areas? Because darkness will try to come in. Can you see that? That is what Jesus is trying to tell you. You cannot afford not to have first love. God has to be absolute, number one. It is the only way to preserve against darkness when the love has gone bad. The Ephesians lost it and Jesus told them to repent, otherwise the lampstand would be taken, and they would lose all the light. All the light was already fading, and that light would be taken, the lampstand would be taken completely, and they would be in darkness if they did not turn around. To the last church, the Laodicean church, God says they were neither hot nor cold. That is bad because the only way to survive is hot, hot, and hot for God’s love. In-between, lukewarm is not good enough, although in the natural, lukewarm things are very nice.

Like when I go for soya bean, I always say “lukewarm” and we have what we call the *Michael Jackson – chinchow*, which is black with the white soya bean. I like that one. This is Singaporean’s term by the way, there is such a drink called *Michael Jackson*, black grass jelly and the white soya bean. Nice drink, I like it lukewarm, it is nice to drink.

However, in the spirit world, you have to have first love, nothing less than first love. To the last church in Laodicea, in Revelation 3, it says “Come and buy from Me, something to wash, so that your eyes will be open”. In Revelation 3, I want you to look very closely at verse 18 because you might look at that verse and wonder if many Christians are like that, they are lukewarm, neither here nor there, and their spiritual eyes are not open. We are entering in a time when Christians will literally see the spiritual world. We are at the beginning. That is why this teaching is coming.

*First the revelation and the teaching*

First the revelation and the teaching, then the teaching sets you free. Just like we lost justification by faith, so that when people begin to teach justification by faith (by Martin Luther King), people can be born again. We lost healing, when they teach the gospel of healing, then we discover it again. We lost prosperity, when they teach that Christ provides for us, then we get back prosperity, we are no more ashamed of it, except people put it to the extreme. Then we are in the world where there are many Christians who are spiritually still blind, and the answer is when you put God as first love, you will see again.

Now, if I switch off all the lights, it is very hard to see. What do you need to see? Light. Let there be light! The only thing you need to see is light, correct? What is light made from? Love and light. The only thing you need in your heart is love, but the quality of love must be first love because when the first love comes, you will see again. That is what your emotions must be renewed to. You see, how can you renew your emotions if you do not know what the end game is? You need to know what the end is. Your emotions are fully renewed when you have got the love, full of first love for God, and the same heart full of love for people. You can then see, because where there is light, you can see.

He says that you are naked, and you do not know it. He says (Revelation 3:18), “... *anoint your eyes with eye salve, that you may see*”. But it does not tell you what it is. The ointment is first love, and all your emotions will be healed. You know, if you have got first love for God, you will never suffer depression, you will never suffer fits of anger, you will never suffer all the emotions that the world suffers because there is no room for anything but love. It is the only way.

## Chapter 18...

### The Will of the Soul

We have been touching on the *Spirit, Soul* and *Body* and we have been talking about the *Will*, the *Mind* and the *Emotions*. So, we have the *Soul Will*, the *Soul Emotion* and the *Soul Mind*. Then we have been talking about how these correlate with the spiritual section also, *Spirit Mind*, *Spirit Emotion* and *Spirit Will*, different classifications from Watchman Nee's *Spiritual Man Book 1*. We have been touching on the *Emotions* and the *Mind*. I have left the *Will* by itself.

We mentioned that if your emotion and your intellect fight, your emotion will win. So, if your emotion and your intellect fight and contradict each other, your emotions will win. Now, since the emotion is the gorilla that wins the fight with the intellect, what happens if the will and the emotion fight, who will win? Think a bit carefully, who will win, the will or the emotion?

In Romans 7, Paul talks about the battle between the will and sin nature, so he says here (verses 15-20), "*For what I am doing, I do not understand. For what I will to do (so he is exercising his free will, this is talking about his will to do), that I do not practice; but what I hate, that I do. If, then, I do what I will not to do, I agree with the law that it is good. But now, it is no longer I who do it, but sin that dwells in me. For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh) nothing good dwells; for to will is present with me (he still has his choice), but how to perform what is good I do not find. For the good that I will to do, I do not do; but the evil I will not to do, that I practice. Now if I do what I will not to do, it is no longer I who do it, but sin that dwells in me*". In this chapter, the will lost to the nature that has overwhelmed it and to the desire to do all the bad and evil things. So, the will lost. Is there scripture where the will wins?

We are now talking about the *Will* and something has to do with a part of our soul, since we are studying *Spirit, Soul* and *Body*. What we are trying to understand is what is going on inside us. 1 Corinthians 14:14-15, "*For if I pray in a tongue, my spirit prays, but my understanding (I believe it is the "nous" there. Yes, it is nous, which is a common word for*

intellect / understanding) *is unfruitful*. So, there's a battle between the intellect and the will. *What is the conclusion then? I will pray with the spirit, and I will also pray with the understanding. I will sing with the spirit, and I will also sing with the understanding*". Notice, it is between the understanding and the will. Of course, in the end the spiritual forces come in.

### *The gold medal goes to the emotions*

So, for the first time in this study on *Spirit, Soul and Body*, we managed to put them in accordance with the order of their strengths, that is, the gold medal goes to the emotion (the gorilla), the silver medal goes to the will, and the bronze medal goes to the intellect. That is interesting. If the will gets the silver medal, how come we are accountable for our lives if we never choose? How do you give account for your choices when you did not choose? It is not a battle between the will and the emotion, it is the will and the intellect, and the will can decide that. Between the will and the intellect, it only pushes the intellect one more step down and that is how we have got the gold medal, silver medal and bronze medal.

Okay, why do we need to give prizes to these three? The prizes are to visualise who is Number one, Number two, Number three. At the end we will see who actually is Number one, Number two and Number three because when you have three persons running a race, only one person will get first, second person will get second, and another person will get third. We are letting them run the race, we are all watching the race. The conclusion might change. This is only the beginning. What then, you might say, is the purpose? The purpose is to help you to visualise, to help you understand the point. Remember, gold is like Number one, silver is like Number two, bronze is like Number three. I could have said who is Number one, Number two, Number three. Then you will keep forgetting who is Number one, Number two etc. so gold, everybody is eyeing gold (*wah!*), and silver (*ah!*), so it is easier to remember based on these three medals.

Now, I have one question, that is, that everybody will face the judgement. At the judgment, you are to account for everything that you have done. Let me give you the scripture on judgment. Everything has a scripture. Everything that I ask comes from some scriptural background. 1 Corinthians 3:13-15, "*each one's work will become clear; for the Day will declare it, because it will be revealed by fire; and the fire will test each one's work, of what sort it is. If anyone's work which he has built on it endures, he will receive a reward. If*

*anyone's work is burned, he will suffer loss; but he himself will be saved, yet so as through fire*". In other words, every man has to give an account for himself. That is not the only scripture by the way. This is a believer's judgment. The fact that the person has got no reward but still is saved tells you that it is a believer's judgment that Paul is talking about. He mentions the judgment seat of Christ again in 2 Corinthians 5:10, *"For we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ, (by "we", he included himself) that each one may receive the things done in the body, according to what he has done, whether good or bad"*. So, everyone has to give an account before God of what he has done. Now, if you did not choose what you have done, how can you be accountable?

Let us say if somebody were to kidnap you and take you to Siberia against your will, can you say why you choose to go to Siberia? Can you answer the question? You couldn't, right? Because you did not choose. You say, "Don't blame me for being in Siberia, blame the one who kidnapped me". Will that be a fair judgment for being in Siberia? So, you see, you still cannot blame the kidnapper, if let us say the kidnapper is your emotion and you are the will. The will got kidnapped by the emotion. You see, the emotion kidnapped the will, correct? Then the emotion must answer to the crime, not the will. So, I am not saying that when the will chooses that the emotion is not there but what I am asking is that, if they really fight each other, if they fight each other, who will win?

In Joshua 24, the enemies were defeated. All the giants had been slaughtered and here is when they were dividing the land. They conquered every single King and they were dividing the land and they actually came from victory. From the victory, Joshua said, *"Do not forget the Lord. Now that you have victory, we are going to divide the land, me and my household will serve the Lord. You all should choose to serve the Lord"*. There was no negative there. It was easy to choose. The will and the emotion were side by side. The will was supported by the emotion; there was no contrary thing.

Whereas when King Saul was waiting for Samuel and Samuel was delayed and King Saul was afraid because he claimed later on that he was afraid that people were leaving. He was afraid that he had no army left, so if he did not do something quickly, he would lose the people. Actually, he should have trusted the Lord. So, he said he made himself do something. There were a lot of emotions. By the word of God, he should not do it. By the command of God, he should not do it. He knew he should not do it, but all his emotions told him, "You

better do it, otherwise it is a lost case". The emotion dragged the will into doing it, in that case. When the emotion dragged the will in, he could have chosen not to do it but in that case, the emotion still won.

Now, with the story of Jacob when he was going to meet Esau. He was afraid, he was so fearful. He was very fearful, and he acted in fear too. He acted in fear, but in obedience he went back to the land of his family even though he was fearful. He had a strategy, like put himself last, even though his emotions were strong at that time, he still decided to go back. So, Jacob was going away from Laban after the end of twenty years. He was afraid of his brother but in his case, he was also afraid of his father-in-law. Was he running away from his father-in-law? Or in greater fear, running away from a lesser fear? When he was going home, he still did not know that Esau was coming. At that time, Esau just knew that he was in the country. So, he was fearful of his father-in-law, but he obeyed the Lord and he went but that was an easy thing because he was running away from fear. He did not like his father-in-law. His father-in-law was cheating him all the time. Every morning when he woke up, he just had to look at the two wives and remember how his father-in-law cheated him. He was supposed to marry one. His father-in-law was a nasty man, Laban. Uncle Laban was a bad guy, he was running away from the bad guy, in the midst of that, he heard that there was also Esau, so there was another fear he faced.

#### *Will vs Emotions*

What about Queen Esther meeting the king without getting permission first? She actually asked the Israelites to pray and fast for her for three days. She was afraid that she might die. Queen Esther meeting the King, okay, coming closer home. Yes, so she disobeyed the law. The law says no one can approach the King except at the King's command. She could have died. So, she disobeyed, and she went. Yes, coming closer, but not so clear yet. I am looking for a clear-cut case of *Will vs Emotions*.

The thing is that we have got the intellect, the emotion and the will. We are trying to give the gold medal to the will, but we cannot give it illegally. It has to be based on the ground rules of the game. The game is based on Genesis to Revelation. Anyone of them who wins, if it is properly trained and matured and bigger than the other two, if let us say somebody is training his will, it can win over the other two, but if his emotion has to be trained and is stronger, then the emotion wins. For example, Cain and Abel. Cain, he was emotional but he did not

use his will; the Lord said that he also had a chance even though he negotiated and he lost but when we look at somebody else like King David, who was a very emotional, soulful person and yet many times he said ‘I will choose to bless the Lord’, even in those times where he had no peace, having a lot of difficulties, emotional turmoil, he said ‘I will choose to bless the Lord’...”. *Ah*, coming closer now.

Okay, here’s where it is, the whole book of Psalms has got a lot of verses but the whole Bible is full of stories. When you remove all the names and just look at the Bible stories, it is a fight between the emotion and the will. Sometimes the emotion wins, sometimes the will wins. Queen Esther fought against her emotions, she won. Cain fought against his emotions, he lost. So, there is this battle going on between the emotion and the will. Very little battle goes on between the will and the intellect. Most of the time, it is the battle between the emotion and the will. You have countless stories where the will lost.

For instance, when we are talking about Roger Federer and Nadal in tennis, we are not talking about the other Slavonic guy who beats them both, he is still the No 1 alone, but I know Nadal is no more No 3. Some of you are wondering: What are these two fellows doing with the Bible? Nothing, we are just using illustrations between Roger Federer and Nadal, sometimes they win, sometimes they lose. On a clay court, Nadal is much more superior. He has won more than anybody else and at some point, it was 50:50 until Nadal fell, started going down. Before that, at his peak, when the two fought, it was a 50:50 thing, even though they had got some history between them. It is like sometimes this guy wins, sometimes that guy wins. From tennis, we now go back to the Bible.

Between the giant of the emotion and the giant of the will, intellect is caught between the fight of the elephants, to use the Malay proverb: *Gajah Bergaduh Tikus Mati*. So, when the two elephants fight, the mouse will be crushed in between.

Even in King David’s life, sometimes emotions won. The story of Bathsheba is (whatever number): Round 1 – *ya*, will. Round 2 – *ya*, will. Round 3 – *ya*, will. Round 4 – emotions! Emotions won and then his emotions were steady since. After that, when he fought against Absalom, his own son, it was not an easy fight, he was not leading the army. He almost caused discouragement to the whole army. He even told the soldiers not to fight properly. He said, “If you see him, do not kill him”. How to fight? So, when they saw Absalom hanging on

the tree by his hair, none of the soldiers dared to kill him, except Joab who was also emotional. He was angry at David all the time, unforgiveness against David and so in his emotions, he killed Absalom. Shoot first, answer question later, whatever. He got him killed. The whole Bible is full of stories of the emotion against the will.

*In Jesus Christ, the will always won*

Now we come to Gethsemane. The best-case study is our Lord Jesus Christ. Amen. For Jesus Christ, the will always won. The book of Psalms, take any psalm, you will find that it is a battle between the emotion and the will and David has to find his way back to God in the midst of his emotions, because of his love for God. However, in Jesus Christ, the will always won. Now, when we look at the Master, you have to readjust.

The way God creates, it is the will should have the gold medal. Then the emotion can have the silver medal and the intellect can have the bronze medal, but you notice one thing: None of us is fighting for the intellect to have the gold or silver medal. You mean, there is zero?

Even in Proverbs 3:5-6, *“Trust in the LORD with all your heart, And lean not on your own understanding (intellect) ...”*. Then the other verse that says *My thoughts are not your thoughts, Nor are your ways My ways* and guess what our modern society is based on? From the day you go to school, to the university where you think until you cannot think anymore, you need more coffee, it just pushes your intellect to the extreme. Then you say, “What role has the intellect”? *Eh*, you still the silver medal. The intellect is necessary because the intellect is necessary if you want to go to the next level. So, let me talk about a two-level race.

I do not play computer games. There are a lot of people who play computer games and some people are so addicted to them. Then when you play, or you have a family time, sitting, playing the Super Mario Kart, racing against one another, you think about this: There are people fighting, fighting in all these things, you are trying to win a game, and the game is programmed by a person. Could be a person or persons, correct? Every game is a program, it is just a program. Of course, the program sets its own rules but then in every game, there are cheat codes. Cheat codes try to get more life, more this and more that. So, as an experienced father of children who used to love games, when my children were growing up and used to play all those games, one of the most valuable tools that they looked for was a book called

*Cheat Codes for Things*, so that if they wanted to go to level 64 or 128, they would find all the cheat codes and guidance to say, okay, what must you do; which button must you press; which one you can get an extra level or a short cut through this area or discover short cuts. Some of the cheats are really cheats, they actually find a flaw in the program but some of the cheats are actually like Easter eggs, they are put there for those who can discover them to find another dimension or short cut. They are actually placed there by the gamer for it. Now, while you are enjoying, playing the game, if you use your intellect, the knowledge helps. The knowledge can bring you into another level. You might punch in a cheat code at the start. I remember in those days when I was learning for my son, he said, “How did you get so many lives”? I said, “*Oh*, this, this, this. *Ah*, endless life, otherwise if you have got seven lives, you die”. So, you actually go into the program because of your knowledge or you actually go into the higher level. Of course, some people will say that is not really the skill but what skill is there in punching and working your fingers like that? It is not like you go for exercise, you go swimming, or it is an Olympic game but, nowadays, there are also actual competitions. In a competition, they are not allowed to cheat. They actually need to have skills and they actually have dexterity of their hands but yet there is also some knowledge. They need to know the terrain, the terrain of the game because they have played for so long, they would know all the short cuts, the legal short cuts through the game. Or they might do the wrong thing and they take the short cuts right through. You say, “*Oh*, this guy...”, you defeat with, press X, Y and this, the guy dies. So, you are still playing the game legally.

Knowledge is important. Do not run down the intellect. Once you have chosen, the intellect actually comes and rises to the surface. It can bring you into another level. So, it is like an important part, an important guy that comes afterwards. The knowledge of it, that is there.

In Jesus’ life, His will was always Number one. In many other lives, we see the battle between the emotion and the will and here is another thing if you study: The people who (in the Bible) seemed not to have any flaws. Of course, *all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God*. We cannot say they did not have sin. I use the words, they did not have “observable flaws”. I can name them for you: Joseph, Daniel, Abraham (you know, he told lies and nearly caused problems). So, almost every man of God had some problems but those who had no flaws almost, look at their emotions. They did have an area of emotions, but their emotions were always under control. We did not say that they did not have emotions. They did have emotions, but they did know how to control their emotions. The fact that Joseph had to run

away to cry when he saw his brother shows that he had a composure, a very hard composure, because he had to be very hard to his brothers and then he ran away and cried.

*To control by choice of will*

Let us see the battle between the emotion and the control in the life of Joseph. To control by choice of will. In Genesis, Joseph's brothers started coming to him around chapters 43, 44. So, let us look at chapter 43 first, Joseph saw his brothers when they came the second-time around. Judah said to Israel: "Send the lad with me, that we may live and not die, because we cannot go again, that man in Egypt told us that we must bring the youngest one, otherwise he will not believe us". There they went, brought a present and Benjamin, and they took double money because they wanted to return the money that was restored in their sacks. Joseph saw Benjamin with them. Then he said, "Get these people to dine with me in the house". When they drew near to Joseph's house, they explained to the steward about the extra money which they found in their sacks. He then brought Simeon out because Simeon was put in prison. Ten came, nine went back. Joseph kept Simeon in prison as security, to make sure they came back. He was quite a clever guy. If all ten went back, they might never come back again. He held back one so that they would come back again. When the nine went back, of course the father said, "*Eh*, what happened? Ten went, only nine came back". So, one was held back. They did not dare go back until the food was finished.

You can see the questions that Joseph asked are all emotional (verse 27), "*Is your father well* (actually "Is my father well"), *the old man of whom you spoke? Is he still alive*"? *Wah*, he was very concerned because the old man was his dad. They answered, "*Your servant our father is in good health; he is still alive*". Then they bowed, they prostrated in front of him. Verse 29: "*Then he lifted his eyes and saw his brother Benjamin...* (Remember, Benjamin was full blood with him, born from the same mother). *Is this your younger brother of whom you spoke to me?*' And he said, '*God be gracious to you, my son*'.". Look at verse 30: His heart. He wanted to hug his brother and his heart wanted to reach out. *Wah*, the man, Joseph, was in full control. He just looked at Benjamin, like normal. In fact, if he did not act properly, his brothers would know that something was wrong. His heart wanted to hug, but instead of hugging, he made haste and went away and then he bawled his eyes out, he cried. Verse 31: "*Then he washed his face and came out; and he restrained himself...*". He still looked normal. His heart was crying, weeping, partly rejoicing in tears, but his control was superb. He got them to sit down and took servings to them and then the whole day he was okay. Do

you know he never got to hug his brother, he never got to say hello to his brother, he never talked to his brother? He let them look but he had another plot – how to keep his brother, by putting his silver cup into Benjamin’s sack, so that he could arrest him, hoping to hold him back.

Now, here is the play here. Look at it. When you study the Bible, based on spirit, soul and body, based on *emotions* versus *will* and *intellect*, look at how the intellect came to serve the will because Joseph wanted to keep his brother, he came out with an idea. It was not the idea that came first, then he chose. He chose, then the idea came. He might have two or three ways to keep Benjamin, but he came out with a very good plan on how to keep him. The only thing is, in his plan, he did not anticipate that his brothers were willing to die for Benjamin. That part he never calculated. As usual, the intellect cannot calculate everything, but do you notice the intellect served the will? I am painting a whole picture here.

#### *The Word is spiritual energy*

In James 1:14, it tells us that one is tempted when he is drawn away by his own desires and enticed. So ‘desires’ is basically the emotion but James 1:5 says that if anyone lacks wisdom, let him ask of God. So that is the will. Does then wisdom also get into the intellect? The wisdom does in fact get into the intellect, and because we say that every word has a visual component and an emotional component, it will also affect the emotion because later, James went on to say that wisdom is pure and undefiled. That means it is tied to love. It says, also later part, about the Word of truth. So, it seems that if we have the Word, it helps our intellect. That is why I leave out the *Spirit* part. The Word is also spiritual energy that energises.

Here is the thing: We rush too much to try to find God’s will, without properly putting our soul in order first. Before you can run, you must learn to walk. Before you learn to walk, you must learn to stand. Isn’t that the natural order of all babies? So, if you get the order wrong, you might injure yourself. Imagine a little baby. First thing that he wants to do is run but then he might injure himself.

If we do not know how our soul structure is, which one should open the door, which one should be watching, it is just like a gun fight, let us say. Remember all those soldiers, SAS Swat Team and all that? When they come to capture a guy, they cannot signal and say,

“Where have you been over there”? Finished, all the bad guys run away. They will go to a door. Have you noticed how when they go to a door, they have already agreed as to who goes in first? It is all done. So, they are at the door, one will be on this side, one will be on that side and then sometimes one spy goes there. I do not know what their secret is, when they want to signal, they have already guessed what their signal is. If one day you put some funny guy there, that would be a comedy. So, you have got this guy there on one side, the other guy is on the other side and the guy who goes in does not open the door. Have you noticed that? The guy who actually goes in does not open the door. When the other guy opens the door, the guy rushes in because the timing to open the door is too slow. It is not like in the old movies where they kicked down the door. No, nowadays if the other guy is fully armed inside, they do not do that, they have to be cautious. Then the guy says, whatever, and when the door opens, the guy goes in straight with the gun all ready to shoot because if you open the door, you might be shot and attacked. The guy is ready to shoot the moment the door opens. That is the thing.

When you are warring with your enemy, you have to be ready. Your soul is the one that does the warring and you want to know, okay, in your soul, every one of us recognises that our soul is actually like, the three functions as one, they can contradict each other. Your emotion can tell you one thing, your intellect tells you another, and then your will has to still choose. You need to know how to flow. Of course, we always say let your heart lead you but that also means that you make your decision based on the spirit, not on your intellect or your emotion. That is the whole basis for it. We are told to do that, to let your will lead you. The will can be taught by the Word, or either based on the spirit. So, that is where your emotions are contradictory, and your intellect does not understand, so your intellect is not working with you and you need to still make a decision, your will leads the way. We must always know that in our soul, the will chooses first. No matter how noisy the emotion is, how noisy the intellect is, let your will choose. When your will chooses, your intellect (which is Number three) will tell you how to do it but if you let your intellect choose, you will get stuck; if you let your emotion choose, it might lead you the wrong way; although sometimes your intellect and your emotion support you.

Romans 7 tells you, more of the time because of sin nature, the intellect and the emotion do not support you, they go against you and, so you must choose. Choose first but here is the advantage and if you think carefully, this happens. Whatever problems you are going through

now, somebody else on the planet has the same problem, if not, a greater problem. The difference between you and them is they have found the solution, they have found the way out. There is something about the intellect that is like this. If you choose to want to do something, it might take time, might not be overnight, if you really choose to want to do something, your intellect might find ten ways to do it. You might research, look for data, talk to people, gather knowledge and information, you find ten possible ways to do it. However, if you choose not to do something, your same intellect which serves you very well, might find ten ways on how you cannot do it and that is a big difference. The intellect serves best as an advisor, not as the chooser, it is the other man who is the support team.

Just like when soldiers go in after they have conquered a country, conquering and governing are different. Soldiers do not know how to govern, correct? If soldiers govern, it is a dictatorship. *Oh*, that guy is robbing us! Why? Soldiers do not know how to govern. The military does not know how to govern because the military only knows how to give orders and you cannot govern people based on the military style because that is repression. It is only a matter of time before people fight back. It is a matter of time when the unhappiness swells so much that the only way to keep governing is to keep killing because somewhere rebellion will come to kill you if you continue your military-style dictatorship. The only government that can survive is a government where everybody feels that they are a part of it or they are beneficiaries of it, where they feel the equality, they feel the sense of sharing, they feel the sense of love and benevolence. Then the people, even if you ask them, they might still say “no, no, no, we still want it” because they benefit.

Like, for example, in Australia, we have all the seven States. Then they decided to have the Federal Territory, that is, The Australian Capital Territory (ACT), with Canberra as the capital city. In Australia, because it is a Federal Territory, originally, everything that was built, the Government would put the money there. So, we have got nice roads, big malls, one of the most well-planned cities in Australia. Then because the Government did not want to keep spending money, said, “I think you all should have independence, your own Council runs your things” that kind of thing, so they surveyed all the people and that was before I went to live there. When they surveyed the people, nobody wanted independence. Everybody said, “*Oh*, no, no, we are happy, come, ruler of the Federal Territory, come, do not go” because there was a lot of money, everything was paid for. That is when you want to give them freedom, they also do not want it. I mean, not in the sense that they have freedom, but

in the sense, that “We do not want independence, we rather like to be a Federal Territory” but despite of that, the Government, because at that time, they wanted to make their budget smaller and save more money, said, “No, no, no, give you independence, *ya*”. So, they started their own little government kind of thing. They have to raise their own funds, they do have some help, the federal government helps here and there, but they have to find their own budget – budget for roads, budget for this, budget for that and all those things. Some roads are Federal roads, some roads are State roads, and the State is in charge. They say, “No, we do not want to be in charge, you be in charge, *c'mon*”, you know, pay for everything. You see, when the people benefit, and they are profiting from it, why should they want to do anything else? That is why the military cannot govern, but a good group of people who can govern might not be good at fighting. It is a different thing.

*Emotion is a powerful section*

Your soul has been divided into three sections. Your intellect is very good with planning and ideas, but do not let your intellect rule, keep it in the advisory category, only let your will rule. Your emotion is a powerful section but do not let your emotion rule, let your will rule. That is why we have to study the will and that is the will of the soul. We have to look at it very carefully because it is a powerful component.

Now we look at Joseph and see how much control he had. We continue the story. He had very good control. He sent his brothers away and plotted the thing, but the thing did not work. No matter how clever the intellect, you cannot anticipate everything. Joseph, do not forget, he was a very clever man, a very wise man. His wisdom got him the job. He was filled also with the Spirit of Wisdom; it got him the job. When he plotted, he said (Genesis 44:17, he made a judgment): “No, I do not need anyone of you; the man in whose hand the cup is found, shall be my slave. (He wanted to keep Benjamin). You go, peace to you”. Why? He did not want his 10 brothers, just wanted his baby brother.

This is what he never anticipated, Judah came and told how he pledged himself for Benjamin and so he saw a different attitude of his brother. The same brothers who sold him, wanted to kill him, were a bit different now. I think, after his case, they all realised, they must have learned. Do not forget, if he was sold at seventeen years old and he became a ruler at thirty years, and then you have the seven years’ prosperity (that is thirty-seven years), and then let us say they started coming in the first or second year (so that adds another two years), Joseph

was nearly about thirty-nine to forty years old. So, if that is so, then thirty or forty, minus seventeen, then you realise that that is a long, long time since they lost him, all the griefs and all that. He did not realise his brothers could be so changed.

Judah said, “Our father is an old man, he is a child of his old age, his brother is dead (talking about Joseph), he alone is left of his mother’s children, and his father loves him. If we do not bring him back (he is saying the father will die because this is his heartbeat), his father might die”. He said that when they wanted to bring the youngest brother, the father at first did not let them and then he said, “When I come to your servant my father, and the lad is not with us, since his life is bound up in the lad’s life, it will happen, when he sees that the lad is not with us, he will die. Then your servant will be guilty, if I do not bring him back”. Then not only that, he said, “Let me be your servant, let him go”. *Oh*, that is good intercession. This is atonement. He said, “You want a slave? I will be your slave. Let him go”. *Wah*, this is beautiful, this is good, kind of Judah doing that.

Then when Joseph heard that, for the first time his emotions burst out. That was the most touching thing, correct, when the brother said, “I will stand in the place of Benjamin”. *Wah*, that one, the floodgate of emotions burst open. He could not restrain himself and he cried out, “Everyone, go”! When they left, Joseph let his brothers know, “I am Joseph”. *Wah*, can you imagine the brother’s amazement? Now all the dreams came back. *Oh ya*, already all had happened, the dreams came to pass, and you can imagine all the outbursts of emotions.

The fact here is that there were a lot of emotions around, but Joseph had good control. Until that part, we will give him the liberty to let out his emotions (because for that one, most people cannot control) at that stage when his brother volunteered his own life. Those people who do not outwardly seem to have “flaws”, their emotions are pretty much in control. It is when the emotions have too much free rein, that is when the problems come. Now you begin to see that in all of our Christian lives, the control of the emotions and the understanding of where the intellect is placed are parts of the key to living a good testimony.

The next time that you ever want to do something, or you are surrounded by an avalanche of emotions, or somebody comes with a bright idea, *oh*, buy this top, good; do this thing, good, *eh*, wait a minute, that is trying to lead you by ideas. No matter how good the idea is, even if it is genuine (but a lot of things are not genuine), you still must ask yourself: Is this profit or

prosperity meant for me? If it is not meant for you but meant for somebody else, you also cannot try and take it. What is yours is yours and what is not yours can never be yours. Whether you try to get it legally or illegally (God forbids of course), even if you try to get it legally, if it is not yours, you will enter the permissive will of God.

*Not good for the soul*

I do not think Lot was ever meant to live in Sodom and Gomorrah. I do not think so. I do not think he was supposed to live inside the city. He was supposed to go somewhere else. If Lot really parted from Abraham, he must not live in the city. In fact, the Bible says every day he was vexed. Why suffer like that? All for natural profit. Not good for the soul.

So, never let your intellect lead you and it is very obvious if the intellect is being used in the negative sense, but it is not so obvious if the intellect seems to have a good thing on idea. No matter how good the idea, you still come and bring it to God. I have an example for you. David, after building a house, he said, “Why should I live in a house”? Now, that was his thinking. His intellect was thinking (a good intellect, not a bad one): “How can I live in a house and God is living in a tent? I am going to do something for God”. Motive is good; intellectual reasoning, very sound; love for God, very obvious; sacrifice, yes. He passed all, the boxes are ticked but is it the will of God? That is important. So, you know what he did? He consulted the prophet, which was very good of him. He could have, you know, what some Christians will do in his place, do not even consult a man of God, just do and then after they have done, invite the man of God to come and bless what they have done.

How many businessmen have I come across who want to build a church, but they want the church to belong to them! It is just another building that is in their name, in their ownership. They decide its use, they might say “Yes, I will use it for this and that”. *Ya, ya*, the word “I” is still in there. So, when a businessman comes like that, I always tell him: That is not giving, that is still controlling. If you really want to give, give the thing lock, stock, and barrel. Legally transfer it, so that it is no longer yours. You cannot decide what to do with it but the person you give to, you must trust he knows how to use it. If you cannot trust such a person, then do not give. You can first trust the person and even if you first trust the person, the person might 10 years later, not do what you want. There is a risk you take but do not say that you give when you actually lend. Lending is not giving, correct? So, the businessman will not be giving, he is just saying “I will lend this space for free use”. It is lending. He still owns it.

Many businessmen say that, and you know, to all of them, I say no. I do not care even if that place is big, carpeted, everything paid for, fully used, no, thank you.

Remember, the fight is between the intellect and the emotion, then the will has to choose and what I am teaching is, the will cannot choose itself. The will is actually trying to choose God's will or own will in intellect or own will in emotions. When you say, "own will", own will has to be something. It has to have substance, it has to have direction, direction is provided either by the emotion or the intellect.

You have to have a road to drive a car. If there is no road, you cannot even take the car out of the garage. So, the will is the chooser and when it chooses, it must choose God's opinion and God's Will. That is why we are illustrating. You see, we show that the will must always find God. I see a lot of people in David's position will not be consulting God. A lot of businessmen are in David's position and they will say, you know, do this, do that. Giving and lending are different things. We appreciate those with generosity to lend (because some people do not even lend) and to let God's people use things (which they own).

Like, when Jesus was riding on a donkey. Remember, Jesus did ride on a donkey as He entered Jerusalem to fulfil prophecy. Do you know that Jesus did not own the donkey? When Jesus was buried in the grave, Jesus did not own the grave; it belonged to Joseph of Arimathea. The donkey belonged to an unnamed guy, but we know that Jesus had an arrangement with him because He sent His disciples, saying, "Go to this person, tell him that I need this donkey".

There are business people that let God's people use things, we salute them. It is good, but I want to remind them: It is still not giving and sometimes in the long term, they will want to bring their control in. That is not good because you are at risk all the time. David was in a similar position. I am making the point of how good he was to consult a prophet. We have a man of God who knew this. Even though he himself was a man of God, he checked with the prophet. He said, "This is my idea (you see, his idea) to build God a house. What do you think"? The prophet also said it was a good idea and to go ahead. So, at least he had got a witness, consensus to go ahead and do it. God said to the prophet, on the way out, before he exited that place, "Go and tell David: No, no, cannot do; not My will". Can you see that? Our will is designed to do only God's will.

Now we see the spiritual side. God's Will and our will. The two have always been functioning as one. During the fall of man, they go separate ways, and our will is finding its way back to God. The two must be locked in step and sometimes God can lock it into step, so much that when you keep yielding to God, yielding to God, you know, something happens. When you yield long enough, the two are locked in synchrony. That is why Paul says in Acts 20:22, "I go bound in the spirit".

In the spiritual realm, and here is the funny thing, this is the vision of Annie, the little Argentinian girl who had a vision. *Annie's Visions*, which are really wonderful visions. Some of you may have beautiful visions too of the spiritual world that you might not understand but there is a place in God, where Jesus actually is there. You know, visions are funny. You know, visions are also actually allegorised to your context. So, Annie at that time, a young Bible school student, saw that Jesus had these lasso-kind of ropes, and she said, "I wonder what that is". Then Jesus said, "I put these ropes on those I really, really loved and once I am linked with them, they can never actually go away from Me". However, here is the thing: He does not do that to everybody. You see, I understand, and that is a vision. All visions need the Bible. The Bible calls it "bound in the spirit". So, let me use Biblical words.

Actually, it is a privilege, you all know other concepts. The concept of being pierced in the ear when the slave in the Old Testament was set free, when the slave said, "I love my master so much. My master has been good to me, benefitted me, taken care of me, my family and my home. I love this home. This is like my home even though I was a slave. He treated me like a son". Even Abraham was a nice master, because Abraham was going to give his inheritance to Eleazar, if he did not have a son. Eleazar was like his top servant. Moses law says if there is such a servant, when it is time for him to be free and then the servant or slave says, "I do not want to be free, I would rather be with you", take that servant, put his ear on the door, and pierce his ear with an awl. *Wah*, that is the first recorded incident of ear-piercing and then it says from that day onwards, he is called the bond servant, that means of his free choice he chooses to serve.

All things in the Old Testament were recorded for New Testament teaching because in the New Testament, we are now called bond servants. Not just slave, you know, the translation actually brings you to "bond slave", a slave who has free choice and chooses to be a slave, that is the difference. A slave is just a slave, coerced, forced, kidnapped, captured, bankrupt,

whatever, that is a slave, no free will. Even if that slave marries and gives birth to a child, that child belongs to the master; no ownership, no free will but a bond slave has full free will and chooses to be a slave. That is a bond slave.

In Acts 21 when they told Paul not to go to Jerusalem even though Paul said he must go. Look at Paul's answer, Acts 21:13-14, "*Then Paul answered, 'What do you mean by weeping and breaking my heart? (Now, here is another thing about emotions versus wills. Everyone was crying, do not go, do not go. Paul said you are breaking my heart). For I am ready not only to be bound, but also to die at Jerusalem for the name of the Lord Jesus'. So when he would not be persuaded, we ceased, saying, 'The will of the Lord be done''*". They all finally said, "The will of the Lord be done". Paul was determined to go.

Now look over in Acts 20 where he was going to make his journey. Acts 20 is a record of Paul's sermon to the Ephesian elders because they were from Ephesus, he was in a place called Miletus and he met with them and he told them that he must go to Jerusalem. These are the words he used in verse 22, "*And see, now I go bound in the spirit...*". Did you see that? *Oh, I love to be bound in the spirit. You know why, it means that Jesus has a lasso on you.*

#### *Many visions and downloads*

Now, I remember one vision. There are so many visions and downloads which they all gave me. This person saw a vision of Jesus and Jesus talking to them. They saw a vision of a rope that seems to keep you connected to Jesus. If you see a vision of you like something connected to Jesus, which you do not have to, I mean Jesus could be wireless in connection, why in the vision must see a rope, reminds me of those little kids. Nowadays they have got a kid's leash on the body, so it comes out through the back, and you hold the kid. The kid has a leash on him (not a bad idea) and he cannot go too far from you. The only one I have not seen is a kid's leash with a retractable thing. It looks like something is leashed between you and Jesus. That is a very good thing. It is an honour to have that. It means you will no longer be able to stray. Doesn't mean you do not have free choice. It means that whichever direction you go, if ever something is not God's Will, a great thing will happen to prevent you from going through, rather than you go through it and it might look bad, but it is like you are blocked from doing anything except God's Will. If you really want to cross that line, you would have died and as long as God knows He can bring you back to do His Will, that leash

is very long. He is not worried, not concerned. He knows that something has happened to you.

I will not call it “infallibility”, that would be wrong. Infallibility is: it is impossible to choose to do wrong, but it is what we call “security”. You reach a point of security. That is why in the body of Christ, you have some people go to the extreme, *once saved always saved*. You heard that before? *Once saved always saved*, that means cannot be lost. That one actually is a truth in the wrong context. It is not *once saved always saved*. It is supposed to be, instead of like point 1, it should have been like point 1(b). It is a sub-point, not the main point. It is a subset truth, not the main truth. When you put a subset truth into equality, you have got a problem.

#### *Predestination vs free will*

Remember how we solved the problem between predestination and free will? When two things are equal, they will contradict, correct? The only way for two things to meet is one must be a subset of the other and we have a teaching, there is a series on *Predestination and Free Will*, where we show that predestination is a subset of free will. Now, how does it become a subset? When you keep choosing to do God’s Will, choosing to do God’s Will, choosing to do God’s Will, after some time, you could operate at level two. Level two means because of your obedience, it is harder now to do anything but God’s Will.

Like, for example, did John the Baptist have a choice? What free choice had John the Baptist? From the womb, already baptised in the Spirit. From the womb, already pointing to Jesus. Here you can imagine: Two pregnant women came together, one was Elizabeth, six months’ pregnant; one was Mary who had just conceived. The two came together. So, of course John the Baptist was in Elizabeth. Luke 1: The babe leaped in her womb. John the Baptist, filled with the Spirit, even from the womb, was pointing to Jesus. Now, tell me, did he have free choice? Of course, he sure had free choice, but the free choice is like not so easy for free choice. John the Baptist could have said, “I do not want to serve God”. Harder for him because he was so filled with the Spirit, *Arrrh*, so much love; *arrrh*, so much Spirit. He could choose, but it was so easy to choose God because he had subset 2. Subset 2 means that your forefathers have chosen God, your father has chosen God, so time is like a river, the current is very strong now in God’s direction, you are born in that current, you still have free choice. You can see, John the Baptist was discouraged one time when he was in prison and

then he sent his disciples to ask the Lord, “Are you the Coming One”? He said, “You are the One! You are the One! Yes, you are the One”! Then in prison, “Are you the Coming One”? That was recorded to show that he had free choice, but he still loved the Lord, he still loved God but that shows his free will can waver. Then it is positive, it is negative.

You see, predestination and free will. You have got to understand this concept. It is a good time to bring it up. Negative is like that: Pharaoh chose to go against God, chose to go against God, chose to go against God, God said that he dropped down from free will level one. He was on the negative side.

Whereas Zacharias and Elizabeth, what did the Lord say about them? They were upright, righteous; they walked in the way of God; they were at plus one and then they went to plus two. John the Baptist was born in plus two, the current was moving positively.

Pharaoh went against God, minus one, minus one, he dropped to minus two and God said, “From now on, I will use you for judgment”. *Wah*, can you see that? That is in the book of Romans where it talks about predestination. God said, “Pharaoh has dropped down to minus two, that is it”. There were a few people who dropped down to minus two who could not turn back. Judas Iscariot, even if he cried, also no more chance and certain things are like a one-way street, once you have chosen, you have got no more chance to undo your choices, like Esau where he lost his blessings.

You know how God can just go against. Later on, you see Pharaoh chose, so his free will was intact but God by foreknowledge says He knows that is going to happen. As Pharaoh kept choosing, choosing. In Romans, when it talks about predestination. Let us look at Pharaoh in Romans where it talks about the rejection of God. Romans 9:17, “*For the Scripture says to the Pharaoh, ‘For this very purpose I have raised you up, that I may show My power in you, and that My name may be declared in all the earth’*”. It looks like he was born just to be destroyed but when you look at the context, you find that it was from Exodus 9:16, after quite a few miracles. So, he had been choosing, choosing, choosing.

When you choose long enough to go against Him, it becomes minus two, minus two, then God says, “That is it. I have given you up”. You know, there is a stage when God gives you

up. God says, “I have given you up. Now only judgment”. At that stage, even repent, cannot, then cry.

You say, “Are there other verses”? Hebrews 6. When people resist, resist, resist God, He puts the blockage. It is not young Christians that can commit the sin, there is a sin against the Holy Spirit, but it is not committed by young Christians because God knows of people sinning in the wrong thing but God did say in Hebrews 6 (it is talking about free will again, it is all within our topic), verses 4-6, “*For it is impossible for those who were once enlightened (Number one), and have tasted the heavenly gift (Number two), and have become partakers of the Holy Spirit (Number three), and have tasted the good word of God (Number four) and the powers of the age to come (Number five), if they fall away...*”. No more chance. You see, there are a lot of roadblocks. You have got all the five things and you still do not want God, you still choose to go against God, no chance. God says, cannot renew them anymore.

*More love equals more accountability*

Remember 1 John 5:16, it says if a brother has sinned a sin unto death, you cannot even pray for him! It is not me saying, the Bible says. In 1 John 5, the same epistle that is full of love. Funny, isn't it? The whole epistle is so full of love, at the end says for this one, you cannot pray. *Huh?* Because the more love you are given, the more accountability you actually have, the chances that you have.

Now, what are we talking about? We are talking about how free will and predestination, when you bring them together, one becomes a subset, secondary level and then we talk about how, our free will and God's Will, we are yielding to God. So, in level 1, you are yielding to God and you choose God, you choose God, you choose God. When you keep choosing God, you enter into what (Acts 20:22) Paul says, “I go bound in the spirit”. How can you become in bondage to the Spirit?

Acts 20:22, “*And see, now I go bound in the spirit...*”. Now, let us look at the word “bound” in Greek, “*deo*”, a primary verb; to bind (in various applications, literary or figuratively): bind, be in bonds, knit, tie, wind. To bind, to fasten with chains, to throw into chains and even said negatively of how Satan is said to bind a woman bent together by means of a demon. So, it is used negatively and positively.

Here are the verses where the same word “*deo*” is used. Matthew 12:29, when you enter into a strong man’s house and plunder his goods, you cannot enter unless you first bind the strong man. It is used in the neutral in Matthew 14:3, Herod had laid hold of John and bound him. Can you see that if you do not go too far, that the word just means in bondage? Actually “tie together”. Paul, here, used it about the Holy Spirit, the Holy Spirit had bound him. That means he could not go anywhere. That is a wonderful place to be in and that is what I am talking. It is talking about your will in your soul.

### *Choose to do God’s Will*

Once upon a time, before sin came into the world, our will was in sync with God’s Will, but Adam was innocent, he had never known evil, he had never had such a free choice before, and so he chose sin. Christ came, died on the cross, brought us back, but we must choose Him. When we choose Him, we want to do God’s Will. What does the Lord’s prayer say in Matthew 6:9-13, “*Our Father in heaven, Hallowed be Your name. Your kingdom come. Your will be done...*”. Not my will, you know, but Your will be done.

Now, when you are always choosing God’s Will, always choosing God’s Will, always choosing God’s Will, you reach a stage where in secondary level, instead of just wireless connection, let us call it heart connection, it is a real connection (in the other vision, like a lasso connection). If I remember in the vision, in that download, the Lord shows you that you are connected to Him, and then the Lord says, because sometimes you are afraid that you will go the wrong way and all that, the Lord says you never need to be afraid anymore because now He has you. You see, He uses that. He has put something in you where you cannot, it is very hard to get out of the connection, because your free will is still intact, but it is so tightly held that you do not want to actually let go. Nor does God want to let you go. That is Acts 20:22, what Paul experienced and that is actually a privilege. He does not do that to everybody.

Remember *once saved always saved*? Once saved, you still have free choice. Can you see? The two are not opposed directly. One truth is subservient to the other, and it should be this way. You see, there is always some truth in some truth, except some truth looks wrong, correct? Now, when something looks wrong, it is because it is positioned wrongly. If like right now we decorate this place, then one of you puts a rice cooker here, and you come in. You say something is wrong with that picture. Of course, something is wrong with that

picture. So, in the same way, when a truth looks wrong, yet many people say there is some truth. If there is no truth, why so many want to believe it, correct? It also makes common sense. Where is the security in God, correct? So, there is some truth.

How you link truth is, you must put truth, like a jigsaw puzzle, in its proper place, that truth is at a second level but not everybody enters that second level because that second level is called “bound in the spirit”. You think that the Apostle Paul can ever be lost again, after Acts 20? I do not think so. He does not want to, and he has walked to a certain position, and that is the security of God, that God does seal into something. There is no way that He is going to lose you. That is called, the other name that you sing, “*El-Shaddai, El-Shaddai, El-Elyon na Adonai, Age to age You’re still the same, By the power of the name*”. Remember that one? However, then the other name called *El Qanna*, the Jealous God. You seldom see that part of God where God says, “Do not touch what is Mine”! He protects it. When the devil tries to come around it, God says, “That is mine”! They run like cockroaches. That is not really a bondage. It is a position of deep love where God owns you. Yes, there is a certain requirement. You must be willing for God to own you, like Paul says, “My life is His life”. You have got your free life, but you choose your life to be His life. Romans 12:1-2, living sacrifice.

You are owned by God when God accepts the offer of your life, the offer of your spirit, the offer of your will. Now, God does not accept it immediately. Sometimes before God accepts, God wants to test you and see whether you mean what you say. Then when you pass the test, He accepts it, the fire comes down on you, you have what we call the baptism of fire. Remember Jesus asked His disciples, “Can you be baptised with the baptism that I am baptised with”? They said, “we are able”, without knowing what it meant but when God accepts you at that level, something is locked into you, God owns you. That ownership gives Him permission that when you exercise your free will and it goes too far, He is allowed to kill you. He does not, of course, directly kill you necessarily. The circumstances are such that God takes you home rather than lose you and you become the devil’s, because when you cross the line, while still alive, you might become the devil’s property but because God owns you, He does not let that happen.

People like William Branham (died in the accident in 1965). You know why, God did not want to lose him? God rather let him die and William Branham is still saved, up there. He

went into wrong teaching, wrong doctrine, a lot of wrong things but he is still saved. He used to be a great man of God, used greatly before he went into some wrong doctrine because there is something that God owns, He is not going to let go.

We are talking about the free will, the benefits of serving God, that we understand the dynamics of free will. Can you see that? To lay out all the points because we have been telling a very good story.

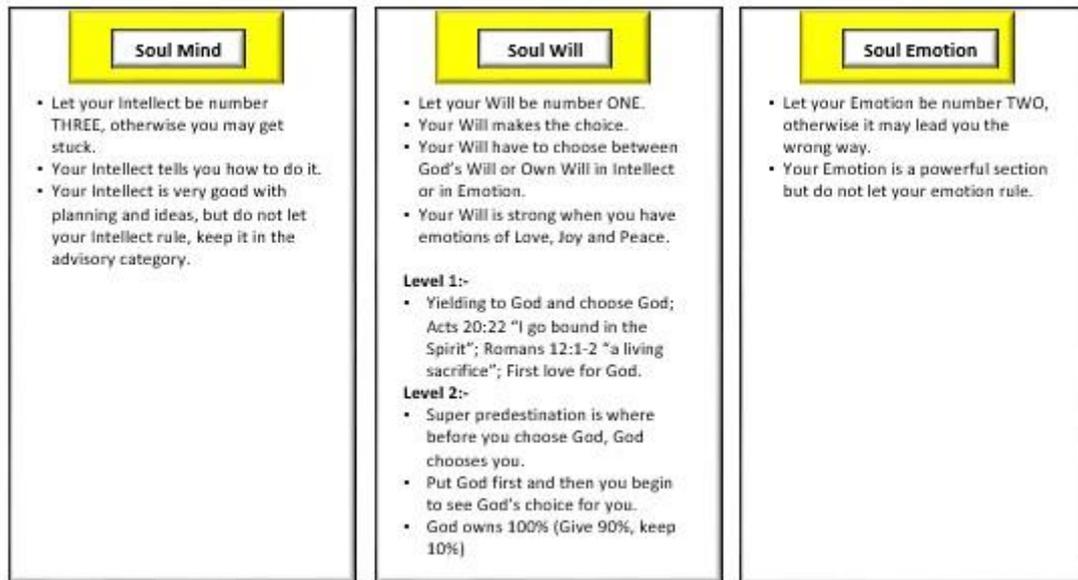


Diagram 1

First point: Between your *intellect*, *will* and *emotion*, your will must be given first place, then your emotion, then your intellect. You say, why the emotion above the intellect? Because if you do not get your emotion in line with your intellect, your emotion is too powerful to still drag you down. You must get your emotion in line but in that first point, I have one little gift point for you. There is a way to make the will number one. Since the emotion is always so powerful and the intellect sometimes understands slower, what causes Romans 7 where the will, I choose to will, and I still die? Because of the wrong emotions. There is one way to keep the will strong, emotions of love, joy and peace. When they are very strong, that means the positive and spiritual emotions, not just positive, spiritual and positive emotions fill you, your will is very much strengthened. It will push your will to number one.

Why did David ask permission from God? Because he loved God and God knows that if you have positive emotions, full of love, first love, not just love, first love, He is quite secure with you. If you are quite secure in Him, there is a lot of safety. That is why He told the Ephesian church in Revelation 2: Repent. You know why He told them to repent? You know, the

consequences of not repenting, He says I will take away the lampstand. You know why He takes away the lampstand? Because they were going to do their own things. He would rather take the light from them and there was no more His light than to keep His light there. All because they lost their first love. They were still active, they were still doing a lot of things, but first love was more important. We must remember this at all times. The message to those who do not have first love is a simple one-word message: Repent. From Jesus, correct? In Revelation 2:4-5.

*Do you have first love*

Every morning when you get up, you look at the mirror, ask the person in the mirror, “Do you have first love”? If the other person in the mirror says no, you repent. We have to repent. Do not forget, you have to repent and in the olden days, “repent” meant with sackcloth and ashes, which we do not need nowadays, but you have got to repent in your heart, which means get your heart right. Outwardly everything can be going well but if you get up in the morning, the first place to check, check whether your first love is still there. If your first love is not there, the first word is, when you go and comb your hair, brush your teeth, see your face in the mirror, repent! If we do not tell ourselves to repent, we walk around with second love, third love, fourth love, and the only call is to repentance, God is not interested in any other thing you offer. Obedience is better than sacrifice. He is not interested in what you can do and all those things. He is not interested.

So, the next time, anybody offers anything, which is why the priority is, if a rich man or a business man comes and offers to do this and that, do not take it yet, which is my standard. Of course, sometimes you do not know when people give anonymously, that is why God blesses them.

You see, here is the thing: If a person wants to give, why must he announce? Give, give *lah*. If a person wants to give, why must he tell you? What is the reason for telling you? Tell me, what is the rationale for telling you? So that you know “I am the one who gives”, correct? Let not your left hand know what your right hand is doing. We violate that principle. The only rationale for the person to tell is “I want you to know that I am the one. Next time, pray for me. Do not forget me”. Sub-conscious rationale.

No matter how rich or how poor a person is, as a leader and a pastor and every one of you as strong trainees in the 500 (yes, you are among the 12, 30, 70, 120, 500), the first thing you look for is this: Does he have first love? So, what happens if it is the person that gives \$5 million? Then you look into the eyes, if you cannot see first love, hold it first, and say: “Do you really love God”? However, if he does not love God, some pastors do not ask whether he loves God, take the money first. That guy after giving to you, he walks outside, a bus runs over him, he dies, they do not care.

Important thing is to check whether people really love God. If they do not love God, there is only one message: Repent! Only one message, do not listen to any other message, only one message and they can record it in the DVD or whatever: Repent! Do not hear any other message. Repent! Only one message. Until they repent, everything is useless. First love. When first love is there, it is beautiful.

Jesus in the Bible shows He was not interested in money. He was interested in people’s hearts, correct? Why should the modern church be interested in money first rather than the heart first? Get their hearts right. Help people to love God first. They say, “Keep the money first. Make sure you love God”. Are you doing it really because of the love for God? Love God first.

### *Get first love locked*

Now, here is the first point: The battle between *Soul Mind* (soul intellect) and *Soul Emotion* and *Soul Will*. If you have got first love locked, 100% your will, it will be strong. Nothing can go against that. Nothing can go against that will to do God’s will. People are willing to die because they love God. Their will is so strong. Now, that is the secret of a strong will, strong love. The strong will is not because the will is strong; the strong will is because the strong will is supported by the spiritual and positive emotions of love, that is why it is so strong. Strong love makes a strong will. That is your bonus point. We are still in point 1, you know. I have summarised it. My summary has taken so long. I will throw in one more bonus point that will make you sigh for some time.

The second point that I actually touched on is how, if you keep yielding your will to God, you will reach a stage where what I call when you are bound in Christ, your will is bound in Him, you become a bond servant. Here is the bonus point. You will reach the point where “super

predestination” works because I do not have the vocabulary for that. You say, “What do you mean”? Because if I call it second-level predestination, it does not sound so nice, right? So, I use the word “super predestination”. Now I need to support it with scriptures. Super predestination is where before you choose, God chooses for you. You know, many times you have to choose. For instance, did Adam have a choice of a life partner? He did. Remember what was he doing with all the animals? Spending time with the animals but the animals got his companionship.

### *Super predestination*

Do not forget, nowadays people are lone rangers, but you say lone ranger with Tonto is lone ranger with seven cats, lone ranger with two dogs, right? You have got lone rangers today. Animals can keep people company. It has not come to Singapore yet. We were in Korea last week. They have come up with a lot of new things. When we walked in Myeong-dong market, which is right in the city, there were these people dressed up as dogs, cats and animal mascots but, because there were so many of them, one or two is okay, I kept seeing a lot of dogs around. You know, that guy was funny and all those things. Then I asked my future daughter-in-law who is a Korean, “Why all these animals”? Because on my last trip, about a year ago, they were not there. You know what she said? “*Oh*, they have this restaurant where you can go in and eat, and not just bring your pets, there are pets there for you to pet”. I said, “*Wah*, they have run out of attractions”. Now eat and pet animals at the same time. That is the attraction because, so few people have pets, they can go there and hug a pet, then order the food. I do not know, maybe somebody needed to feed his pets, and so found a way to feed his pets because when you order food, one bowl for you, one for this pet. There are a few of those places now. There is one for cats, one for dogs, *wah*, wait till you get one for polar bears, one for penguins, I do not know, but that is something new in Korea. Now that I say it, Singaporeans are bound to do it.

So, remember God saw that there was no helpmate equal to Adam. No dogs could replace the woman. No animals could replace the woman whom God created. When the woman was created, he had got only one choice compatible to him because it was the choice God made for him. Did you see that? If it is God’s choice for you, sure, you can trust God. That is an example of God choosing.

There are many things that God chooses for us. You can actually choose where you want to live, which is okay. Or you can ask God for opinion. You say, “Why not God just tell me”? Because God does not want to be pushy. You want a God that tells you, for your hairstyle, what colour you must have? You want a God like that? Of course not. If you actually ask God, He sometimes does have an opinion. Sometimes He leaves it as you are, sometimes He does tell you. He gives the best advice. People do not ask God for opinion though.

At the second level, still at point two, is where your will is bound to God’s Will. There is a blessing. The blessing is when God chooses for you and then after God chooses for you, God can even say: “I have chosen this for you. I will lead you to that place. This is My choice that I have chosen for you”. When the Israelites came out from Egypt, the land of Canaan was already chosen for them because four hundred years ago, that is how strong it was, God chose for them. Remember when God brought them out, who did God quote? “I am the God of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob”. However, Abraham was the key because one man had chosen God, he created a current of God’s blessings that lasted four hundred years and God remembered: “Because of the promise I have made, I have chosen this place for you.” He brings His blessings. So, when God chooses something for you, it is wonderful and beautiful.

If you want to enter into that level, put God first and then you begin to see God’s choice for you and sometimes He chooses before you know how to choose. He chooses before you even come to the place to choose. That is how advanced He is. Of course, He knows all things and that is always the best – to accept God’s choice but it is very hard for some humans, because you know why, instead of level two, they are still here, and they will do the minimum in God.

You should always see that God does not just own 10%. You see, many people give tithes of 10%, they own 90%, that is a level one person. Some people are not even level one, I understand. Level two – God owns 100%. He gives me the privilege to take 10% to put into His house and the 90% I am a steward, I do not own it, He lets me enjoy it and use it in the way He wants. It is different. God owns 100%, He takes 10% to use in His house, and of course any offering is of free will, but He lets me use the rest of it. I always tell people this goal: When you start, whatever you need, just do the basic but one day, which is my message for all the millionaires, billionaires: Do the opposite, keep 10%, give 90% because you do not need it anymore and you will have riches in heaven.

We have got only about one generation less, one generation is one hundred years, you have got only half a generation left on this earth, if you do not give to God for use today, the Antichrist and the devil will use it. You are not going to leave behind, you thought you are going to leave behind to your grandchildren and great-grandchildren. There is no more, after five decades, all finished! By all means, be a good steward, take care of your home, your family, loved ones, plan for them and all those things but I am not talking to the normal middle-class people alone or upper middle-class, I am talking to really those who have more than sufficient, and who are just sitting and just creating more and more. The message is the same: Learn to give to God. Like Jesus said to the young man, “Come and follow Me”. In the sermon on the Mount – you will have riches in heaven. You will be known for that in this end time.

## Chapter 19...

### Four Phases of Will

We realise that there are the *Spirit*, the *Soul* and the *Body* and each has its counterpart. Instead of naming it differently (like Watchman Nee did in *The Spiritual Man* where some of these things he named as *Intuition*, *Communion* and *Conscience*), we call the *Conscience* as *Spirit Emotion*, the *Intuition* as *Spirit Mind* and the *Communion* (the choice to be in God) as *Spirit Will*.

Now, we have been focusing on the area of the *Soul*. You have the *Spirit*, the *Soul* and the *Body*, right? Then within the *Soul*, you have the *Emotions*, the *Mind* (Intellect) and the *Will*. If I take out the will temporarily, and I ask, that if the emotion fights with the intellect, who will win? The emotion will win, and you reckon that is the safe answer and is that supported by the Bible? You see, everything you believe must have some Bible references or at least some support from the Bible and you do have some support from the Bible.

Let us take an intellectual man. Let us take King Solomon. He lived, you know, a reasonable life. Was he beaten by his emotions or did his intellect win in the end? His emotions, correct? His life was beaten by his emotions and you notice the book of Ecclesiastes, that is by Solomon, more or less. He was the author of two books: Ecclesiastes and The Song of Solomon, which is an emotional book because none of you can say that The Song of Solomon is an intellectual book. It is of course an allegory of the love between a man and a woman, and it points to the love between Jesus and the Bride. So, it prophetically points to Jesus but there is also a teaching inside of a relationship between husband and wife, and that one cannot be a book based on intellect. It definitely is a book full of emotions, about the Shulamite woman and King Solomon. Then Ecclesiastes is about a wise man looking at the world, a highly observant man, with a great intellect, looking at the whole world, looking at life, looking at activities, looking at purposes, looking at hidden meanings and it is a very depressing book.

If you do not have Jesus, you just have to meditate on Ecclesiastes, it is a horrible book to just meditate on. Thank God, it is just in the Old Testament, although it does point to the need

for Christ. I mean, who wants to meditate on the verse: “*Vanity of vanities, all is vanity*”? That is the main song that comes out from the book – *Vanity of vanities, all is vanity*. It is like a man who has given up on life, who has given up enjoying life, and it is just like chewing on *buah kana*, or chewing on sour things. You know, life is so sour. It is like a book written by a man who has tasted so much sorrow and sourness of life, that he says everything goes to vanity, before you start, you already say that everything is vanity, before no one can enjoy anything anymore. So, that book was written by an intellect, but it does have an emotional influence – so Solomon is a key example of that, of how an intellectual person is turned away by emotions.

You do have some areas of the Scripture, plus you have got a lot of other scriptures, where there is a battle that is going on between the two and there are many other stories, but we have two stories between the emotion and the intellect and that is enough. Then I add the will and remove the intellect. I say: If the emotion and the will fight, who wins?

In Psalms, David always chose to – *Bless the LORD, O my soul* – so spiritually is 100% will to the Spirit of God. Supposed to be 100%. Now, the love of God will be in the *Spirit Emotion* section. So, we isolate it and do not take it in yet. Of course, whenever God’s life, God’s emotion comes in, always win. Let us take that out because that is too powerful to consider for the soul.

### *The naked soul*

The naked soul. Just like nowadays you have got naked DSL, you all know what it means, right? Naked DSL is when you buy the data plan and you do not have an actual analogue line, your phone line goes to data: digital line. The same data is how your phone is going to work. It does not need its own special line: analogue line. So that is naked DSL.

Let us have the soul naked by itself. Do not put the spirit in yet because if you put the spirit in, everything *champo champo, champo*, then I teach *rojak*, I do not know which part the mango is, which part is the pineapple, which part is the jambu, although I do not see jambu in your *rojak* here. Those of you who are wondering what in the world he is talking about, it is an Asian salad that is from Malaysia or Indonesia, there is a mixture of, supposed to be a mixture, definitely pineapple must be in, cucumber must be in, turnip must be in, and a bit of *tofu* will be in. Okay, let us leave it, the basic elements are there. They chop the ingredients

into tiny little bite pieces, and then they mix prawn paste with crushed peanuts into a sauce, mix it together, that is a dish that the Malays call *rojak*. So, when we say things are mixed up, we use the term “*rojak*”.

Now, we cannot have *rojak* in this thing here, we have got to strip it off carefully, take the soul out by itself and just look at the three elements that are mixed together. In the three elements that are mixed together, the intellect, the emotion and the will, we have already solved the problem between the emotion and the intellect, but do you know that even when we solve the problem, many people still are not putting into practice what they have learned? Many people are not putting into practice what they have learned and do not look so innocent. If indeed the intellect will lose in the battle to the emotion, every day when you wake up, which is more important, your feelings or your thoughts?

Every day when you wake up, if really the emotion will always win over the intellect, when you get up, leaving aside the will first, which is the part you must support first? If your emotions are wrong, they will pull your thoughts along that way. *Ah*, now you begin to put into practice what you have learned. So, the first thing when you get up in the morning is not trying to get your thoughts together. You will always be thinking anyway.

#### *When emotions fight with intellect*

When emotions fight with intellect, which means positive or negative emotions, godly or ungodly emotions, emotions always win. For that, you can give a percentage, say 100%. I have never known when intellect and emotions fight, intellect has ever won. Never. Even people who say they are highly intellectual and they do not have emotions, when they come to the crux of things, they are still affected by emotions. A high example is one of the wisest men in the Bible, Solomon. I would say that David was a reasonably smart man, but still he made mistakes based on emotions. So, our point is not that of negative emotions, our point is that positive and negative emotions will always win. In other words, whether they be good thoughts or bad thoughts, good emotions or bad emotions, when they fight, emotions always win. You can cross it, and you can say that good emotions versus bad thoughts, good emotions will win. Then you put negative emotions versus good thoughts, negative emotions still win. Negative emotions versus bad thoughts, also negative emotions win. So, on both counts, emotions win, and we can say it is 100%.

Here is where I say we have not put into practice. If it is true, then every day when you wake up, the first thing to do is to check your emotions. Obviously, if you do not check that, you are thinking, thinking, thinking, your emotions stir up something negative or positive, but let us say negative, you will be dragged along. Can you see that?

The first thing when you get up every day is to feel good. Yes, that is what we all forget but, in a rush, to work, in a rush to do things, in a rush to take care of the baby, in a rush to do your daily stuff, the most important thing is you did not make yourself feel good. You did not check on your emotions. Your emotions did not do devotion. Your mind did the devotion, but your emotions did not. Can you see that?

Putting into practice means that when you get up, it is more important to sing than to read. I am very practical because I know you are going to ask me, “How *ah*, Pastor”? When you sing, you are not trying to be intellectual. When you hum, you are not trying to be intellectual. That is why the Bible says be filled with the Spirit. We have to get our emotions into the emotions of the Spirit of God. So, every morning when you get up, although some of you could not help, because your thoughts are all over the place, you think: “*Wah*, if I get my Bible and read it, I will be all right; I had a miserable night last night”. *Oh*, we had a good night last night also. I am not talking about reality, I am talking about a hypothetical case. Let us say, you get up and you had a miserable night, you are trying to get up and you are trying to do something, wait, hold it there. How did the Bible okay emotions? Remember the book of Psalms? It says in Colossians 3:16, “*Let the word of Christ dwell in you richly in all wisdom, teaching and admonishing one another in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing with grace in your hearts to the Lord*”. It says in Ephesians 5:18-19, “... *but be filled with the Spirit, speaking to one another in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing and making melody in your heart...*”.

So, the first thing that you do when you wake up in the morning is like what David did in the morning, he sang in one of his psalms, *I will look up to the Lord*. In the morning, he sang to the Lord. Now, it does not matter whether your singing is good or not, you are singing to the Lord. Just do not sing in the church choir but we have to have a certain standard kind of thing. When you get up is the time to worship the Lord, worshipping, singing, dancing if you want. Some people get up dancing. You say, “Do people do that”? Smith Wigglesworth, once in a blue moon, when he got up, he probably did that. It is to get your emotions tuned. You

forget that. You think that when you get up, *oh*, quickly must read one chapter of Bible. Who told you that? On what basis are you taught that? Which follow-up system tells you that? Which Bible verse tells you to do that? In fact, there are more Bible verses that tell you when you get up, sing and worship. I do not de-emphasise the importance of the Word, but I say the Word is important, but the Word comes. Think about how much Word you can absorb.

Some of you will be saying, “You know, Pastor, I read my Bible, one chapter already takes me 15 minutes. If it happens to be Psalm 119, that takes me about half-an-hour. It is the longest chapter in the Bible. Then you want me to add worship *ah*”? Yes, why not? I did not say that you have to sing a full worship like we do on Sunday, which is usually an hour. One song can change you, half a song can change you, just the chorus part. Just something to “help you to sense your spiritual emotion” and by singing just one song, one line, and you contact your emotions, that is all it needs. Once you get used to it, you can do it with one line. “*Wah*, so fast, one-line song”? No, there is no one-line song but all you have to do is to get up in the morning and say with all your heart, “I love you, Father, and I want to love You, and I choose to love You because You are good”.

#### *Contact your emotions*

Life can be horrible, people can be horrible, the world can be miserable, and you get up in the morning, there is a fresh attack somewhere, somewhere in the newspaper headlines, but “You are still so good, Father, and I still love You”. You need not sing a song. You can even say words to yourself or say things to yourself. Contact your emotions, shake hands with your emotions and then read the Bible, do your devotion, do your other things. Can you see the point? Practical application of a spiritual point. That is why a lot of Christians do not have a victorious Christian life. You know the problem with Christianity?

We do not have enough happy Christians. Who is this wonderful lady? The book started as “By an Unknown Christian”, *The Christian’s Secret of a Happy Life* by An Unknown Christian. Later they knew it was by Hannah Whitall Smith. Then in a later publication, they put her name in but when she wrote that book, she purposely wrote “By an Unknown Christian”. You will see that if you find the early edition and then in later editions, they put her name back because if you go to a book store, no one will ask, “Can I have that book by the unknown Christian”? All Christians are unknown until they write. Then they put in her name “Hannah Whitall Smith”. When she wrote that book, it was a top seller. The happy

Christian life. People want to be happy, people need to be happy and do not forget, the last sermon the Lord gave was, My peace I give to you, My love I give to you, My joy I give to you. It looks like He gave but no one was receiving. So, we need that joy.

I had been through the follow-up system, Will Power System, Navigators Topical Memory System, Campus Crusade for Christ System and I had seen all these follow-up systems. None of them tells me: Get up in the morning and be happy. All of them tell me; get up in the morning, must read, must do, must this, must that. Already looking at that, you are already miserable. No wonder your Christian life is defeated before you start. You thought you could win with your mind – mental power – your mind, your thoughts. No, no, no, we have already agreed that it is a fact that emotions always win. You see, we de-emphasise emotions in a lot of Christianity. Our Christianity has become a dry, stale, intellectual thing, so that most of the facts that people have of Christianity is debate over theology or methodology but when Christians come together and just love the Lord and worship, that is when they can unite together. Sometimes you cannot unite their minds because they cannot see eye to eye but then, because they love Jesus, they can say, let us forget about the differences, let us just worship and love Jesus, they can unite.

It is important in that area, that if you have never learned this, you should change your follow-up system. Add to this fact that we must teach Christians, especially when they are freshly born again, how to start their day with God. Do not start trying to renew their minds. Start with tapping upon the emotions of the Spirit, contact the emotions and then when you are happy, full of joy, full of peace, and contact with the love of God, you know you have it when Philippians 4:7 takes place, the peace of God will garrison your heart and mind. I tell you, that whole day, this is what is going to happen. You might have a little bit of time to read the Bible, but throughout the day, the Bible will keep coming to your mind. Throughout the day, you would like to refer to certain things in the Bible, because when your emotion wins, it will lead your mind. So, that settles it. Okay, practical application.

#### *When emotion fights the intellect*

When the emotion fights against the intellect, we are finding some place here where there is something stronger than the gorilla. Now, if there is something stronger than the emotion, then that is also important, correct? We are trying to determine what is the percentage.

Sometimes it does not win. What is affecting the percentage? You did not just have emotions and intellect, you also have will and the will has a chance of overpowering the emotion.

Now, let us look at some Bible stories and verses where the will get conquered. You see, we know that the will is supposed to win, but if it is not winning all the time, we need to look at why it is not winning because if the Bible shows us why it is not winning, then it might relate to us and the will can win. Let us look at 1 Corinthians 14:14-15, *“For if I pray in a tongue, my spirit prays, but my understanding is unfruitful. What is the conclusion then? I will pray with the spirit, and I will also pray with the understanding. I will sing with the spirit, and I will also sing with the understanding”*. That is the good part.

Now, many of you now have got electronic Bibles Can you try to touch on the word “will” and try to get the Greek word out? You will not find it because it is not there. It is not inside. It is not in the Greek. It was the addition by the translators in our English formatting of sentences. The original Greek actually says, *“What is the conclusion then? I pray with the spirit, and I also pray with the understanding. I sing with the spirit, and I also sing with the understanding”*. There’s no “will” inside.

You say, *“Wah, our strongest supportive verse does not have a verse”*. So, now you have got a theological problem, a theology without a verse. You need verses to support a theology. Greek words, Greek verses, Greek study, exegesis to support your theology. The word “will” is not in the Greek. You have a problem. It was added in the English translation to smoothen the way we speak English because in English we do not say “I pray with the spirit”, we say “I will pray” but the “will” is not inside. That is a big problem theologically. It is just like suddenly you knock the foundation of the building. So, can you give me verses that support the will? No verses, no theology. Theology is not allowed without scripture and verse in the Bible. Okay, interesting conundrum.

You need a super-strong verse for a super-strong conclusion. We are talking about a beating here, because the emotion has beaten the intellect. So, now we are looking at the gold medal and the silver medal. The will and the emotion are fighting now for the finals, who is going to be Number one and you might say that the will is Number one. On what basis? I know you are saying it and we are saying it from our experience, but our experience cannot build a theology. People have built a theology based on experiences and they have gone astray. You

need scriptures to build a theology. So, can you see that there are a lot of complex issues here? You see, you cannot find a verse. You can find a verse that God energises the will from Philippians 2.

Philippians 2:13, this is an interesting verse, quite a powerful verse actually, but it is more the will of the spirit. We have to read from verse 12, *“Therefore, my beloved, as you have always obeyed, not as in my presence only, but now much more in my absence, work out your own salvation with fear and trembling; for it is God who works in you both to will and to do for His good pleasure”*. The word “His” is not inside, *both to will and to do for His good pleasure* and that one when you press the word “will”, you have an actual word “*thelo*”. You see the word “*thelo*” here, that is an actual word. That can support some area of Theology but how it supports, and here is where we need to study it.

Before we study the word “*thelo*”, let me look at some words and it is the word “willing” that you need to look at. When you look at the word “willing”, you will have verses where “willing” appears several times. We are looking at the New Testament first. Let us look at the clearer one, where Jesus was in Gethsemane, in Matthew 26. This is the one, it happens in all the different gospels, but here Jesus says in Matthew 26:41, *“Watch and pray, lest you enter into temptation. The spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak”*. He says *the spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak*. Is this a good verse? Except that the spirit wills but something else is fighting the spirit, the flesh part. I wonder if the flesh might win.

In the disciples’ lives, when they were praying, Jesus said, “Could you not watch with Me one hour”? The spirit is willing. They said, “I will”, fell asleep. So, I thought you just said that the will is stronger than the emotion? In this case, it is opposite. The will lost. *Ting!* Round one! At least in our bringing out the verses, let us give round one to the flesh. The will lost. There, you were saying “sometimes”. Sometimes hallelujah, sometimes praise the Lord. Sometimes you are so miserable, you are only singing. So, the will lost in this case. Now, He says *the spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak*. Of course, Jesus’ will always win but there are more verses in the New Testament. Let me give a case where the will wins.

In 2 Corinthians 8:3 it says, *“For I bear witness that according to their ability, yes, and beyond their ability, they were freely willing”*. Paul is talking about the Macedonian Christians. Do not forget the background. In verse 2, they were already suffering emotionally.

Look – *great trial of affliction* – that is an emotional thing but in *their deep poverty*, their emotions were still filled with joy, “... *the abundance of their joy and their deep poverty...*”. In spite of how poor they were, in spite of how persecuted they were, in spite of how much light that they had, Paul says he bears witness that they did something – they were able to do something, and they did it beyond their ability because they were freely willing. So, their will won. That is *ting!* Round two! The will beats everything else, it beats poverty, it beats circumstances, it beats environment, it beats persecution, it says “I still choose to give” (when they had none).

Now, they were not just poor, the Greek word says, “deep poverty”. Deep poverty means when you dig deep into your pocket, come out still empty. You have got to look around for any misplaced coins in your house. That will be deep poverty because if you still have it, you still have got some money and they were able and willing to give. That is a great testimony of their will. So round two so the will wins.

Now, if I bring round three, it might be a deciding match. However, before I bring round 3, let me examine. You see, sometimes you can conclude certain things by your experience, but your conclusion is wrong, because all theologies must be based on scriptures. I give a few examples of wrong theologies.

Just because people fall under the power of the Holy Spirit, it does not mean that those who do not fall under the power have got something wrong. In the early days of people falling under the power, there was a group of people who interpreted things based on experiences, without checking the Bible on what the Bible says about falling under the power. So, the interpretation is that, especially those who like people to fall under the power, and there were a lot of people falling under the power. Remember, the olden day evangelists did not like that, they would rather have the miracles than people just falling but it is okay to fall. So, what is the Biblical position? Some people interpreted (in the early Charismatic Movement) that if people do not fall under the power, they are resistant. That means if you do not fall, something is wrong; if you fall, it is okay. Then another interpretation came down the line and they interpreted: No, no, no, it is because you have got something wrong and God wants to deal with it, that is why you fall; it is those who do not fall, then it is all right. Especially, do you notice this, a lot of ministers, pastors, all these highly intellectuals, they do not fall. Of course, they will come out with a theology that falling is worse than standing. They have got

to support themselves and give themselves a reason not to fall. They never asked the question: What says the Bible?

When you read the Bible: Daniel fell under the power. The first falling in the Bible was in Genesis when Adam fell under the power when God operated on him. So, falling under the power is okay but wait, in John 18, Judas and the bad guys also fell under the power. You have a guy who fell under the power, then became a good guy. He was a bad guy, struck by God, fell under the power, woke up a good guy, Acts 9, Saul became Paul.

### *The degree of God's presence*

So, the conclusion is this, that falling under the power has nothing to do with the person. It has to do more with things, like the degree of God's presence, the side effect of God's presence. There are two differentials that are taking place. One is the differential of God's power – more power, even the strongest of us will still fall. So, there is a differential of power. Then there is a differential of how power affects people. Some people fall easily. Some do not fall so easily because of their different make-up of different things. That will affect this differential. Can you see? You cannot actually measure it because you have got two things that are differing and that is just the truth. It is a phenomenon. It just happens. When it happens, you just thank God. Should a person fall under the power, we thank God and let God do His work. If a person is not falling under the power, that is also fine.

A prime example, in the same meeting everybody is allowed to react differently. Some types of healing will not get a person to fall, some types will. Different types of impartations. It depends. I am sure it depends on where you are and the level of God's power. So, there are two differentials that affect the thing. The good theology, based on the Bible, says it is a phenomenon. You cannot interpret goodness or badness or rightness or wrongness by the fall. Otherwise it is very confusing if you have got two opposing theologies. So, you say: one, fall is good; one, stand is good. Then do not know what to do. The next time you pray at 45° to please both sides. That would be horrible. That is how an incorrect theology comes about, no scripture.

As I come to teach, I am also teaching you how to reason, how to argue, how to look at things critically from the Bible, so that we will not be tossed to and fro by every wind of doctrine. Every revival needs a good theology to support it, otherwise it goes astray, no matter how

great the revival is. I have seen it happen over and over again. You know how cults form? People who interpret the Bible in their own way, without allowing the Bible's interpretation to come out without prejudice.

Then they come to demonology people. These demonology people say, "Oh, (because they speak from their experience) when I first went out, you know, to cast out the demons, to do all this thing, warfare, warfare...", a lot of bad things happened to them. So, because of their experience, they interpret, "Wah, whenever you go to do warfare, sure Satan will counter-attack". They developed a theology called "Satan's Counter-attack" and Satan's counter-attack is: they are sure to be attacked. Then when something bad happens when they do those things, they say it is because Satan counter-attacks. That is where I corrected them. We do not have many theologians on the opposite side. I stood on the other side and I said, "Look, it did not happen to Jesus, it did not happen to the disciples, it did not happen to the people in the Bible, why should it happen now"? So, instead of the theology of counter-attack, I came out with a different theology, the theology of the immunity. You do whatever you want, immunity. Also, I have scriptures for you.

Luke 10:19 said you shall tread on serpents and scorpions and they shall by no means hurt you. Do you understand the words "by no means"? That means all Satan's counter-attacks are ineffective. They shall by no means hurt you. What about Psalm 91:7, "*A thousand may fall at your side, And ten thousand at your right hand; But it shall not come near you*"?

#### *Only the Word will win*

I developed a theology. I challenged those people because I was also pastoring a church. I did not want the wrong teaching to come into the church and there was a whole group of people going into that kind of thing. I said, "I do not believe it because it is non-Biblical". They said, "You watch out, watch out". I said, "No, you do not have to watch out; follow the Bible, meditate on the word". I said, "You are developing your theology based on experience whereas I am developing my theology based on the Word of God". The Word will always win. You cannot last; that kind of thing will not last; only the Word will win.

It is just like, what does *rojak* taste like? You say *rojak* tastes like *rojak*. Now, if I ask what is *rojak*, you could give me an intellectual answer. The intellectual answer is this: *Rojak* is an Asian concoction or is a dessert dish that is made up of fruits (like pineapple) and vegetables

(like turnip, cucumber) with the addition of shrimp paste, chilly and peanuts that are crushed and sometimes *rojak* has slightly additional things. Like in Penang, they add in *jambu ayer* (which is a type of Asian fruit) and mango or cuttlefish or fried dough fritters, etc. So, that tells you what is *rojak*, but it is a pure intellectual *rojak*.

If I ask what is *rojak*, you could say, “*Wah, rojak*, very nice taste! It is the taste that you get when you eat a good prawn paste with a nice tinge of sweetness from the pineapple, a crunchy taste from the turnip and some vegetables thrown in, and the crunchy mixture in your mouth, which is sweetness from some of the fruits, sourness from some of the fruits, and a bit of sugar that they add to the thing and the peanut taste, *arrhh*, it is a mixture of taste! That is an emotional definition, right?”

### *Two parts of the will*

What is the will? There are two parts of the will one part is the self-will; the other part is the Spirit-will. That is the spiritual definition. What does the will feel like? Now, let us look at it. We know there is the will of God. The will of God is the desire of God. So, can you say, okay, let us take it one step at a time. Can you say that desire and will are equal? No. So, the reason why you do not put them equal is because the desire can be from the emotion, correct?

A choice is between two things. By removing the word “choosing” as to choose or not to choose, that is a choice but for a choice, you need two things placed before you, and then you choose. More than that, the word “choice” is also not sufficient. Can you see? This is where the Bible needs to correct our experiences and I am helping you to think through all these things very importantly. It is to show you some very important things.

Now, let us look at how the Bible defines the will. The Bible is the best dictionary. This is where the Bible needs to teach us and the way to get it, there is a way. Find the Bible word for “will”, “*thelo*”. We find it in Philippians 2, then theology needs to refine some of the things that we believe. Philippians 2, looking at verse 13, “... *it is God who works in you both to will...*”. The word “will” is “*thelo*”.

In the Concordance, select on G2309, and you have all the translations of the word “*thelo*” come up. The first one that comes up is actually Matthew 1:19, “*Then Joseph her husband, being a just man, and not wanting (is the word “wanting”) to make her a public example, was*

*mind*ed to put her away secretly”. So, the word “will” has been translated as “want” which also sounds like “desire”. It is the word “want” or “wanting”, that’s in Matthew 1:19 but it relates to the will. We know that is the early story of Joseph and Mary.

Then, there is another verse. This is Matthew 2:18 (a prophecy), “*A voice was heard in Ramah, Lamentation, weeping, and great mourning, Rachel weeping for her children, Refusing to be comforted* (It is coloured there because the word “refusing” is the same word “*thelo*”. In other words, you could have said – *Rachel weeping for her children, Wanting to be comforted* – it says *thelo*), *Because they are no more*”. Strange translation. I have got to look deeper at that but at least they use the word “refusing” like a choice or choosing or not choosing to be comforted. I need to look deeper at that one.

Let us look at another verse. It is an interesting thing when you look at this one. *Ah*, I know why now. Okay, do not worry about the word. It is “*ou thelo*”. The original word is “*ou thelo*” – means not wanting, translated as not wanting. The word “*ou*” in Greek negates it, cancels it. So, the actual Greek word here is “*ou thelo*” (not wanting). It is actually – *Wanting not to be comforted*. The “*ou*” is there, not just “*thelo*”. It is “*thelo ou*” or “*ou thelo*” – *Wanting not to be comforted*. You still can put the word “wanting” inside.

Next verse. Matthew 5:40, “*If anyone wants to sue you and take away your tunic, let him have your cloak also.*”, “wants”. We are not going to look at every word, but just quickly run through. Most of the time, it is translated as “want” like in Matthew 5:42 and Matthew 7:12. Then in Mark 1:40, it is translated in a continuous tense, “*If You are willing, You can make me clean*”, that is the word “*thelo*” inside, very clear.

Let us see if there is any other translation. Okay, Luke 1:62, “*So they made signs to his father—* (This is the story of Zacharias who could not talk when John was born, so they made signs to him as to what would he like the child to be called, and he asked for a writing tablet and wrote “John”) *what he would* (or he wanted to) *have him called*”. You can easily put the word “desired” to call him. Can you see that you can put the word “desired” inside? In every verse where you have the word “want”, you can put the word “desire”, it would not have been wrong.

It has been translated as “desires” in Luke 5:39, “*And no one, having drunk old wine, immediately desires new...*”. That one definitely is a “desire”. Remember, we are not building a theology based on one word; we are building a theology based on every single verse where the word “*thelo*” comes in. There are more than enough verses to establish a good theology, hundreds of verses. It is translated as “want”, “desire”, “willing”. Here is the word “desires”. Now, since there is “desires” here, the problem is in our English words that are sometimes cross-meaning, because here the word “desires” are obviously the word “*thelo*” in Luke 5:39.

I know a place where the word “desire” comes out and is not necessarily the same. Mark 11:23-24, “... *whoever says to this mountain, ‘Be removed and be cast into the sea,’ and does not doubt in his heart, but believes that those things he says will be done, he will have whatever he says. Therefore I say to you, whatever things you ask...*”, which in the King James Version – *What things soever ye desire*. Remember KJV? This is New King James. KJV says, *What things soever ye desire*, so something has happened in the upgrade from KJV to NKJ. The word “desire” is no more used for “asking” alone, they just put the word “ask”. The word “desire” is now closer to the word “*thelo*”.

Now, let us go back to the word “*thelo*”. It is in Luke 5:39 that we read just now, remember? *And no one, having drunk old wine, immediately desires new; for he says, ‘The old is better’*. That looks very emotional, doesn’t it? Look at the translations. The word “desire” and the word “want” make the will very close to the emotion. Too close for our comfort. Too close for your comfort, that is why you were almost rebelling when you said – Is the word “desire” equal to the word “will”? You see, but the Bible is pointing some things to us.

In Luke 8:20, “*And it was told Him by some, who said, ‘Your mother and Your brothers are standing outside, desiring to see You’*”. They want to see You. If you put the word, They “will” to see You – doesn’t carry it, correct? What do you mean, they will to see me? *Wah*, they are challenging my will. No, *desiring (thelo) to see You*. You see, our understanding of the word “will” is more an intellectual-based will. The Bible understanding of the word “will” (*thelo*) is more an emotional will, because it uses the word “desire”. You cannot translate – *Your mother and Your brothers are standing outside, choosing to see You*. Or, *Your mother and Your brothers are standing outside, willing to see You*. No, no, *desiring to see You; wanting to see You*. That means You still make a choice, dear Lord Jesus. That is an interesting translation there is “desiring”.

In Luke 9:23-24, *“Then He said to them all, ‘If anyone desires to come after Me... (It is not “If anyone wills to come after Me”) For whoever desires...”*. Same Greek word, *“thelo”*. This is good teaching, good theology, good analysis, cannot run away from it. We have laid down our prejudices. This is how a good theology is done, brethren. You lay down your own prejudices, you lay down your own conclusion, let the Bible correct you, let the Bible verses challenge you. If the Bible verses challenge my theology, it is my theology that needs to change, not the Bible’s. Again, the word “want” happens in Luke 9:54.

The word “desire” in Luke 10:24, *“for I tell you that many prophets and kings have desired to see...”*. Hey, that *thelo* looks like the emotion. It looks too much like the emotion now. Wait, do not jump to conclusion, just keep reading without any bias or prejudice.

Here is a strong one. Luke 13:31, *“On that very day some Pharisees came, saying to Him, ‘Get out and depart from here, for Herod wants to kill You’”*. Wah, this one has got a lot of emotion, *Herod wants to kill You*. Jesus was not afraid, He said, (verse 32) *“Go, tell that fox...”*. Wah, the way they spoke, it is like Herod was the kingpin or the gorilla or the biggest gangster in the world or the biggest rogue king in the world, who wanted to slaughter Jesus and Jesus said he was just a fox, *tell that fox*. Our Lord Jesus Christ was really brave. *“Herod wants to kill You,”* they said, and He said, *“Go, tell that fox”*. Definitely, a lot of emotions behind this “will” here, *Herod wants to kill You*.

Let us see where that is taking us. It has also been translated as “intending”. Luke 14:28, *“For which of you, intending to build a tower...”*. Huh, “intending” is like a desire also. The intent of your heart: your motivation. The word “will” covers motivation, because “intention” in our English definition covers motivation. The intent (what you intend to do), so that is the same Greek word *“thelo”*. Same Greek word. We have not run that far. It is the English that is trying to express one Greek word.

Some more, “desire” appears again in Luke 20:46-47, *“Beware of the scribes, who desire to go around in long robes, love greetings in the marketplaces, the best seats in the synagogues, and the best places at feasts, who devour widows’ houses, and for a pretense make long prayers. These will receive greater condemnation”*. Look, their desire, it looks like their emotion because all these fit their emotion, long robes, love greetings, love the best seats, love the best places. Look, this is their will working.

Now, there is a lot going on here and there is no end to some more things. I could go on verse after verse, but here is the conclusion. It is very hard to translate the word “*thelo*”. So, many English words, intend, desire, want, willing. Can you see, even the English language struggles to translate one simple Greek word with four letters (*theta, epsilon, lambda, omega*), *thelo*? Four little Greek letters, so hard to translate.

### *What exactly is the will*

What exactly is the will? I challenge you. If you look at every single verse in the Bible where the word “*thelo*” occurs, you have to admit this conclusion. The will is strongly linked to the emotion, has never been separated from it in any way. *Woah*, that tells me something. That means, if there is an emotion, the will is the steering wheel of the emotion. It is locked in step with the emotion. It is only in our English psychological make-up and in our intellectual upbringing that we have shot the word “will” and pulled it out to exist by itself. The will has been strongly tied to some part of us that seems to be linked to our emotion, but yet it is an entity by itself.

You see, many of us have memorised Watchman Nee’s chart, this is the *Will*, this is the *Emotions*, this is the *Mind* (Intellect). Chop, chop, chop, mix it altogether, I still can taste the difference between the pineapple and the jambu but, yet the Bible says there is a link that is still there. There is a linkage, that it always has the link. It looks like the word “will” will carry some area of emotions.

Wait, there are some more here. 2 Corinthians 8. I study every verse by the way, before I teach it, so you can go out and check the facts. Now, look at 2 Corinthians 8 and remember when we look at – *they were freely willing* – the word “willing” here is a different Greek word. It is the Greek word “*authairetos*”. When you look it up to see its make-up (the Lexicon will give you all its make-up), it is more broken up into all these little particles, like an enclosure, and a strange make-up of different words.

Here is the original word and it is the word “willing” from the word “*authairetos*”, and you wonder what in the world makes up a word like that. So, *authairetos* – it is from G0846 and the same as G0140. When you look at G0846, it is the word “*autos*”. All right. Then you look at it again, and you say, okay, there is G0140, the word “*hairetizo*” (that one is you need to make a choice), to choose, to belong to a sect. It is the word “*hairetikos*” (heretic), so

“*heautou hairetikos*” – that is too far off for us but how in the world does it become the word that – *they were freely* “willing”? In other words, it is not really the word “*thelo*”. It is the word that says that something was so strong that they had enclosed themselves. It is more like an enclosure, like they had become single-minded. It is closer to the word “mind” than the word “will”. For the first time you see the word “will” ties to the word “mind”. You see, we have always been seeing *thelo, thelo, thelo* which ties to the emotion. Now, I want to show you that the will also ties to the mind. Here is the word “*authairetos*”. I broke down the verse for you. Let us come out of it. That is from 2 Corinthians 8:3.

As you go further down, Paul keeps talking and talking and then he says, “*And in this I give advice: It is to your advantage not only to be doing what you began* (So, firstly, this is the context: The Macedonians are free and willing, they are single-minded in doing something, their will is powerful to affect their mind, and then “I want you to be like them,” Paul says. *It is to your advantage not only to be doing what you began) and were* (willing or) *desiring to do a year ago;*”. Can you see the word “desiring” here in 2 Corinthians 8:10? That is the word “*thelo*”, you were desiring to do it one year ago.

Now, here is where a good theology mixes it all up, puts it altogether, makes it as clear as possible. *Thelo* has to do with the emotion, a little bit, but not just the emotion. It is like you grip your emotion and you stir it. It is almost like the bridle on the horse, like you put the will there and then you can turn it. It is like a hook that you hook on to something and then you pull it in a certain direction and that is what the will is, it is the hook and it turns it. It hooks, and it turns it. It attaches itself to it and it turns it. You steer it. It is like, you know, have you ever ridden the segway? It doesn't move by itself. When you stand on the segway, you have got to move forward for it to move forward. Then you have got to lean for it to turn. So, you are actually controlling it, but the whole thing is run by an in-built electrical system, but your little effort pushes it all the way. You on the segway represents you as the will and the segway is the emotion, you lean but the segway can also represent the mind at what stage.

#### *The mind has to be conquered*

Here is a story between the Macedonians and the Corinthians. The Macedonians had already willed, chosen, and their mind was made up. So, this is the difference. The Macedonians, their will of course affected their emotion, their desire but their desire was so desirous that it conquered their mind. Remember the gorilla [emotion] conquers the mind? Now we bring the

mind into the picture. In the end, the mind has to be conquered. So, what had happened is that the will in the Macedonians had conquered their emotion and conquered their mind. That is why it became *authairetos*. *Authairetos* includes the mind. The will has also got the mind. It hooks the mind in and they were now determined, they were locked into single-mindedness to do this. That is a very strong position. *Authairetos* is when your will, your emotion and your mind work in synchrony. No wonder you can persecute them, nothing will happen. No wonder in “*their deep poverty*”, also they did not care. If they found a coin, they still wanted to give. Can you see? They had made up their mind.

The Bible could not express it, Paul says – *they were freely willing* – sounds like Free Willy. They were freely willing, they were free, they were willing, and they locked themselves into position. He says, “You Corinthians, you were willing to do a year ago, but you have not made up your mind when to start”.

You desire, but a lot of people desire, like they say the road to hell is paved with good intentions. Yes, I intend, I want to, *poomp*, die, run over by a bus. A lot of intentions never get done, correct? That is why many of you disagree that the word “desire” can convince the word “will” because they say I want to, I want to, I want to, a bus runs over and never get a chance, die and go to hell. One day I will come to Christ, one day, one day, died in a cafe that was bombed by the ISIS. Just an illustration. They never expected it. This can happen. Of course, we sympathise with all those people and we pray for the poor, innocent people. I am not making anything out of them but just showing that things happen. There were a lot of innocent people who died, wrong place, wrong time. So, a lot of desires.

#### *Have a readiness to desire*

So, it did not move them, and Paul was saying to them: “You desired to do a year ago”. Verse 11: “*but now you also must complete the doing of it; that as there was a readiness to desire it...*”. *Wah*, he really goes into the express of the will, you desired to do a year ago; there was a readiness; you were ready, but you just never put it into action. Just did not put it into action yet. “There must be a completion,” he said. So, he goes on to talk about this and then he says, (2 Corinthians 9:1-2), “*Now concerning the ministering to the saints, it is superfluous for me to write to you; for I know your willingness...*”.

Now, I am interested in their willingness. Look at the word “willingness”, “*prothumia*”, a totally different Greek word but “*thumos*” is a familiar word. You say, “What is *prothumia*”? From the root word “*thumos*”. Willingness, it has to do with the mind and here is our conundrum. We are trying to define the will and we find that the word “will” is translated as, desire, want, willing and it seems to be linked to the emotion. Then when we explore it deeper, we find that the word “willing” is linked to the mind. When it is super-strong, there are degrees of willingness.

Now conclusion one: Without prejudice, there are degrees of willingness. We all know that is a fact. There are degrees of willingness. 2 Corinthians 8 story tells you the degrees. That is why I especially take that chapter. The Corinthians *thelo* (they desired) and Paul described: “That was one year ago; but you must complete that will”. You see, the will is not “complete”. He used the word “complete”. “There was a readiness, (like you are ready to do something) but you need to complete”. So, there is a level, when the will is just a steering wheel; when the will is linked to the emotion; when the will is linked to the emotion and the mind. You might have said, “Conclusion one: Are these the only three states”? You see, we are very detailed in Theology. You thought, “*Wah*, the conclusion is good, *ya*, let us go home and eat *rojak*”.

Wait a minute. Theology must be exact like a surgical knife. You might say, okay, now we know there are the will, the will and the emotion, the will and the emotion and the mind but you have left one more part out. Theology is like Mathematics. You cannot leave out some possible iterations, I call it. What about, is there any possible existence of the will and the mind? You just said, “will” by itself. Scripture and verse? Philippians 2:13, God is energising the will, correct? It did not say the will does anything; the will is just being energised, so it exists. Then the will and the emotion; the will and the emotion and the mind but you left out one iteration, that is, is it possible that the will can be linked to the mind? Yes. Let us examine carefully.

Paul is saying here in 2 Corinthians 9:2, “*for I know your willingness (prothumia, translated as some sort of willingness), about which I boast of you to the Macedonians, that Achaia was ready a year ago (a year ago they were willing to do this, a year ago they wanted to do this); and your zeal (which is a different thing altogether; zeal, it is more to do with the emotion*

side) *has stirred up the majority*". So, he says he was boasting of them; he says now put to action your boasting.

This is the verse that shows the will links to the mind. Now you know something more about the word "*prothumia*". The word "*prothumia*" is where the will links up with the mind, it is not just the mind now; it is the mind with feeling, because the word "*thumos*" comes from the word "heat" where we get "thermostat", "thermos flask" and "*prothumia*" has been translated in an interesting way.

Hebrews 4:12 says, "*For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart*".

We are interested in the words "thoughts and intents". "Thoughts" is the word "*enthumesis*" (from *prothumia*) and "intents" is from *ennoia* (which is the word to do with the inner mind, the visual mind, like *dianoia*). Whereas *dianoia* is you seeing something, *ennoia* is God putting that vision into you so that it becomes an intention. An intention is not just a logical thought, an intention is a picture of something you want, and you get, is formulated as a seed in you, like a DNA already formed. So, you can say that *ennoia* is the vision that is being written into us. *Dianoia* is a vision you see, that your eyes might see but the word translated as "thoughts" is "*enthumesis*" which happens a few other times. As you can see, "*enthumesis*" occurs in Jesus knowing their "thoughts" in Matthew 9:4 and Matthew 12:25. It has been translated also in Acts 17:29 as "man's devising" – man dreaming up, thinking up things. So, for the first time, we have more understanding of the word "*prothumia*". It is when the will joins with the mind and gives the mind an extra boost to want to choose.

#### *Four states of the will*

Our first main conclusion is this: There is the will (from Philippians 2:13) being energised. The will seems to work with the emotion, because it is translated as "desire". The will seems to be (looking at the Bible translating the word as "willing", "wanting") linked to the mind. Then we know that the will can be linked to both the mind and the emotion, that is the most powerful form of the word "will", correct? There are four states of the will.

<b>State 1</b>	<b>Will only;</b> Matthew 26:41 "Watch and pray, lest you enter into temptation. The spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak." Philippians 2:13 "for it is God who works in you both to will and to do for His good pleasure".
<b>State 2</b>	<b>Will and Emotion ("enthumesis") only;</b> 2 Corinthians 8:3-4 "For I bear witness that according to their ability, yes, and beyond their ability, they were freely willing, imploring us with much urgency that we would receive the gift and the fellowship of the ministering to the saints."
<b>State 3</b>	<b>Will and Mind only;</b> 1 Corinthians 14:15 "What is the conclusion then? I will pray with the spirit, and I will also pray with the understanding. I will sing with the spirit, and I will also sing with the understanding."
<b>State 4</b>	<b>Will, Emotion and Mind;</b> 2 Corinthians 8:10-12 "And in this I give advice: It is to your advantage not only to be doing what you began and were desiring to do a year ago; but now you also must complete the doing of it; that as there was a readiness to desire it, so there also may be a completion out of what you have. For if there is first a willing mind, it is accepted according to what one has, and not according to what he does not have."

*Diagram 1*

If state one is the will; state two is the will and the emotion; state three is the will and the mind; state four is the will and the emotion and the mind, all surrendered together. Can state one exist by itself?

*Wah*, this theology is very thorough but do not forget, what is the most important. Make sure you enjoy yourself. When you go out, make sure you feel good because the feeling of goodness will keep you sinless equally. You know why people want sin and all the wrong pleasures? Because they do not feel good, so they need to feel good. Why do you think on a Friday night or on a weekend, why there are people drinking? They want to feel good, but you are already feeling good, you do not need anything else to feel good. They say, "Have a beer! Or have a kit-kat"! All the advertisements say, "Feel good"! They want to make you feel good, but you are already feeling good, what else do you need? If Jesus makes me feel good, what else do I need? It is because you do not feel good with Jesus that you want a thousand other things. You want Jesus plus money because money makes you feel good, but you find that money does not make you feel good; it makes a lot of people feel bad. You want Jesus plus something, no, no, no, live your life so that Jesus feels good. He alone is your love, your life, your joy, your pleasure, then you do not want anything else. So, that is your kit-kat moment.

So, you have four states of the will. Can the will exist by itself in the first state? Now, we know the other three states exist, we know states two, three and four exist but my question is: Does state one exist by itself? Here is the problem: There is no verse that we can find that the will exists by itself. The closest we can find is in Philippians 2:13.

Now, let me revisit round one and round two. You all remember what round one and round two were? Round one was the spirit is willing, but the flesh is weak, and the flesh won. Round two, the will won, 2 Corinthians 8:10-15. Right, because in their deep poverty, the will won. That is the will and now we know why in round two they won, correct? Because the same story in 2 Corinthians 8 actually is state four.

Remember there are four states of the will. State one is the will; state two is the will and the emotion; state three is the will and the mind; state four is the will and the emotion and the mind, of course, sure to win, sure a winner. The first [state one] has got no power, the mind is on the side of the will [state three], the emotion is on the side of the will [state two], what else is there?

In Romans 7:18, *“For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh). Remember the flesh won round one. That is in Matthew 26:41. Then the second round was won by 2 Corinthians 8. It was the will and the emotion and the mind energised together. Now, in verse 18, it says in me, in my flesh ... nothing good dwells; for to will...”*. That is the word *“thelo”*. Whenever the word *“thelo”* occurs, can you see how many times it occurs? When Paul reached the part where he was struggling, look how many times the will is struggling. Can you see?

Verse 15: *“... For what I will to do, that I do not practice; but what I hate, that I do”*. That means the emotion won and sometimes the will loses, sometime the will wins, right? Then he says (verse 16): *“If then, I do what I will not to do, I agree with the law that it is good”*. He is still admitting that it is good. Then he says (verse 18): *“... for to will is present with me..”*. I mean, it is always there to choose, correct?

We all know the reality, the experience of the reality of willing, but how to perform is the problem. You see, the problem is this: That state one [the will] should not exist by itself. When it tries to, sure to lose. That answers the question. You say, “What is the answer”?

I will repeat it for you. Our first conclusion. Of course, before our first conclusion, it is all our explanation of our conclusion based on experience which was wrong. Can you see how wrong we were, when I started from your experience? I said: The will versus the emotion, who wins? The answer is more complex. The truth is more complex because if you do not

understand the truth, you cannot be free. Only the truth will set you free. What you understood was a perception.

Tell me, does the sun go around the earth or the earth go around the sun? That one, you should all know the answer. The earth goes around the sun, right? Why then does it feel that every day the sun is going around the earth? Perception, experience. Sometimes what you experience is not the true reality and there is a place in USA, like a little fun place, where you will go on the bridge, the bridge does not move, but is surrounded by this round thing, and the round thing is moving with pictures. People get very disorientated because when you go, you think the bridge is moving but it is not.

How many times have you driven a car and you stopped at the red light, next to another car, and then the other car was, like it was supposed to be not moving, and then you see the other car moving forward, and you thought that it was stationary, and you were moving, you sort of jerked and thought that you were going backwards, but actually it was going forward. Perception. Perception can be inaccurate.

The truth is this: There are four states of the will. The first state: Can it exist by itself? It exists in your consciousness. You are conscious that it is there. It exists in your consciousness, but it has no power to do battle. It cannot do battle. It is just like, let us imagine, can a policeman stop a truck? He can with his authority but not with his bare hands. To actually stop the truck with his bare hands, he needs to be a Hercules or an incredible hulk or a superman or something like that with energy to actually stop it. He is stopping with his authority and so the will is like the person driving the big, giant truck. The truck is powerful. At first, the truck can take time to move off. Some trucks might have ten gears, twelve gears, because they take time to move the mass that they are having but once it moves, it is very hard to stop. Remember, sometimes you have got giant trucks. Or what about rockets? They are in outer space, the human is so tiny, the rocket is so huge, but the control is still run by the human. Then the rocket, you know how tall a rocket is? You look up, it is multi-stories high, depending on which type of rockets. It can be, you know, ten, twenty, fifty stories if they build a huge one but then in the end, on top is the human being, so small. Or an airplane, Boeing 747, Boeing 777, Boeing 787, A320 or A380, you know how big it is? The human being, have you seen those people standing down there, they are only as tall as the wheel, but it is controlled by the pilot, a tiny little bit, that is it. Now, the pilot cannot really control the

plane by itself. It is the electronics in the plane that controls the other parts. He might push the buttons. The pilot does not have enough energy to move the wheel by himself. He pushes the buttons that are electronics that supply the energy to move.

The truth is this: There is a consciousness of the will, but the will needs something. It needs to line up with the control centre of your being and your control centre is your emotion. That is your main control. Sometimes when your will lines up with the mind, it is still very weak. Remember our earlier conclusion? The mind and the emotion: the mind is the weaker of the two, but it is very funny how God has made life to be, isn't it? Women are supposed to be the emotional ones, men are the intellectual ones, correct? So, the Bible always says that, you know, in 1 Peter 3:7, women are the weaker vessels but yet in truth, the emotion is the stronger one and the intellect is the weaker one, so actually the intellect is the weaker vessel. What a contrast? It only looks like it because intellectual arguments enter into the frame of the Word and the Word supersedes all things. Only when the intellect comes back to the Word. Which is why right at the end of Romans 7, it concludes that there is a war going on, *another law in my members, warring against the law of my mind*, my mind cannot reason by itself.

Think about it, could we have come to the truth without the Bible? I do not think so. Could we have sought high and low in the field of psychology? Look at Sigmund Freud, Carl Jung and all psychologists, and we will still be more confused, but we look to the Bible as our understanding for the psychology of the soul and the will, and it gives us a straight answer. Could we have done it without the Bible? No. That is why the mind in verse 25: "... *with the mind I myself serve the law of God, but with the flesh the law of sin*". So, I recognise the law of sin is there but the mind must get hold of the Word. When the mind gets hold of the Word, it is strong.

There are degrees of mind. There is a mind without the word and there is a mind against the word, Romans 1, that thinking that they were very clever, they worshipped the creation rather than the Creator, so God gave them up to a reprobate mind. You see, there are degrees of mind. A mind that does not accept the Word as truth; a mind that does not accept the Word as the Word of God – that is a reprobate mind. A mind that accepts truths as lies and lies as truths, a reprobate mind. What is truth? Thy Word is truth. So, a mind that is filled with truth is powerful; it is as powerful as the emotion. It also depends on the degrees of mind. We have

done a lot of corrections and that is, because good emotions will not fight against the truth, if negative emotions fight against a mind filled with the Word, emotions lose. So, that is contextual to our argument.

*Will seems to be weak*

Even though the will seems to be weak, remember, there is such a thing called the power of weakness. That is why a man without God is lesser than a woman with God. The man without God is not the head of the home, the woman is, if she knows God but if the man submits to God and the woman submits to God, then the man is the head, the woman is beside. Can you see the order of things? Only if that order occurs because the man who submits to God is more powerful than the emotion. Thus, God made the man lead because he is not going to be moved by the emotion, provided he is leading by the truth, then he is a good leader. Where lies creep in, the ship is wrecked.

You see, the teaching comes into our very life in our creation and the reality. God made women emotional and they are powerful. You know why Solomon went astray? Women, one thousand of them, you could have said he got “mega-bites” at home. Wait a minute, mega is a million, not a thousand. If they were all worshipping foreign gods, one good one would have been good. If they had been worshipping God, then it would have been different. It would have been different, correct, he would have been a mighty person.

You can see that it happens in real life, so the place of the emotion, the place of the mind. So, to tell every man: Though God put the man to be the head, he cannot be proud, because God sometimes chooses the weak with him to show greater strength. Of course, a woman in God is a very strong woman, like I have been teaching, the Bride of Christ is the personified Wisdom, which is the Word of God. A woman of the Word is very powerful. Look at the Proverbs 31 wife. The husband practically does nothing, sits at the gate and talks. The wife is doing everything. I wonder what the man is doing, sitting at the gate and talking. So, wise women, both need the Word.

Here is the thing: The Word has an emotional aspect and an intellectual aspect. In the end, the Word is good for both sides. Take away the Word, the emotion rules over the mind. So, our conclusion, recap. Four states of the will. State one by itself is only an awareness, not good for the fight of faith. It needs to be clothed, put on the engine with either the emotion or the

mind, but you cannot just pull out the emotion or the mind, because the negative one is bad. It must put on the emotion renewed by the Word or the mind renewed by the Word, and then it is powerful. You know why in round 1 the will loses? The spirit is willing, but the emotion does not want to be there; the spirit is willing, but the mind is not in it yet.

The story in 2 Corinthians 8 & 9, they were willing, but it took them a year to take action. Paul has to write letters to remind them: “*Eh*, I am talking about you, I am boasting about you, I am telling the people all that you can do, do not disappoint me”. They were willing, their emotions were there, but their minds needed to come in to actually plan the whole thing.

This is the reason why the will seems to be weak. It needs to reach the fourth state when the will has won the emotion and the mind. This is the reason why some people are weak-willed. You know, you call weak-willed people strong-willed, actually not weak-willed; it is strong-willed. The will is all the same. Strong will is because they have got the emotion and the mind on their side.

Remember this, to always enter the emotion into the love of the Lord that strengthens us, that starting a willingness is important but do not take action yet. You take action only when you have won the battles in you. Isn't that smart? Do not go all over the world; win Jerusalem, Judea, then the uttermost part of the earth. Unless you win the battle in your own house, how can you win the battle in another place? Unless you establish your business on solid ground in your local place, how are you going to survive just by establishing outside? Win the war on your inside. Then guaranteed, you will win the war on the outside. Four states of the will.

## Chapter 20...

### To Will and to Do

It is good to be in our meetings because even though you do not know it, as you hear and sit under the anointing of teaching, your mind is being renewed, your mind is being formed and I will say that there is a slight difference between being live and hearing online, just some slight difference. The renewal of the mind process is more powerful when you sit directly under the anointing. It is like what I call to do with amplification and it is just like how many of us have read the four gospels, that is one thing. It is a record of all Jesus' sayings and passed on to us by someone and they are actually the direct sayings of Jesus, especially the letters in red if you have a red-letter edition Bible with the highlighted sayings of Jesus but you can say it is a different thing sitting under it.

When the disciples sat three years under Him, it was probably like thirty years' training, when they lived with Him, they supped with Him, they ate with Him and it was live tutelage under Him. There was an amplification. At the end of that time, despite all their weaknesses that they displayed, besides all the un-renewal of the mind that they seemed to still possess, yet Jesus said so confidently in John 15:3, "*My word has made you clean*". So, there is a process in that.

Then when He was resurrected from the dead, one of the first things He actually did was He breathed on His disciples and prayed for them that their eyes would be opened to understand the Word of God because all the impartations that He had were ready for them to receive. When they received the born-again experience, the next thing was their mind was opened (as recorded in Luke 24) to understand the word. The renewal process was complete. Every time they looked at the Word, it was their new mind looking at the Word. That is the process.

That is important for us to understand, that there are certain benefits in different things. It is a matter of amplification as I call it. First level, greatest power is live; second level, with today's internet technology, is hearing live; then the third level is when it is all over and you hear an archived recording, so it is like a sound wave that decreases, it is still there but it has decreased definitely.

So just to seal this overall thing, let's look at John 15:3, just to make sure we seal this with the reading of the scriptures. John 15:3, "*You are already clean because of the word which I have spoken to you*". And the "word" here is the "*logos*", there was an abundance of the Word that was constantly happening, and it was cleaning them up and Jesus spoke of it as a process that was completed. You never use the words "already clean" unless it has already taken place, so it is the word "*katharos*".

Then we look at John 20:22, when Jesus appeared to them, "*And when He has said this, He breathed on them, and said to them, 'Receive the Holy Spirit'*". From that day onwards, they were born again. No one could be born again until Jesus was resurrected from that day. Having had them born again, Luke 24:44 to 45, "*Then He said to them, 'These are the words (again He reminded, logos) which I spoke to you while I was still with you, that all things must be fulfilled which were written in the Law of Moses and the Prophets and the Psalms concerning Me.'* And He opened their understanding (that is the word "*nous*" in general, so all of their mind), *that they might comprehend the Scriptures*".

#### *These three processes*

You can say a very unique process took place and it is in three points: Point one: John 15:3; point two: John 20:22; point three Luke 24:44-45. These 3 processes are important. I have to state that so that people will understand that there is a reason for live; and there is a reason for secondary level for those of course who want to be in church but cannot be there and they try hearing it live through our technology; and thirdly there is a reason to feed on what has already been given that is there.

Just like, for example, if you go to a bread shop or if you make your own bread, we all know that bread that is fresh from the oven has a special unique taste. Even though you buy it later on the same day and is still considered fresh, there is a difference. A lot of difference. If you love bread, you will love hot bread that just comes out from the oven. Even the taste is different, the smell is different, and it is something that you cannot get. It is almost like eating a fruit that is just plucked from the tree. No amount of preservation or refrigeration could bring it as near to it.

Now, when you buy fresh bread, it is still fresh, and they put a label on how long it can last. Then when you buy it and take it home, you can keep it one, two, three days, perhaps it can

last four to five days, depending on the type of bread. Some bread actually lasts seven days but some bread lasts only three days, and some five days. By the time you eat it towards the middle or near to expiry, it is still bread but it is still different from the day you bought it fresh, and it is still different from fresh bread that just comes out from the oven.

I am just illustrating a spiritual principle. After all, when you come, and you sit under the ministry, your purpose is to learn and absorb as much as possible. This is one truth you must understand because this truth covers every truth. It talks about the purpose for live ministry and the purpose for face-to-face ministry. There is a purpose for that, otherwise in the future, angels would not go to the trouble of opening the door of transportation, so that I could preach live here, turn around, move into another place live, and go from one place live to another. We have modern technology so why don't we just sit in one office and preach to the whole world? Because that would be what I call the secondary level. So, the first level is still you move in the physical body from one place to another and preach live and travelling in the spirit bodily to all the various places.

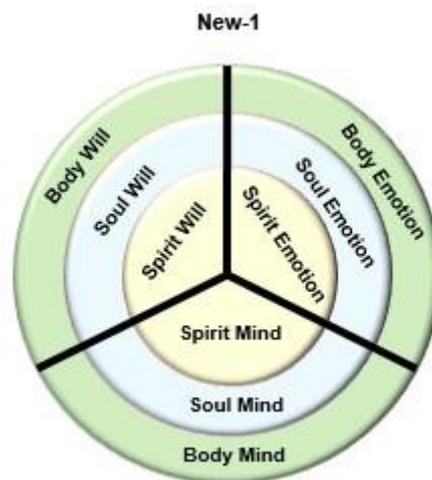


Diagram 1

Now, we begin to understand why the will cannot operate by itself. It is like it' I never meant to be. Can a pilot be without a plane? He cannot. You think of a pilot, he needs a plane to fly because the pilot cannot fly by himself, obviously, so the pilot needs a plane. The will needs the emotion and the mind, all of the whole of the emotion and the mind together, in order to move forward. If you remember the four states that are there, state 1 is the will and we are talking about the soul first. We are just talking about the *Soul Will* relating to the spirit and the body. So, the will of the soul has four states or four phases. State one is the will by itself.

Looking at our new outline in the diagram, there is the section that I am teaching on, I am teaching on the middle circle, the will of the soul. Now, we realise that the will of the soul cannot operate by itself. It is like the pilot that needs two wings, soul emotion and soul mind, one wing is not bad, you must press the wing properly.

Do you know that there are single-propeller planes? I have sat on one before a four-seater plane with the propeller that is right in front. It looks so much like a boat. The only difference is, instead of going into the sea, it goes up. Can you imagine, your whole survival on the plane depends on that propeller?

I remember the single-propeller plane. Long, long ago when I was based in Malaysia and I had a trip to the city of Melbourne in Victoria, Australia, I stayed with one of the former intercessors in our church, who migrated there. His son happened to be a pilot, so he made an arrangement for me to fly to Canberra. I had never been to Canberra long, long ago, and of course Canberra is now basically my Australian home, and Sydney is more or less temporary. Canberra has no international airport. That is amazing, the capital of a nation has no international airport. The international airport is in either Sydney, Melbourne or Adelaide. I have been to all the other places but there are no international flights that go to Canberra. So, that is the reason why I am living in Sydney. I love Canberra, I love the four seasons. Although you have four seasons in Sydney, it is a bit different from the real full four seasons that you get in Canberra. It gets colder, unlike other places in Australia, even in summer. In summer, it can get very hot, but it always cools down every night. Whereas in other places, like even Sydney, when it is summer, even the nights are hot. It is different in Canberra because of its high mountains and higher land. The height makes the difference.

By the way, you all realise that heat actually comes from the ground, not from the sun, indirectly from the sun. Shouldn't it be logical that if you are 10,000 ft or 40,000 ft high above, you are nearer to the sun than someone who is at sea level, correct? So, logically, if it is the sun giving you direct heat, then the temperature should be higher, the further, further up you go, because you are nearer to the sun but that is not true, the higher you go, the colder it is. In fact, when you are on the plane travelling at 40,000 ft or about 10,000 metres high, you look at the temperature, it is probably minus 32°C outside or minus 40 °C sometimes. It is the ground that gives you heat, indirect heat. The sun heats up the rocks and the land, and water also absorbs part of the heat and then keeps it down. That is why it is hotter and the deeper

you go, the hotter it is. If you dig a hole and you go deeper and deeper, in the centre of the earth is molten because it is super-hot plus the pressure of gravitational forces.

As I looked at the single-propeller plane that was flying, I didn't get to land on that first trip, until later when I migrated in 1997 to Canberra, then only that was my first time to Canberra. Before that, I used to travel to New Zealand and Australia, at least twice a year, to preach and to teach. So, when I was flying in those days (it must have been in the 1980s), we flew past several small towns. Then it began to rain because it was only a 4-seater plane, you could just look out of the window and you could see the rain. It is interesting to see the rain from up there, because instead of the rain coming down on you, you see the rain dropping down because you are slightly above the cloud, you can see the rain going down. Then it began to get cold and as it got cold, ice began to form on the plane, ice began to form on the propeller. So, the pilot (who is the son of this brother) said it was not safe and we had to land in the small, little town. He talked to the controller. He did not want to go through the storm, he wanted to land. He said that ice is dangerous to a plane, very dangerous and so he took precautions and he landed the plane. In the end, after the landing (we never went through the storm), we turned back and never went to Canberra.

By that time, I had already written my book: *Anointing of the Spirit*. That is why I knew it was 1986 and a year or so after that and I heard that the whole church was packed, waiting for me and there was an overflow because everyone wanted me (the person who met Jesus Christ in 1986, that Jesus talked about the anointing). So, those were the days, so I never went to Canberra. They made a call on my behalf saying, because of the weather, I could not make it for that meeting. It was a one-night thing and I was to fly back. That is my story of single-propeller planes. In the end, we waited until the weather was better, a few hours later, and then they removed ice from the propeller, otherwise it would get heavy and the plane could crash. A single-propeller plane can fly but it is more dangerous.

There are single-engine planes and there are double-engine planes. Most planes are now two-engine or four-engine, but basically a plane can still fly on one engine. I do not know how but somehow it distributes the force and the velocity. A plane that has two engines, when one engine is down, you still can fly; when both are down, you are left with only the pilot's skill in gliding. Still many chances of survival. Of course, if you are in the Lord, nothing adverse should happen.

### *The will as a pilot*

However, here we are talking about the will as a pilot can never fly alone (phase one). It needs at least one other propeller, one other engine; if possible, two engines; then it can go forward. The will by itself is phase one. Then the will with the mind (when these two operate together), you can call it phase two. Phase two and phase three are about the same, you can interchange them. Then phase three is the will without the mind but with the emotion and lastly, phase four (which is most powerful), the will has the emotion and the mind with it, so it is a complete circle. It is powerful, the will is strong.

Weak-willed people are weak because their mind is weak, or their emotion is weak. At least we know now, the will is actually by itself weak. It needs support. When the will does not have the support from the emotion or the mind, it is definitely weak. It is good because at least now you know technically what makes a strong-willed person or a person who is stubborn.

### *Stubborn people in two categories*

You see, stubborn people are in two categories. You did not know there are two categories? He can be a stubborn person because he is stubborn emotionally. He is locked into an emotional frame so that he either has unforgiveness or he has a particular fear in his life or some traumatic thing that locks him into an emotional cycle, and he is strong to pursue only that one course in his will. He has been locked into it. So, that is a stubbornness that can come from the emotion.

Or the will can be locked into the stubbornness of the mind. For example, an intellectual opinion that becomes a dogma. A person who is dogmatic, who refuses to honour another person's opinion. A person who always thinks that he is right and is fully and mentally and intellectually convinced that the logic of his argument and the truth of his argument makes his opinion above all other people's opinions, refusing to see other people's opinions, thinking only that his opinion is the only opinion that counts. He is locked mentally into a dogmatic position and viewpoint. He is stubborn in his view and his belief.

For example, when Jesus came to the Jews, they could choose not to accept Him as the Messiah because their theology had developed to the stage where the Messiah was supposed to be a political leader. One of the reasons why the Jews did not accept Him was, in the

gospel of John, they especially said: “*Shouldn't He have come from us? Why didn't He come from us? Shouldn't He be from us? Shouldn't the synagogue be the one to accept Him? After all, if He wants to be king, He needs us, and we are the king-makers*”. So, their viewpoint of an earthly Messiah, a political Messiah, was a dogma. In fact, it was so strong that even His disciples asked the question when He was going home. You know why, there was no Israel. The Messiah had come, the Messiah had gone home. They said: “What happened to the prophecy?” They were still asking: “*When will the kingdom of Israel be restored*”? They asked that in Acts 1: “*When will the kingdom of Israel be restored*”? They were interested. It was the current theology of those days: a political Messiah, an earthly king and now Jesus was going home. They had been following Him for three years. At the end of it, He said “*Bye!*”. Israel hadn't changed. What happened? Of course, they were wondering. Although they accepted everything that Jesus said, they had got a lot of questions in their minds, questions that were unanswered because of the dogmatic teaching that was still in the background, that everybody knew the Messiah was the Israelite king who was to fulfill the prophecy of David. That was the dogma of those days.

You see, you can have a dogma and become very stubborn and that is the will and the mind going together, but of course going in the wrong direction. How nice if you have got the mind and the emotion to go along and that is what I need to teach you, plus I want to also cover how the will can link with the *Spirit Will* and the *Body Will*. The *Body Mind*, you can also put in quotes “*Cellular Memory*”. The body has its own cellular memory. It is a new definition being studied today, and it is still a theory, not a fact, because they need thousands of research, thousands of cases before they accept cellular memory, but some people are accepting it today.

The *Body Emotion*, is that the body has its own emotions: “The Endocrine System”, because emotions can be measured by chemicals and chemicals produce emotions. Today, with the understanding of Science and Biology, they are able to artificially induce certain states of mind using chemicals and that is how they help a person calm his emotions or make it feel dead, but that is only one aspect. Emotions are quite a complex thing. More than one chemical are involved, plus they have not studied every chemical. They only know some of the chemicals that are there. The endocrine system of our body is involved. So, all of them are the glands in the body and they produce different types of hormones and chemicals. Three

of them are inside our brain, the hypothalamus, pituitary and pineal glands. The rest is spread all over our body so that would be like the body has its own capacity in them.

### *A different control centre*

Then we want to look at the *Body Will*, there is a different control centre and that I want to touch on too. Now, with this knowledge, we can go back to the Bible and see the underlying thing that was at play in Romans 7, and we saw that this is one of the cases where the will lost. Now we want to see why it lost and we know that there are four states or four phases. We can examine why it lost, because we established that the emotions won. Then technically the will should win, but at the same time there are Bible examples that show that sometimes the will lost. Now, we have got a clearer answer. It depends on the state of the will, phase one, phase two, phase three and phase four.

Phase four definitely will win. The will is the winner because you have got the emotion and the mind on your side, alongside the will. *Hey*, the pilot has two engines and there are no contrary engines, sure to win, sure to be able to pursue. We have examples of that in 2 Corinthians 8 and 9. Then when the will is by itself (in phase 1), it is sure to lose. Can you see the contrast? Phase one is sure to lose. Phase four is sure to win. *Ah*, it is phases two and three that make it interesting. Now, let us say state two is the will and the mind, the emotion is against you. Win or lose? Now, let us go to state three, the will and the emotion versus the mind. Who wins?

So, you would say that state three [will and emotion] is slightly better than state two [will and mind]. Now, how much better? I will give you a percentage. State 1 = 0%. State 4 = 100%. State two [will and mind], what is the percentage? State three [will and emotion] what is the percentage of winning?

It is quite logical because of original premise that the emotion is stronger than the mind, then obviously, it is just like when you go into a fight with a gorilla on your side, you are going to do better than going into a fight with a tiny, little Shih Tzu dog-kind of thing or a chimpanzee. So, it is obvious that that logic would come.

### *Different degrees of mind*

Let us now throw another spanner in the works because there are different degrees of emotions. There are different degrees of mind. So, here is the percentage I would give to you. State one = 0% for the win. State four = 100%, sure to win. State two [will and mind] = 25% to 50%. So, there is a 50% chance that if you have a strong mind, you possibly can win but to win, you actually need more than 50%. 50% is still a draw. I have to give you about 25% to 55%, which means that 50% being a draw, there is a 5% being a win, since 55% is the majority (51% is the majority in any company). So, 55% is still the majority. More or less, you win. There is a 5% chance of winning. The strength is 25% to 55%.

Then when it comes to the emotion [state three], I would normally have given it 50% to 75% but then, if I do that, it will never have a chance to lose because 50% is still a draw. To give it a 5% chance of losing, I would put it at 45% to 75%. So, they are the ideal figures.

So, state one [the will alone] = 100% lose or 0%. State four [will and mind and emotion] = 100% win, no possibility of losing and in state four, we find it in 2 Corinthians 8 and 9 that even in the midst of deep poverty, they still gave. Once they willed to do something, nothing could stop them. In Acts 20, once Paul decided to obey the Lord, he surrendered his mind, his will and his emotion to God. He says, “*I go bound in the spirit*” (verse 22). Even though a prophecy came, and it was misinterpreted, even though the people were persuading him not to go to Jerusalem (with tears running down their eyes), he still said that he must go. Can you see?

When you are at state four, nothing can stop you. Not even loved ones, not even people crying, not even people begging, not even people clinging to your leg and dragging you back, saying “don’t go”. You say sorry, you untie their hands and say bye! (No, no, you are not going to kick them, of course you are Christians, must show love). So, you would “un-pry” their hands and put their hands, on hold somewhere and quickly shoot off because nothing can stop you. There are examples of that: 2 Corinthians 8 and 9, as well as Acts 20, where the will is supported on two sides, by the emotion and the mind. It is sold out and it is tied to the word “*enthumesis*”.

Now, having finished with phase one and phase four, sometimes I use state or phase, whichever way, phase implies changes between them. Phase two (which is the will and the

mind), we have given it 25% to 55% so that means the chance of winning is 5%. We realise that it is important also, but it is an important internal work. State three or phase three (which is the will and the emotion), we have given it 45% to 75%, that means most of the time winning, but 5% chance of losing, possible 5% chance of losing.

Here is the balance. Since the will is just 0%, the balance is actually between the mind and the emotion. If the mind is against you 55% (that is the maximum), you have got 45%, you still lose but, in all counts, you can see that the emotion is very important. It plays a super role to go in line with the will. You can say that the emotion working with the will, you can give a Greek word there, “*enthumesis*”, a very important part.

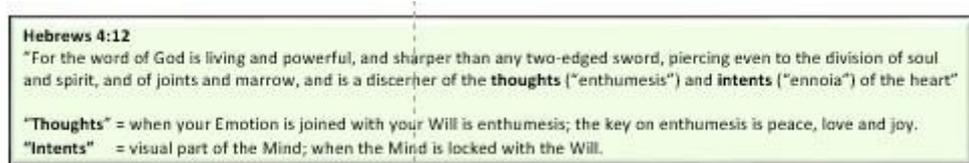


Diagram 2

Now, let us look at Romans 7. The will growing and seeking to perform. With that clarity of thinking, we can look at the Bible. Remember, what we have stated are just theological things to help us to understand. In real life, it is never so clear-cut in percentages, but at least it is something that you could keep in mind. In real life, you might realise, *woah*, the emotion actually reigns from 45% to 75%, you never knew that but those are general cases.

Remember, you lock in the main ones and there are exceptional cases. In every law, there are exceptional cases because no two humans are the same and humans have a range of different emotions and different minds. It is very difficult to classify. We only put out the law of averages. An average being an average, there are always extremes that break even the law of our technical understanding.

So, here in Romans 7:15, “*For what I am doing, I do not understand. For what I will to do, that I do not practice...*”. Obviously, phase 1 “*I will to do*”, but not ready yet for the big time. You should never try to start doing something when your will is not developed. That is why a lot of people fail. How many people say, “God told me to do this” and then one year, two years, three years later, when hardship comes, they give up? Do you know that, in God, there is no such thing as failure? The reason why there is failure is because of humans.

Here is the question: How can God say something and then people cannot go through with it? Now, God can say something, but it takes time to come to pass. God told them that He had given them the land of Canaan, correct? Supposed to happen in one year. In one year after they came out from the land of Egypt, they were supposed to enter Canaan in year two, but they entered in year forty-one. Not because of God, because of humans. To God, you want to go in the 41st year, you want to go in the second year, that forty years to Him is like a blink of a micro-nanosecond, but to us it is a lifetime. It was not God's perfect will that they went in on the forty-first year. It was God's plan that they went in on the second year.

When God says something, it always comes to pass. You just have to trust the Word and give your life to the Word. Remember, this whole universe is built based on the Word and giving yourself to that Word. It is very important to know the Word. Remember the centurion who had great faith? He trusted Jesus' word. He did not have to see his servant healed. He did not even have to be there. He was far away, and he said, "You just say it and I know it is done". Such faith in the Word. Reliance on the Word, giving yourself to the Word. God's Word always comes to pass. That is a fact. It is on the human side that sometimes prevents things from coming in the fullness of time or it is delayed. There is also a fullness of time.

Could Abraham have his baby any earlier? There is something that you cannot hurry. There is a fullness of time when the child will come forth and you know what God was waiting for? Why did it take nearly twenty years for Abraham to have a child? In fact, twenty-five years, because he came out at the age of seventy-five and he got a child at the age of one hundred. Since the child was nine months in the womb, that means when he was ninety-nine years old, and the Bible confirms that he was ninety-nine years old when God spoke next year he would have a child, so he came out at seventy-five years old, ninety-nine minus seventy-five, it is twenty-four years. Let us assume, you take a few years before the incident in Genesis 15 when God promised him an heir. That is what I roughly give it two to three years, but rounding it off, easier to count, twenty years, take off four years. Why did he have to take roughly about twenty odd years (between Genesis 15 and Genesis 18, when he was ninety-nine years old)?

God had to wait until Abraham was also sterile. Abraham was too strong. Remember, at the age of one hundred, Ishmael was about twelve years old or thirteen years old. So, at age ninety-nine, take away twelve years, eighty-seven years old, which means that he had

Ishmael. Let us say Ishmael was born, so take away one year when he was in Hagar's womb, Abraham was eighty-six years old, when she conceived. At the age of eighty-six, he went into Hagar, conceived Ishmael, then by the time he was ninety-nine, Ishmael was about twelve years old. At the age of eighty-six, he was still fertile. It was Sarah's womb that was all the time not fertile. God had to wait until (Romans 4 confirms) his own body was dead, implying he could not produce a child anymore. That is a long, long wait, because that child has to be a miracle child. A child produced by two miracles, not one, one miracle in Sarah's womb, one miracle in Abraham's body and Isaac came forth because of that.

*Need to let the energy run out*

Now, if you take that situation and apply it to your own life, God sometimes has to wait until you die to yourself before He does something but some of us, our will is too strong in the wrong area, the energy for ourselves is too strong, so God has to wait until the energy runs out. I have talked, sometimes in counselling or in church matters or in church government about placing people in different areas, I may make a statement that: "I let their energy run out first". Some people have said to me, "Eh, why don't you take action here and there"? I said, "Well, I let their energy run out first". Then you need to let the energy run out because people need to prove for themselves that they cannot do it on their own. Mentally, we tell ourselves that; but practically, we do not do that.

For example, if all of you right now lose all your jobs and businesses like Job, you do not know when your next month's income is going to come from and you still retain all your bills. How many of you will panic and go into the natural to look for your resources? How many of you will go on your knees to say, "God, You must have planned everything, You must have an answer"? How much prayer will you put into solving your problem? How much time will you spend trying to solve your problem?

There is a balance. Some people do nothing but go on their knees. Even Hudson Taylor had to write tracts. Yes, because of his tracts, people knew about him. There is a minimum to do. Some people will do everything but will never pray. You need a balance. That is why some people think that living by faith is easy and being a full-time missionary is easy. If you are an independent, full-time missionary, who is just obeying God to do something, you have got no promises behind you, no large denominations supporting you, no promise of a salary, it is a different test. I have lived that way for so long that I do not feel anything but let me tell you,

if you are new to it, it is frightening to know when you are going to rent a house not knowing where the money for the rent is coming from, or to go to a new place not knowing where you are going to find your food and especially if you have got a family.

Sadly, those who have it too easy will never learn to live the way Jesus lived. Jesus will just be: If nothing to eat, nothing to eat; if no place to sleep overnight, no place to sleep. That is the extent that I am prepared to follow the Lord, but I doubt many people will dare to follow. Of course, if you have got children (very hungry ones), that is why there are practical considerations when you have them. Sometimes you have got to make tents to support yourself, like Paul and you have got to take care of others. If you have got others to take care of, that is a different thing.

Even then, remember, the most important thing in this life is to learn lessons, correct? That is the only thing you can take with you; not your money, your silver, your gold or your position. You only take home your life experiences and that is an experience a person who has not lived by faith does not understand. He does not understand how you can have the boldness to go to a place when you do not know anyone, you do not know anything, and you just go there. You trust the Lord if the Lord tells you to go, provided you know you heard correctly that the Lord told you to go.

Then, here is the thing you must be prepared for. You must be prepared that you have got no roof over your head; you just seek whatever shelter that is there, sleep in the bus-stop if necessary (at least if it is a sheltered bus-stop). You must be prepared that you have got no food to eat, that you go hungry. Or you eat grass or find the ants climbing on some tree, free food. If you are not prepared to go to that extent, you are not prepared to live by faith. It is important, and it is a test. Of course, each one of you might have a different test to trust the Lord in different things.

The first time that you walk by faith, and here is what walk by faith is, all your natural needs, you look to the Father (without Him, you know you will die) on a daily basis. Although our modern world is a different thing, but it is like that and God never fails. Can you imagine learning that kind of lesson and experience? You have something on your inside like steel that nobody else has when it comes to trusting the Lord versus somebody who all his life needs to pre-plan, save and all that before he goes. I am not advocating that people do not

save or plan anything, remember, I am not talking about those things, but I am saying that should the situation arise, you are still prepared to follow the Lord wherever, even if there are no promises. By all means, be responsible, plan, save and all those things, and how to live on tithes and offerings. If you cannot, I know not everybody is in the position where he can even say, some are living from hand to mouth, God can set you free from all those things, but the fact is, there is some experience that one needs to learn and sometimes you learn that in short, little episodes, one incident that can change your life.

I always remember this incident very clearly when I was new and living by faith in Penang after I came out from the seminary. I came out from being a student pastor in a Baptist church. I was on my own, independent, and I was accepting preaching invitations and so in the preaching invitations, sometimes you have got some offerings to support you, but at the same time you have got to check your motives. You do not go just because there is an offering. You are prepared to go wherever the Lord leads and so I remember it was like living from hand to mouth; I had just enough money.

Then there was one preaching appointment that I was taking. It was like in a school, a group of students and I had enough bus fares to go there, but no bus fares to return, because at that time we were counting the cents and not the dollars. I decided I would still go. I said, "Maybe after that, God will provide me a couple of dollars to just take a bus home; maybe God will move and touch someone". I went there and preached my heart out because there is something about you, that once you go there, knowing that you are 100% depending on God, there is something that changes on your inside. It is like here you are, you live and die, and just preach your heart out. At the end of it, after saying a prayer, everybody came and said goodbye, you know, how touched they were and everything, not a single cent. I was not even looking at anyone hoping that someone, you know, would give me anything. Then, you know what I did, I walked back. I walked back all the way, a journey that would have taken by car 15 to 30 minutes, I forgot how long it took, I walked back all the way. Every step I walked, I said, "Thank You, Lord, it was good to serve You; it is an honour to serve You". That experience puts some steel into my life.

Then there was a time when I was in the seminary and I went there by faith. I had no scholarship, nothing, I just trusted that the Lord would support me. Of all the people who supported me, I was so surprised that my father who had chased me out of the house ended

up sending about M\$100+. I prayed for him to be saved because he did not know what he was supporting. So, in those days I was counting every dollar and I had to budget very carefully to last through the month. I had just enough bus fare to go to Bt Mertajam, which is a distance from Penang island. I had to preach there, but I did not have any money to spare for food. Usually the next day there is a church fellowship, and then there is a bit of food and all that but the day I arrived, there was no food. You can look at all the food along the way, but there is nothing you can afford to buy.

Sometimes funds were so tight. I remember there was a time when I was a student pastor in a Baptist church, I had very limited funds and I had to be very tight with my finances. They always went out to eat every night and then sometimes when we went out to eat, I could not afford to order the food and I did not expect people to pay for me, so I just ordered the drink that I could afford. I could not even afford the wonton mee, that was how much it was, but I could not afford it. When they said “got”, they forgot to ask whether I had got the money. Or when they went out, you know, it was understood that they were not giving me a treat or who was paying for the food. I could not take a risk and order, then when everybody said to pay your own, ended up washing dishes or something like that. It would be embarrassing but all this comes to a point when you learn to trust in God.

Then through the years I trusted in God for hundreds of dollars, thousands; now I am believing God for bigger things. I remember when we were renovating our church in Malaysia, the amount that we need was millions of dollars. Although we had the usual thing (in collection) but we did not have any other things else, it was still not enough. Some of my co-pastors were telling me: “Pastor, we are relying on your faith”. They themselves were frightened and the bills that were coming were huge, you know, one thousand chairs cost several hundred thousand dollars, and in two, three bills, that was all the money. They were all very frightened. It is like living from hand to mouth. I said: “The Lord will provide. We just need to stretch ourselves to survive and be able to survive”. So, it is important to learn to trust the Lord. It is a different thing.

We are talking about the subject of why some people when they say the Lord tells them to do something, they give up. What about the Lord’s name? People say, “You say that the Lord said”. You see, the Lord is looking high and low in heaven and earth for a person who will

line up with His Word and be willing, come what may, to just go forth, trusting the Lord. That is how it is.

Paul says, “I will”. When you are at state one to state four nothing can stop you, state two and state three are great concerns, the policy is this: Do not go until state four. The more critical something is, make sure that your mind and emotion have had their time in the Lord. A lot of people when they hear God says something, before state four comes, they run. Sure, to be defeated.

Now, you have this story in Romans 7. Verse 15, “... *For what I will to do, that I do not practice; but what I hate, that I do*”. That tells you something. Emotion was not with him, correct? He says I hate, *what I hate*, so the hatred (the negative emotion) was overpowering the will because the will was at phase 1. Then he says in verse 16, “*If, then, I do what I will not to do, I agree with the law that it is good*”. Eh, the mind was with him. Can you see now, clearly you can analyse? He agrees with the law that it is a good thing to do. That was his mind, because right at the end it says in verse 25, “... *with the mind I myself serve the law of God...*”. So, when you go upwards, it was the mind that was still with him, but the emotion was the part that was causing him to lose. He had only a 5% chance of winning. So, from 25% to 55%. That means 95% chance of failure still. We go on just to prove our case in this. In verse 16, he says the law agrees with him and he agrees with the law.

#### *Sin in the flesh*

Then he says in verse 18, “*For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh) nothing good dwells; for to will is present (that means state 1 is possible) with me, but how to perform what is good I do not find*”. So, phase one cannot; will in phase one is not good enough. Verse 19, “*For the good that I will to do, I do not do; but the evil I will not to do, that I practice*”. That means, again the emotion. The evil has got the emotion, desire. He talks about sin in the flesh, desire for evil things.

Verses 21-22, “*I find then a law, that evil is present with me, the one who wills to do good. For I delight in the law of God according to the inward man*”. The spirit is energising the *Soul Will*, so the will of the soul has got inspiration, because originally the will of the soul was going along with evil, now that it is in God, the will has got a different direction to move. He says there is a will inspired from the spirit. Then in verse 23 (here is the war), “*But I see*

*another law in my members, warring against the law of my mind (Can you see that? His mind was with him, but he lost the emotion.), and bringing me into captivity to the law of sin which is in my members”.*

That explains why the analysis was correct. Phase two [will and mind] does not guarantee victory at all. It looks closer from 25% to 50%, a draw. I added that extra 5% just for keepsake; no, just to give you a chance of winning. In my original, it was 25% to 50%. I threw in the 5%. Then the emotion [phase three] was 50% to 75%. Here is the thing: You must reach state three or phase three before you can ever want to build something, minimum, at least you have a 95% chance of not losing but I would suggest that you must reach state four, 100%. Why? Because at state three you are not enjoying the victory because you are miserable still. It is at state four, the joy is overwhelming. At state three, some days you are down, you wonder why you are there. You have obeyed God and have gone to Timbuktu; Africa and you wake up on Sunday “Why am I here”? On another day you wake up suicidal. On another day you wake up wishing you did not obey. That will be state three. You know what your frame of mind and emotions will be if you are at state four? Every day you wake up with joy, “Hallelujah! I am in God’s perfect will. Hallelujah! I am in God’s perfect will”. Do not go until state four and a lot of people, they start to obey God when they have not reached state four. Generally, most people are obeying either at state two or state three. That is the reality. That is why once they go to a place, the things can play against them.

Here is the other thing: The devil cannot win in any fight against you as long as he has no help from your inside. That is the most important thing that you should remember. The devil cannot win when he has no help from your inside. That is why Jesus says (John 14:30), “... *for the ruler of this world is coming, and he has nothing in Me*”. It does not bother Him.

#### *Battle rages on your inside*

You lose, or win based on the battle raging on your inside. This is based on Romans 7 and 2 Corinthians 10. Remember what Romans 7 calls it? War! Not my words, Paul’s. He says war was taking place on his inside. Nobody sees the war outside. Everybody only sees you, but there is a raging war on your inside, and you are already losing the war, in Romans 7. In 2 Corinthians 10:4-5, “*For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal but mighty in God for pulling down strongholds... bringing every thought into captivity to the obedience of Christ*”. That is warfare? The warfare is on your inside. If your inside has no ground for the enemy,

your mind has zero place for him, your emotion has zero place, your will has zero place, he has no foothold, no ground. He cannot run! Like water running off a duck's back. So much anointing oil on you, the water comes but cannot get you wet.

Has anyone ever seen a duck that has become wet that it cannot fly? You know what the duck always does? You know how ducks can turn their head backwards? They turn their head backwards and they do something to their body. You know what they are doing? At the side of their glands in their head is oil. They are oiling their feathers. Now you know, eat more duck, that is why ducks are very oily. Chickens only have fat. I mean, the wild chickens are different. Today's chickens are so mutated, cannot fly. Originally chickens could fly. Only good for drumsticks now, KFC anyway. So, you have these ducks full of oil and when their feathers get wet, the wild ducks still can fly. Remember how they fly? You will have to shoot them down, because there is oil on them.

You lose, or win based on the battle raging on your inside. Here is another point. The quality of your downloads depends on the state of your mind and your emotion. You cannot receive any downloads in any area except in the area of your desire and your inquiry. If your mind and your emotions do not rise higher, you are only given what you inquire or desire, nothing more, nothing less. If you do not have a desire for God and inquire of the things of God, you will not have it. You think Daniel could have received revelation about the seventy years without praying over it? No. You think Nebuchadnezzar could have received the vision or the dream of the other empires coming if he did not inquire about it? No.

So whatever revelation you want to receive from God actually comes from the renewal of your mind and your emotion. You are the one limiting your own downloads. Unless you have got a burning desire to know Him and you are studying to enquire about certain things, you will not get an answer. Remember, God only answers questions that your spirit and your soul ask. Sometimes your spirit is desiring, but it has not formed a question. I did not say answer your question when your soul asks, remember. Your soul does not know what is going on in your spirit. God answers questions and desires that your spirit and your soul ask. By the time Daniel enquired about the seventy years, his soul was involved. So, your desires are important. I need to conclude to talk about how to build this strong because it affects all your life.

Although we study on the will and show how much in this life, everything is about the will. The next five years and ten years will depend on what you choose on a daily basis, monthly basis and yearly basis. When we meet again in ten years' time, you and I might be in different places based on the choices we make. I know what choice I am going to make. What about your choices? I know some of you have made your choice. It is important. The choices we make are going to determine where we are going to be. Your will is important, and we study that your will needs your mind and your emotion.

### *Limitation of mind and emotion*

Then I give a bonus fight. The bonus fight is not only do you need your will supported by your mind and your emotion, but your very relationship with God is affected by the limitation of your mind and your emotion. *Woah*, you know what is happening now? Your whole Christian life is doomed to the little things or the great things because your mind and your emotions are not renewed. There are Christians living out there today who are only inquiring about this life, correct? Guess what the angels and God do? God is so generous, so loving, so kind, so beautiful, He only answers what they want. To God, every day they are just asking for ice-cream to quench their thirst. God wants to give them more but all they can remember is, I want ice-cream, ice-cream, ice-cream. You know, like Winnie the Pooh, honey, honey, honey. Only locked into one thing, food, clothing, shelter, the things of this life that pass away. No aspirations to understand the things of God. No desires to achieve greater things with God. How can they ever change?

All change must start from the inside. If you do not have something inside, you see, the sword always works in two ways. Remember how I say the devil is powerless if he has got nothing on your inside working for him, right, that works for the devil? With God, the same principles apply. Unless you have got something on your inside desiring after God, God also cannot answer. The most powerful angel cannot help you. God needs something on your inside for Him to work with you. How much you can yield, and give is how much God can work. That is a big principle I am talking about.

Now, look at the book of Judges. At the end of the book of Judges, it was a civil war. In the book of Judges, everyone did what he thought was right in his own eyes, but not in the eyes of the Lord. You see, it is not just important to think whether something is right and wrong, you must always say, "God, in Your sight is this right or wrong"? You will be surprised at

some of the responses of God. God sees differently from humans. Judges 20, all the tribes of Israel were coming against the children of Benjamin. Verse 18 says, *“Then the children of Israel arose and went up to the house of God to inquire of God. They said, ‘Which of us shall go up first to battle against the children of Benjamin?’* (So more or less they were saying, “Lord, do You want us to go, show us who leads”). *The LORD said, ‘Judah first!’*”. So, obvious, it was the will of God that they went out.

Then verses 19-21, *“So the children of Israel rose in the morning and encamped against Gibeah. And the men of Israel went out to battle against Benjamin, and the men of Israel put themselves in battle array to fight against them at Gibeah. Then the children of Benjamin came out of Gibeah, and on that day cut down to the ground twenty-two thousand men of the Israelites”*. Twenty-two thousand people died, sons, fathers, young men died, twenty-two thousand households (sons of course came from the same household, so less than that) had no more men in their house. Sad. If in today’s news, twenty-two thousand people died, it will be headlines all over the world. It was a big thing, plus at that time Israel was still very small. This is the book of Judges. Samuel and David have not been born yet. Every man is important. It is just like when you have a mega church, one hundred disappeared or on holidays, no difference but when you are a tiny church of fifty or one hundred, everyone goes to their hometown, Chinese New Year, look around, you preach to the church mice, makes a difference. It is all right, you know, you just have to be faithful day and night. So, twenty-two thousand people, that is a lot of people.

Remember, the Lord said, *“Judah first!”*. The people encouraged themselves, they wept, they said (verse 23), *“... ‘Shall I again draw near for battle against the children of my brother Benjamin?’ And the LORD said, ‘Go up against him.’”*. There was still that understanding that they were supposed to go. Again, the will. Now, there are many other things that I can show from this story, not only just this. I can show how they would follow the sacrifices and everything else, however, using this part, I am showing the will to go. They were willing to fight, willing to go, willing to die.

Now when they asked for confirmation, “Should we go”? *“Go up against him”*. They received it in their own language which means that their mind was with them. This is a Romans 7 category case. The mind was there to do, the planning was there to gather the people. It takes a lot of planning to gather thousands of people together, to make sure that

everyone has armour, everyone has sword, everyone has all the things they need, it takes a lot of mental planning. They went up, Benjamin came out, eighteen thousand children of Israel died, eighteen thousand plus twenty-two thousand makes forty thousand. Those forty thousand lives were wiped out. That is a lot of people and then the children of Israel, they wept, they fasted, they prayed, they offered burnt offerings and peace offerings. Then (this is the main difference in the message) they asked the Lord in verse 28, "... 'Shall I yet again go out to battle against the children of my brother Benjamin, or shall I cease'? (You see, they had some emotion and some mind but not fully developed. Remember, even if you have 10% mind and 10% emotion, you still have 80% loss). *And the LORD said, 'Go up, for tomorrow I will deliver them into your hand.'*". You know what is the difference? Assurance of victory.

#### *Assurance of the victory*

Before you have victory, you have assurance of the victory, God says he is delivered up. You see, God had not finished speaking yet, they ran off too fast. This is a typical case of the will of God revealed. Yes, it was revealed, it was His will to do, revealed twice, but only in the end did they have the emotional consolation that the battle was won. It is also a faith process. It is done, it is no more hope, I have delivered it to you, I will deliver it to you. This is state 4. The mind was there, the emotion was in, and the mind, even after the Lord told them, you know, they set ambush and all those things, and they won. They won this time. Even though they were forty thousand short, they still won. What a victory because they had got the emotion on their side.

Now is the time to look back at Philippians 2 and understand a little bit more about verses 12 and 13, "*Therefore, my beloved, as you have always obeyed, not as in my presence only, but now much more in my absence, work out your own salvation with fear and trembling; for it is God who works in you both...*". Can you see the word "both"? He does not just energise the will, He energises the doing and you know how the doing works? State four. You see, state 1 is just telling you what He wills. Most people say, "O God, is it Your will for me"? God says, yes. Wrong. He must "both". You need to wait until He has energised the will and the doing, which means energised to state four. State four is the power to do. State one is just beginning. So, the will of God is not as easy as you think.

When you absorb, and you know what God's will is, that is why a lot of young people, "*Oh, God wants me to go full time*" before their minds and their emotions were ready, they were

already gone. You say, “*Eh*, where did the brother go”? “*Oh*, he went to serve God full time”. “What”? “Because it was God’s will”. Yes, I agree it is God’s will, but God has not energised his mind to understand how, and his emotion is not strong enough to resist the fact that is there.

“*Judah first*”! *Ya!* After they lost, they were still quite stubborn and quite wanting to obey God. “Do you want us to go? Are you sure”? The second question is “Are you sure”? God said, “Yes, I am quite sure what I want you to do”. *Ya!* God had not even finished energising them. You remember what they did after the second defeat? They wept, they gave sacrifices, they obeyed, they waited, they really cleaned themselves up. Any area not cleansed, just cleanse it. Make sure He is in every part of our lives. He is not just telling us what to do, He must be Lord over all, then He works.

Now, Philippians 2:12 and 13 are actually the same, in a different sense, as in Hebrews 4:11. Look at that, by putting the verses side by side, but I want you to know they are talking about the same thing, because of Hebrews 4:10, “*For he who has entered His rest has himself also ceased from his works as God did from His*”. You know what entering His rest means? Assurance of completion, correct? In fact, not just assurance, completed! Completed in Him. Whatever God wants to do, it is completed! That is the rest. Verse 10 and verse 11 are related. Verse 10 is explaining what that rest is and how you subjectively receive the objective rest because for God the Benjamites were defeated but the Israelites needed to receive it into themselves individually, the assurance of victory. God is always at rest because He has finished the whole thing, the devil was already defeated, the devil was already eliminated because God lives outside the time zone. We need to catch hold of God’s perspective, His energy that comes from there, that it is completed, which means entering the rest.

Philippians 2:12 and 13 do not explain the details of the process from the will to the doing. This explains the details, Hebrews 4:11, yes, there is a part for us to do, but look at the part that we are to do. It says in verse 10, “*For he who has entered His rest has himself also ceased from his works...*”. Then it says in verse 11, “*Let us therefore be diligent to (do and do and do – did it say that? That is what everybody reads but let us be diligent to) enter that rest...*” (rest and rest and rest). The diligence is to try to get hold of that perception of rest on your inside as a reality.

### *Labour to enter into the rest*

Isn't it almost like a contradictory verse, "*labour to enter into the rest*"? It is not talking about natural rest; it is talking about spiritual rest, to come to the still place you have on your inside. Isn't it what the faith process is about in Mark 11:23-24, when you say to the mountain, you must believe that what you say will come to pass; and whatever things you desire when you pray, believe that you have received, and you shall have them?

The words, believe that you "*have received*" – "have received" is a past perfect tense: completed. In the English language, past perfect means the action is already done, completed, no more, nothing else. When you say, you know, "Have you swept the floor"? "I have done it". If you say, "I am doing it". Then I know the process is still ongoing. Or you say, "I will do it". You have not done it yet, you intend to do it but if you say, "I have done it", It means there is nothing more I can add to the action, it is completed. There is this entering into the rest, into the perception that it is all done. You must have it on your inside before you even lift one finger to do anything on the outside, before you lift one hand to take up the sword and the spear and the shield and go "Bye!". It is important for you to labour to enter into the rest and it describes the internal process of what the rest is, of what God wills in your inside.

It says in verse 12, "*For the word of God (which is the *logos* of God by the way, not *rhema*) is living (full of life) and powerful (full of power), and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart*". Here is the word "*enthumesis*", a word which I placed in state three or phase three. When your emotions are joined with your will, it is *enthumesis*.

Now, let us look at 2 Corinthians 8. We look at the situation of the Macedonians who were in deep poverty, but it says here, they were not only in deep poverty, they were in a great trial of affliction. Look, two things were horrible there, great trial of affliction and deep poverty. You think you can stop that? No. Then, look at their emotions, they had lots of joy. The affliction which was great, the word "great" is "*polus*". "Mega" is the word "great". "*Polus*" is "great", which implies it is great and it comes from many directions, many different areas. Deep poverty, "deep" is "*bathos*", the Greek word means it is so deep until you cannot see the depth. It is used for the word "mysterious", that is why you do not know, cannot measure it. Yet they had abundance of joy (this group is really fantastic), "*perisseia*" means "super

abundantly”, overflowing, nothing could stop their joy. The emotion was with them. They were freely willing, the word “willing” is “*authairetos*” (when you punch *authairetos* as in G0140 for “*hairtizo*” that is there), they had given themselves to that willingness. It is from the root word that means that one who is mentally joined to a sect, given themselves. So, that is an example of their will, fully inside and it merged into what they wanted to do, their intent. Then in 2 Corinthians 9:1-2, “*Now concerning the ministering to the saints, it is superfluous for me to write to you; for I know your willingness...*”. That is “*prothumia*”, the root word is “*thumos*”. In two chapters, Paul says this is like the Macedonians, and he is talking about them like the Macedonians, but here he is encouraging the Corinthians.

When you have a “*prothumia*” added to the other word of “willing” (both are studying the word “willing”), there is this word that I am highlighting, “freely willing” and it is “*authairetos*” which means of free choice or to choose to belong to a sect. When you belong to a sect, it is your dogma. Dogma implies the mind side. So, 100% of their mind, 100% of their will. Now, why do they use the word “*authairetos*” because it has to do with a deep word which points to Hebrews 4:12. Hebrews 4:12, “*For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts (“*enthumesis*”) and intents (“*ennoia*”) of the heart*”.

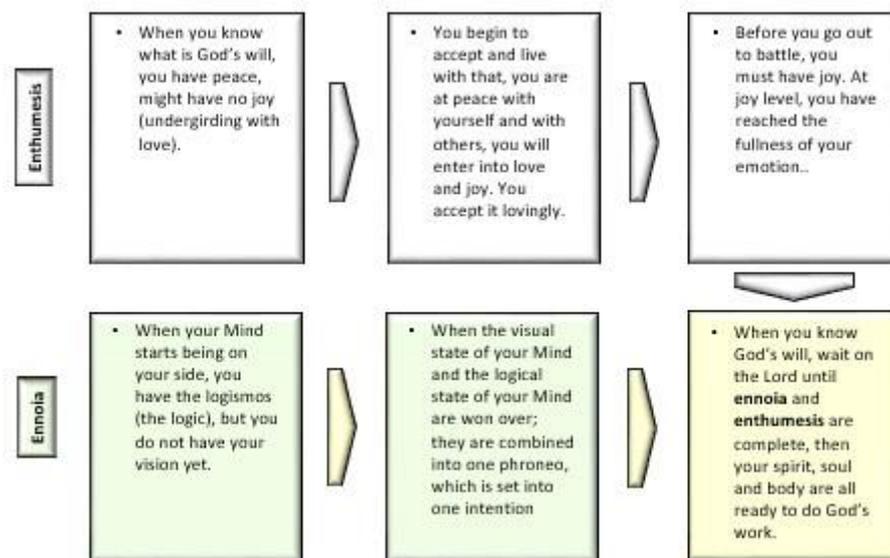


Diagram 3

“*Ennoia*” is intention, which is close to the visual side, because any good intention is the word that has to affect the visual part of your mind. Just like the will has four different phases, the mind has different states. The mind has a visual state and a logical state, and all

these are playing in different areas. Then there are levels of sub-conscience and conscience, different Greek words for the mind. Then there is the Greek word “*phroneo*” which talks about like a setting inside the mind but in the end, Paul chose the word “*ennoia*” to be locked in intent. So, you can put the word “*ennoia*” to when the mind is locked with the will. You are using Greek words from Hebrews 4:12. When an *ennoia* has taken place and an *enthumesis* has taken place, you are locked in. When you study the reasons for those words, that the key on *enthumesis* is peace, love, joy. Remember those three things came out in Jesus’ sermon in John 14, 15 and 16? Peace, love, joy, the first three angels of the seven churches.

When God reveals His will, remember the percentage from 45% to 75% on the emotion side? When you know what God’s will is, you have peace, but you might not have joy yet. However, as you begin to accept and live with that, you are at peace with yourself and with others, you will enter into love and joy. You accept it lovingly. Of course, love is undergirding everything else, but you must have joy. Before you go out to battle, you must have joy. At the joy level, you have reached the fullness of your emotions.

When it comes to *ennoia*, when your mind starts being on your side, you have the *logismos* (the logic), but you do not have your vision yet. Your mind cannot see it yet. You need to pray for the spirit of wisdom and revelation that will open the eyes of your mind (the mind has got eyes). You need eyes to see. That unless your eyes are whole, you cannot; the eyes must all be with you and to have *dianoia*, you must affect the *ennoia*. When the visual state of your mind and the logical state of your mind are won over, and they are both combined into one *phroneo*, which is set into one intention, then the intent (so small, so little).

#### *Intention is such a small thing*

Now, let us translate the word “intent” into English. Intention is such a small little thing, but yet it is like the pilot turning the steering wheel in any direction. You intend. There is a difference between the charge of manslaughter, homicide or murder. The difference is sometimes if a person is careless with his driving and he kills someone because of his carelessness, he can be charged with manslaughter or homicide because he is careless. He did not intend to kill. He intended to go shopping. In his hurry to shop, trying to get the discounted \$50, he drove crazily and killed a human being whose life money cannot buy.

However, if you intended to kill and your car was aiming until the person comes out of the house and you run the person over, that is murder, higher penalty.

Intention is very important. Intention speaks of motivation. Why we do what we do is more important than doing. Wouldn't you say that is correct? You know why, because if the reason why you do it is wrong, it makes the whole thing wrong. Let us say you want to be a leader and you want to do church worship, but your intention is glorification, recognition, reputation and acceptance. Though your worship might lead others to really worship and the worship still goes to God (because people cannot see your intention), for you, everything is rejected by God. You say, "Can there be such a thing"? Paul says in Philippians 1:15, some preach Christ out of envy. Some preach Christ out of gain. Gain is like some tele-evangelists preaching because of money but Paul says as long as Christ is preached, he is happy and some still will be saved. Intention is what is important to your actions, whether the actions are accepted by God or not.

When Howard Pittman died and went to heaven for the first time, before he entered the certain part of heaven and could not return, Jesus met him. He talked about all the good things he had done in his Christian life, all the charity work, in one nanosecond, everything burned up and Jesus said everything he did was for a wrong motive. Can you imagine, everything was done with a wrong motive? He might have done it for ten years; all the ten years were practically wiped out.

How sad if you go to heaven and you find out that ten years of your life are worth nothing? It might be worth something on earth, but it is worth nothing in heaven. Don't you think it is very, very sad because of your motivation? That is why I always motivate people to make sure they have got first love for God. If you do not have first love, your reward is at stake for whatever life you lived. It is important. So, intention is important but who knows what the intent is, "*what man knows the things of a man except the spirit of the man which is in him*"? You do not even know on your inside. You do not even know yourself. That is why it takes time to win a man.

How long since Jesus knew He was called to full-time ministry? Twelve years old. At least on our record. At twelve years old He said, "*I must be about My Father's business*". He waited for eighteen more years, then He left at the age of thirty. If He could wait for eighteen

years and He had no impure motives, how much more you and I? When you know God's will, wait on the Lord until *ennoia* and *enthumesis* are complete, then your spirit, soul and body are all ready to do God's work.

*By grace, not by law*

One last verse. Ephesians 2, talking about the grace of God. Most people know verse 8. Ephesians 2:8-10, "*For by grace you have been saved through faith, and that not of yourselves; it is the gift of God (if you want your life to function by grace and not by works, function by grace and not by law), not of works, lest anyone should boast. For we are His workmanship, created in Christ Jesus for good works, which God prepared beforehand that we should walk in them*". Look at verse 10. Ephesians 2:10 is the same as in Hebrews 4:11. In other words, God must work in us before we can do something for Him. The key is that He must work in us before we work out our salvation, back to Philippians 2:13. So, let Him finish His work in you.

Does it take longer to fill a glass with water or to make the glass? To make the glass, correct? Now, look at the intricate design, it took longer to make that glass than to fill it with water. So therefore, it will take time for God to work in you as an instrument but like the glass, it will take just a moment for God to use you. In three years, Jesus did all the work He needed for thirty-three years. Do not be impatient. Be patient with yourself, be patient with people and be patient with God's Spirit working in your life. That is important for you to understand what is happening, so that you enter the rest and you do not depend on anything.

In this life, you must only take what is given to you. You must never just take it. You see, when, I give someone a present, say a Bible, I present it and give it, and someone takes it. You still have to take and receive but he takes when I present it. However, I always leave my Bible at church, even when I am gone, the Bible is always there. I shall return. When this Bible is gone, then you know I am not coming back, that is after the tsunami before the tsunami, when you see me collect this Bible, then you know I am not coming back again. This simple Bible is very important. Of course, somebody may take it. If nobody takes it because I have not given any authority for anybody to remove it, nor given anybody authority to use it, to look into it, whatever. So, let us say without me knowing, whether I am here or not here someone takes it. Now you see what happens? He takes it without it being given.

In this world, it is a world of difference, day and night because all things belong to some place, somewhere, someone or something, some organisations or generally the Government. However, generally to Caesar belong the things that are Caesar's and to God belong the things that are God's and all things belong to God. Here is the principle: Our world has taught us to take, take, take, survival of the fittest. If you do not take, you die; you do not step over people's head, you die, survival of the fittest. Let the weak die so that the strong may live. They always teach this in evolution, the weak die out and only the strong survive. So, since they die, might as well hasten their death because if you keep them for another twenty years, they eat all our food. You see the mentality? Survival of the fittest, survival of the strongest. You see it in some of these reality shows where they put the people on the island, and people are selfish, and some of the selfish fellows win and all kinds of things, you know, all looking after themselves but here is the thing, that is the fallen world and the fallen nature we must not have in us.

Remember this all your life that you never take what is not given because if you ever do, you work against God's law, and it will hit you back. You can pray and ask; didn't say you cannot but before you can take, before it is given, you can pray and ask, that is what the prayer and asking is for. Then when after asking, God says "It is given", then you can take. Remember, you must wait until it is given, and Father God says yes but you do not take it before He says yes. There are many Bible stories of people who took before God gave. Wrong. They took before they asked from God. Wrong. Every time, even if it is in front of you, but not from God, you shall not take. You know why Jesus never turned the stone into bread? Because the Father never gave it to Him to do. Could He have done that? Yes. It was not a word given by the Father to do that. He conserved all the power and energy. He will only use His power to do what the Father has given Him permission to do. You never take or do what is never given or given permission to take or do. Eve, and Adam with her, took from the tree of knowledge; it was not given. Abraham refused to accept what the king of Sodom gave him because he only wanted one person to give. *"If God has not given it to me, I will not take it, lest you say you make Abram rich"*.

So, businessmen, you might have the opportunity of five businesses, being A, B C, D, E because it is there, you take it. Wrong! You are now a Christian. You are now not just a Christian, you are a disciple of Jesus. Did you ask the Father whether He gave you all five or one or two or three? Did the Father give it to you? If you cannot give me an answer, don't

you dare take it! Can you see it now? This is important philosophy. Sometimes the Father gives before you ask, sometimes the Father gives only when you ask, sometimes the Father does not give at all, but the day the Father says A, D & E are yours, then you go and take them only. You need faith to take it; you need boldness to take it; you need all the basic principles. You might have to fight even to take it, like the land of Canaan. Did the Father give the land of Canaan to Israel? Yes, they can go and fight and take it. However, if the Father did not give, you cannot take it. In God's law, it is stealing. You must always return what God never gives you. It does not belong to you. You know why, God has apportioned things to everybody.

You might be a businessman: "Why not I take all five"? You only look at yourself, your tiny picture. There are other disciples and Christians whom God might have given B, C & E and A & D are yours. You only think of yourself. You might say, "Why not I take everything"? Who do you think you are? Abraham? There is only one Abraham and there is only one Christ. God must give first, then you can take. Always, an important principle.

You know why I have not gone all over the world to different places yet, although God told me where to go and the ten thousand churches we will plant? Because, until God says He has given to me, I cannot take or go to those nations. Everything has its timing. Remember, assurance of victory and remember, it is as hard not to do something as it is to do something, especially if you have got the capacity to do it.

When David asked God, "Let me build God a house". His intention was good. He had the capacity to do it, but God said, "I have not given you permission to build a house. It is your son that I will give permission". David could not take because God had not given permission. You can never do what God has never given permission to do. That is why we have to spend a lot of time with Him, to be in the place where God wants and learn this lesson in life. Never take until God says I have given it to you. Once God has given, no one can snatch it from you, not even the devil himself. So, this is important.

## Chapter 21...

### Will is Desire

We have been concentrating on the will of the soul and we have realised that the will of the soul requires the work of the emotion and also the mind and we have said that the emotion plays a lot in the will being strengthened. Then, if the mind is in it, the thing is quite complete as a circle.

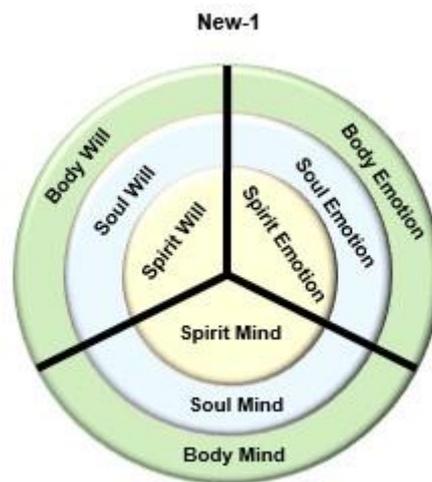


Diagram 1

We need to also look at the *Spirit Will* and then the *Body Will*. The relationship between these three, we will look at the relationship this way in the circle. The first familiar verse that we want to look at is the Lord's prayer, which is in Matthew 6:9. It is part of our Christian experience to learn that God wants His will to be done all the time, the foremost and most important thing. In fact, life is about doing God's will; life is not about food, clothing and shelter. When it says in Matthew 6:33, "*But seek first the kingdom of God and His righteousness...*", it is telling you actually to seek His will, and then to perform His will by His way, and then He takes care of your food, clothing and shelter.

However, we have never been taught that in our Christian lives because most of the time we come from a non-Christian life and in the non-Christian life, it is the survival of the fittest. Not true in the Bible sense, but that is what everybody is doing. They are trying to survive in life. They are trying to make a living and trying to get food on the table, shelter over their heads, clothing to keep warm. Food, clothing and shelter are the struggles of this life, which

Jesus says the Gentiles do that all the time. These are what the Gentiles are doing. He never condemned it, He did not say that it is wrong, but He says that it is a lower level of living. The higher level of living is to do God's will and when that gets taken care of, it is almost like saying you become God's employee and you perform and do only the goals and objectives of God's company. When you are serving God, God pays well, sometimes too well for all the people. A lot of preachers have misused this prosperity, but God pays well when you serve Him. God will bring to you all that you ever need with food, clothing and shelter.

Do you notice times have changed? Long, long ago, about twenty or thirty years ago, if you said that God called you to the ministry, most of the time your family members would say, "Wah, have got enough to eat, ah? How are you going to survive? What are you going to do"? It is like the ministry is a place where you do not get money, do not get much and that is it, but today's mentality has changed, I guess, because of so much teaching on prosperity and people view the ministry wrongly. Many people go into the ministry, hoping to build their ministry into a mega ministry, a mega church, then they can have tons and tons of finances, wrong motivation. Of course, in many traditional churches, they have become very, very rich from all the blessings of God but in the richness of the church, the church forgets the Lord, just like Israel forgot the Lord in times of prosperity. Then serving the Lord becomes just a full-time job of "Churchianity" or church work without any compunction to think about what the Father's will is. We are no more thinking about it. We are just like being taken into the organisations.

Originally, all that the Father wants is for His kingdom to come, His will be done. As the Lord's prayer says, "*Our Father in heaven, Hallowed be Your name. Your kingdom come. Your will be done On earth as it is in heaven...*". If we were to focus always to seek God's will every day, I did not say that you will discover it immediately, but if every day you seek God's will, at some point in your seeking, you will start entering God's will. That which you seek after will come into you. There is a general will, then a specific will of God for your life.

#### *The pattern of Jesus' life*

Is this the pattern of Jesus? Yes, it is. Let us look at Jesus' life. In Hebrews 10:5-7, it speaks of Jesus coming to the earth, "*Sacrifice and offering You did not desire, But a body You have prepared for Me. In burnt offerings and sacrifices for sin You had no pleasure. Then I said, 'Behold, I have come—In the volume of the book it is written of Me—To do Your will, O*

God.’’. Jesus’ main coming to the earth was to do the will of God and the Greek word for will is “*thelema*”, which links more into the area of the emotion that we have mentioned. “*Thelema*” has also been translated as the word “desire” inside each one of us, the will of God, the desire of God. Then Jesus in practice actually did that too.

We look over at the gospel of John. These are Jesus’ own words. John has a lot, 107, more verses there. We are just going to look at John 5:30, this is Jesus’ statement. Now that Jesus has grown up, He makes this statement in His ministry, “*I can of Myself do nothing. As I hear, I judge; and My judgment is righteous, because I do not seek My own will but the will of the Father who sent Me*”. It is obvious that the will of God is very, very important to Him.

Now, we have been touching on the will of the soul, but in a sense, it is not the will of the soul that we want to do. We are talking about the ability of the soul, but the soul by itself cannot discover God’s will. The soul needs to discover God’s will from the spirit. It is the spirit that drops the will of God into the soul.

When we look at the word “*thelema*”, which is the word for will, we have mentioned how, besides being translated as “will”, it has also been linked to the word “desire” or aspiration and different things. Like, for example, we have done that before, two weeks ago, so it is just a refresher for you, Ephesians 2:3 talks about the desires of the flesh. When you look at the word “desire”, it is “*thelema*”. The word “desire” is another translation for the word “will”.

Now, let us look at only the translation of “desire” because there are only two Greek words for desire, not all of the translations and not necessarily from the word “*thelema*” but let us look at some of them. Matthew 9:13, *I desire mercy (thelo, which is also fine)*. “*Thelo*” and “*thelema*” are two different variations of the word “will”. They are more like a third person or second person kind of derivations and so here in Matthew 9:13, *I desire (will or thelo)*, “desire” here is the word “*thelo*” (from the root word “*thelema*”), it is just the will or the desire of God.

Let us see whether that is applicable. The Lord’s prayer, “*Our Father in heaven, Hallowed be Your name. Your kingdom come. Your will (desire) be done On earth as it is in heaven...*”. Not bad. Still the translation can carry, and Jesus could say, you know, “I have come in the volume of the book to do the desire of God”, which is still fine.

So “will” and “desire” are interchangeable, in the Greek original. “*Thelema*” has been translated as “desire”, and “desire” has been translated as “will”. It is like the two are interchangeable. That is a very important concept for us because when you say, “How do I know when the Spirit wills”? The will of the Spirit, what does it feel like? It is in desire. So, there is a desire on your inside, except that this desire is, you can see that, okay, the will of God is like the desire of God, so what happens is God’s desire is imparted into your spirit and it inspires a desire to do God’s will.

### *God speaks His will*

In the English language, there are many words for the word “will”, volition, choice, etc but we have never used the word “desire” for will. We treat “desire” as something else but the Bible treats “desire” as equal to “will”, that is something that we need to renew our mind to. Then when we see “desire” the next time, then we know that is how God speaks His will.

You see, many of you pray, “Father, what is Your will, teach me Your will”. Right? You say, “Show me Your will. What do You want me to do in my life? What shall I do this year? What shall I do this month? What shall I do today”? Always and you are trying to get the will of God by your mind, correct? For you to do God’s will is to know God’s will. Many people ask this question, “How do you know it is God’s will”? In your normal life, how do you know something is God’s will? Based on the Bible is one answer. Okay, very good, so we eliminate one area. The will of God is what the Bible says, so whatever the Bible wants you to do.

However, the Bible does not tell you which job to go for, which business to go for. The Bible does not tell you whether you go to Bible college or you go to university. The Bible does not tell you all those things. It only tells you, Glorify Jesus, seek Jesus, love Jesus with first love, evangelise, preach the Gospel wherever you go, be a good witness but come to the practical things of your life, surely God’s will be more than that.

Okay, in Psalm 37 it says about delighting in the Lord and He will give you the desires of your heart. There are also many verses in the Psalms that say, “I delight to do Your will, O God”. So, the word “delight”, desires and all that come together, and the Lord will give you the desires. That sounds like Matthew 6:33 in a different manner, “*But seek first the kingdom of God and His righteousness, and all these things shall be added to you*”. Psalm 37:4,

“*Delight yourself also in the LORD, And He shall give you the desires of your heart*”. How about in a more personalised sense? How do you know the will of God in your life? What is God’s will? One of the answers is, an Inner knowing.

*Delight yourself also in the LORD*, so that will be the emotion here. *And He shall give you the desires of your heart*, so in this area it is also “peace”, so we assume that it is *Spirit Emotion*. When you are in this peace, then you will know God’s will. Then there is the “inner knowing”, isn’t this *Spirit Mind*? Can I say that inner knowing is *Spirit Mind*? Okay, classify it as *Spirit Mind*. Meditation. Seeking God’s will. Meditate on the word. So, that is the process of knowing God’s will but how do you know it is God’s will?

Hearing His voice, okay, that is another methodology. Hearing His voice. If He speaks, that means, can I say that if He speaks, there is some impartation of knowledge? Knowing, right, God speaks where to go, what to do, like He told Ananias in Acts 9, He told him where to go to meet Saul to pray for him. So, when God speaks, you know what to do. Can I classify voice as mind also? Classify it under *Spirit Mind*? Okay, the mind hears the knowledge and of course the *Spirit Mind* imparts to the soul. You hear in the spirit, then the soul knows what to do, knowledge comes.

Okay, so there is 1 John 3:21, if our heart does not condemn us, then we have confidence toward God. That is about prayer. Heart, of course we know is all of the spirit and all of the soul, so we still treat that as very general. We need to be a bit more specific.

We could say that before we seek God’s will, usually we pray and fast first for specific items but prayer and fasting is the methodology. In itself, it is the will of God for us always to pray, always to fast. In other words, the methodology is sanctified but there are a lot of people who are also fasting. Mahatma Gandhi also fasted, a few cult leaders also fasted. So, the methodology itself need not lead to God’s will.

Fasting is a methodology, which is why fasting, and prayer is what I call a sanctioned method to enter the spiritual realm. Even non-Christians tap on it. When non-Christians want to be possessed by demons, sometimes they also have to fast. So, the difference is not the methodology. The difference is the source. It is good to fast. It does not mean that you say, *wah*, no need to fast anymore. *Eh*, wait a minute, no, do not excuse yourself. Jesus fasted,

Moses fasted, and Jesus says His church will fast. So, fasting is a good method but again talking about fasting as receiving revelations from God is still in the *Spirit Mind*.

Now, can you see very clearly, I have shown you, most these answers keep giving “what is the will of God” by talking about the mind and the emotion. Can you see that? Okay, visions and dreams are of the mind. Inner knowing is of the mind. Peace is of the emotions. We have actually been talking about the *Spirit Emotion* and the *Spirit Mind* here.

Now, you can see that we do not understand what the will is. The will in Greek is “*thelema*” or “*thelo*” and it is translated, especially “*thelo*”, a desire. When we seek after God’s will, we have always been seeking the mind rather than the will and here is the problem, you know why we cannot know, because the mind is the secondary level. There is a dual level when you relate to God, the Father. The first level is just the desire here. Then the second level reaches the mind or the emotion.

Remember Jesus says that we are here to do the Father’s will and the first thing He talked about it is, He says that we are His servants. A servant does the will of the master. When the voice of God comes, then we obey. So, there is a level when we do the will of God as a servant, there is a level when we do the will of God as a friend. These are the two levels I want to point to. They are actually in your Bible. We have got lots of verses to support the word “desire”. It is the word “*thelo*” that is there but let us look at some examples. We go back to the word “will”. I will highlight “will” for you.

In Matthew, there is a little parable, Jesus speaks a little parable, Matthew 7:21, “*Not everyone who says to Me, ‘Lord, Lord,’ shall enter the kingdom of heaven, but he who does the will of My Father in heaven*”. I wonder how many Christians call Jesus “Lord”, but on earth in their early lives they never do God’s will? Of course, I do not think they are in this category of those who are not saved. Here, the category of those who are not saved is they actually practise lawlessness, as you see in verse 23, they did something opposite from God’s will, so these people are not saved.

Perhaps for many Christians who scraped their way into heaven, they at least did not do bad, but did not do God’s will. They are just there, hanging on to Jesus’ salvation. Not good enough. You see, the first category; all are lost, they do the opposite from God’s will, they go

against God's will. To go against God's will is frightening. Even someone who knows the Lord and goes against God's will, he can go to a certain extent and then he sins against the Holy Spirit, and then goes further and further away, he might lose his salvation, like Judas Iscariot who went directly against God's will. Or there is a sin against the Holy Spirit.

Then there are those who do not do God's will, but they do not really go against God's will. They are floating somewhere. I call this "the middle group", they are saved but they are also naked. Zero reward in heaven. The Bible has such a thing. Remember, 1 Corinthians 2 and 3, it says you are saved but you are naked; you have got no reward. Can you imagine you have got no reward in heaven? There are a lot of Christians who will have no reward in heaven.

### *The hyper-grace messages*

One of the extreme parts about the *hyper-grace* message is this; Jesus has done everything for you, sit down and do nothing. That teaching will produce a whole group of Christians who are saved, but who do not pray because they do not believe in prayer. After all, Jesus had finished all the praying, grace *what*, so under grace, no need to pray. Then no need to read the Bible, no need to do much, no need to do anything, He did it for me, that is it, consider it done. That kind of Christianity will produce zero reward in heaven. They might get away with that on earth, but it is a dangerous Christianity that is robbing people of their rewards because they have got no more zeal for all-night prayer, no more zeal for fasting, no more zeal for anything because *hyper-grace* takes away their zeal.

I have been told by some people whom I have met earlier in the *hyper-grace* movement and they said, "Well, we love Him because He has done all those things". Okay, show me your love. Do you love Him enough that you will fast and pray? "No, I do not need to fast and pray". See! Do you love Him enough to give all your life to Him? "No need, He did it for me, I do not need to do it again". Then *hyper-grace* goes to the extent of no need to confess sin because 1 John 1:9 does not operate for them. *Hyper-grace* people do not believe in sin nature anymore. They do not even believe it exists. In Christ, it has all disappeared. For us, it exists, it is a battle and you need to learn how to overcome. There is a way to live without sin nature.

So, *hyper-grace* has got part of the message, but they have got the methodology all wrong. *Hyper-grace* is actually half of the gospel. When you preach half of something, it equals half.

Half plus zero still equals half. You need another half to complete it. So, *hyper-grace* people forget 1 Corinthians 15:10 where it says, “I laboured more abundantly because of the grace that was working in me”. You see, *hyper-grace* people missed two things about grace.

Firstly, grace is a position, but they missed the other half that grace is also a substance. It is a substance that comes into you and makes you labour more abundantly than you could ever do. *Hyper-grace* only teaches about the position in Christ. They do not teach you that there is something of the substance of grace that enters into you and changes you on the inside, that makes you want to pray, makes you want to fast, makes you want to serve God. There is no teaching that grace is the substance. They teach only half the message and you can easily prove that grace is the substance. In 1 Corinthians 15:10. What is that inside Paul? It is like grace is an active persona inside him, pushing him. That is what the *hyper-grace* message lacks. As a result, their Christian life is not very effective. Many of them do not know how to pray and fast for 40 days. They do not even know how to read and study the Bible because the grace did not lead them towards God. It leads them into the world and have an easy life in the world. No need to do anything, after all, it is salvation and that is all they are interested in.

Wow, there is a lot on the will of God here. Let me get the parable out in Matthew 21:28-31, “*But what do you think? A man had two sons, and he came to the first and said, ‘Son, go, work today in my vineyard’.* He answered and said, ‘I will not,’ but afterward he regretted it and went. Then he came to the second and said likewise. And he answered and said, ‘I go, sir,’ but he did not go. Which of the two did the will of the father? (remember, the will of the father). They said to Him, ‘The first.’...”. So, notice it is not what you say? The first said he will not do it, but he actually did it. The second said he will do it, but he did not do it. Remember, the Sermon on the Mount is based on actually doing.

The part about the will is the doing part, getting from the desire part to the doing part. When I analysed how do you know it is God’s will, the most important thing is the inspiration of the desire. The desire is the will. So how do you know whether it is God’s will for you to go to this university versus the other university? How will God speak to you? He will put a desire into you. Now, I know your next question, “How do I know that the desire is not from myself”? Everything comes from the desire. The first stage is actually desire without understanding, like if God wants a pastor or a Bible school student to be a missionary to Africa, the first thing God does is put a desire there, a desire to go to Africa. Now, he might

not know why he wants to go there, what he wants to do, but God will put a desire. If God wants you to, for example, move from one country to another, let us say migrate, He will put a desire into you for that place. Before the tsunami happens, many people are going to have a desire to migrate. There are so many places, China inland, Canada, Brazil, Australia, so many places to go. Where does God want you to go? He will put a desire.

*The will is the desire*

You see, that is what we do not realise. The will is the desire, the desire is the will but let us not go to the second part about your desire versus God's desire, that is a secondary matter. However, without the desire first, nothing happens. The desire must come. God will put a desire. God has never called anyone without putting a desire first. How do I know God calls me to the ministry? He puts a desire for the ministry. Now, other things might come out. He might not tell you what you are supposed to do, what is your calling. Those come later but He puts a desire. The desire must come.

In answer to the question that I asked, "How do I know if something is God's will for me"? Your first answer should have been, "God puts His desire in me". Very simple answer. Based on the Bible fact that I have already shown you, the will is the desire, the desire is the will. It is like the two are one, the two equal each other and based on the Greek, the word "desire" is "*thelo*" and "*thelema*"; the word "will" is "*thelo*" and "*thelema*". They are both equal and they have tested out certain verses to see if they replace the word "will" with "desire", whether it will sound okay, it is still okay. "*Our Father in heaven, Hallowed be Your name. Your kingdom come. Your desire be done On earth as it is in heaven*". That is still all right, perfect.

The first thing God does is He puts His desire into us. If you cannot feel His desire in you, it is not His will. The problem of filtering out your own desire from God's desire is that is a secondary problem. At least you must have God's desire on your inside. Are you very clear there? The desire must be there. Without the desire, you will not discover God's will.

However, before the desire, you can have the seeking. Now, it could be the desire that drove the seeking. Ask and you shall receive, seek and you shall find, knock and it shall be opened unto you. The revelation part, because if you have the desire to know beyond, then God will show you. That is talking about revelation. God only reveals according to your desire.

Here is the most powerful thing. We do not realise God actually puts desires. We only think God puts thoughts and understanding but the desire is a different category from the emotion (peace, love joy) because you might desire, and you do not have peace yet. You might desire, and you do not have the feeling of love. You might desire, and you have no understanding yet. Can you see? It is a separate thing on its own, but the desire can be a different degree that you recognise.

Like for example, someone might have a desire to visit the United States. The question is this, is that desire from God? You see, that is how you discover God's will. Or another person has a desire to go further and develop in worship and at the same time have a ministry arm and engage in a business thing about which he has some idea. The thing is this, is that God's will?

You see, what we have never wrestled with is we have never classified our desire when it is staring us in the face. Desire is an important area to start with when you want to discover God's will. It is totally separate from your inner emotion. It is just the thing that strikes you, that wanting to, that desire, it is the Lord working into you. How do you know whether God's will is in something? God will have dropped His desire into you. Now, your own will might work in different ways but there is that desire to do something. I did not say that you will like the desire. That depends on your soul.

Let us say the *Spirit Will*, the *Soul Will* and the *Body Will* represent three desires. You have got a conflict of three desires. If the word "will" can be replaced by the word "desire", I could easily have said: *Spirit Desire*, *Soul Desire* and *Body Desire*, correct? Technically, I am still correct, which means you have got three desires if they are in conflict.

You see, every Christian has a desire to know God, but it might be eaten up. The question is, which one is affecting which one, and which one is reacting. When you are born again, the spirit always starts first with your desire. Your soul and your body have their zones all the time, and if you time it by the millisecond, the desire from the spirit comes first. Then the next millisecond, your soul reacts. It says, *eh*, I do not like that. Then your body makes a decision also, but it is reacting to something that God puts inside, like God throws something inside.

Like you will know if somebody is cooking and puts a lot of garlic in it, you can smell it. So, you can tell because when you drop garlic in, it just overpowers the thing and there is a garlic taste and smell. It is just like your Singapore *fried kway teow*, the best must always have pork fat, correct? It must have. If they can, they will fry in pork fat because it gives the pork fragrance which, to the Chinese, smells nice. Not only that, the best *fried kway teow* must use duck egg because chicken egg has a different flavour from duck egg. Duck egg has a little more fragrant flavour than chicken egg. So, if you fry with duck egg, it has its own taste and people might say an egg is an egg, but when you taste it, the *fried kway teow* with duck egg and the *fried kway teow* with chicken egg, then you would know the difference.

So, how do we coordinate those desires? God throws His desires into us. Philippians 2:13 says, that in the end it is the doing part, then it succeeds. Without the doing part, you might even say it, but if you never do it, it is still not done. The will is not considered done.

So, in Philippians 2:12-13, *“Therefore, my beloved, as you have always obeyed, not as in my presence only, but now much more in my absence, work out your own salvation with fear and trembling; for it is God who works in you (which is the word “energeo” from the word “energes”, so you can say He is energising in you) both (two things: to thelo, i.e.) to will and to do for His good pleasure”*. God does two things: The word “works” is the word “energeo”. He puts energy into you, so that you have a desire and then the word “do” is actually “energeo” also, which means the action flows out. So, the energy starts from your inside. This is what the Greek is like, *for it is God who energises in you both to desire and to energise for His good pleasure*. The desire enters into you and then it finishes its work by the energy flowing out through you in action, but it is the same energy. Only when it is inspired by God, it is the whole energy from Him.

#### *The fruit of His energy in you*

There’s a big difference here. If God never initiates it, it is called works which He does not want but if God energises it, it is the fruit of His energy in you. What is born of the flesh is flesh, what is born of the Spirit is spirit. It must be born of the Spirit. So, the desire must come from God that is there. Desire must come from God, but that desire needs to grow until it can do the action part. That is where we go back to our old test case on Romans 7. We get this where there is a desire on the inside but is not coming out properly. Paul says here about the law in Romans 7:15, *“For what I am doing, I do not understand. For what I will to do*

(the word “will” – desire to do), *that I do not practice; but what I hate, that I do*”. Now, the desire to do obviously came from God. It was to obey the law and to follow God’s Word. That desire, the soul caught on, but the emotion was not winning.

You must get your emotions with you, you must get your mind with you. Let us say your *Soul Will* has received from your *Spirit Will* a desire, but based on Philippians 2:13, the energy that God puts in there must become the energy that flows out from you. The word “do” is the word “*energeo*”, it must *energeo* in and *energeo* out. So, how to make sure it flows out properly all the way, that is the solution we need because our soul has got it, the desire has started. The problem is the desire needs to consume us. How to get the desire to consume our soul, consume all of our being, that is the important part for us. The question is, How?

In Romans 7, Paul also identifies the problem – *but what I hate* – that means he still likes to do, a part of him wants to do the other thing which his inner being hates and the problem, he says, is the body. The body is not flowing along, he says very clearly in verse 18: *in my flesh nothing good dwells*. Then he says (verses 19-20): “*For the good that I (desire or) will to do, I do not do; but the evil I will not to do, that I practice (I end up doing). Now if I do what I will not to do, it is no longer I who do it, but sin that dwells in me*”.

So, you have a problem. The soul is in the middle (the emotion: you do not need to win; the mind: you do not need to win), so the soul receives, but there is the flesh. You have God’s desire flowing in you. How do you win the emotion? How do you win the mind? We concluded that you need the emotion and the mind. Remember there are four states or four phases? State one is the desire or the will. State two is the will and the mind. State three is the will and the emotion. State four is the will and the emotion and the mind. Now, how do we win both of them? We talked about we should, we must, we have to. We must reach to phase four or state four.

*All desires flow through the eye gate*

Desire is linked to the eyes. Spiritual eyes or natural eyes? The natural eye is related to the spiritual eye. All desires flow through the eye gate. Unless some people are born blind, but the inner eyes, all desires are linked to the word “eyes”. That part you must know, because if you do not know, you do not know how to increase.

Let us show from the Bible. Genesis 3. In the temptation, Satan knew, whether good or bad (it can be good or bad), how to get Eve into the wrong area. First, the serpent came to Eve and said in verse 1, *“Has God indeed said, ‘You shall not eat of every tree of the garden’?”* And the woman knew the intellectual argument in verses 2 to 3: *“We may eat the fruit of the trees of the garden; but of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden, God has said, ‘You shall not eat it, nor shall you touch it, lest you die.’”*. The “touch” might have been added in by her but she knew the intellectual argument. Firstly, the serpent contradicted her, contradicted God in verses 4 to 5, *“You will not surely die. For God knows that in the day you eat of it your eyes will be opened, and you will be like God, knowing good and evil”*. Up to verse 5, I believe Eve was doing very well. She started not doing well when somehow, she kept looking at the fruit, it is almost like being hypnotised. Why does hypnotism go through the eyes? Because the eye gate is very important, it is linked to desire. In verse 6, she started failing: *“So when the woman saw that the tree was good for food, that it was pleasant to the eyes, and a tree desirable...”*.

Imagine something is in front of your eyes, whether you like it or not, it produces a desire. Let me take from secular research. I do a lot of Scientific research and all that. For example, they have tested it on people who are singles, when they gather together, who like who the most, and of course the background does come across but when they expose a group of people to images, these people look at different photos and then after that they meet the person. For some people, they only see some photos, but not other photos, and then they see other images. So, they found that if they could show a photo for ten milliseconds (which is not too fast for your eyes to see the image, but your sub-conscious mind gets it), when they tested it on random people, they found that when they brought it into social situation, the people tend to recognise the person in the photo. Something inside them recognises and because of familiarity, they feel more comfortable with the person. They feel more comfortable, they feel the person is friendlier. The power of images. ten milliseconds are not enough for you to see the picture, but it is enough to influence your sub-conscious mind.

They have also done it in many experiments. Like when they have got two different labels and then they want to make you choose the one. Think about free choice. They want to make you choose the one. They flash it for ten milliseconds in images and you look like you have not seen the two bottles before, but you see A as versus B which you never saw. Sub-consciously your mind has already decided to choose A. Think about free choice.

Remember the magicians and all that, who seem to know what you have chosen before you choose? They use hypnotic science. Like they might say on 9 September this certain thing happened or have you noticed nine people over there? At the end of it, sub-consciously, when you are given numbers one to ten, you will choose nine, because they have repeated it so often that they have hypnotised you. So, some say that the serpent was almost hypnotising Eve.

You see, you might say that you are not very hungry now but if the food is right in front of you, steaming hot, with the smell wafting to you, it is different because the image causes a desire. Besides that, I have done a study on the word “eye”. Let us look at the word “eye. “What is the eye”? Jesus says in Matthew 6:22, *“The lamp of the body is the eye...”*. Look very carefully. *The lamp of the body*, remember, you need to get *the body* across the line, *is the eye*. Did you notice He uses the singular word “eye”, not “eyes”? This is because He is not referring to the physical eyes alone.

Physical eyes are only a physical representation. The “eye” is the spiritual desire. What you see will produce an image and make you want it. It is therefore important, what you see and there goes a whole series on *Visualisation* (“*Yetser*”). When I taught it, I taught it in a different way on the importance of it, but you do not realise that every day images are filling your mind all the time.

Jesus says in Matthew 6:22-23, *“The lamp of the body is the eye. If therefore your eye is good, your whole body (Again, did you see the word “body”?) will be full of light. But if your eye is bad, your whole body will be full of darkness. If therefore the light that is in you is darkness, how great is that darkness”!* He has actually given you the secret on how to bring your body along, the eye.

If I were to ask what is the eye representing here, you would say that the eye represents the spirit man, correct? In a sense, you are right. The life, the energy but specifically, let me tell you that the eye is the eye of desire. Whatever produces a desire (but we do not put the word “desire”) produces the image that causes you to long and want that image, it has got you – all through the eye. Then He goes on in verse 24, *“No one can serve two masters...”*. You can only serve one, cannot obey two. Only one can be your master, for you will hate the one and love the other.

Then about the hate. Remember, the problem of hate in Romans 7:15, *what I hate, that I do*. It is because of the image; the problem is the image that the body has of the wrong thing. It wants the wrong thing. It has seen the wrong thing. There is a desire in the body for the wrong thing. The only way is to change the body's desire.

### *Beholding as in a mirror*

All of these verses tell you the importance of the eye. In 2 Corinthians 3:18 it says, *“But we all, with unveiled face, beholding as in a mirror the glory of the Lord, are being transformed into the same image from glory to glory...”*. I have taught this verse before. I have said that the words “beholding as in a mirror” are actually one Greek word, “*katoptrizo*”, a word that originally meant “mirror”. So, in a sense, they are using it as a verb. The exact Greek translation, without breaking it down too much, is, *“But we all, with unveiled face, mirroring the glory of the Lord, are being transformed...”*. “Mirroring” is the word.

I am still debating whether I should put the word “mirroring” rather than “beholding as in a mirror” because the word “beholding” is not in Greek. Only the word “mirror” and the word “mirror” is used as a verb (a noun used as a verb). We seldom use the word “mirroring” even in our English, but it is a noun used as a verb. “Mirroring” is to allow that image to enter into us. We are the mirror. “Mirroring” the image, we are changed. The whole secret is to get the image. If that image is correct, the desire will grow.

Let us look at another case here, 1 Corinthians 2:9. Paul mentions the promise that God has. Isn't it interesting that God says this, *“Eye has not seen, nor ear heard, Nor have entered into the heart of man The things which God has prepared for those who love Him.”*? What does it mean “eye has not seen, nor ear heard”? Why does He start with the eye? Because when God wants to place something into your heart, it must come through the eye gate and the ear gate. Most important, the eye gate. It is through the eye that it enters into your heart that which God has. So, we have here, how to increase the desire from one drop? That desire must be so strong that it produces an image. If you can see that, you will want that image more than anything else.

Let me give an example of Paul. Paul mentioned 2 Corinthians 3:18, correct? Look at how Paul functioned in 2 Corinthians 4, one chapter after he mentioned that. Verse 18 is actually

the last verse of the previous one. 2 Corinthians 3:18 is the last verse. In those days, they did not have chapter and verse, so he continued with his argument.

In 2 Corinthians 4:1 it says, *“Therefore, since we have this ministry... we do not lose heart”*. Then look at all those things that they went through. In verse 7, *“But we have this treasure in earthen vessels, that the excellence of the power may be of God and not of us”*. See, not our own selves but from God. The energy comes from God. Look at what he went through. In verses 8 and 9: *“We are hard-pressed on every side (most people would have died already), yet not crushed; we are perplexed (perplexed is another word like confusion: north, south, east, west), but not in despair; persecuted (left, right, centre), but not forsaken; struck down, but not destroyed ...”*. At the end of the day, he says in verse 11, *“For we who live are always delivered to death for Jesus’ sake...”*. In the end, he says he is able to overcome this because in verses 16 and 17, *“Therefore we do not lose heart. Do you know, if you lose heart, then you lose? If you always want to be a winner and not a loser, guard your heart. If your heart does not lose, you will not lose. You just get up again and go on, get up again and go on, until you win. Champions are made from many trials. Even though our outward man is perishing, yet the inward man is being renewed day by day. For (and he calls everything outside) our light affliction, which is but for a moment... (verse 18) while we do not look at the things which are seen, but at the things which are not seen...”*. They are clearer than the things which are seen. You see his secret? He saw.

Whatever you see will always produce a desire in your heart, remember that. Desire is linked directly to the eye gate. Meditation is a process, prayer and fasting is a process, but you must know what the process is for. The process is so that you can see clearly whatever the desire God has put into you. The more you see it, the more you want it. The more you want it, the more you want to see it. The more you see it, the more you want it, until every drop of your blood is only for that. You have got a big secret. How to harness all the energy of your desire? Watch what you see. If you turn your eyes to begin to look...

Isn't it true that when you go out to buy something and you just stick to it, when you go out and grab a loaf of bread and come back, but if you hang around, you may say I need this, I need that, because your eyes would create a desire? The more you look, the more likely you will buy. Why do you think the advertisers keep showing you things? Ten milliseconds, good

enough, and you do not even know you are being hypnotised. Now you know. You become unhypnotisable because you know.

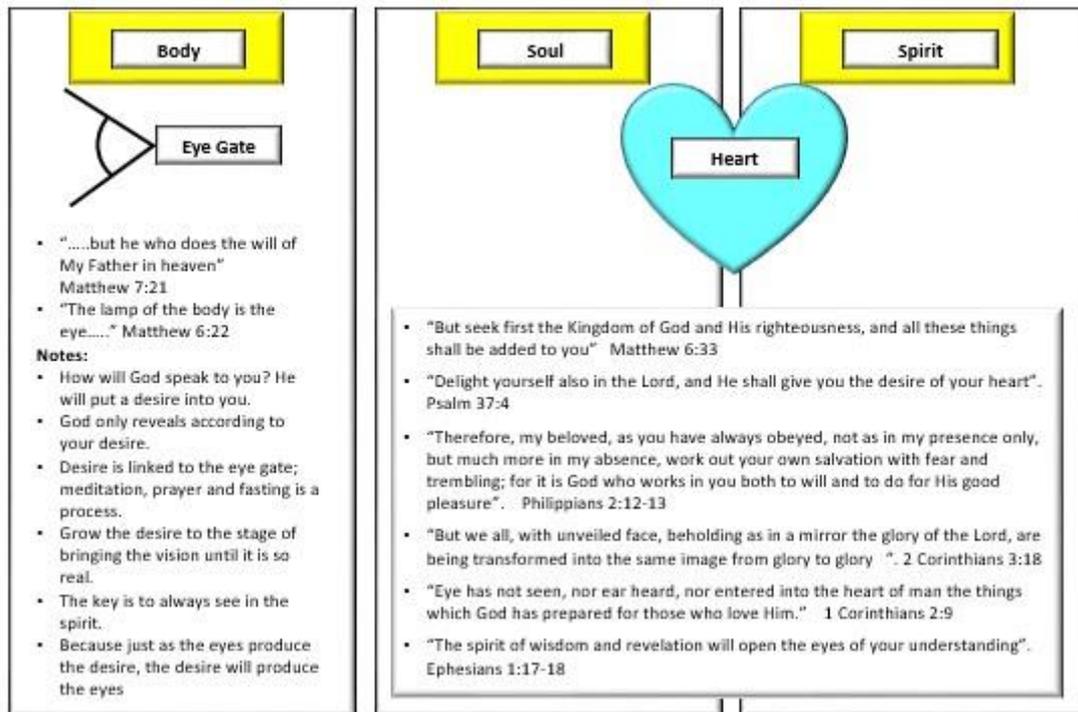


Diagram 2

I repeat, every single desire that you ever had, crept in by an image. Now, let me mention this. Why do some people sometimes have the desire to be a pilot? Because they might have met a pilot, heard about a pilot, seen a pilot from young or from the advertisement in ten milliseconds, whatever. I want you to know, we have discovered a great power and the root of things is the image, which means that if in your life you have got a different type of desire, it takes time to break down the image that is locked on your inside.

The more you see, the more you want. Even on the internet when you are scrolling, you say "I think I like to look at this type of dress or this type of thing", so you keep looking and looking. Watch and see, after one hour of looking, sure to buy something and the more you look, the more you buy, of course, subject to your budget.

The image on your inside is very, very important. You know why a lot of Christians do not have desires for God? Because they do not see the image. They do not see what they can be, which is why God sometimes gives visions and dreams to help them along. When you have visions and dreams, do you know what you should do about them? Keep on seeing them. When you fast and pray, do you know what you must do? When you fast and pray, your mind

is still blank, you must bring the image before you, whether through writing or whatever. When you meditate, you must pause to allow that image to sink in because all those are processes to create an image on your inside.

Now, here is the thing. The eye is the light of the body. You cannot serve two masters. In other words, if there are two images, the stronger one will win. If you serve mammon, mammon will win. If you serve God, put mammon second. You can have many little desires, but there will be a prime desire, which is the main image of what you want. What is my driving image? I want to be the man who walks closest to God. That has been my goal from the day I came to know the Lord. It just drives me on.

You need to see what you want and now God gives a clearer image of what it means, what He can do for you, and I can see clearly the image, the Glorious Church. Every member of the church does not have a single wrinkle. *Wow*, you want to belong to that church, as the Glorious Church. The power of God is so great, it removes the blemish when the power of God goes through you, but you must see it, you must see the possibilities. God gives so many visions, but people do not hold on to them. They do not keep looking at them. The more you look, the more it will affect you.

How many of you cry when you watch Korean drama? It is not a true story, of course sometimes it may be based on a true story, but most of the time, it is just a story. After the actor has finished acting, he wipes off the tears and goes to eat and laugh and drink and you are left sobbing. The images that keep flickering across the screen produce a story and the story moves and touches you. An image conquers your emotion. How about conquering the mind? Remember, it must get your emotion first. Your mind needs knowledge.

Do you know there are two ways that we do God's will, as a servant or as a friend? This is your type of relationship with God. Jesus gives us the answer when He says in John 15:15. At the end of three years, He told His disciples: *"No longer do I call you servants, for a servant does not know what his master is doing (Notice the word "know"?); but I have called you friends, for all things that I heard from My Father I have made known to you"*. That is the difference.

In James 2, it says that Abraham was a friend of God. In the book of Numbers, when Aaron and Miriam were quarrelling about Moses and God defended Moses, saying Moses was more than a prophet, in other words, He is trying to say, he is My friend. In previous verses in Exodus, God spoke to him face to face like a friend. So, God has two friends. What is the difference between friendship with God and service to God? When you are serving God, God does not tell you everything, but the day comes when you have reached a second level of doing God's will, then God talks to you. He lets you know. You do not jump to become a friend of God. You must first serve. You learn to serve because He is your Master.

Then when we have become good servants, faithful servants over a period of time, God starts sharing His secrets with us. When we become His friends, God tells us things and explains things to us. Many people, when they have visions, downloads or whatever, the first thing is they want God to explain. If you have not mastered the art of being a servant, do not try to master the art of being God's friend. You must be a very faithful servant first.

#### *Obedience is better than sacrifice*

The Bible did say that Moses was a very faithful servant. He was a faithful servant to God, he did God's bidding. Abraham was literally a servant. Remember he saw God, represented by the angels, the three of them together, the three men, and he ran, he did not just walk, he ran to prepare things to serve? He was called a friend, but he passed the servant stage, he was a category ten servant, then he became a friend.

Most people are category one servants, with category ten being the best. Your category one servant wants to ask a thousand questions. God says just obey because He gives you the other verse, "*obedience is better than sacrifice*". You know what King Saul was like? He was still trying to be a category 1 servant. He had not even learned to obey properly. Then category two, three, four, five, six, seven, eight, nine, ten, you are close to friendship with God.

God knows that the moment I know what it is He wants me to do, I do not have to understand, He has my absolute obedience. That is the way, my relationship is with God. In everything I always say, "*Is this what God wants*"? Is this what His voice is telling us to do? I will give myself wholeheartedly to it.

When we went in February of 2015, to do the triangular thing, do you think I understood everything? No, all I could remember was in 2013 (two years before, when God was revealing about the birth of the Antichrist in 2015), Archangel Uriel said that we should go on 9 February 2015 to Pergamos and pray for three places, he named Moscow, Rome and Tel Aviv, no explanation, nothing. Then in 2013, again there was the *hoo-ha*, and everybody forgot everything, but I still remember that on 9 February 2015 we must go. In the midst of the *hoo-ha*, everybody forgot, but I still remember because we were told by the angel, “Go”! In my mind, I said we will do it. Did we understand it? No, but when we obeyed, it was done.

God does not have to speak to me directly. If He speaks to somebody else, then I will bring it to God and say, “God, is this Your confirmation of things to be done”? Like, when we went to the Snowy Mountains. God spoke in a vision through someone, from Mark in a four-part or five-part dream of two places to build altars. Did I question? No, the first thing that I checked for, is this of God? Is this the voice of God? I do not care how it comes and if I have determined that this is of God, it is as good as done, Lord. That is how God can entrust me. He says that when I know that it is of God, it is as good as done.

In 2016 we went to Wadi Rum (the highest mountain in Jordan), in obedience to the Lord. It was wonderful, out in the desert, camp in the desert, all-night prayer, hallelujah! You know, come back with the dust all over you. So, obedience. That is how friendship with God is born. Even though you are a friend (and Abraham became a friend of God), the moment God shows up, that is it, 100%. There are two categories of entering into God’s will. Start as a servant and enter into friendship. When you are in a friendship level, remember what Jesus says? He will let you know what is going on. He will tell you things and explain things to you for your understanding. That is when the spiritual mind comes up. So, the first area is how the desire must come into us, and it must win our whole body, our emotions and every part of us. We found that the key is through the eye. If the eye can see it, and here is the thing, sometimes the desire is only a little bit.

For example, if God calls someone to go to Timbuktu, Mali. He might just have a tinkling desire to go. Remember, state 1 is cannot go yet. How to bring it up to state four? That person must say, “*Hmm*, this Timbuktu thing is interesting”. He must go to the internet, read everything about Timbuktu, study everything, and look at pictures of Timbuktu. If the desire is of God, it will grow and as he looks, he might suddenly say, “*Hey*, this looks familiar, *ah*,

predestination”. It might be that God wants him to go, not permanently of course, but for a visit. Or just like God may speak to go to Africa. Remember, now you have got two places to go, right? So, obedience.

When I know God wants to do something, I will start scheduling it. Fine, because unless I obey the *rhema*, nothing else comes. Whatever is depending on that *rhema*, obedience, nothing else comes but I have discovered something wonderful about God. When it is in your heart to do something and you really, really want to do it and are planning to do it and are all locked in to doing it, even though you have not done it, He considers that it is done. He starts treating it as if you have already done it. That is the mercy of God because He knows how obedient you can be. It is important to do it. Put it this way, if God tells me to do something, I do not look at whether I have got the extra finances, I will look at where to find the finance and put it together, that is a different thing. Some people, when God asks them to do something, wait *lah*, Lord, wait until I have got a bit more money, they will never reach it.

God is a God of faith. You think when Abraham was to move, Abraham had more conversations with God, “*God, I will go, and You produce and help me with 10 camel loads of things. I need to accumulate some more. You know lah, Canaan, what is that, do not know what that is. I need to earn a bit more here*”. He would have died, and another person might have gone in, right? There would have been plan B.

When God asks you to do something, you must not be like that young man. If Jesus asks you to sell everything you have and give to the poor and follow Him, you do it straightaway. Do not be like that young man. “*Cannot lah, sell everything, then tomorrow what to eat, depend on Jesus uh*”? If Jesus has food, you have food. Okay, do you think Jesus would eat duck? Okay, so if Jesus does not eat, you do not eat. Follow Jesus. If Jesus has got no place to stay, you have got no place to stay. Didn’t He say, “*Come, follow Me*”? So, the young man missed his big chance. Remember, it says in Matthew 6:33, “*But seek first the kingdom of God and His righteousness, and all these things shall be added to you*”.

You need to be able to grow the desire to the stage of bringing the vision until it is so real. If you hold it long enough, the desire will come and then the desire will produce. You see, when your eyes are seeing only the things that come from God, all the other desires disappear. The

key is to always see in the spirit everything even if there is something in the natural that is there. So, you need to see.

Now, when Jesus saw a woman using leaven to make bread, did Jesus see the woman making bread, or did Jesus see a new parable? When Jesus saw a merchant seeking beautiful pearls, did Jesus just see the pearl, or did Jesus see the meaning behind the pearl? Everything in this life is representing something. When you can see it in the spiritual element above those things, then you realise this.

### *The real you*

To me, all food that we eat is only for our clothing. What? Your body is just your tent. Your body is just your clothing. You cannot take the clothing to heaven. The clothing has to change into something spiritual. Your body is only the clothing, it is not the real you. The real you are your spirit and your soul, which do not look like your body, something like your body but more glorious. If you will always remember that your body is just a clothing and everything you do is just for the clothing and that is not the real you, you will not fuss so much. You will not be so fussy. I mean you will still look for the best. Like for me, because I have so few days for eating, that when I eat, I make sure that it is really a good meal, but I am not fussy. If there is nothing much, I will take what is there.

So, your body is just a clothing. The next time you look at chicken rice, remember, that chicken rice is just helping to iron your clothing. You need to remember that all that you are doing in the natural is just for your clothing. You need to have sufficient time for your real you. Think of how much you do. When you exercise, it is just ironing your clothing; some of your clothing needs ironing. You need to keep yourself fit by ironing your clothing. You have got to see it differently. Remember, the eyes see everything, but yet the eyes do not see everything. The eyes need to see the real thing.

Jesus, whatever He did, could see the spiritual dimension behind it. When He looked at the farmers sowing, He could see that, that was the Word being sown. Where did Jesus get His parable from? Every parable comes from natural life, correct? Jesus was observing natural life. He was not like being segregated and lived as a hermit in a cave. He looked at natural life and He could see that the sowing was like the Word. All His parables came from natural

life. When He said, “*Come, I will make you fishers of men*”, He saw people fishing and He could see that it was like catching humans, bringing them into the kingdom of God.

Every day you have got to think of a higher dimension and, of course, the most important is the real images of God. Like what do I see every day when I pray? I see signs and wonders. I see miracles. I keep seeing them before my eyes. I see people getting healed. I see the stick turn into a snake. I see us being transported in the Spirit. I see, and I keep seeing and I keep seeing. Remember, what did Paul say? We do not look at the things of this world. If he did not, what was he looking at? He kept looking at the spiritual dimension. He kept seeing the things that God revealed. Why do I have a burning desire for heaven? I keep seeing heaven.

Whatever your eyes lay on, your eyes will desire. If you can keep seeing heaven and Jesus, you will love heaven, you will love to be there. Some of you might say, “I did not see any visions and all that”. It does not matter, you develop from your desire because just as the eyes produce the desire, the desire will produce the eyes. The desire will bring you into the picture of what your eyes see. Didn’t Ephesians 1:17 to 18 say that the spirit of wisdom and revelation will open the eyes of your understanding? The eyes are there.

So, first, the eyes. To increase the desire from level one to level four but do not think about your inside, just you. Think about becoming a friend of God. You want to be someone whom God can say, “On the planet earth now, I have that friend”. For the privilege of friendship, you must pass the servanthood test from category one to category ten. You must learn to hear God, obey, hear God, obey. Sometimes He will test you whether you will obey. Hear God, obey, hear God, obey. Always choose and then when you pass a certain test, God says, “I am well pleased with you, you are My friend”. Then another level of revelation. God has a different relationship with you. Remember Jesus says, “*I do not call you servants, but I have called you friends*”. He told His disciples this, “*For a servant does not know what his master is doing*”. I will now let you know what I am doing”. The you will reach another category.

When you obey God, aim for that. You know, it is all right even if on this earth you do not have many friends. Just make sure that the few friends you have, among them is God and the world will become eviler, so you will have less and less chance of being friends with the world. However, the most important friend of all your friends is God. So, if I were to ask you,

who is your best friend, some of you might talk about your spouse and all that. That is understandable but, in a sense, who is your best friend? Should be God or Jesus.

*Jesus must be your best friend*

If Jesus is not your best friend yet, let me tell you, you do not know God yet. If Jesus is not your best friend yet, let me tell you, you are less than Abraham, correct? After all, Abraham was a friend of God. If Jesus is not your best friend yet, you are less than Moses and your New Testament is a disgrace. If Jesus is not your best friend yet, something is wrong with your Christianity. If you are a disciple of Jesus, if Jesus is not your best friend yet, you are not even reaching John 15:15, you are like the disciples before Jesus went to the cross. Shame on you.

Of all the people in the world, you are the bride of Christ. You know who the bride of Christ is? Remember, we always say, the best marriage is the marriage of best friends. So, in terms of a created being and an earthly person, your spouse is supposed to be your best friend. Why do you think Jesus wants us to be His bride? If on earth we say the best marriage is the marriage of best friends that can last through any storm, and Jesus chooses us to be His bride, shouldn't the bride know Jesus better than any other being in the universe?

The angels do not get married to Him, we do. We should know Jesus better than the angels and Jesus should know us, of course, better than anything. We should know Jesus better than the four living creatures because the four living creatures are not getting married to him, we are. We should know Jesus better than the twenty-four elders because the twenty-four elders are not getting married to Him, we are. We thank God for the four living creatures, the twenty-four elders and all the angels. They are all helping to impart their knowledge to us, bringing us to the place so that we can be the best friend to Jesus (His bride).

## Chapter 22...

### Will of the Body

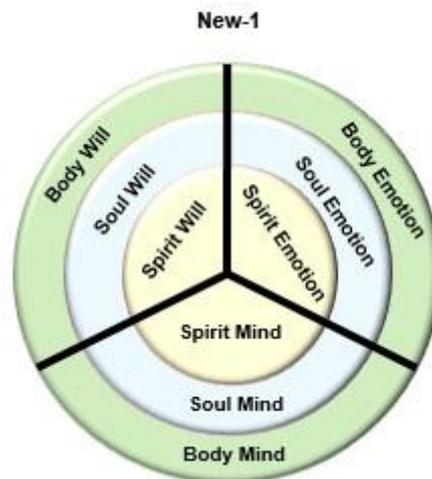


Diagram 1

The inner circle is the *Spirit* (spirit man), the middle circle is the *Soul*, and the outer circle is the *Body*. We have been, focusing on the will of the soul and from the will of the soul, we go to the will of the spirit. We have covered the *Emotions*, we have covered the *Will* and that the will has four states – the will by itself; the will and the emotion; the will and the mind; the will and the emotion and the mind. The stronger the state, the better. It strengthens the will. That helps us to understand why one person's will is weak and another is strong because the emotion and the mind are flowing together with the will.

Now I will show you, the will of the body and how it relates to the soul and the spirit. How do I discern, you know, which desire? Remember the word “will”, is linked to the word “desire”? In the Bible, the word “will” and “desire” are synonymous. They are from the same Greek word, translated differently. So, that is the word “desire”. We wonder which desire is from God.

Let us look first at Romans 12:1-2. Paul says, *“I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that you present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable to God, which is your reasonable service. And do not be conformed to this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind, that you may prove what is that good and acceptable and*

*perfect will of God*". We have done a lot of studies, in verse 2, the words "conformed" and "transformed"; the Greek words, like "*metamorphoomai*"; and all those words that are there. Now, verse 1, which is linked to verse 2, that the two are related. Verse 2 talks about fulfilling the will of God but in verse 1, before it talks about renewal of the mind, we know that the renewal of the mind is very important because the renewal of the mind helps us to discern God's will. By discerning God's will, we are able to know what the will of the spirit is and then our soul will line up with the will of the spirit, then we can do and perform the will of God (which is in the Lord's prayer), saying, "*Our Father in heaven, Hallowed be Your name. Your kingdom come. Your will be done On earth as it is in heaven*". So, *Your kingdom come* – we want His will to be done and obviously verse 2 is very sensible, very obvious, that we need to understand that our mind must be renewed and we must not be conformed to the world.

Here is my question, what does the body have to do with it in verse 1? "... *present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable...*". Now, notice the word "holy"? "Acceptable" is repeated in verse 2. In the Greek, "holy" is "*hagios*", "acceptable" is "*euarestos*". Then in verse 2, "*euarestos*". Can you see they use the same Greek word in verses 1 & 2? Of course, the only addition in verse 2 is the word "perfect" ("*teleios*" or "complete").

Then, verse 1 tells us it is part of doing God's will, because it says this is *your reasonable service*. "Reasonable" is from the Greek word "*logikos*" (rational). The word "*logikos*" is used in many ways, in derivations, like "*logismos*" and all that, talking about reasoning with God, the logical mind. *Logismos* is the word for logical mind. Translated as "logical mind" also. Obviously, something happens when you present your body. When you present your body, it results in reasonable service – "service" is actually the word "ministry" – "*latreia*" which means ministrations, worship or service rendered to the Lord or the worship of God. *Latreia* sounds like a good word for a lady's name. So, we have here, "*latreia*" which means a worship, or a service rendered to God, perhaps simply, worship.

Why does it happen in verse 1? What has the body to do with the will of God? You see – *present your bodies a living sacrifice..., which (he says) is your reasonable service* – if you read it together, you thought that presenting your body is your reasonable service. Yes, it is part of it but how come it is linked to the second part, in verse 2, "*And do not be conformed*

*to this world, but (let your mind be renewed) be transformed by the renewing of your mind...”?*

Here is my question, if I do not do verse 1, is verse 2 possible? That means, if I do not present my body, I jump straight to renewing of my mind, *do not be conformed to this world*, can I prove (“prove” is “test”) what is the will of God (whether it is good and acceptable and perfect will of God)? So, my question is, can I do verse 2 without verse 1, which is presenting my body? Renewing my mind seems so good. Why?

Can you see, when you ask questions like why? Can you see that you all can have the answers, but you need to ask why? That is where revelation comes from. You are curious, you wonder, if they have to stand together, why? Is there something here? You see, you get your answers. The body has its own will. Sinful nature in the body has its own will. The body has a mind of its own. All this is true.

Now, when you begin to study the Bible yourself and ask questions like that, you need to find verses that support what you say, which, if you know the Bible very well, is Romans 7. If you do not know the Bible very well, get a Concordance. In Romans 7, that will help you understand Romans 12. By the way, both are in the same book. Long ago, they did not have chapters and verses. Paul assumes that when you read Romans 12, you have already known everything from Romans 1 to 11 but because the way you read the Bible is you read a bit here, a bit there, you do not see the connection. However, when you read right through, you are supposed to link the whole truth together.

In Romans 7, he introduces the subject of the body having its own will, its own desire – in the middle section, he begins to talk about sin nature. In verses 9-12, he says, *“I was alive once without the law, but when the commandment came, sin revived and I died. And the commandment, which was to bring life, I found to bring death. For sin, taking occasion by the commandment, deceived me, and by it killed me. (So sin is like an entity.) Therefore the law is holy, and the commandment holy and just and good”*. Let us jump downwards to verses 16-18, *“If, then, I do what I will not to do, I agree with the law that it is good. But now, it is no longer I who do it, but sin that dwells in me. (He mentions the sin dwelling in him). For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh) nothing good dwells...”*. In the physical body

(that is the word “*sarx*”), there is something there and he says *nothing good dwells*, sin nature.

Sin nature is not in your soul. Your soul is affected by the sin nature in your body. Sin nature is in the body and the sin nature that is in the body is causing all these problems. Like Paul says, to will is present, but how to perform he cannot do.

Then he says in verse 2, “*Now if I do what I will not to do, it is no longer I who do it, but sin that dwells in me*”. Everything is in this body. Look at verse 23, the word “members” refers to the physical body again, because the contextual use of the word “members” in chapter 6 is the members of his physical body. It says in verse 23, “*But I see another law in my members, warring against the law of my mind* (you see, he has a mind of its own but there is another thing in the body warring) *and bringing me into captivity to the law of sin which is in my members*”. You have to confirm that the word “members” refers to his physical body. Verse 24, “*O wretched man that I am! Who will deliver me from this body* (can you see that) *of death*”?

That is why in order to discern God’s will, you must present your body first but how many people do that? You know what most Christians do? They think that all they have to do is try to think, find out, pray, get revelation of God’s will, and then they get it, correct? Nobody takes care of Romans 12:1, the body.

Body	Soul	Spirit
<p>Romans 12:1 "... that you present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable to God, which is your reasonable service".</p> <p>Overcome inner conflict:-                      #1 – Present your bodies as a living sacrifice (in the presence of God)</p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Worship</li> <li>• Waiting on God</li> <li>• Fasting &amp; praying</li> </ul> <p>#2 - Jesus delivered us and our mind served the law of God, Romans 7:25</p> <p>#3 – Focus on the Word, Hebrew 4:12</p>	<p>Romans 12:2 "... but be transformed by the renewing of your mind, that you may prove what is that good and acceptable and perfect will of God".</p> <p>Hebrew 4:10 "For he who has entered His rest has himself also ceased from his works as God did from His".</p> <p>Hebrew 4:12 "For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart".</p>	<p>Romans 8:6 "For to be carnally minded is death, but to be spiritually minded is life and peace".</p>

Diagram 2

All Christians, in practice, go straight to Romans 12:2. They know that verse 1 is there and they thought that verse 1, presenting the body is like living a surrendered life kind of thing. They forget that when Paul says *you present your bodies a living sacrifice* is like each time when you want to hear God, you must bring the noise in your body to be still, which a lot of Christians do not do. They forget about the body, they only are conscious of the mind and that is trying to get verse 2 without verse 1. Most Christians do that. The mental consciousness is all they go for but with God, something must be done to the body, where the body must be brought into a state of surrender, which leads us to the next question. How? We ask why, right? How to present the body? Our body needs to be dealt with the *how*. Fasting and prayer is one of them. Let us see whether that is correct.

### *Discerning God's will*

Have you noticed that throughout the Bible, when they fasted and prayed was when they discerned God's will? Interesting, isn't it? When they sinned, when they fell, or different things happened, even most of you know that verse, 2 Chronicles 7:14, "*if My people who are called by My name will humble themselves, and pray and seek My face, and turn from their wicked ways, then I will hear from heaven, and will forgive their sin and heal their land*". The word "humble" in the original Hebrew and Greek implies fasting. Fasting is implied and that was the verse spoken by God as a promise to Solomon when he built the Temple and dedicated it. God told him, "I will do this to anyone who comes to this Temple, since you have dedicated it to Me".

Then in practice, we see them doing it in the book of Kings and the book of Chronicles, every time they went astray, when nobody was hearing God anymore, they humbled themselves, they fasted, they prayed, they heard God. In the time of Hezekiah, in the time of Uzziah, in the time of Josiah. All these revivals came when they did, I repeat (because you concentrate on the mind so much), when they did something to their bodies. You see, you are going to think, *oh*, when they prayed. *Ya*, very good but I want to emphasise, when they did something to their bodies. Remember what Paul calls this body, body of death, body of sin, when they bring their bodies into the place of a living sacrifice.

Then you have our Lord Jesus Christ, the last Adam, the second Man, He fasted. The first man (Adam) sinned by eating, the second Man (Jesus) redeemed us by fasting and, of course, some people in the *hyper-grace* do not believe in fasting and prayer. They should read the

Bible. The people in the book of Acts fasted and prayed. Are you saying that you are better than the people in the book of Acts? Can any modern church say that they are better than the church in the book of Acts? I do not see any modern church that is even close to it in the book of Acts. Do you think you know better? Just because you have got the numbers, but do you have the signs and wonders in the presence of God? Even the cults do have some numbers too. You know, some of these cults are by the thousands. They are also mega.

Now, if we admit that the church in the book of Acts is the prime standard, and if they fasted and they prayed (they fasted before they appointed elders in Acts 14, they fasted, and they prayed often), and you say I do not see the exact word “fasting”. Paul tells you in 2 Corinthians 11:27, *in fastings often*, often, that means throughout his prayers and journeys. In Acts 13:1-2, when they came together, they prayed, they fasted and ministered to the Lord. You see, fasting is not just to ask for something. They fasted as a reasonable worship to the Lord.

So, do not let *hyper-grace* deceive you, saying, “Jesus did everything for you; you do not need to do anything”. Okay, correct, half the truth. Jesus did everything for the people in the book of Acts, correct? Why, you think they did not know the grace message like you do today? More and better. It was Paul who wrote about the grace of God and yet Paul fasted. Are you better than the Apostle Paul?

Not a single preacher today has overtaken what the Apostle Paul had done in one life time. Look at how many churches he planted by himself and, yet Paul fasted and prayed. Do you think he does not know the grace message? He does. If he does, it means the *hyper-grace* message is wrong and Paul is right. That they are wrong because they pick pieces of the Bible here and there when the whole Bible reveals that there is still fasting and prayer.

Correct, Jesus has done everything for us but even Jesus says the days will come when the bridegroom will be taken away from them, then they will fast and pray. Remember that? When they said, “Why don’t Your disciples fast”? He said that the days will come, because He is the bridegroom. So, when the bridegroom is there, they are not fasting but when the bridegroom is taken away, they will fast and pray.

Let us look at one occasion in Acts 13 to see whether this principle is true. In Acts 13:1-2, “Now in the church that was at Antioch there were certain prophets and teachers: Barnabas, Simeon who was called Niger, Lucius of Cyrene, Manaen who had been brought up with Herod the tetrarch, and Saul... (he has not changed his name to Paul yet). As they ministered to the Lord and fasted...”. They did not fast for something, they fasted to worship, lovely isn’t it? They fasted as an act of presenting their bodies as a living sacrifice.

When Jesus asked, “Who do men say that I am”? They said, you know, *blah, blah, blah* and then Jesus said, “But who do you say that I am”? *Wah*, silence for a moment but in that silence, the Holy Spirit of the Father was speaking to Peter and he said, “You are the Christ, the Son of the living God”. At least he shouted out, “You are the Christ, the Son of the living God”. Then Jesus said, “Flesh and blood has not revealed this to you, but My Father who is in heaven”. You see, he did not know. That is how the Father speaks. So close and yet so powerful and spiritual. Just in your thoughts.

#### *Hear your inner thoughts*

The Holy Spirit will quicken things to you. That is the reason why sometimes I like to ask questions. It quickens you to hear your inner thoughts and you did not realise that your inner thoughts were the Holy Spirit telling you the answers and training you in the process of listening to recognise that those thoughts you are receiving are different from ordinary thoughts. It has an extra flavour, which is the voice of the Holy Spirit guiding you into the things of God.

So, here we have that they fasted and prayed, exactly like Romans 12:1, to present themselves. They were giving themselves to God. To present is to give yourself to God, rather than asking for something. So how many people fast to worship? I know there are a lot of people who might fast, desperate for something. It is called the *desperado* fast, “*Huh, huh*, I need an answer, I need an answer, *huh, huh*” – it is really a *desperado* fast.

I live a fasted life. I only eat one main meal because sometimes I eat fruits and drink liquid. Basically, just one main meal. Sometimes it is a bigger portion, sometimes a smaller portion, depending on what kind of day I am having. Then I always fast usually on Thursday and Friday, two days a week. On Sundays I do not eat anything except have an avocado juice in between the services, and at night, after everything is over, then I eat. It is almost like a one-

day fast. On top of that, I have a different fast that God calls for. So, can you imagine, so much fasting, so much prayer, but it is not necessarily to seek God for something. Some will ask, “*Eh*, what do you mean *from God*? When are you fasting”? Why, you just cannot fast because you love God? *Desperado*, okay, at least you look to God to solve your problems, but it is better to discipline yourself to give a day to God.

Sometimes when I have a family gathering, I realise, okay, my Thursday and Friday are going to be taken away, I have to eat with them and I want to eat with them, then I replace that. Then, I change the fast on that day to some other day or whatever and replace that because I promised God that ever since He told me that I was going to be translated, I said, “As a thanksgiving to You, I give You all my Thursdays”. That is a day of fasting. It is a Thanksgiving Day of fasting. That is a lot of Thursdays from now until 2060. So, I have always replaced that. Whenever something clashes, or a special gathering, or a wedding, or something, I replace that. Friday has always been a day of fasting and prayer because it is all-night prayer. Sometimes when I am travelling, I might eat something, but when I am not travelling, it is always a day of fasting, waiting on the Lord. Sometimes I replace that and then I give and take, because sometimes if I have been fasting for very long (14 days or 21 days), then the next week, I will take it easy a little bit. I still fast on Thursdays. *Oh*, thanksgiving, do not touch that one but Friday, I will eat because I have been fasting. So that is why I am getting less and less days to eat but it is okay because one day we will grow to the stage where we do not need to eat anymore. Why, you are not happy? Suddenly you look so sad. It is so convenient, you will have more time and less cooking.

#### *The Lord is training us*

There is a fast to minister to God, this is the one in Acts 13:2, “*As they ministered to the Lord and fasted...*”. Notice, the Holy Spirit spoke to them? Isn’t that a fulfilment of Romans 12:2? They presented their bodies as a living sacrifice, they were fasting, not for anything, they did not know what might happen and most likely they had been doing it for a long time and regularly in the church, just like our all-night prayer, which we have always been doing and we will do until Jesus comes. *Oh*, when Jesus comes, the whole year might be all-night prayer, and the last year before Jesus comes. So, the Lord is training us. You know, we are getting used to this thing that the Lord is training. The Lord is breaking down our structured thing that says, by 9:00 pm something must finish, by 9:30 pm something must finish. He is breaking that down. I said, “Lord, give us time, we are adjusting”.

You know, we are not like the people of long ago. Today, some people work even two jobs to make a living. Remember, long ago, a one person in the family worked to support the whole family? Now, in many homes, because of the price of houses and everything else, you need two income earners to support the whole family. The world is changing and that is the system of the world. They get you stuck in the world, until everybody goes to work just to put food on the table or a roof over their head and they get stuck in that.

At the same time, because of God's supernatural move, imagine when we have developed all the ten thousand churches, and we have got funds all over the world, and we have a lot of prayers. There will, of course, be people working on the farms and all that. Then most of the time when you pray, if you do not go for fancy food, you can always go and pluck an avocado when you are hungry and eat it. Imagine that day is coming. That is how the world will be, the Antichrist on one side, then us on the other side, not literally, but need to be spread all over the world. He has his own world system. We have a system where the people of God are clothed, fed and sheltered. We might not need even money. We spend the days working together, all helping in doing something and serving the Lord. Isn't that wonderful? Because what do you need in life? Food, clothing, shelter, correct? A bit of spare time and a bit of pocket money, that is all you need. If you have got all those things, and the church is part and parcel of those things, then praise the Lord, full-time. All the rest of your days serving God, preparing and interceding, praying for people, bringing healings, signs and wonders, telling people about God. It is almost like the Garden of Eden all over again, except do not walk around naked. We have got fruitful trees that bear fruits. When you pray, out of season, all the fruits come. That is the kind of atmosphere we will create on the planet earth.

So, here in Acts 13:2, we have that the Lord spoke to them. Exactly Romans 12:1-2. They ministered to the Lord and fasted, and one fine day the Lord said, "... *separate to Me Barnabas and Saul for the work to which I have called them*". They said, "Wow, the Lord has spoken. The will of the Lord is revealed". When the Lord revealed, and they were going to do what the Lord said, you know what they did again? Look at verse 3, "*Then, having fasted...*". They had just fasted and ministered to the Lord, then the Lord spoke, then they fasted again in order to send them out. So, you wonder when they got to eat. If you have seen visions of Jesus in His time, Jesus actually lived a fasted life. He ate very little. Of course, His body was sinless, but He ate very little.

Here we have a direct application of Romans 12:1-2. Now we at least know the answer. Worship and waiting on God. Very good because when you bring your body into subjection, sometimes you have got to kneel, especially when you want to humble yourself before God, you kneel. If after a long time you have not knelt before, just kneel. It feels good to humble yourself before God, but it is the heart that is important but sometimes when you bring your body to kneel down, it feels good.

In fact, the words “worship” and “prostrate” are from the same Greek word. When you see a person prostrate himself, same Greek word. John 12:20 says, “*Now there were certain Greeks among those who came up to worship at the feast*”. The word “worship” is “*proskuneo*” meaning, a probable derivative of *kuon* (meaning to kiss, like a dog licking his master’s hand), to fawn or crouch to, i.e. (literally or figuratively) prostrate oneself in homage (do reverence to, adore). Can you see that? The word “worship” in Greek means to bow down. Here are all the other verses for “*proskuneo*” (worship). Here is one translated as “kneeling” in Matthew 20:20, “*Then the mother of Zebedee’s sons came to Him with her sons, kneeling down...*”, it is “*proskuneo*”. The word “*proskuneo*” has been translated as “bow down, kneel down, worship” because inside the word “worship” includes the words “bowing down”, “prostrate”. It involves your body.

#### *Bow down to God*

The next time when you worship God, bow down. Read the book by Judson Cornwall, *Let Us Praise*. It is a good book. I do not know where he is today, Judson Cornwall, but he wrote the book. Usually when somebody has written that book, you do not rewrite that book. So, I will just point to it because I read that book. When I write a book, it has to be new material.

Long ago, when I was the first in Asia to start writing books (I was among the first Asian ministers to start writing books), I taught them on how to organise things, write books, publish books etc. Some of the new upcoming associates that were trained in the five-fold ministry came to me and said, “I am thinking of writing a book”. My first question was, is it the same material or new material? I mean, if you have ten thousand people write a book about how to read the Bible, then it is nothing new. It is just like, you know, if there are a lot of hawker stalls selling *wonton mee* and you say, “*Oh, I want to open another wonton mee stall*”, *eh*, they might have enough up there. Instead of *wonton mee*, you might invent something new. You say, “I am going to open a shop”. “What is that? What *mee* is that”?

“This is *kentang mee*”. “What is *kentang mee*”? “That is right, never heard before, taste it and see”. So, whatever, it is, it has to be new. To write a book, you must have new material. You must say something different from everybody else or add to the knowledge that is already there but if somebody has already written something, I do not want to rewrite that. I say, “*Eh, go and read that book, it is a good book*”. Some preachers do not do that because they want all the credit to themselves. Give credit where credit is due because nobody has all the revelations. To each one, they will discover different revelations. If somebody has discovered, you acknowledge it, you accept it and say, “*Hey, hallelujah, you have discovered that section*”.

Judson Cornwall was the first to discover the seven Hebrew words for praise. Remember, he says “*towdah, barak*”, which means to kneel down, and then one with extended hand and all this worship? When you worship, your body is involved, whether you are standing up and lifting your hands (that is one of the Hebrew words), or whether you are singing and dancing before God. I consider a small movement as dancing, so you will start seeing me jumping up and down, jumping up and down. You can jump if you want, it is all right. We need a church where people can feel free to worship, except do not jump and hit somebody but it involves your body. When you bring your body into the worship, whether to prostrate or something, it is part of Romans 12:1, part of presenting your body. Whether in this way or that way, kneeling down, prostrating, your body has to be involved.

You find that, once you start becoming a worshipper, it is very hard to sing to God nowadays, the minimum, you still want to move your body. You will find that your body wants to extend, correct? Your body wants to do something. Feel free, extend your body, do whatever you want, just do not knock somebody over, but it is important to let your body partake. Fasting and prayer is one, worship is the other. You say, “Pastor, what is the value of this”? It does something to quiet your body so that you can, like in Romans 12:2, hear God. The body has its own noise and that noise must be turned into worship.

Let me give you another scripture besides the word “worship”. It is a verse that you all know, from Isaiah 40:31, “*But those who wait on the LORD Shall renew their strength; They shall mount up with wings like eagles, They shall run and not be weary, They shall walk and not faint*”. Now, do you notice that here the word “wait” is the Hebrew word “*qavah*”? Those who *qavah* – *qavah* means to intertwine with the Lord. The word “*qavah*” has been used in

Genesis 1:2 where it talks about the Holy Spirit hovering over the face of the waters and gathering the waters together in verse 9. The word “*qavah*” has also been translated as “gather” (to be gathered together with). So, the word “wait” on the Lord is to be gathered together with the Lord, to entwine with the Lord.

### *Linked to the physical body*

In Isaiah 40:31 it also links to the physical body. The words before verses 29 and 30 talk about “*He gives power to the weak, And to those who have no might He increases strength. Even the youths shall faint and be weary, And the young men shall utterly fall*”. In verse 31, “*But...*”, can you see that word “But”? It looks like waiting on God is linked to the physical body. I point to the Bible verse to support, that the word “wait” immediately ties to the physical body, even before and after because it says they shall renew their strength like eagles, then it suddenly talks about the physical body. They shall run, they shall walk and then it shows they have got a lot of strength, physical strength that is there. The word “wait” implies that your body is brought to subjection as a living sacrifice.

You say, *wah*, so many verses to do with the will of the body. You do not let your body run wild. It is just like little children. Our body is like a little child. If you suddenly have twenty children in church, you better have activities for them. How many little kids could stay still for long? I am teaching Greek words, Bible words, and then the kids say “Amen”. When I am describing things like nuclear physics and the law, they say “*O yeah*”. No, you need activities for the kids. They have got energy, they say I want to colour, I want to do this because kids have to be controlled with the bodily activities. It helps them. Your body is like a kid. Your body needs to be put in the right place, to be brought into the right position, and then you can hear the voice of God better.

Verse 2 of Romans 12 does not work without verse 1. *The Will of the Body*, which includes the mind of the body, which includes the emotions of the body. By the way, when you present your body to be a living sacrifice, you will capture the will, the emotion and the mind of the body, because it will be brought into focus.

Here is an interesting thing in my observation. Why is it that some people need, what I call, a nervous tic to balance their body? Have you noticed some people, when they are talking to you, they are either holding something or moving? These are all indications of nervous

tension in the body, right? Nervous tension. You know, a person always has a foot tapping, when he is talking to you. Why must his leg shake? Or sometimes when the people are sitting down, they fidget. Have you seen some people do that? By the way, you will never see me doing that.

Why are some people “leg-shakers”? You know why, there is a psychological explanation, it talks about the tension that you have to release. What happens if people do not do that? They go berserk because you know why, everybody needs a sense of relaxation. That is how different people come out with their way of feeling relaxed. When they are very relaxed, they go limp, but actually they are tensed but that is the way they release their tension.

### *Release your tension*

In a social circle, can you see the President of the United States or the Prime Minister of Singapore sitting down with his leg like that, while waiting for his turn to speak? Nervous tension. It is just not so presentable. You must find another way to release your tension, that is all. If you do not find another way, your body will find its own way. So, they are talking to you, but their hands keep doing something. If you find yourself sub-consciously doing those things, videotape yourself and see how distracting it looks. Then change your lifestyle, find another way to release your tension, a politer way.

Some of you say, “*Eh*, Pastor, how did you do it”? I have zero tension, very relaxed inside, because Hebrews 4:10-11 says, when you enter the rest, something inside you calms down, because a spiritual rest calms your body. Sometimes it is the tension from inside, but you progress into the rest. While progressing, people need help and I can tell you several good ways, like sing, shout to the Lord, play a guitar, play a musical instrument, because those are the ways to release the tension. When you worship the Lord, you sing, and you cannot just pray in tongues or sing in tongues. At first all your tongues sound funny but that is your way. Part of it is your release of tension, part of it is in tongues. Okay, analyse it, the language is just *halaba, halaba, halaba*, right? I could have said: [slowly] *halaba, halaba, halaba*. Can you see, I could have done that? Or I could sing: [softly] *halaba, halaba, halaba!*; rather than: [loudly] *halaba, halaba, halaba*.

God gives you the language of tongues and you express it according to your own way and you learn skills. Now, you can lock yourself into the cycle and you do not want to change,

but if you are careful, you can change, which explains some of your funny tongues. So, sometimes you find some people speak like with high note and then they are very quiet and then suddenly a lower note. Then high note. Then low note. Then high note. Does God speak in tongues that way? Can you imagine Jesus doing that? Jesus is talking to you normally, then He is talking in high notes. That looks more like a person quite tensed. It is manifested from improper vessels.

Or if you see me minister in this way, with hands shaking, some people may say, “*Huh*, the anointing is cult”. So, what do you mean? How do you know it is cult? Because my hand is shaking? “You mean when your hand is shaking more, more anointing? Then we will help you shake your hand”. No, that is not the anointing; that is the side effect of the anointing and it has different side effects. With some people, this is the side effect. Can you imagine Jesus, every time the anointing comes, doing that? When Jesus wants to lay hand on the people, shake, shake shake.

Let us differentiate the side effect from the anointing. Now, why does that happen? Because all of us have tension points and when it flows through a tension point, you express it differently. However, when you are aware of it, as you know, our voice carries our emotion. The more tensed you are, the higher pitch your voice will be. Yes, naturally. Have you heard someone screaming, say: [softly] “*Oh*, help me”. No, never. It is like [very loudly] “Help me!”, right? No one says: [softly] “*Oh*, help me”. Never in a low tone because it is not natural when they are stressed.

In the same way, when you speak in tongues, remember, I say speak in tongues, you can speak in tongues in any key. Same tongues. You can speak in tongues in a high note, probably some high C note. You can speak the same tongues in a lower note, right? You control the note. You are in control. Do not say you are not in control. You are in control, except by habit and default.

All of us have our own voice. Some of your voices may be lower than mine. You can tell whether it is a male voice or a female voice. Of course, we are all born with different vocal chords. Some of you, when you are relaxed, already it is at a different level, but it is important, your individual level, that you know when your voice is relaxed and when your voice is tensed. To learn to find that place in your own voice when you are most relaxed. The

voice changes. Over these one to two years, my voice has been getting lower and lower. I hope that by 2060, it is not so low that people cannot hear me and can only hear me in the spirit. No, I am just joking. You have your natural voice. Find your natural relaxed voice and learn to speak at that level. At first it will feel artificial to you, but it is part of training your body.

Remember, I talked about one of the ways in which you release your tension is in singing, worshipping or dancing unto the Lord? When I say dancing, I do not mean going into a trance. When I talk about dancing, I mean dancing before the Lord. Did King David dance? We have got one song, *When the spirit of the Lord moves within my house, I will sing like David sang*, and David danced. When the Ark of God was coming in, he danced. The king of Israel danced because he was a dramatic man and he was an action man. He needed to release that. All this is part of worship. The title, Worship. Second point is worship (because fasting and prayer is the first point), worship as a release of Romans 12:1.

#### *Present your bodies*

You see, many people do not relate that “*present your bodies*” is allowing your bodies to participate in the worship of God. Of course, Asians tend to be more conservative. In some of your Singapore churches, maybe the young people and all that, you know, when Sunday comes, they worship. Of course, it depends, some of it is hyped up. I do not like the hyped up, it has to be natural because there is a difference between an emotional atmosphere and a spiritual atmosphere. The spiritual atmosphere includes the emotion, but the emotional atmosphere sometimes has zero spirit and you could feel that there is an emptiness there. A big difference. Emotion is fine as long as it is a part of the overflow and side effects, but it is not fine when it is the main thing you are trying to achieve.

Which is why I teach our worship leaders, you will never find me telling people to clap. I might say, “Let us give God a clap offering”. That is different, but I will never say, “Let us clap”. I will either sing or myself clap and then people follow. You do not tell people what to do. You let people find out what to do because by the time you tell them what to do, it is different, you are telling them. They will do it because it is a flowing atmosphere. However, if they do it, because it is something flowing, you do not need to tell them what to do.

If you are a good worship leader, you do not have to say, “*Eh*, you all are a bit too quiet *lah*, let us worship God louder”. That is a bad worship leader. Sorry, worship leaders, if anyone who reads this and gets corrected. All over the world, you find them doing it, “*Ho*, let us sing louder to God”. Why don’t you yourself sing louder to God, right? “Let’s all dance before the Lord”. Why don’t you stop telling people to dance and you yourself dance first, correct?

*God is speaking to you in worship*

It has to be fluid, it has to be flowing and when it is flowing, it is most beautiful because it is just like sometimes when you sing a song, you just cannot help but you just want to dance a little bit, because it is a moving and a joyful thing. When you sing: *The joy of the Lord is my strength*, it is natural; it is not something artificial. That is part of worship in bringing your body into a living sacrifice, it involves that. When it involves that, it is powerful. Your body suddenly is so still. The will, you see, when your body is under subjection, all you hear is your inside and your inside is where God is speaking to you in worship.

One more verse to tie it all together is Isaiah 64:4, “*For since the beginning of the world Men have not heard nor perceived by the ear, Nor has the eye seen any God besides You, Who acts for the one who waits for Him*”. Now, this word “waits” is a different Hebrew word. It is the word “*chakah*”, a primitive root (apparently akin to *chaqah* through the idea of piercing); properly, to adhere to; hence, to await long, tarry, wait. That is the thing the Lord is telling us, to learn to tarry. It implies actually a length of time. That means the Lord acts for the one who takes time with Him. Do not push the Lord.

That is what the Lord said to me; If we have spent some more time, we could have the first creative miracle, but it was 9:00 to 9:15 pm when I looked at the clock, okay, let us finish because people could not stay longer. Most of the people were so used to going out at that time. In fact, the angel said, (there were two other services), “If you had stayed longer, God would have done more”. So, I said (after post-mortem and feedback from the angel, feedback from Jesus), okay, I think we better restructure. Wednesday is now not good enough, because people did not come ready. I am also a practical person. I said, “Lord, sorry about that, but we humans are different, our modern culture is different from the Bible time, we have to structure a day when we are ready to give You more time”. Especially Singaporeans, they work very, very hard. That is why the Lord said that grace is given, as long as we understand the principle but, especially, the angel was saying that this type of meeting, you see, he was

not talking about our own type of meeting (Sunday service or some of the other services when we have got visitors, of course we finish on time or rather within a time slot), but a certain type of meeting, like you want a miracle is different. Isn't it better that we pray an extra few hours and the person is completely healed? It is not because of our prayers, it is because we are waiting on the Lord. We just keep worshipping. For us, we are not trying to pray for the healing. We worship ("Thank You, Jesus") and welcome Jesus who keeps healing and energising. Isn't that better that the man gets healed than the man has another one year of visiting the hospital or sometimes in the intensive care unit for days? We are doing something that allows God to work. We need to give God all the time He needs. That is the meaning of Isaiah 64:4.

Paul understood that the word "wait" (is the word "*chakah*") means "love". He read the same Bible and understood that it means love. He quoted it again, this same verse, in 1 Corinthians 2:9, "*But as it is written: Eye has not seen, nor ear heard, Nor have entered into the heart of man The things which God has prepared for those who love Him*". Do you notice he changed the word? Now that he was writing in Greek, he changed it, from "*chakah*" (which means to wait extendedly) to "love".

It tells us something here. If "*chakah*" and "love" are interchangeable as we saw it, same verse, then to love means to spend time. If we really love Jesus, let us take time to wait upon the Lord. Love takes time, correct? Love is not in a hurry and that involves the body because you are telling the body, do not go anywhere, just stay still in the presence of the Lord. In 1 Corinthians 2:9, it ties in the end, back to Romans 12:2 because in the same verse, it says "*The things which God has prepared for those who love Him*". Look, when you wait on God, revelation comes, revelation that eye has not seen, nor ear heard, nor the heart of man has received and indeed he says in verse 10, "*But God has revealed them to us...*". Isn't that Romans 12:2? You have Romans 12:1, which is in the waiting part, and then you have Romans 12:2. I have proven to you that the *Will of the Body*, the *Mind of the Body*, the *Emotion of the Body* must be dealt with before your mind can operate properly.

Let us go back, in conclusion, to Romans 7 (where we started off with) to see a particular verse. Paul, in Romans 7 uses this word when he says in verse 23, "*But I see another law in my members, warring against the law of my mind...*". Your body cannot war with your spirit. Here is a war taking place. I like the way Paul says this. That is a war with missiles flowing.

Our war nowadays is different, so our war is more dramatic. Long ago, the war was with arrows, spears and swords, and armies marching. Of course, they shot with catapults or whatever they had. Today our war, missiles, jet planes, ocean battle cruisers. Imagine all those things taking place between your body and your mind. World war is going on inside your body, between your body and your mind.

*Who is starting the war*

Now, who is starting the war? A war has to be started by somebody. Not everybody stands, stands, stands, and then waits until somebody starts the war. It is sparked by somebody, sometimes it is over a silly incident. In Romans 7, look, who is starting the war? In Verse 23, *“But I see another law in my members, warring against...”*. Who is attacking? Who is defending? Who is starting the war?

Imagine, this as an illustration. Let us say that someone is in a boxing contest with another person. While they are fighting, I say to the first person, *“Eh, would you mind baking me a cake?”* *“What? I am fighting here, and you want me to bake you a cake?”* Then he gets punched. He is too busy fighting, where to have time to bake a cake or do the nice things? When your mind is being attacked, can you hear God? Your mind is busy trying to defend itself, to survive. So, no wonder Romans 12:2 does not work without Romans 12:1.

Your body, the war must stop. Finally, somebody came and stopped the war. Let us say, United Nations came. United Nations came into the body and said, *“You guys, stop, or we just march all over you”*. They threatened a nuclear option. United Nations said, *“We are going to blow up every city in your country”*. *“Huh! Please do not drop the atomic bomb”*. Now who is the United Nations, on your inside, when your body and your mind are fighting? Your body and mind are fighting. Unless something happens, it does not work. It tells you the answer in verses 24-25, *“... Who will deliver me from this body of death? I thank God, through Jesus Christ our Lord!”*. So, in the end it is Jesus, which means, fasting and prayer and worship.

They can fight, fight, fight, remember, like two kids fighting until an adult comes and keeps them apart, correct? Somebody bigger and stronger, capable of dealing with both. Nowadays in our modern world, bigger countries have more power and a small country like Singapore

has to always keep watching all the time because it is affected by everything around it. So, somebody strong and bigger is Christ! How does Christ come in? The Word.

In Romans 7, when everything is at peace, right towards the end, remember, he says in verse 23, *“But I see another law in my members, warring against the law of my mind, and bringing me into captivity to the law of sin which is in my members”*. You see, the *Will of the Body* is winning, the desire of the body is winning. In Verses 24-25 it says, *“O wretched man that I am! Who will deliver me from this body of death? I thank God, through Jesus Christ our Lord”*! So, Jesus Christ came.

### *Presence of God*

The solutions are; No one, the presence of God. That is why you need to come and present your body. Go to any place, doesn't the presence of God touch us and affect us? Do you know that in the presence of God you do not think much about sin? How many people when worshipping say, “you really give yourself, you are loving God and thanking God for His amazing grace”, and while you are singing with all your heart, your mind is thinking of playing mahjong somewhere? Cannot. You know why, because the presence of God is preventing you from going anywhere. His gravitational pull is so strong that it pulls every other planet to revolve around it, the planets within your being. When you worship, when you fast, like the United Nations, has come into your physical being, that quiets your mind, that quiets your body, that brings order to you.

Number one, the presence of Jesus, the presence of God. Always go to any place where the presence of God is strong. It will change you. You can call it “the glory of God”, the glory of God is the manifest presence of God. When Moses saw the presence of God, he said that he wanted more, because there are many levels. He said, “Show me Your glory”. Remember, Moses was changed. Something in his body was changed.

We are about to experience the transfiguration. We will have a measure of that and we will have more coming. More and more the presence of God will change you and you will never be the same again. You will receive more and more. You will be changed. No 1 is the presence of God. The presence of God wants to come permanently this time because we are born again. For Moses, it was temporary.

Number two, is also in Romans 7. The second thing, he mentions in verse 25, let us not forget the second thing, "... *So then, with the mind I myself serve the law of God, but with the flesh the law of sin*". It looks very puzzling. It looks like it says, okay, the body keeps sinning, the mind keeps serving God. It looks like that at first, right? He is not saying that.

You must understand the context of verse 24. There is a war going on in verse 23. The war goes on and the war is stopped by the presence of Christ. What he is saying is the body still has sin nature, but at least it ceases. The naughtiness of that boy is still there but at least it is quiet. The boy who is always shouting, disturbing. The sin nature is still there and has to be dealt with later, but now the mind is free to serve the law of God, which is the word of God. The law of God is represented inside the Word. Now, the Word can work and the Word cuts in between, which Hebrews 4:10 talks about entering the rest. The rest is on your inside, not outside. Sometimes outside can be very cool and calm and you could be sitting by the beach watching the waves come and go. Everything is so calm and cool, the weather is beautiful, breeze blowing nicely and clouds covering part of the sun, is shady, temperature is beautiful, but inside you are a raging storm, so that is horrible.

Hebrews 4:10 talks about entering the rest. The rest can only be entered when your inside is calm, which is why verse 12 comes in. Verse 12 is linked to verse 10, entering the rest. The word of God comes in and it cuts. It separates spirit and soul. Now you know why you have to separate spirit and soul? Because of the potential war. Spirit is spirit. Soul cannot affect the spirit. You see, what is happening is when the body attacks the soul which is the mind, the body and soul are now affecting the spirit. You see, there is a war going on. Then the Word comes in, separates the spirit and soul, separates joints and marrow, in the sense of separating the soul from the body, which is why the first thing is the presence of God.

Second important thing is the Word of God. What he means when he says that the body ..., because remember, they did not write the Bible with chapters. In the next verse, in chapter 8, it talks about how you begin to walk in Christ, for the law (in verse 2) of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus has made you free from the law of sin and death. So, the greater power of God is coming now into you. Again, it talks about two things, the presence of God, the presence of Christ and the Word of God. These are the two keys that are able to establish Romans 12:1.

### *Difference between carnal mind and spiritual mind*

When you have Romans 12:1, you begin to have the difference between the carnal mind and the spiritual mind. In Romans 8, it says in verse 6: “*For to be carnally minded is death, but to be spiritually minded is life and peace*”. For the first time you have got a chance for your mind to link to your spirit, that is the spiritual mind. Now, if the mind is linked to the spirit (the spiritual mind), then the mind which is linked to the soul is the carnal mind, you have got three minds. There is a *Mind of the Body* which cannot be renewed and cannot be saved, it just has to be crushed but a soul mind can still be renewed. The *spirit mind* is beautiful and wonderful, produces life and peace. Can you see that, that whole picture comes and what is happening on your inside, that calmness that God has given. Praise God. Then we have considered Romans 12:1 to 2. We conclude the area of the *Will of the Body*, that the *Will of the Body* can be subject to Christ, but one important lesson is that you must deal with the body.

Now, the next time you want to hear God, everyone wants to hear God, everyone wants to know God’s will. When you have got a work situation or a family situation or a situation in life, when you want to hear God, the first thing that comes to your mind is “I need to hear God, check Bible, get counselling”. First thing you need is, “*When the Spirit of the Lord is within my heart, I will sing like David sang. I will sing, I will sing...*”. Then you make your body worship God, present your body, and do as long as you want. When that calmness comes, then you can absorb the Word, absorb the presence. You do not force God to do anything but after some time, you will hear God.

Where before you never did anything to the body, right? You say, the body is just like a bag, you know, just drag along everywhere. You did not know you have to deal with the body. That the body is very loud. Remember, it causes a world war on your inside. In Romans 7:23, there is a war. Stop the war! When the war is going on, how to do business, how to do trading? You need peace before you can do anything else. Everyone says, Stop the war! The war is in your body. Every day give your body something to do. By the way, your body is supposed to do something every day, it wants to play the couch potato. You know what is a good exercise? Dancing to the Lord, hallelujah! Instead of listening to all those things, whatever, dance to the Lord. At the end of it, you will feel good too.

Some people always say let us get into the presence of God but then, it becomes like a ritual. We all are creatures of ritual. Every morning when you get up, the first thing you do is either wash your face or brush your teeth, including your toiletries of course, correct? Is that a ritual? Good ritual, right? Or shall we stop the ritual, no need to brush the teeth? The body needs discipline, it is something the body needs to adapt to. If it is a ritual that brings you into the presence of God, as long as you do not make an idol out of it, that is all right.

We do not think that, like if your hand is shaking as a side effect, my apologies to those of you, if your hand shakes, and I am talking about you, with no intention. If your hand does shake because of the presence of God, do not purposely shake your hand so that the presence of God can come. Remember, it is the presence of God that causes your hand to shake. So, do not, like shake yourself. You know what happened to Samson? Samson, he shook himself in a certain way and he knew that, that was how he got into God's presence, but one day when his hair was gone, he shook himself, *eh*, the *kungfu* never came.

Remember this, that the presence of God produces a side effect, but the side effect will never produce the presence of God. It is just like, you know, have you heard of the story of a guy who sold a very expensive fan? You know how he sold the fan? He said, "This fan can last a hundred years". The king said: "*Ha*, a hundred years, are you sure"? The king was a collector of fans. The king said, "Are you sure"? "Yes, O king, you know I live in your kingdom. Why should I lie to you"? Then the king bought the expensive fan. The king used the fan. After two weeks, the fan was spoilt. Then the man still came by selling his fans. The king said, "*Wah*, he is very brave, still dare to come". He called the man up and said, "The fan I bought, you said that it could last a hundred years. It lasted only two weeks". The man said: "*Oh*, is that right? I think it is how you fan. You must fan the fan in a certain way. Show me how you fan". The king showed him. The man said, "No, no, no, that is the wrong way". "How"? "This is the way and he showed the King how. That is how it can last a hundred years. That is how you fan yourself".

Remember, the sun moves around the earth, not the earth moves around the sun. Remember, the presence of God causes the effect. Don't you dare use the effect to cause the presence of God. Wrong way. That is the idolatry we are talking about. On the other hand, we do realise that we need to start somewhere by presenting our bodies, in the Biblical words of worship, dancing, singing, worshipping. All these can be initiated from our side when it is a genuine thing from our heart. Then as you worship God, His presence comes. When His presence

comes, then you listen and do whatever God tells you to do. Sometimes the presence of God is still, sometimes it is rejoicing, flow with it. Always bring forth that presence.

## Chapter 23...

### The Heavenly Man

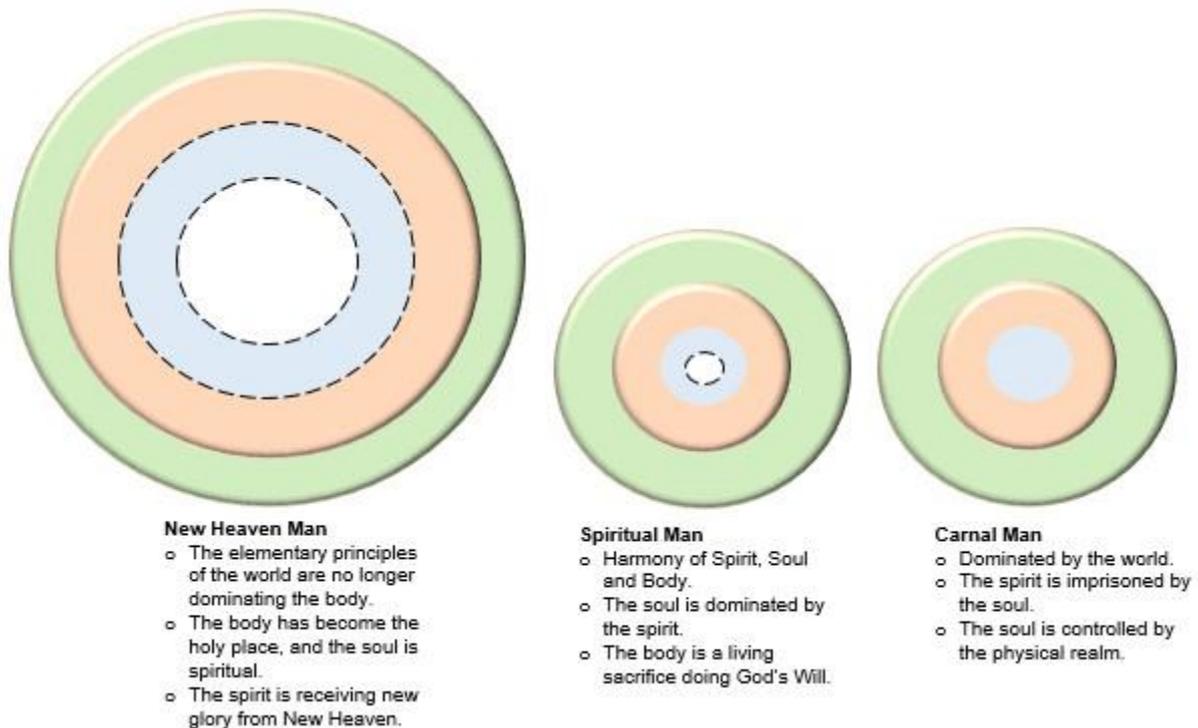


Diagram 1

People in the world people are dominated by the world, their spirits are imprisoned, and their souls are completely unrenewed. Do not forget, Christians can become like that. The Corinthians were called carnal Christians. Paul used the word “carnal” and they were carnal Christians because they allowed the flesh to dominate them. Though they were born again, the flesh still dominated, and in terms of their actions and their speech, there was no difference between them and non-Christians. Carnality is not just something that those unbelievers have, even believers can be carnal in their soul. This is not what we want. This is what the Bible is teaching against.

Instead of dividing between the spirit, soul and body, like the three sections, I just left it in the coloured chart, the spirit man, the yellow part, I made it grow bigger; the little new one in the centre is what I call the New Jerusalem Glory. Inside every born-again Christian is an essence of the New Jerusalem glory (the little white patch).

Then remember how when Jesus Christ died on the cross, in Herod's Temple, even though the Ark was not there (because the Ark has never been found since Jeremiah hid it after Solomon's Temple was destroyed or just before it was destroyed), the veil between the Most Holy Place and the Holy Place was torn, so that the Spirit can come forth, the presence of God can come from the Most Holy Place into the Holy Place. In a sense, the Most Holy Place is our spirit, the Holy Place is our soul and the Outer Court is our body. It is not the outer veil; the outer veil is not opened yet. When the outer veil is opened, then the body will start changing, because the glory of God comes out. In this revival, the outer veil is also changing. The outer veil is there but only a glimpse of it.

### *The inner veil*

Now, the inner veil, which is the veil between the Most Holy Place and the Holy Place, has been opened by Jesus. Symbolically, it talks about our spirit. That is why I drew dotted lines inside the diagram to show that the veil between the spirit and the soul has been opened so that the spirit can influence the soul. This is the *Spiritual Man* where the soul is renewed. The three areas of the soul are the mind, the emotion and the will. The *Spiritual Man* that we want, and then the body is still there in the process of renewal. This itself is already good. This is what every Christian aspires to. This is what *The Spiritual Man* book by Watchman Nee aspires to, which is why we also want that everyone becomes a spiritual person and not a carnal person. We are influenced by our spirit, not by our soul.

One of the things that people do not realise is that your spirit and your soul can be almost like two different persons, that sometimes in visions, when the Lord is doing two different things in your spirit and your soul, you could almost see two of the same person and they behave differently. Your spirit and soul can look exactly like you, but sometimes the two of you can be like two different persons. The spirit knows everything, but the soul does not know. The spirit is willing to flow with God, but the soul does not want to flow with God. Sometimes your spirit knows, but your soul is absolutely clueless as to what is going on.

There are two parts of us that function like two different persons, especially when the soul is not renewed. However, when the soul is properly renewed, your spirit man is controlling, you will know what is going on in the spirit realm. Your spirit man controls, then it begins to flow into your soul area and then into your physical body. In this end time, God is opening the outer veil a little bit for the glory of God to flow out. When the outer veil is opened, the body

is also affected. Remember, sin nature lives in your body, so the body is also affected, which is why we have the diagram of the New Heaven Man.

I drew the New Jerusalem glory (the white part) big, and the white part and the yellow part are supposed to be part of the spirit. I drew it very big, like you have grown. You cannot call this the spiritual man anymore. I call that the *New Heaven Man*, the new heavenly man. This is what God is trying to do in this revival so as many people as possible can receive the New Jerusalem Glory on their inside.

### *New Jerusalem Glory*

In the area of the New Jerusalem Glory, it can grow on your inside and the spirit can grow so much that you will notice that your soul becomes your spirit, your spirit becomes New Jerusalem and your body becomes just a glove for the spirit to walk through. The Outer Court is pushed outside around you. Your body literally becomes the temple of God. This is what we are aiming at in this revival, something that has never taken place before.

In all of two thousand years of Christianity, you have the diagram of the Spiritual Man, but in the last days' move, you have the diagram of the New Heaven Man. That is why in the last days' move, you can have people being transported, you can have people who never grow old, you can have people healed creatively, which you never saw, like new arms and legs growing. These are all creative processes that are released, especially in this end-time move that God has and it is all based on New Jerusalem Glory filling your whole spirit. Your whole spirit becomes a container for the New Jerusalem Glory. However, what about your soul? You will not have the soul man and the spirit man. The soul man becomes the spirit man. Your soul is so spiritualised that your soul can see and think and function in the spirit realm. Then your body is just an instrument, a glove which your spirit wears and you walk around. In other words, you can be exactly like Jesus.

To reach this stage, several things must take place. No one: All of sin nature must be eradicated and removed from your physical body. There is a promise of it in the Bible. Look at Romans. The first important thing is the eradication of sin nature inside us. Can you imagine, not being tempted anymore by sin, where sin completely has no more attraction? You see, for sin to draw you or for you to have an appetite for sin, you need something on your inside, so that the magnet of sin can draw you. When those sin particles are not there,

there is nothing to draw you. Sin does not attract you anymore. That was a potential in Romans.

In Romans 7, Paul speaks about sin nature in the flesh. I repeat again: Sin nature dwells in your physical body. That is why the physical body is subject to sickness, decay and everything else. In verse 13, Paul talks about sin happening, *“Has then what is good become death to me? Certainly not! But sin, that it might appear sin, was producing death in me...”*. Sin was working. Then he talks about his struggle. Finally, he says in verse 17, *“But now, it is no longer I who do it, but sin that dwells in me”*. He recognises that sin nature was inside, that is why there was a struggle. In verse 18 it says, *“For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh) nothing good dwells...”*. He recognises the presence of sin nature. Again, he says in verse 20, last phrase, *“... but sin that dwells in me”*. He did not talk about sins (acts of sin) but sin nature, the very nature that produces the acts of sin. He says in verse 23, (in his spirit, the inward man, he wants to do good and right), *“But I see another law in my members (the contextual reading of what that word “members” means is “members of the body”; he is talking about your physical body, not your soul but your physical body. So, Paul is saying, I see another law in my physical body), warring against the law of my mind (that is his soul) and bringing me into captivity to the law of sin which is in my members”*.

All the temptations of Satan are all attacking the appetites of the flesh. Think about it. All his attacks are the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, everything that is in this world. That is why 1 John 2:15 tells us: *“Do not love the world or the things in the world”*. All the things of this life. When you are dead to those things, there is no more attraction. He says here that this law of sin is in his members. This confirms that, in verses 24 to 25, he says, *“O wretched man that I am! Who will deliver me from this body (and the Greek word is “soma” which refers to the physical body) of death? I thank God through Jesus Christ our Lord!”*.

In Romans and in all of Christianity, there is always an ability to overcome sin, an ability to come against sin nature in our body. Of course, it has to be, otherwise we all will be sinning. There has to be for two thousand years of Christianity. However, the mode of overcoming is different. In the Christian understanding, we know that what has taken place is that sin nature has been neutralised and because it has been neutralised only, sometimes it is activated again,

and that is why Christians fall into sin. If it was neutralised and eradicated, then there is no possibility of sinning anymore.

Let me show that it has been neutralised. It says in Romans 8 about sinful flesh. You will notice that it refers to the flesh (in verse 3) as sinful flesh but it says Jesus came in the likeness of sinful flesh. His flesh was different from ours. His flesh did not have sin nature. That is why it is like sinful flesh, but it is not sinful flesh but all of us who were born of Adam were born into death. Romans 5 tells us. You were born into death, by which means your flesh inherited sin nature. Jesus had a body created for Him, that is why His body had no sin nature inside. It looks like flesh, but it is sinless flesh, whereas ours is sinful flesh. He came in the likeness of sinful flesh (Romans 8:3).

Then he talks about the carnal mind (which we have dealt with). Verse 8, *“So then, those who are in the flesh cannot please God”*. That sin nature must be neutralised. Verse 9, *“But you are not in the flesh but in the Spirit, if indeed the Spirit of God dwells in you. Now if anyone does not have the Spirit of Christ, he is not His”*. The Spirit that comes into us did something and now we know what he means in verse 10, *“And if Christ is in you, the body is dead...”*. However, people accept Christ and they are still physically alive, but Paul says something is dead, something has been rendered ineffective, sin nature. If Christ dwells in us and we allow Christ to dwell in us and occupy the place that He rightfully has in our spirit and in our mind, sin nature is dead. At any moment, when Christ is not occupying the seat in our lives, sin nature comes alive. It is all dependent on one fact, Christ dwelling inside us, which means up to that time, if I were to ask you this question, *“Can a Christian be sinless? You have only one correct answer, based on the Bible. So, what is the answer to that question? Can a Christian be sinless? Wah, simple question not easy to answer. If we cannot answer the question, for two thousand years, how have we been living on the earth? It is a very important question to answer.*

The fact that God demands us to live in righteousness, remember that? Paul says now that you are in Christ, you who were “slave” of sin in Romans 6, now give yourself to “slave” of righteousness, remember that? So obviously He wants us to be sinless. Obviously, He gives us the capacity to be sinless, but it is conditional upon us living day by day in His presence.

### *Change this body*

The correct answer is, we can be sinless as long as we live day by day in His presence. The answer must be yes because if the answer is no, then we cannot hope. We have no hope, then when the Bible tells us to live righteously, we cannot. We should come back to God and say, “We cannot. If You want us to, change this body”. However, God says, “I am not going to change your body yet, I want you to live as you are”, You know what God is doing? God is teaching us to use the principle, to learn the victory over sin. Yes, there are Christians who have victory over sin. When they stumble here and there, then 1 John 1:9 is there for them. If they confess their sins, God cleanses them, and then they get back again but that is the story of Christianity, that we have clay feet and the clay feet may fall. It is conditional because there is still the body.

Now, when we all go to heaven, we all have new bodies, can we ever sin again? No. Nor do we want to. Even in the worst-case scenario, where the potential for sin is there, you will still not sin. You know why, because you need something to push you across the edge. For example, the generation that lives in the Millennium, (which is one thousand years) you have a new generation of people, they are born in the Millennium, they grow up in the Millennium. The Millennium is like the time of Adam and Eve before they fell. So, they will produce. Their bodies do not have sin nature and they partake of all the things of God. They can see Jesus, they can see God, they are in the presence of God. Even the worst of the worst of them do not sin until Satan shows up. Do you notice that? They do not sin until Satan shows up because it needs something to trigger it. Now, obviously there must be some tendency to sin inside them, otherwise Satan cannot push them. They cannot blame Satan either. They have their free choice, but obviously something is there. Can you see? It needs the embodiment of sin nature, which is Satan. Satan has become the embodiment of sin nature in the spirit to trigger the magnetism for the group to fall. Not all of them will fall, only some will fall in the Millennium, the rest is okay, but it needs sin nature to trigger. Even in the Millennium, it needs a being who is an embodiment of imperfection to trigger.

You say, what happens if Satan did not appear after one thousand years? Nothing might happen. The strength of the righteous covers the weak and it brings them along. Strange, isn't it? That is the way it is, the power of righteousness. Just as sin has the power to draw people away, righteousness has a greater power to draw people in, which is why if you are a weak Christian, hang around a strong one, you cannot sin. If you are a weak Christian, you keep

hanging around a strong one, the strong one will never go to do the wrong thing, he will just pull you along. God helps you when you are all alone. So, do not just depend on others, you better grow up yourself. While you are still not there yet, you hang around the right people who choose not to sin, you will not sin, even though on your own, you are sure to fall. If you have a tendency, 90% sure to fall into sin, you hang around those who 99.999% will not fall, the chance of you falling is very, very slim because you are hanging around the influence of those who do not fall. However, do not just depend on that. In that interim period, grow yourself up until that is your very nature.

In the end, to sin or not to sin depends on your inner nature, whether there is some part of you (whether in your spirit, soul or body) that draws you in but after you are born again, sin is pushed only in your body and that is the part that God wants to deal with. There is also another little thing about Romans 6 when Paul says to give yourselves as slaves of righteousness. Do you notice that he used the word “slaves”? We were slaves to sin because we did not think about it, we just got swallowed in. Then he says, righteousness is the same way, you do not think about it, you just get swallowed in to this side.

We do not understand the concept of slavery because today’s slavery is socially wrong, morally wrong, definitely wrong in our modern society. However, in Roman times, in Biblical times, slavery was an accepted imperfection in human society. People owned slaves. This is the concept of slavery that we need to understand. A slave is not allowed to think, he only does. A slave is a piece of property. He might be a human, can talk, can think with all the capacities, but once a slave, he is as good as a dog. Of course, it sounds so cruel. Remember, I am anti-slavery, this is all an illustration. He is not allowed to think, he might aspire to freedom like all humans. When the master tells him to do anything, he does it because he is a piece of property. He has no free choice. He has to do everything that the master says. It is when he starts thinking for himself, then you have the slave rebellion and the slave is no more a slave. The concept of a slave is lower than a servant. It is one who is just a robot, an organic robot, no rights, no freedom. If a slave has a child, the child belongs to the master. The child is also a slave. Slaves are bought and sold like animals. You can kill a slave because he is yours. We do not understand the concept.

When Paul wrote the Bible, slavery existed. Remember, this is all illustration. We are morally against slavery and it is wrong, completely. Sadly, today, there is illegal slavery going on

with children, women, and all that, it is brought out again. Today, you see slaves in some of the wars that are fought in the Middle East where women and children are taken as slaves. It is back to Medieval times. Watch and see. After 2027, you think slavery is just limited to the Middle East? People will sell themselves to slavery. Remember we prophesied long ago, before even the Middle East War started, we said that slavery will come back. Now you see it came back in the Middle East. It will come back and affect the whole world. The world is not getting better, it is getting worse.

### *Absorbing the things of God*

Now, when Paul wrote that, he understood the concept of what a slave does. A slave does not think, he just keeps doing. When Paul uses the concept that you are now slaves to righteousness, you know what he is saying? Don't think, just keep absorbing God's things and that is the only way to remain sinless. If you think too much, you get back to sin because sin nature is still there. The only way to be sinless is to trust and obey what God says, you are to do. The only thing is, "Is it God's Word"? If God says it, we are bond-slaves to God. The Greek word is "*doulos*", politely translated as "bond-servant". In essence, it means "bond-slave". Bond-slaves do not think, what the master says, they do.

When you start to do your thinking, sin nature comes out. You say, "Wait a minute". Some of you are saying, "Aren't we allowed to think? Are we supposed to be dumb Christians, not smart Christians"? No, no, we want to raise smart Christians. It depends on what period of growth you are at.

Remember 1 John; there are little children, young men, fathers? Children learn right and wrong by obedience. You can only explain so much to a child, you cannot explain everything, but the child has to listen first. You say, "Look left and right before you cross the road. Cross at the traffic lights. Do not run across the road". "Why, why, why"? *Ya*, the "why" will end your life. We just learn to obey first and after a period of obedience, then Jesus says in John 15, "I now call you friends. I am your Master, but I call you friends". A servant (actually is the word "slave") does not know what his master is doing. You only obey. There is a stage after obedience, you become a friend. You grow to be a young man and then you grow to be a father then you will understand the things of God.

Let us look at John 15:14-15, Jesus says, “*You are My friends if you do whatever I command you. No longer do I call you servants* (slaves; you know, the Bible is very polite, the translation makes it sound nice, but it is the word “slaves” – *doulos* because in those days they understood. “*Doulos*” was never translated as “servants”, always translated as “slaves”. There is another Greek word actually for servants. However, we do not realise because the concept of slavery is too harsh for us. So, Jesus says *No longer do I call you slaves), for a servant (slave) does not know what his master is doing...*”, which is true. Do you realise, a servant does know what his master is doing to some extent? Only a slave does not know, only a slave is not allowed to know. However, one day when we have passed the stage of obedience, the Lord gives understanding and then we know what the Master wants to do. We are promoted, elevated.

In Christianity, there is that level of growth and that level of growth actually speaks about 3 levels in which you deal with sin nature. The first level is; Do not do your own thinking too much. As long as it is the Word, then accept it, accept it, accept it. The Word cuts into you, then you are being retrained, you are being reformed, your mind is being reformed and retrained. After a period of retraining, then it is the Lord who says you are now friends, then He begins to explain to you. He called His disciples “friends”. Jesus does not explain everything but now Jesus says “I am going. It is time for you all to know. You are now at a different level”.

There are different levels in which Christians overcome sin nature. The first level; You just cannot use your mind because your mind is too corrupted, too unrenewed. Just give yourselves as slaves of righteousness and just keep giving yourselves until there is a level of the spiritual mind developing. When you are born again, straightaway you have the potential for the spiritual mind, but the spiritual mind is still growing. To see things in a different light, it takes a different thing. Our reasoning is still carnal. Do you know that you can have a Christian, sometimes twenty-year-old Christian, his reasoning is still very carnal? Many of them because they have never allowed their minds to reason with the Word of God. They have always reasoned in a carnal way, using carnal things. They have never added the spiritual element. It takes another level of growth and all these things are at three different stages.

How many, for two thousand years, who have grown to be spiritual fathers and spiritual sons of God, have overcome? There are quite a lot. Thank God, we have a lot of Christian predecessors before us, who lived godly lives. They wrote books, they helped us. They found some victory in some ways, then they wrote books. Hannah Whitall Smith (the “Unknown Christian”) found a way in different things. She wrote books. All of us, when we were young Christians, we were helped by other Christians, either through books, through teachings or we were looking for other Christians who led the way. We are supposed to soak in the Word of God because our spirit man is still developing, cannot handle many things yet. Why? Why all these things? Because sin nature is still in the body and there is that struggle.

### *The law of life vs the law of sin*

Let us look back at the sin nature thing in Romans 8, where Paul says in verse 10, “*And if Christ is in you, the body is dead* (what he meant is sin nature is rendered dead) *because of sin* (because there is sin nature, it has to be rendered dead, but the biological body is still going on, but some part of it is rendered dead, neutralised), *but the Spirit is life because of righteousness*”. So, you need to let the life increase because it is the life that actually cancels sin nature. It is like two forces are in you, the law of life versus the law of sin. If the law of life is abundant, the law of sin is dealt with. However, if the law of life is weak and the life is weak, sin dominates. It seems to rise up again. It looks like Christian life has to be a balance to allow the spiritual life (Christ in us) to dominate us so that sin nature is always, perpetually held at bay.

So, the answer to “Can a Christian be sinless”? Yes, conditional upon him continually, every day, yielding to Christ and the spirit of righteousness. The answer is still yes but conditional. Now comes my second question, “Can a Christian be like Jesus”? Yes. Can we be exactly like Jesus? The Bible tells you the answer, but reality tells you a different answer. So, can we be like Jesus on the earth? What do all the Christians or teachings tell you? We need to settle once and for all, “Does God want us in this life to be like Jesus”? Yes. He does give certain keys, principles, avenues, weapons, equipment, so we can be like Him. He does.

Here are the scriptures. We have been predestined to be like Jesus, in Romans 8. It is incumbent that we be exactly like Jesus to do the works of Jesus in John 14:12. If we cannot be like Jesus, we cannot do the works that He did. Jesus, in the Lord’s prayer, *Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect. Wah*, not only be like Jesus, be like

the Heavenly Father. Jesus is like the Heavenly Father. So, by the same thing, if we are like the Heavenly Father, we are like Jesus. He put it in the Lord's prayer, that we are to do the will of the Father. Be exactly like Jesus. So, it seems that the correct answer is, Yes, He wants us to be like Him.

The only thing is, for two thousand years, we have been looking for secrets on how to be like Him. Sometimes the book teaches you, *wah*, like this. Sometimes you see men and women of God, *wah*, they can do so many signs and wonders, they must be like Jesus. We put the two and two together but sometimes they do so many signs and wonders, they are not like Jesus. Why? Because in the 1950s, there were faith healers who got drowned, there were people used powerfully by God, then they did the wrong thing. You say, "How?" It seems like we are supposed to be like Jesus, but it is conditional on us to keep on practicing certain principles or utilising the equipment or tools or keys that He gave. The moment we stop it, the whole thing is gone, and we know what some of the keys are. They are so simple. You just do more of it. That is prayer.

I give you all these summaries so that you do not have to do so much thinking and go home and say, "How to be like Jesus? Now I do not dare to sing the song: *To be like Jesus*, because I am not sure how". Wait, wait, wait. Every man and woman of God throughout history who had spent a lot of time with God, accidentally or purposefully, corporately or singularly, 2 Corinthians 3:18 had worked in their lives. The principles of prayer, that they spent a lot of time with God in prayer. Even in the Old Testament, what made a person like Elijah so Godlike? He was a man of prayer. What made a person like Daniel so righteous even though he was not born again? He spent a lot of time in prayer. As you know, he prayed all his life. In Fact, 3 times a day He prayed. He was a man of prayer.

#### *Need relationship with God*

We know the key. People who have spent a lot of time in prayer and a lot of time with God have less of a chance to not be like God. More, they are driven to be like God. It does not mean that all of them are perfected instantly. It does not mean that everyone who spends a lot of time with God, you can see all the fruit in their lives because there are a lot of people who spend a lot of time with God in a vertical relationship and they have no horizontal relationship, are still not like Jesus. We know that at least that is one principle, but we also know that that one principle does not cover all. You and I have seen people who have got a

vertical relationship but are sometimes the most unloving persons. When they come to God, *Ho! Ho! Ho!* When they come to people, they are the most unloving persons. We have seen that, so we know that, that principle alone is not good enough.

Then you have the Word. People who study the Word, practice the Word, meditate on the Word. Then you realise, the more of it, the more it changes you and you have Jesus' secret. He was the Word made flesh. So, a man or woman of the Word has a greater chance to be like Jesus. We know that. Then comes Jesus' love. We know people who are selfless, people who are "John 3:16" type (God so loved the world), "1 John 3:16" type (He laid down His life for us).

#### *A selfless love*

You have people like Mother Teresa, who literally gave her life to care for others. There are people who live very unselfish lives and they are "so Christian". I mean, has anyone seen Mother Teresa committing adultery or killing somebody? No, the chance of her doing that is very little, right? She was doing the right thing. Although sometimes she might be close to almost like, because Readers' Digest talks about her story, she did not really lie, that kind of thing. She emphasised some needs of some of the orphanages to the size bigger than ever before, to get as big an offering as possible, but did not mention that it was for charity. It was one of the stories. It was not really running her down. It was a story talking about how human she was, how she was caught up in her cause. It was more talking about her "humour", so it was not really running her down, but I would say she was a very selfless woman. There are people like that even among unbelievers. Such people who give their lives to help others would very rarely be selfish or do something wrong. What I call that, the concept of love, *agape* love, selfless love.

There are these principles, plus many, many other principles and in the end, the more you know them, the more you can be like Jesus. The only thing is, at the back of our mind, we wonder, "Are ninety-nine principles enough? What happens if I miss the one principle? Then I would only be 99% like Jesus because I missed that 1%". If you talk about one hundred principles and I miss one, then that one part is missing. There are all these principles, but you will notice things about principles. A principle takes time to be assimilated, takes time to be digested, takes time to be worked out in your life, takes time to change your thinking. Sometimes your way of thinking, it takes time to sometimes clean you up because sometimes

you have got old concepts and unbelief that need to be cleaned up. Jesus says, “My Word has made you clean”. All these things take time. Hebrews 4:12, the Word of God cuts in our spirit and soul, it takes time, and all these are good for two thousand years of Christianity.

So, how are we in seven times seven years, going to be transformed to the Glorious Church, absorbing all of two thousand years’ worth of Christianity? God has to do something more and He has because sin nature is held back, it still exists in the body. There is one sure way to get rid of it, if God could operate in our DNA and strip it away from us, bit by bit. Paul had a vision of that in Romans 8.

Do not forget, Romans 8 is talking about this sin nature and he says in verse 13, *“For if you live according to the flesh you will die* (He is talking to Christians, so he is saying that if you go back to the flesh, death will still come,-sin will still come, all the things that are caused by sin nature will still come. Obviously, it means you have to keep applying the principle.), *but if by the Spirit you put to death the deeds of the body, you will live”*. That means you have got to take the Spirit and spiritual principles and keep putting to death sin nature. Can you see that? Putting sin nature down is a spiritual effort. It is a rest, but it is a spiritual effort. To constantly put sin nature down, otherwise if you give in to it, you die. Verse 14, *“For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, these are sons of God”*. Then he talks about something that is inside us that is coming forth in verse 18, *“For I consider that the sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with the glory which shall be revealed in us”*. Not to us, inside us. Paul had a glimpse that one-day sin nature will be eradicated while in the body. For him, it was future tense. He saw it and he says in verses 19-21, *“For the earnest expectation of the creation eagerly waits for the revealing (manifestation) of the sons of God. For the creation was subjected to futility, not willingly, but because of Him who subjected it in hope; because the creation itself also will be delivered (delivered from what) from the bondage of corruption (sin nature) ...”*.

When Adam fell into sin, all of nature was dragged along. Sin nature entered into every atom and molecule of the planet earth, at the molecular level. Everything was affected and that is why the whole creation is groaning. However, Paul says, not only that, we also are groaning (there is a part of us that is groaning, groaning for what, look at verse 23) for the redemption of our body. Can you see that? Not the redemption of your spirit, not the redemption of your

soul, the redemption of your body. I want you to know, he is talking about one day when sin nature is eradicated.

### *Hyper-faith and hyper-grace*

Now, there is a group of *hyper-faith* people and *hyper-grace* people, who preach that you have got no more sin nature. We are not saying that. When you are born again, sin nature is present and is neutralised and because there is sin nature, therefore you need 1 John 1:9, that every time you fall or falter because of sin nature, you can come and confess your sins, and He is faithful and just to forgive you. Remember 1 John 1:8 that says, if anyone says he has no sin, he is lying. What is he talking about? If anyone claims that after he is born again, he has got no sin nature, he is lying because that is not true. That is the *hyper-faith* and *hyper-grace* message. You know what happened? They saw part of the truth, but it was presented wrongly. A little knowledge is a dangerous thing. The truth is this, sin nature is present, but we have come to the time when God wants to eradicate sin nature in the body. Paul says it is possible.

Before I go to some details, jump over to Ephesians 5, the Glorious Church, where we get the word “Glorious Church” from. Although Paul illustrates with husbands and wives, he is talking about Jesus and the church and the process to go there. In Verses 26-27, “*that He (Jesus) might sanctify (make holy) and cleanse (katharizo) her (the bride of Christ) with the washing of water by the word, that He might present her to Himself a glorious church, not having spot or wrinkle or any such thing, but that she should be holy and without blemish*”. What do you think the blemish represents? What do you think the spot represents? You think he is just talking about physical spots? Of course, yes, it includes that, but he is talking about sin nature.

Jesus is not coming for a church with sin nature inside. Why, you think He will come for a church with sin nature inside? If, in the rapture time, the church still has sin nature, you will be too heavy, cannot rapture. So, that is why this is the message of the rapture generation and those in the first generation will see the Glorious Church and have a taste of it. He has to remove all of sin nature and then the church is perfect. As long as sin nature dwells in even one molecule of the DNA, the church is not perfect. Can you see the whole picture?

Now, here is where we differ from *hyper-faith* and *hyper-grace*, because our definition of eradication of sin nature is far above theirs. For them, they have got no definition of what it means for sin nature to be eradicated. They just say, “*Oh*, we do not have it because Christ has already died for us”. That is part of the truth but not the whole truth and you can ask those preachers of *hyper-faith* or *hyper-grace*, “Do you still grow old”? If the answer is yes, then sin nature is still there. Do you still fall sick? If the answer is yes, then sin nature is still there. You might be lying, you might say you do not have it, but it is right in front of your face. When the flu comes, you go and then get sick for three days. That is sin nature.

What we are saying is, when sin nature is completely eradicated, that is the day you are perfect like Adam. Every molecule in your body has sin nature driven out. What we are saying is, that process is beginning with the glory of New Jerusalem.

Define the eradication of sin nature. Every Tom, Dick and Harry can claim. You have mad people on the internet who claim, you know, they have got the secret of how to live for one thousand years but they are only about forty years old. Until they have lived for one thousand years, then tell me about it. At least even the Maharishi at Kailash lived longer than most of them. For him to live long, God has to change his DNA also, even to live those extra hundred years. By the way, he has already gone home, in case you are wondering whether to go to Kailash to look for him.

#### *You can reverse ageing*

The first thing is, you do not age. Ageing ceases. You can reverse ageing because as the old layer peels off, the new layer is like baby skin. Second, impossible to get sick because there is no sin nature, how to get sick. That is our definition. Whereas *hyper-faith* and *hyper-grace* claim, when they themselves have a theory that sin nature does not exist anymore. It is only a theory, it has to be a reality. A theory is still a theory. Truth is not a theory. We have theories to understand truth, but truth is reality. Third, the laws of Physics will not affect you anymore. Why, no sin nature. Everything on this planet earth has fallen and the natural laws have taken dominion because of sin nature. When sin nature is eradicated, the laws of Physics do not affect you anymore, which is why, as we progress in this revival, the laws of Physics will not affect us. I will be preaching here and then when I say God bless you and turn around, I will be in another place. The laws of Physics will not affect your body.

You know, the one thing that holds you back is sin nature. Now you know why it is important for you to have this concept, that in this revival, God can bring you out and change every atom and molecule in your body, so that all of sin nature is not just neutralised, for nearly two thousand years it has been neutralised. There are wonderful men and women of God, who have neutralised it and taught us principles that have kept the church righteous and holy but now, that is not good enough. We need another level and that is the level that we are talking about. We now need the heavenly man. Spiritual man is not good enough.

Some of you say, “*Wah*, already spiritual man! I am struggling for heavenly man, *oh* no, I am left behind”. Be strong and of good courage. We will bring you through, just keep hanging around with the right crowd. Heavenly man is when this New Jerusalem Glory expands on our inside and it brings us to this stage. We need this and that is why we can go into that level. From time to time, the Old Testament people had touched some power that was present. Remember Jesus said that, the power and presence?

*The fruit of the Spirit.*

I present to you that it is a true concept and it is possible on this earth, the eradication of sin nature. It is something like when you put a laser to something, then the old skin slowly peels off before you see the new layer that is there. Something has been received in the DNA. It is something that can be imparted to the people. One of the important things, besides eradication, is how it ties with the last part that I have to cover, the emotions. You see, the emotions have two links, one is the fruit of the Spirit (Galatians 5:22-23) and you know there are nine fruit of the Spirit. The other is the seven Spirits of God, which are the seven churches, Peace, Love, Glory, Power, Life, Wisdom and Mercy. These two are linked in a different way and you need all of them.

Let me summarise the nine fruit of the Spirit in a different way. You know that the nine fruit of the Spirit are first set being; Love, Joy, Peace. Then the second set are; Longsuffering, Gentleness, Goodness. Then the third set are; Faith (or Faithfulness), Meekness, Temperance. That tells you something. The nine fruit of the Spirit actually talk about all the emotions you need when you walk on the earth. That is why in Galatians 5, Paul presents the law of the Spirit versus the law of the flesh. The whole book of Galatians 5 is about the works of the flesh versus the fruit of the Spirit. He did not call the fruit of the Spirit “the works of the Spirit”.

By analogy and by English, you normally do the same thing. The works of the flesh versus the works of the Spirit, correct? Then you look at Galatians 5 which says, the works of the flesh where he lists the works of the flesh first but then he did not talk about the works of the Spirit because there is no such thing as the works of the Spirit. All the works of the Spirit are actually the fruit of the Spirit. Quote, unquote, you can call them “the works of the Spirit” because it is the Spirit working through you. The way the Spirit works is by making it a fruit in your life first before you can work it out, which is why he uses the word “fruit” of the Spirit versus works of the flesh.

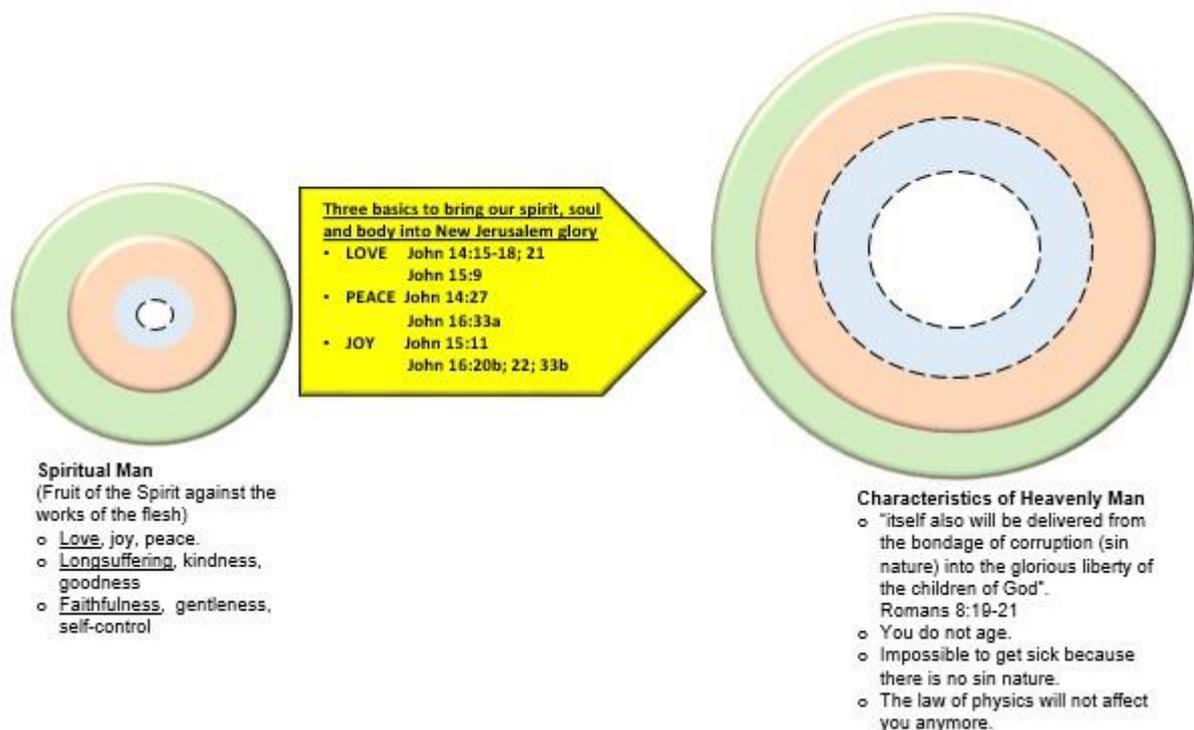


Diagram 2

Again, in technicality, you can call it “works of the Spirit”, but *fruit* before *works*, not *works* before *fruit*. That is why he says those who outwardly seem to work the works, judge them by their fruit because the false prophet works but no fruit. Whereas in the true believer, there is fruit, then works. Fruit, then works. Love, then power. It is always that way. You have the fruit of the Spirit against the works of the flesh. All of the fruit of the Spirit is summarised at the end of 1 Corinthians 13, being Faith, Hope, Love, but the greatest of these is Love. Do you know the 3 sets of the fruit of the Spirit represent Faith, Hope and Love?

In the last set, what is the first dominant note? Faith (or Faithfulness), Meekness, Temperance. The Greek word for Faithfulness is actually Faith (“*pistis*”). They did not translate it as “Faith” because it has no meaning in English. We do not use the word; the fruit

of the Spirit is “Faith”. We use the word “Faithfulness” but when you look at the Greek word, it is the noun word “*pistis*” (it is just “Faith”). That tells you there is faith. The last group is based on faith. Without faith, you cannot overcome the world. It says, “... *And this is the victory that has overcome the world—our faith*” – remember 1 John 5:4? It has to do with battle here.

The middle set, which is, Longsuffering, Gentleness, Goodness. Longsuffering is the other Greek word for patience, this is “*hupomone*”. We look at the Greek word directly in Galatians 5:22 where Longsuffering is the word “*makrothumia*” (which is the other word for patience). There are two words for patience – *makrothumia* and *hupomone*. *Makrothumia* is a patience that comes from the spiritual energising. You know, the word “*thumos*” means “heat” and is linked to the word “Spirit”. *Hupomone* is from the word “*meno*”, *If you abide in Me, and My words abide in you* – *hupomone* is the patience that comes from the Word. So, you need twofold patience. When you are yielded to the Spirit of God, you have Longsuffering. It actually says it is a fruit of the Spirit. So, *makrothumia* is the patience that comes from the Spirit. *Hupomone* is the patience that comes from the Word. Both are important to face what you need to face. Now, *makrothumia* (which is translated as Patience or Longsuffering). What do you need to have Longsuffering for? Hope. Without hope, you cannot suffer long, guaranteed. It is the hope that keeps you going and you will endure all things, you will suffer all things because there is hope. The first set is obviously Love and it is Love that produces Peace and Joy.

I say there are only three dominant notes, the others are sub-dominant and then the seven in music. When there is a main chord, say the G-chord will have a G, C and D7; C-chord will have a C, F and G7, in every music. Then you have the minor. Let us leave out the minor for a while. When you play music, you have these 3 main chords. Unless you play the minor, then you have the minor and the sub-dominant minor.

However, the nine fruit of the Spirit are actually talking about Faith, Hope and Love. You know, they all can be squished into one. You say, “how”? Look at which one produces which one. Before you can have Faith, you must have Hope, correct? Because Hebrews 11:1 says Faith is the substance of things hoped for, so obviously the Hope is the material to produce Faith. So, from Hope, Faith comes forth. Hope against hope, then faith catches hold and produces the substance that is Faith. So, I give you Hebrews 11:1.

Then you add Galatians 5:6 where it says that Faith is energised by Love. The actual translation says Faith works by Love. The Greek word for work is “*energeo*” which means “energise”. I translate it literally as Faith is energised by Love. Obviously, you cannot have Faith if you do not have Love. You cannot have Faith if you do not have Hope. In the end, the main thing energising the Faith to exist is Love. When Love comes in, Faith is energised, you can take the substance of Hope and make it a substance, so the three sets of the nine fruit are squished into one, which is why 1 Corinthians 13:13 considers everything as just Love. Can you imagine, everything is just Love? What about the seven Spirits of God? The seven Spirits of God put Love as Number two and Peace as Number one. Peace, Love, then Joy or Glory, and then you have the others.

You notice something, that before Jesus left, in the last sermon that He preached in John 14, 15 and 16, in those 3 chapters, He covered Love, Peace and Joy. He covered them and all of them, He says, come from Him; *Peace I leave with you, My peace I give to you*. Then He talked about Love. Then He talked about Joy. He covered all three because these three are the basics to bring your spirit, soul and body into New Jerusalem Glory. In New Jerusalem Glory, there are no tears allowed, no sorrows so before you enter New Jerusalem, you can cry and weep, but after you have entered, no more. Something bigger happens.

Compare New Jerusalem with the first time when sin came in, before there was sickness, before there was disease, before there was disharmony and death, the first thing that Adam and Eve experienced was sorrow. That was the first impact of sin nature, sorrow. The eradication of sin nature is to remove that same sorrow. Under New Jerusalem, no sorrow (Revelation 21). In between the process, in Romans 8, we groan because all the groanings must be surrendered until they are all finished.

From time to time, the Bible people, like Peter says, *ye rejoice with joy unspeakable and full of glory*. He was talking about being under persecution, that nothing that he experienced could take that joy away. His joy was so great that he overcame all things. Remember, from time to time, in Acts 16, in Philippi, Paul and Silas were locked in chains, their backs beaten and bruised, and they sang hymns and praises to the Lord? Nothing could take away that joy. Did the earthquake come before or after they sang? After. How long did they sing? Very long. So, we need to let that joy dominate us.

Those who experience this, the first thing that the enemy tries to do is to make you feel some sorrow or grief. Never let that happen. Let that joy grow, let it burst forth from inside, and let it grow (how long?) as long as it takes until the earthquake comes in your body.

The evidences of eradication of sin nature, and I have already given you three and point to four. You will reach a point when nothing, no sorrow, no grief, can enter even your thoughts or your consciousness. You become literally in the presence of God is fullness of joy. So, it looks like nothing can penetrate that and when you have that shield of the New Jerusalem Glory and nothing can penetrate that, your DNA begins to flow along and transform and change.

## Chapter 24...

### Four Dimensions of Love

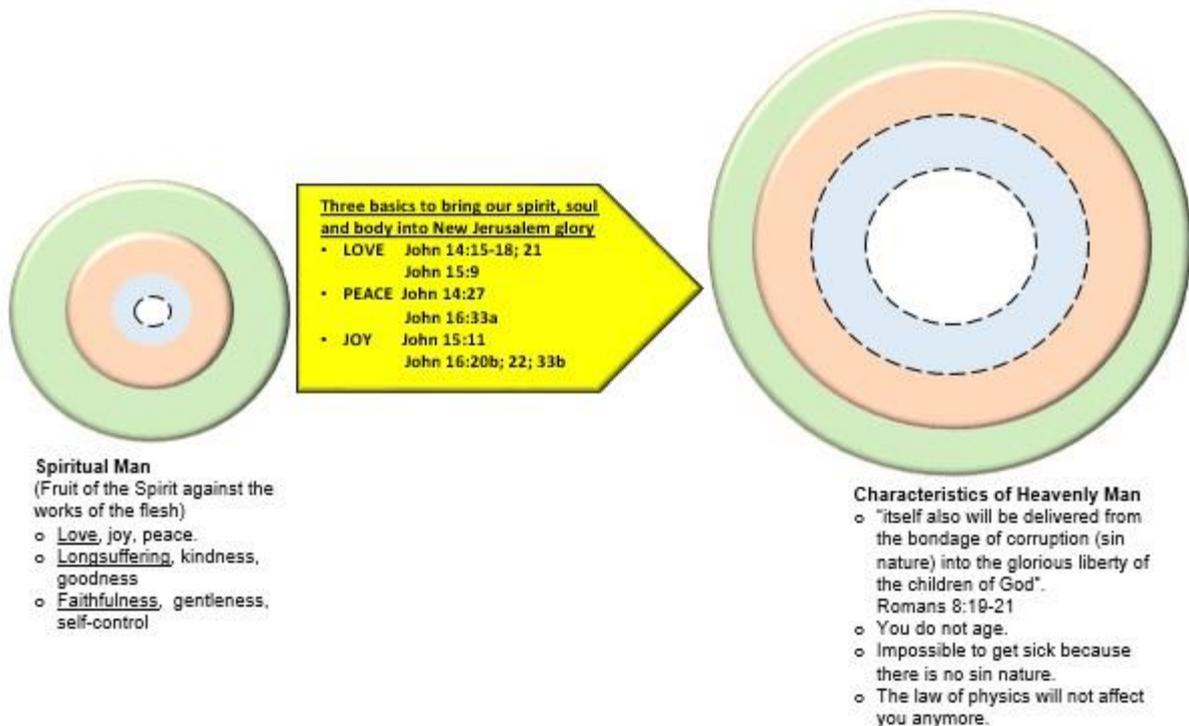


Diagram 1

We are growing from the spiritual man to the heavenly man. We have talked about the will and the mind of the soul. We talked about transfiguration and New Jerusalem Glory and its impact on our emotions. Of course, the only qualified emotions that we are to have are actually all the fruit of the Spirit which is found in Galatians 5:22-23.

Now, let us read Galatians 5:22-23 (NKJV), "*But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, kindness, goodness, faithfulness, gentleness, self-control...*". In the Old King James – *love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness, temperance*. We have said that they are divided into 3 main sections; the first one is the dominant note, the second one is the sub-dominant and the third is like the seven. It is like a piece of music. Everything to God is like a piece of music and emotions are very much like music. When we have bad or negative emotions, it is like music in discord. When our emotions are flowing correctly, it is Mathematically harmonious and all in the right vibrations.

These are three sets; Love, joy, peace – one set. Longsuffering (“*makrothumia*” in Greek, which ties to patience, which ties to hope; the reason you can be patient is because of hope and you exercise that hope with patience, so *makrothumia*), kindness (which is the Greek word “*chrestotes*” and it talks about gentleness), goodness is another set. We have said that the second set; (NKJV) longsuffering, kindness, goodness; (KJV) longsuffering, gentleness (is kindness), goodness which is talking about “hope”. Then the third set; faithfulness, gentleness (which is actually meekness or humility), self-control. Somehow the translation keeps changing. Isn’t it strange that they understood the Greek word “*prautes*” to be gentleness? I prefer the KJV which is meekness. Meekness is closer to the correct translation and closer to the word “humility”. For the word “*prautes*” is more the word “humility” as opposed to the word “*chrestotes*” which is translated as “kindness” in NKJ. So, the modern scholars sometimes re-interpret some of the Greek words, but the third set is actually under “faith”.

As you can see, it is a simple word for faith, which is the Greek word “*pistis*”. Some people argue that, that is not “faith”, that is “faithfulness”. Look at it very carefully. If I were to challenge you on that and look into the dictionary, it is a noun, it is not an adjective. “Faithfulness” is a noun of an adjective. “*Pistis*” is a noun. So, it could have been translated as “faith”. I do not know why they did not translate it as “faith”. I am going to put “faith” in the translation. It is actually not “faithfulness”. “Faithful” is an adjective, a faithful man. The noun of “faithful” becomes “faithfulness”. It is like a state of an adjective, that it has become a reality.

However, in Greek, it is just a pure and simple word, “faith”. If they have put that in, we would have seen very clearly that faith comes from God, right, if they have just put it in because they put the word “faithfulness”, we think: *Eh*, that is not the same word as “faith”. We will be running all over the place, trying to have our own faith when actually faith is a fruit of the Spirit, which implies that the more you yield to the Spirit, the more faith you have, that faith does originate from God.

We have enough verses to show that faith originated from God, but none as clear cut as these. For example, Hebrews 12:1-2, Jesus is the author and finisher of our faith. Ephesians 2:8 talks about what God has given to us and that not of ourselves, it is the gift of God. We are saved not by our own works but by faith, and that not of ourselves, it is the gift of God.

Colossians also speaks about it and talks about the operation of faith. Also Acts 3, in the healing of the lame man when Peter says that it is not by their own power or godliness but by the power of the name of Jesus and faith in the name of Jesus, and the faith that comes by the operation of God has given the lame man the perfect soundness. So, faith does come from God.

So, strike off “faithfulness” in your Bible and put in the word “faith”, then it looks so different. It says that the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy but after all, love is a noun, joy is a noun. Why do they put “faithfulness” (which is a noun of an adjective) which is totally different from the actual word “faith”? They should have just put “faith”. After all, every other word is actually a noun, except there is no English equivalent for “goodness”, so they have to put “goodness”. We have a noun for faith so why put “faithfulness”? Faithfulness is so different from faith. Faithfulness is talking about me being faithful to something. Faithfulness is talking about me being faithful to a person, a cause, a principle, or to God. It is so different from faith.

Now, if you put back “faith” as it should be, in the Old King James translation, you see there that the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness (I prefer the word “gentleness”), goodness (or kindness), faith, meekness (or humility), temperance (or self-control, which we have already covered). It is not just a word “self-control”, but it is the ability to actually harness energy. The Greek word is “*egkrateia*”, comes from the word “*kratos*”. So, “*eg*” (when you put the prefix) means “out of”, so out of “*kratos*”. When you put the meaning of the words together, it means the ability to harness energy, so different from self-control. Self-control does have a meaning of that. It has a meaning of, like controlling yourself but here, it is the ability to harness God’s energy and channel it when you so want to.

For example, like Paul exercised meekness (in Acts 16) for several days when a demon-possessed girl followed him everywhere and kept giving him a sort of salutation which he never asked for. Do not ask demons to be your forerunner. There was a demon that said, “These men are the servants of the Most High God”. Paul did not need that distraction. She constantly kept saying, “These men are the servants of the Most High God”. She was always there every time when Paul was at the marketplace and then Paul got tired of that. He had self-control. He could have cast the demon out on the first day, but he did not simply use

God's power. He would only use it if God told him. I believe he did not have permission from God to do anything. After all, the slave girl did not belong to him. In those days, it was slavery but, in the end, the Spirit must have prompted him and said that he could do it. So, with one word he cast the demon out and then the girl could not tell people's fortune anymore. That is how Paul landed in prison because her masters said: "Hey, you did something to our slave girl, now we cannot make money". Paul reduced her to just an ordinary girl and so Paul landed in prison because of that.

*Self-control, nothing to do with discipline*

The incident in Acts 16, that is holding back the power and only use it when God tells him to, which is the reason why Jesus never turned the stone into bread. That is *egkrateia*, the ability to not use God's power for your own good. You do not selfishly use God's power. Like we do know that we have authority and power over the weather, but we do not go around playing with the weather. Sometimes we let the angels of God finish their work and then we go forth and do whatever we want. Or you schedule your time, flowing with what the angels tell you they are about to do and then you know what is going to happen next. It is important.

Here is the original, from the stem, "kra", which denotes power or lordship. From the word "kratos" (which I know), "kra" is the root of "kratos". It is like the power of the word. Remember *kratos* (lordship or authority)? The root word is actually the word "lord" or "authority" or "power". Sort of authoritative delegated power, from the word "kra". Let us see its usage. It speaks about status, the power from a position. Nowhere inside "self-control" is the word "discipline" used. The word "discipline" is actually the Greek word "devout". Remember Cornelius was a devout man? So, "devout" involves one who is a disciplined person, who can do things day after day.

Self-control (*egkrateia*) has nothing to do with discipline. It has to do with the ability to harness energy. You see, that is a fruit that comes from the Spirit, the ability to take and absorb God's energy and then only use it the way God wants it. You will not use it for self, you will not use it to make money but a lot of people, if they know what is to come, they will play the stock market. You are not going to use it for making money. Although God gives permission to some business people with a certain gift who are sent out by God to make money in a certain way, but outside of God's permission, God does not use prophecy for us to play the stock market, God does not give the word of wisdom or the word of knowledge

for us to play the stock market and it is not wise for us. Although I know roughly how the currency is going to flow, I do not play currency, I will just pray, “Lord, at the time when I need to exchange, you let me know”. I will exchange it from one country’s currency to another as I move about.

Sometimes God is gracious, in the sense, because of His blessing, the Obed-Edom effect, when you need to do something, it is always favourable for you to do it. It is more of the Obed-Edom effect which you never asked for. It just flows, like all nature and all forces flow around you in harmony, the Obed-Edom effect, which is different from *egkrateia* where you are actually exercising an authority over it. That is an interesting word, greatly misunderstood, but it is involved with faith. Can you see that it is in one set with faith? When God gives you the faith, you can do a lot of things. You can actually move mountains but should you, would you, must you, which works with *egkrateia*.

If the will of God is not, you will not use it, which is why the nine fruit of the Spirit are called triplets. I have found that very few people teach about the triplets in the nine fruit of the Spirit. They teach about the triplets in the nine gifts of the Spirit. I call them the *revelation* gifts (discerning of spirits, word of wisdom, word of knowledge); the *power* gifts (gift of faith, working of miracles, gifts of healings); the *vocal* gifts (gift of prophecy, different kinds of tongues, interpretation of tongues), I call them triplets. How come nobody saw the triplets in the nine fruit of the Spirit? “Triplets” means they work with one another.

Now, let us examine these nine fruit of the Spirit because they have to do with, in the end, flowing through our emotions. Although they are the nine fruit of the Spirit, they are the ones that contact our emotions first. Remember, our emotions were originally, before the fall of man, spiritual emotions. The soul was never supposed to be working on its own. Only after the fall of man, there is a soul being influenced by the physical body, which is sin nature. Before the fall, the soul had always been in line with the Spirit. The emotions of the Spirit would be the emotions of the sanctified soul. Only when that link was cut off, the soul found itself with a strange set of emotions which were affected by the world, pulled down by the world. We do not know how to name or qualify these emotions that we never had before, sometimes it is the negative part of the other side that we never had.

If Adam and Eve had not fallen, we might never know what tears are like. Isn't it interesting? They say, *eh*, we have tear ducts. They are not actually for tears, they are actually for producing tears which constantly protect and lubricate the eyes or whatever. They are like the "wipers", it is all liquid, it might spray or whatever, however it works in the glorified state. We might never know tears and sorrows. Tears and sorrows are the opposite of joy and gladness and suddenly they turn inwards and become emotions that we accept in our fallen state. When we get back to the new heaven and the new earth, there is no such thing anymore.

I do not know whether anyone of you are going to miss crying. Or anyone who could have missed his sorrows and says, "*Wah*, I have not felt sorrow for a long while, I want to know what sorrow feels like". Go and watch a video. We only have a short time in heaven, after we are raptured, we only have seven years, and then after that is one thousand years of peace. Then after the one thousand years is a new heaven and a new earth.

You wonder, if you should go to the libraries in heaven and look and play back some of your videos (they are not called videos, let us say, holographic archives), and you replay those scenes (because you can access the libraries), and when you look at them (as you are watching all the scenes of your life or scenes of another life on earth and what they went through), would you cry like you cry when watching a Korean drama or some of those Chinese movies where the hero dies and makes everyone cry?

#### *Emotions have become twisted*

Would we still feel the emotions? Yes, we would but it would be in a different way. We will look at it in the realm of understanding and that is the part I am going to talk about. There are different levels of emotions that we do have. We have lived so long on the earth that our emotions have become so twisted and are in a fallen state, and we have accepted the "fallen" as "normal". It takes a long time to re-educate ourselves and that is the purpose of this teaching, to re-educate our emotions, to tell us that this is not normal. The normal is another dimension.

Once upon a time, our soul did not have its own emotions. It was intricately linked. So, when we talk about the fruit of the Spirit, they are actually supposed to be our emotions. Our

emotions are supposed to be those triplets. That is, it. We need to rediscover them. I have grouped them together, just like as in the gifts of the Spirit.

Do you realise that in the gifts of the Spirit, prophecy covers tongues and interpretation of tongues? Isn't that correct? It is mentioned in 1 Corinthians 14, that prophecy covers tongues and interpretation of tongues because tongues with interpretation is a prophecy and that makes the gift of prophecy (in the triplet of the *vocal* gifts) higher than tongues and interpretation of tongues. I did not say it. The Apostle Paul says it in 1 Corinthians 14. Go and read it. He says go for prophecy. He desires that all prophesy because he talks about how one is able to receive the word of God in the understanding. He did not diminish tongues and interpretation of tongues. He says they have a place and he says when tongues happen, you must interpret it in the church, and that is different from prayer tongues which is okay, but when there is a message in tongues, you must interpret. He puts tongues and interpretation of tongues lower than prophecy in 1 Corinthians 14, because there is an order.

Remember I talked about the dominant note, sub-dominant and the seven? Dominant note is always the note of the main chord, like a G-chord. It is the main chord. The sub-dominant is a C in a G-chord. Then you have the 7 which is a D7 in a G-chord. So, when you sing a song in G, for example, *I just want to praise You, lift my hands and say: 'I love You', You are everything to me, And I exalt Your holy name...* If I end like that, you know it is not finished, correct? That is why it is a seven. You cannot end a song on the seven. Let us say, "*Hey, did you play that in a song? How can you play this song?*"? Cannot. Even Beethoven or Mozart will say, "*Eh, finish it*". ... *And I exalt Your holy name on high*. You see, when you start with G, you must end in G, then you complete the song. You can go to all the other sub-dominants and the seven in your song, but you must finish it on the bass, which is why in any song that people sing, you can try to find the chord because every time you come back to the bass, you look for the bass. Once you find the bass, then you know what chord they are singing in. So, a C-chord, just now C was the sub-dominant, but if I play the full C-chord for C, the F is the sub-dominant and the seven is the G7. So, you would have, *Lord, I love you, Lord, I love you...* if I stop there, it is not finished because it is a seven. I have got to go back to the G. *I love you, forever I love you*. Then you know the song is finished. In every song, every chord has its dominant, sub-dominant and the seven. It has to flow in that order. Actually, it is just the same, whether it is low or high, whether it starts in C, starts in G, starts in F, starts in A, it

flows through the same thing. That is what the triplets are, whether they be the gifts of the Holy Spirit or the fruit of the Spirit, you have the main note, the sub-dominant, and the seven.

*The gift of faith is higher*

In the same way, in the *power* gifts, you have the gift of faith. Even the Lord taught Kenneth E Hagin that the gift of faith is higher than the working of miracles and the gifts of healings, because it can do the job of the other two. Through the gift of faith, you could work miracles. Through the gift of faith, you could do the gifts of healings but when you have the gifts of healings, you might not do at the level of the gift of faith. The reason it is dominant is it can do the job of the other. There are triplets in the gifts of the Holy Spirit. The same with discerning of spirits, the word of wisdom and the word of knowledge, these are all different levels that are there and when you move in the area of the *revelation* gifts, you realise that the word of wisdom is very important in that area. There are different dominants that are there.

Now we look at the fruit of the Spirit. There are triplets. The first mention of it is the dominant note which is why here it puts love, then joy and peace. So, love is the dominant, joy is the sub-dominant, peace is the seven and you have longsuffering (which is actually like hope, patience in hope), kindness and goodness. Then you have faith, meekness and (I have not found a word to translate) self-control. I leave it as self-control although the word “self” is not inside. I will think of an English word in time to come on how to get this properly translated. *Egkrateia*, I have not found an English word to translate it yet.

Now, after you do the triplets, you see that it relates one to another. For example, in the nine gifts of the Holy Spirit. *Revelation* gifts, have to do with power, like something of the eyes and the mind. *Power* gifts, have to do with the hands, you are doing something. *Vocal* gifts, you say something. It is obvious, there is a relationship among the mouth, the eyes and the hands. There is a relationship among them. Each is showing a different thing.

In the nine fruit of the Spirit, each of those is dependent on the other and Paul was the one who summarised it for us in 1 Corinthians 13. He says there is faith, there is hope, there is love. The third set is called the *faith* set. Remember what the *faith* set is? Faith, meekness, self-control and remember what the *hope* set is? *Hope* set is longsuffering, kindness (or gentleness) and goodness. Then the *love* set is love, joy, peace. So, there are three sets; the *love* set, the *hope* set, and the *faith* set. The Bible tells us which has predominance. Among

the sets, one is higher than the other. It is just like in the nine gifts of the Spirit, of the three sets, *revelation* gifts, *power* gifts and *vocal* gifts, *revelation* gifts always surpass all. It is always the higher set, because when God reveals something, through that revelation, you can work power. So, there is a predominance on that.

*The greater the hope, the greater the faith*

The same way, Paul tells us at the end of 1 Corinthians 13:13, faith, hope, love but the greatest of these is love and we can put it altogether also. To show dependence, you throw in verses like Hebrews 11:1, which says that *faith is the substance of things hoped for*, which implies that hope is the material from which faith builds upon. That is the relationship. You must have hope before you can have faith, which means that in your emotions, in your growing, you must have hope. Without hope, great faith cannot come. If I ask you to build a house and the only material I give you is straw, you can only build a straw house. If I ask you to build a house and I give you bricks, then you can only build a brick house. You are limited by the materials you have. *Faith is the substance of things hoped for*, so there must be hope first. The greater the hope, the greater the faith.

Let us look at Romans 4, in the life of Abraham as an example. Abraham was shown to be a man of great faith and he is like the father of faith to us. Let me show the faith of Abraham in verses 16-18, *“Therefore it is of faith that it might be according to grace, so that the promise might be sure to all the seed, not only to those who are of the law, but also to those who are of the faith of Abraham, who is the father of us all (as it is written, ‘I have made you a father of many nations’) in the presence of Him whom he believed God, who gives life to the dead and calls those things which do not exist as though they did; who, contrary to hope, in hope believed, (Do you notice there, that there are two hopes? Contrary to natural hope, he found hope. It was in hope that he developed belief. Now, “belief” in English is a root word for faith. “Belief” is the word form of “faith”. You see, the word “pisteuo” is from the word “pistis”, so pistis is a noun, pisteuo is a verb. So, when we say, “I believe”, the Greek says “I pisteuo”, which means “I am exercising faith”, as a verb. The English does not have that, but the Greek has that. In hope he exercised faith. Only in hope can faith develop) so that he became the father of many nations...”*. He was not weak in faith because he had a higher hope than natural hope. How did he get this higher hope? Notice the triplet of *hope*: longsuffering, gentleness, goodness? So, apparently hope comes through patience and then your hope must develop strongly until you have a strong hope that can be a material to build on.

You know that bricks are actually made from clay. If anyone has used clay, he would realise that clay is a very soft material. How does clay become bricks? By pushing it into a certain shape, baking it, taking all the moisture out of it, putting pressure on it, and it becomes solid brick. The resulting bricks are solid enough and they are better than some of the cement bricks. Cement bricks, I mean, if you use a hammer or some sledge hammer, the whole thing will fall apart. There are buildings today built with cheap cement bricks, that means they are just pure cement made into bricks but really good bricks, solid bricks, if you use a hammer, it is very hard to knock. How did the soft clay become that? Through the process of suffering, it has to suffer the furnace, suffer the fire, suffer the moldings.

In order for hope to be strong hope, so that faith can use it to build bricks of things hoped for, of things not seen, hope must be super-strong. If you are a person of hope (and not just dreams) and your hope is strong, and you know that it surely will come to pass, anything in the future is hope, but faith comes and takes what is in the future to bring it into your present. So, obviously, strong hope is necessary for strong faith, as it was in the life of Abraham. You have it in Hebrews 11:1, the two are related.

Then you have Galatians 5 where Paul says that faith works by love. The word “works” is the Greek word “*energeo*”, which implies that faith is energised by love. In Galatians 5:6, “*For in Christ Jesus neither circumcision nor uncircumcision avails anything, but faith working through love*”. Can you see the word “*energeo*”? *Energeo* is where we get the Greek word for energy, “*energeia*”. Here, as a verb “*energeo*”. *Energeia* is a noun, *energeo* is a verb. The word means, that faith is “*energeo*” by love. Faith is energised by love. Then you see the whole process. Love energises faith. Faith takes what is hoping to convert it. In the end, love is the main dominant part.

Here is the thing, when we see how love, faith and hope relate, we realise, like what Paul says, love is the greatest. The greatest is what can produce faith. It is actually love that produces faith. It is the energy that creates the process of faith in a person. Without strong love for God and strong love for people, you will have no faith. Some people say, “*Wah, I thought loving God is enough, why must love people too*”? Why, you do not want to love people? That is one of the commandments.

If you lose faith in people, you will also in the end lose faith in God. Why, because God, despite all the human disobedience and the many ways that humans have rejected Him, still believes in the human race. After seeing what humans did for four thousand over years in the Old Testament, many of us, if you were God, you would say, “*Eh*, do not *lah*, do not send the Son”. Correct? You would say that there is no hope, but God has such faith. Not only that, look at all the twelve disciples of Jesus. They all looked like *dungu* and one really betrayed Him. What hope do we have? God has such faith. Look at it this way. Jesus knew that Peter was going to deny Him three times and Jesus still said that he was going to be the leader. Most of us would have given that guy up.

If you lose faith in people, which is what the devil wants you to do, you will lose faith in the plan of God. Why, you think in heaven, only you alone are enough *uh*? Do you want to go to heaven and find that you are the only one who is so perfect who can go to heaven, and all the rest are in hell, what kind of heaven do you have? It is a lonely heaven. The only people you will fellowship with are the angels, and you say that is enough. What, you selfish, little fly. No, have hope in people, have faith in people, that you can still reach out to them. It is because of faith that we believe we can still change the world and reach out to people that are impossible.

Look at it this way, how many of us would have hoped that a person like Paul could turn out to be a fantastic apostle? You look at how evil he was. Many people would have written him off, but God did not because God knew how He could turn Paul into a golden disciple. God does not lose hope. God has faith in His people. If you find yourself losing faith in people, then it is because you have lost love in people.

Do you know that all children grow up with great hope and trust in everyone? Which is why you have got to teach children not to trust strangers, especially strangers that come and say, “Do you want a cookie?” and take you somewhere. We have got to teach them that we live in an evil world. Sometimes we teach them so much so that they look at everyone as evil and everyone becomes the bogeyman. That is horrible, what kind of world is that? We have to teach both sides, that there are also good people. You just have to understand how not to be victimised by them. You learn to be above their faults.

Jesus knew all men, He knew that human beings could not be trusted. That is why in the book of John, it says He knew all men and He did not entrust Himself to them. He would rather trust Himself in God, but He still had hope in people. He had hope in His disciples and His full trust was in God.

That is why David says he would rather fall into the judgment of God than into the judgment of humans because God has mercy, whereas humans, *hor, hor*, you know the rest of the story. You just say *hor* and then you know. He says he would rather fall into the hands of the angry God than fall into the hands of angry humans because God has a heart and God has mercy.

So, we see that all these nine fruit of the Spirit are in triplet form. The reason we show in triplet form is this, sometimes when you look at all the nine emotions that are there, do you realise that these nine were originally the pure emotions that humans have? Now, let us take the dominant notes; love, hope and faith. When Paul played 1 Corinthians 13 as the main orchestra, he was using the main dominant notes of the triplets, faith, hope and love. These are the 3 main emotions on the earth that we need to have. Paul says that all the nine fruit of the Spirit can be found in 1 Corinthians 13. You know, love suffers long; longsuffering comes from love, everything is a product of love. All the nine fruit of the Spirit are actually the product of love.

Now, let us look at Galatians 5:22-23. If you look at the word “fruit” in verse 22, it is the word “*karpos*”, noun, nominative, singular. Can you see the word? Singular! You say why? Singular! Why am I emphasising it? Because the Bible does use the plural “fruits”, although in English, the plural for “fruit” is “fruits”. Generally, isn’t that how we use it? Then we use “fruits” to mean a variety of fruits. We do not use “fruits of the Spirit”, correct? However, they do not have such idiomatic expression of the English language in Greek. In Greek, if it is plural, it is still okay, but not in English usage. Let us say, in English, sometimes you change the tense and certain words still retain the same meaning. The singularity of “fruit” is an English idiomatic expression, nothing to do with Greek. In Greek, if they want to have the plural form, they can.

Let me show in Revelation 22:2, “*In the middle of the street, and on either side of the river, was the tree of life (singular, tree of life), which bore twelve fruits...*”. Hey, that is an improper English idiomatic expression. They must translate it in a plural form because the

original Greek word “*karpus*” is a noun, accusative, plural and the Greek word is actually “*karpus*”, which is the accusative form. If it is in nominative form, the word would be “*karpos*”. You all learn in Greek, *karpos, karpus; anthropos, anthropoi*. Remember you all learn in Greek, *ho anthropos* (the man), *ho anthropoi* (the men, plural)?

### *Twelve different flavours*

In the original Greek, when they do want to use the plural for “fruit”, they can, and they have, which means twelve different flavours, in the tree of life. One thing to take note of is that the tree of life has really grown, the tree of life in the garden is now the tree of life in the city. The tree of life has grown, that itself is another topic. Now, whenever the Bible uses “fruits”, like bear the fruits of righteousness, as in 2 Corinthians 9:10, “*Now may He who supplies seed to the sower, and bread for food, supply and multiply the seed you have sown and increase the fruits of your righteousness*”. I am looking at “your” and is a singular person.

Okay, let me look at the Greek word, *Now may He who supplies seed to the sower, and bread for food, supply and multiply the seed you* (“*humon*”) *have sown and increase the fruits of your* (“*humon*”) *righteousness*. *Humon* is a second person genitive. Can you see the word “plural” there? It is talking about the whole church together, each one bearing individual fruit of righteousness and producing as a whole, that means as a whole plantation and because it refers to the “your” as plural, so the individual fruit collected becomes “fruits”. Generally, can you find that this one is not really about righteousness, but it is about a corporation of righteousness? When you look at righteousness, can you find any other verse where righteousness “fruit” is plural, because most of the time it is singular? Now compare this to Romans 5, when Paul first introduced the subject of righteousness. The gift of righteousness is mentioned in verse 15 as a *free gift*. Then he goes on to tell us that this free gift is actually the gift of righteousness.

Romans 6 tells us there, that we ought to give ourselves unto righteousness so that we can grow to become holy. Can you see verse 19? “*I speak in human terms because of the weakness of your flesh. For just as you presented your members as slaves of uncleanness, and of lawlessness leading to more lawlessness, so now present your members as slaves of righteousness for holiness*”. It implies that holiness comes from righteousness. If it comes from righteousness, then you have holiness as one of the fruits.

Then when you examine this verse here, look at the word “righteousness”. I am just showing you how you can study the Bible. Forget the word “fruit” and look at the word “righteousness”. You will find that there are many results that can be produced from righteousness. Taking from the New Testament, leaving the Old for the time being, 2 Corinthians 3:9, *“For if the ministry of condemnation had glory, the ministry of righteousness exceeds much more in glory”*. Can you see the second result of righteousness? Holiness, glory, these are the fruits of righteousness, that means there is a plurality.

Now, let us have more verses. 2 Corinthians 6:7, *“by the word of truth, by the power of God, by the armor of righteousness...”*. Can you see “armor of righteousness”? You see, Paul’s revelation of the armor is increasing. There are those different pieces of the whole armor of God that Paul describes in Ephesians 6. Remember which one is righteousness? The breastplate of righteousness that protects. The third fruit of righteousness is protection. It protects your vital organ: your heart. You can see, it results in holiness, glory and it gives you immunity. In fact, it is the gift of righteousness that cancels out the sin nature in your body and then it takes the New Jerusalem Glory to eradicate the sin nature. Different levels.

That answers the question on why there is the plural “fruits”, which is important. Every time there is a plural, it means there is more than one fruit, like the twelve fruits of the tree of life.

As you all know, there are many types of durian, *D24, Mao Shan Wang, XO*, these are all the old favourites. Then there are the normal durians (with no title), they are just small little ones, which are sold for 50 cents or \$1. So, not all durians are the same, different places, different trees, different flavours. In the same way, there are many flavours. When the Bible uses “fruits”, it means that there are definitely different flavours or different types of or actual modifications and attributes of a fruit involved.

Now, let us get back to Galatians 5:22 to 23. Why do you think they use the singular “fruit of the Spirit”? Because though you have the triplets, they all come from one. They all are still one. These are all emotions of love, longsuffering, self-control (or “*egkrateia*” because we do not have a good English translation there). Joy and peace are so different in terms of emotions, correct? Joy and peace are so different, but they are all the same fruit of love. That is important for us to see.

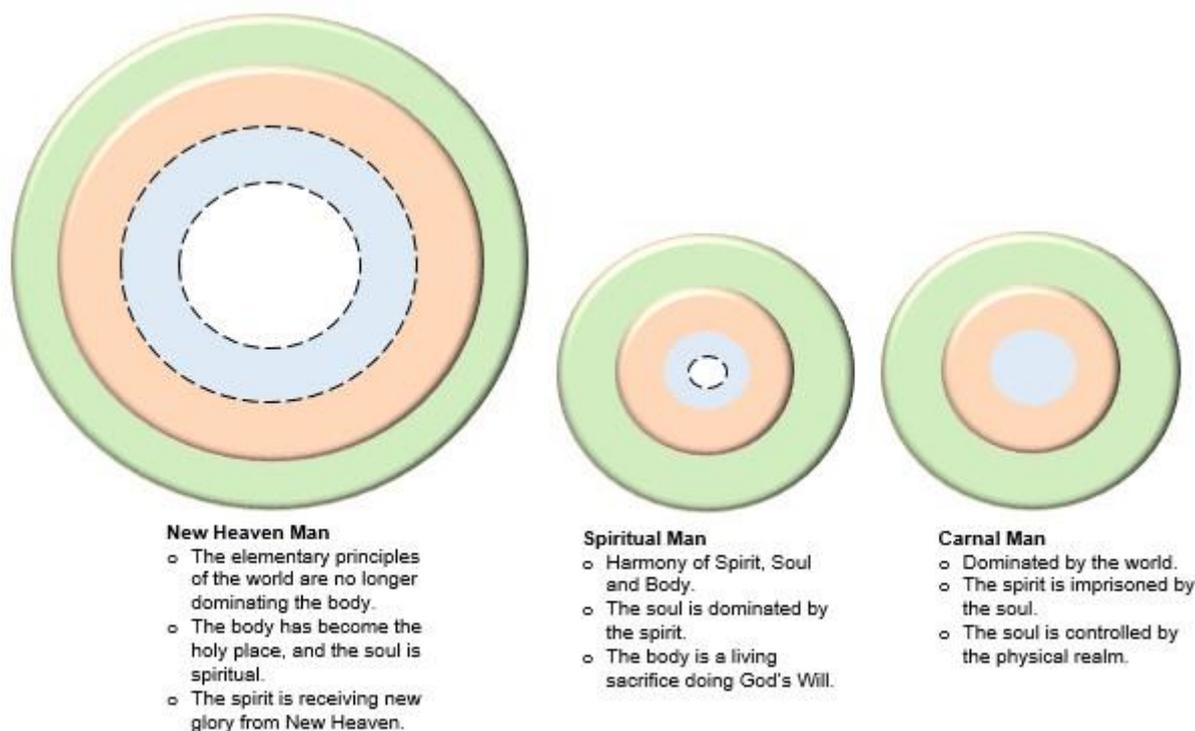


Diagram 2

This is the carnal man. Can you see the thick dark line that I drew? The spirit man is encased inside. For those who are not born again, their spirit man is completely separated from God. Dead. Now the word “dead” does not necessarily mean non-existent. It just means it is cut off from God, spiritual death, separated from God, can become evil. The soul is there, the body is there, none of the spirit is visible (because of that thick layer).

Some philosophers, like Aristotle reduced that humans are only made up of two parts, the soul and the body but before him was Plato. Plato believed in the tripartite man: the spirit, the soul and the body. By the time it came down to Aristotle, he was talking more about the dualistic nature of man. The spiritual was not spoken of, or forgotten, but his philosophy was that of the dualistic man, an inner man and the outer man. That is, it. So, the inner man became like the soul. He forgot all about the spirit.

Today, most people who believe in the afterlife have a dualistic view of man rather than the tripartite view of man. They believe that there is a soul and there is a body. Of course, there are some who do not even believe that there is a soul, but only believe that man is just a body and when he dies, he just disappears and ceases to exist. In spite of a lot of OBE / NDE experiences, they still do not believe in a life after death. The reason they do not want to believe it is if they choose to believe, they need to explain what is over there. Since they

cannot explain, it is better for them not to believe. Also, if they believe in the afterlife and if they believe in a god, immediately it means that they are accountable to a god and man does not like to be accountable, by his own nature, man is rebellious. Since they cannot explain, cannot see, cannot know, they would rather not believe. So, they choose the easy way out and say this must be it. Some do not believe in the afterlife.

However, man is tripartite. The Bible tells us it is tripartite, from 1 Thessalonians 5:23, spirit, soul and body. That is the true view of man. We have a spirit, a soul and a physical body. The spirit is almost invisible for the carnal man. That is why it is understandable. Since it is so thick inside that it is like it does not exist, they only see two parts of that, if they could ever think that there is an inner part.

This is where *The Spiritual Man* book by Watchman Nee seeks to bring you into. Spirit, soul and body. The little white thing there is New Jerusalem Glory, which was invisible at that time to Watchman Nee.

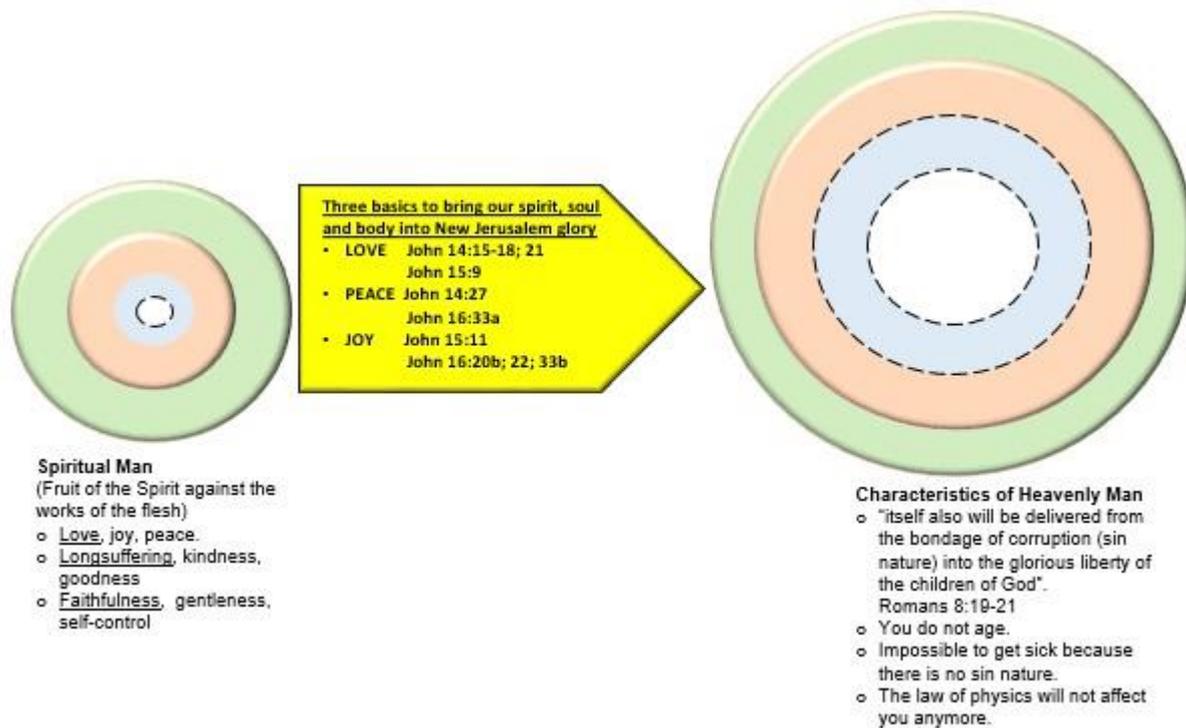


Diagram 3

This is who we want you to be. This is the end-time Christian, end-time church, the Glorious Church. Notice that the New Jerusalem Glory has grown so big? Hallelujah! So, you say, "Where is my soul"? Oh, your soul is now the yellow part, whereas just now the yellow part was your spirit. Your soul has now become spiritualised. You say, "What happens to my

body”? You know, the green part which was your soul, now the green part is your body. That means your body is functioning perfectly and then, “What is the brown part”? The brown part is just the world around you. So, literally, your body has been Glorified.

Sin nature is eradicated. You have become the Glorious Church, you have no wrinkle, no ageing, no sickness, nothing. You are exactly like how God made Adam, plus more, because Adam did not have the New Jerusalem Glory, whereas you have something greater. You have become the Glorious Church here and this is the diagram that we are bringing you into.

#### *The four levels of love*

Now to enter into this stage, you need to know the four levels of love. No, it does not have to do with the four Greek words for love, which is different. There are four Greek words for love, of which two are used in the Bible, “*agape*” and “*philia*”. *Philia* is used for spiritual love too. Do not think about *philia* as just carnal or soulish, because the Bible extols *philia* and even when Peter confessed his love for Jesus as just *philia* and not *agape*, Jesus accepted it, because that was the beginning. *Agape* is what Paul has used to become the concept of spiritual love. Then you have *storge* which has to do with family love. Then you have *eros* which is love between husband and wife. So, those are the Greek version of the four types of love. We are not talking about that, we are talking about something higher.

In Ephesians 3, in Paul’s prayer for the church, in verse 14, he says he bows his knees to the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ. In verse 16, he prays for their spirit man to be strengthened, then in verses 17 to 19 he says, “*that Christ may dwell in your hearts through faith; that you, being rooted and grounded in love, (Now, rooted and grounded is about the roots that need to grow, and roots grow only through testing and tribulation. That is the hope and longsuffering phase. You must be prepared to be tested) may be able to comprehend with all the saints what is the width and length and depth and height, to know the love of Christ...*”.

I have explained it before as different dimensions. It also talks about the four sides which is like the cube. It says these are all revelations about the cube within the cube. Of course, the whole cube is based on God’s love because God created all things by His love but there are these four dimensions of love. In a natural way, I have mentioned that the dimension of love can be looked at as God loves you, you love God (two dimensions). You love people, people love you (two dimensions also). So, you love people and you love the creation. Those cover

the four dimensions. That is a very simple way to put it. To put the four dimensions into two commandments concisely, to love God and to love your neighbour but there is more to it than that. Now, to explore it, let us do the four levels, the four dimensions of love. We want to go upwards in love. If you take the top one to be, 1st dimension, second dimension, third dimension, fourth dimension, then we are actually at the lowest one of the fourth dimension. So, all that you have learned in the fruit of the Spirit (Galatians 5:22-23) is only there. There are still these three other dimensions.

The secret is how to relate the nine fruit of the Spirit into the seven Spirits of God (because the seven Spirits of God start in a strange way)? Remember the seven churches: Ephesus, Smyrna, Pergamos, Thyatira, Sardis, Philadelphia and Laodicea? They represent the Spirits of peace, love, glory or joy, power, life, wisdom and mercy. We are going to relate those two together in a way that we have never done it before, everything is always fresh.

How to relate them is that they are all pointing to the four dimensions of love that Paul was talking about. There are higher levels of love. You say, *wah*, the love of God is so good, makes you cry, makes you weep, makes you do everything, makes you love Him more, *wah*, so good. Still have some more. I will explain the higher level of love. You already know this, but you have not brought it together in your mind. Remember how I said that love, light and life are all the same thing? In John 1:4, it says in Him (that is, in Jesus) was life, remember? If you want to know the Greek word for life, it is the simple word “*zoe*”. “*In Him was life, and the life was the light of men*”. Light contains life and life contains light. They can flow into one another.

Now, before God allowed life to flow (in Genesis 1) on the darkened portion of the fallen universe where He stopped His life from flowing. When you put the fact that the angels have fallen before, what happened when the angels fell? The picture is very clear. The mysteries are all revealed. When one-third of the universe fell with one-third of the angels, God put a boundary between the two-thirds and the one-third. The two-thirds became the pristine universe, it actually continues to grow, so by now it is larger than two-thirds and only recently, the pristine universe started to relate to us, only in this revival.

In the last altar building in Germany, at Okertal, was different from all the altars that we had built throughout the whole world. We had been to the countries of Singapore, Malaysia,

Australia, Korea and New Zealand (five countries). We had been to the seven countries all over the world, that are, Canada, USA, Argentina, Brazil, UK, Greece and South Africa. We had also been to Madaba, Mukawir and various other places. In Australia, we had gone to all the state capitals. From Brisbane to Melbourne to Adelaide, to all the major areas, including Darwin and Perth. We built altars all over the various states, including Canberra. So, we had built altars all over the world. None of the altars was like the one at Okertal because at Okertal, after the transfiguration, the pristine universe joined us.

It was only possible from September 2015 because from when God began to call forth and the midnight cry was over, the universe started to rearrange. In other words, the pristine universe started pushing backwards. Do you know the boundary is no more between the two-thirds and the one-third? It was pushed back until it is now within our solar system. In the spirit realm, it was pushed back. Now we know that things have changed and because they are now very near. The pristine universe is now very nearby, it is just within our solar system and right towards our planet earth. That is the boundary now. The boundary used to be further than humans could see. That is how far the boundary was. It was further than even the Hubble Space Telescope could see. That is how big our universe is. The boundary was so far away but now it has been pushed towards the planet earth because this is the *finale*. Since we have got so many *finales* and many cry wolf, this is the *finale* of all *finales*, the one where the *Ode To Joy* by Beethoven, the ninth symphony, goes off, where every instrument is crying the *Ode To Joy*. This is because it is so near, it has linked with us, but only in that altar (at Okertal). There it linked with us and angels of the pristine universe have started working with us.

I met some of the major Angels from there long ago and they have each been given different tasks. What I saw is that when God said, "Let there be light", I saw that even the star system and the sun and various planets were all dark. Even the sun and the stars had stopped functioning and they did not go supernova, they just ceased. When God judged the fallen angels when they rebelled, He stopped His life from flowing. When He stopped His life from flowing, all the suns and stars died. Everything was just thick darkness. So, in Genesis 1 when God said, "Let there be light", it was life that flowed. Suddenly, like the light of God, the same light that shines in New Jerusalem, which itself is producing light for the whole universe. Do you know that New Jerusalem produces light for the whole universe? That is how bright it is. In the new heaven and the new earth, you can stand on the furthest reaches of

the new heavens (and remember, new heaven is plural, new heavens, that means there are different sections of the universe. It is like a multiverse, not just a universe, it is a multiverse, different sections of creation), and you can see the sunshine of New Jerusalem Glory. That is how bright it is.

### *God re-created the planet earth*

I saw that when God said, "Let there be light", the light came back and when the light came back, it was hovering over all the planets and galaxies and star system, because the entire galaxies had fallen among the one-third. Then when God started creating man on the earth, He started with the planet earth. As He re-created the planet earth, notice that the sun was not firing up yet? *Ya*, our sun did not fire up yet. On the first day there was still no sun.

Remember on which day there was a sun? First, He made the firmament and divided the waters which were under the firmament from the waters which were above the firmament. Only on the 4th day, He released the sun to shine. Then all the stars started shining, in one day, lighted up again. It is like God lighting up a match. That was exactly what happened because of the life of God that flowed. The life produced the light. The light is the life, which is why life and light are interrelated.

Light and love are also interrelated. Instead of John 1, we go to 1 John. He who does not walk in love does not walk in the light for he who walks in love walks in the light. He who does not walk in love walks in darkness for he who walks in love walks in the light. You know what he is saying? God is love, and God is light. He who walks in the light must walk in love because love is light. So, suddenly those three "Ls" come together, love, life and light, which is why they are all interrelated with one another. We know, but we have never seen it in this way. Here is what I want to tell you. Everything actually goes back to love. The light is a type of love; the life is a type of love.

### *Inner joy in your DNA*

Remember the seven Spirits of God? The first three churches are  $3 + 2 + 1 = 6 + 1 = 7$ . What have I just done? The first three churches, they actually start with life too because in the Ephesian church, what is the reward to the overcomer? To eat from the tree of life. Isn't that true? That is his reward. Life is flowing, love is flowing. Now, the first three churches represent *Peace, Love and Joy*. Although you have the triplet of the triplets, which is  $3 \times 3$ , remember this one is Galatians 5:22-23, the nine fruit (the triplets) of the Spirit, have to do

with this fourth level. All that you have learned of Galatians 5:22-23 and all that you have seen, is only the first dimension of *Love*. Yes, including all that Jesus had done, all that, there is another level. There are two other churches. You see, the dimension that we see of *Peace*, *Love* and *Joy* (joy is glory, is tied together), when the glory of God comes, just like when the glory of God came in the transfiguration, one of the things that those of you have a side effect of is that there is an inner joy on your inside, in your DNA. That first level is the dimension of *Love*. I am talking about how your emotions can increase.

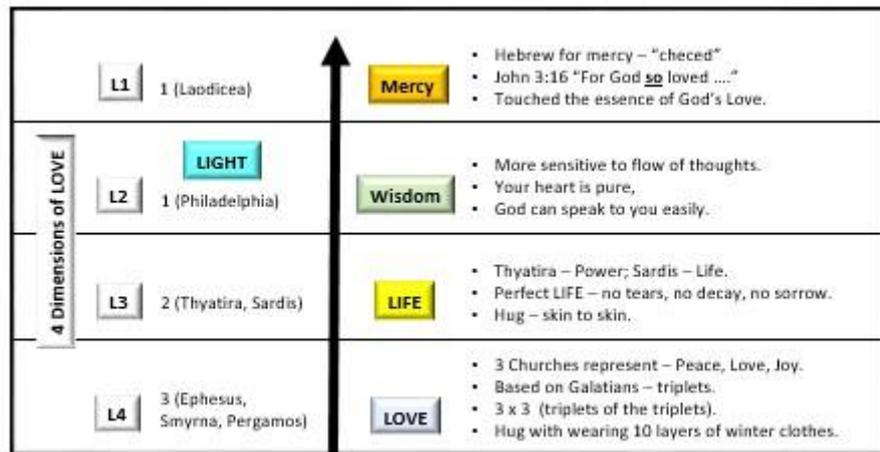


Diagram 3

The second level of third level is actually the dimension of *Life*. Life includes power. The other two churches are Thyatira [Power] and Sardis [Life]. Remember what Sardis represents? *Life* and from our chart of the four living creatures, remember the section of the Ox (*Power*), remember the colour of power? All green because green represents life and all life is created powerfully. Life is powerful. Life overcomes death. When there is constant life, death cannot come.

*Every cell is renewed perfectly*

If every cell in your physical body is renewed perfectly, you will never die. Old age and death come because the B that replaces the A is not as good as the A. The C that replaces the B is even worse off than the B and the A. Then the D that replaces the C and the B is even worse off and then it slowly deteriorates. If the replacement of A1 is as good as A (it is A2) and the replacement of A2 is as good as A1 (it is A3), you actually never age, because every cell is replaced perfectly. It is the process of deterioration that causes sickness, old age, death and weakness, because life is powerful.

The second section of the seven Spirits of God is the Spirit of power and the Spirit of life, which is actually the flow of life. Then with Philadelphia, you see *Wisdom* in the second level diagram. Then after that, you see another level called *Mercy* which is in the first level diagram. These are all different levels of love. There is a level of love that you reach into, called *Power* and *Life* (Thyatira and Sardis). At that level, the love feels different.

Now, with *Wisdom*, I have put one more word there “Light”. Can you see there is *Love*, *Life* and *Light* as you go upwards? Then at this place the first level, there is no word for it. I will just leave it as *Mercy*. There is actually a Hebrew word for it, but it is translated in different ways.

In the fourth level diagram is what we know of love because of love, we are touched; we weep, and we cry but originally life does not weep, does not cry. Perfect life has no tears, perfect life has no decay, perfect life has no sorrow.

There is another level of life and love. Instead of calling it all different things, let us call it: L4, L3, L2, L1 which are the different levels of love. I know it can be very difficult for you to feel it. I am trying to bring you into that level. There is a level of feeling the love of God at the level of life. Let me give some illustrations.

Everything on the planet earth is made by God’s love. That is why it says: *For God so loved the world*. When you eat your dinner, it is physical food. If you can see it, all physical food that comes from plants or animals are absorbing the energy of life and love. You can easily see that they absorb energy, correct? Energy of the sun – goes to the plants, goes to the animals, they consume one another, then it comes to you. So, it is like sunshine flowing in different ways but instead of seeing it as sunshine and energy, see it as God’s love. It was God who put the plants there for food. Remember the garden of Eden? They did not need to eat the plants to live. God put the plants for food, for enjoyment. To partake of life, although there was a special tree called the tree of life, God put all the other trees to give different things. Try to see that everything that God created was out of His love.

You are experiencing different aspects of love. Why is it that in our human relationships, we describe it in the Greek words, for example, you know that the love between parents and children is a different type of love, correct? It feels different. If you love your father or

mother and your father or mother loves you, it feels different. You feel nice of course. It is nice to be loved by your parents; it is nice to love your children, correct? It is a different type of love.

Then there is a love of friends, which is *philia*. It is also a different type of love. A good friend whom you can trust (good friendship), who you love hanging out with. It feels different. It also makes you happy. It makes you peaceful and joyful because the side effects of love are peace and joy. Let us say you have got good friends and you have got good parents, you do not want to give up either, you are enjoying both sides.

Then you have family love, between brother and sister. It is a different type of love. It is different from your friends who choose your friendship and they are also different in DNA from you, different from your brother and sister. No matter how different you are, sometimes you acknowledge that if they are still flesh and blood, you still love each other. It is a different type of love and if you have good brothers and sisters, although sometimes some of you have separated from them and hated them and have never talked to them for the last 50 years, hopefully you get healed, it is nice if you have a good family. Of course, some can be overbearing, and some can be overstepping the boundary when they should not be overstepping the boundary. Then there is a love between two lovers (male and female). That is another level, correct? It is called *Eros* in the Greek.

There are all the different types of love. You would not say you only want one and do not need the other. With the exception of those called to single life, you have chosen, like you are among the 144,000 male or female version, in the Church Age, that is possible. Paul was one of them; his was a single life. Elijah was single; he chose a single life. Elisha was also single. There were a lot of single people in the Bible, so no shame to be that, if that is what God's call for you is. You do not want to say this is better than that, although there are some people who do those comparisons. There is no such thing. Each has its flavour.

I know some people are orphans, but they might have experienced parental love through their adopted parents, who sometimes love them more than their own flesh and blood. As you know, when parents adopt children, the love they have for them is sometimes greater than even their own children. So, they might have experienced parental love.

Now, out of our experience of human relationships, we can relate to God. If there is a flaw, a problem in your relationship with humans, it also creates a flaw in your relationship with others. For example, if you have not got a good relationship with your own father and mother, throughout your life you will always be struggling to deal with authoritative figures. You suffer the handicap or the dwarfism from your own emotional dwarfness in growing in parental love. Every area of love that you lack is going to handicap your life. Thank God that Jesus is our everything. Jesus is our spouse (you know, we are the bride), Jesus is our friend, Jesus is our brother. Heavenly Father is our Father. *Oh*, what more do you need? You feel everything in God's family. God can meet all your needs. Any area of flaws created by imperfection does handicap you. The flavours – you cannot compare and say one is better than the other. In the same way, all that we have experienced thus far is only the fourth level [L4].

When you look at the sun producing food and everything, for instance, when I am eating the pineapple tarts, I remember the pineapple gets its juices or energy from the sun and somebody must have harvested it. You know, the pastry, let us say the pastry might have been made from flour or wheat or something, might be all kinds of things, so it is still a plant product, and then when you eat it, you remember it is a plant product, but you can see that what you are eating comes from the energy of the sun. You look further, you look into the molecular level, and then you can see the minerals and all that, but you can see one step further, that all these things are created by the love of God. In the end you are eating love. The next time when you are eating a piece of chicken, remember how the chicken gave its life for you. Look beyond it and see that somewhere along the line is love. So, everything that you are eating comes out of energy and the energy comes out of God's love. God created chicken, God created all those things. If you can see that everything you take is actually love, even if you eat plain rice, love is involved.

Of course, nowadays, because of money, people do things for money, not for love but when you remove money, you know what people will do things for in heaven? Love, because they love something, they love to do something, then they do it. If you take away the concept of money, and people do not need money to live, and if everyone has whatever they want and provided for, the only reason for doing anything is because you love to do it. You might still love farming because you enjoy farming.

In the spiritual world, which is one level up from us, not heaven (but I call it spiritual world, not the part where they come to know Jesus yet, they are the Romans 2 category, where the angels are teaching, and some Christians are there ministering to them, hoping to reveal Christ to them), when they believe in God and they believe in the goodness of God, to them it is like heaven.

There is such a thing as a farming community and they farm perfect farms. Just like Adam could easily take a plant and plant it on the other side. Couldn't he have done that? Imagine a perfect garden of Eden where you are allowed to do anything you want. You can take a seed and then put it there and, so it is with everything they do. They have got houses provided by God in the spiritual world and they have living quarters and they have everything. They do not need to eat to live because they are spiritual forms. There are farming communities and all that. Do you know what they are taught? When they see rivers that flow in the place, they say these rivers are because of God's love. You see, they are learning about Christ indirectly. It is because of the goodness of God; how good God is.

#### *A more perfect environment*

In the farming communities, they farm not because they have to farm, but because everything is up to them and everyone is given something to do. Everyone follows someone, and someone is following them up. It is like a very good follow-up system. Everyone can do whatever they want. Some would choose to serve in communities and all that. They have got very sophisticated things which are more complex than ours, but in a more perfect environment where there is no death, no sickness. Then they learn one thing. Some of them produce fantastic-looking cakes from their product. You say, "Wah, baking cakes uh"? Ya, why not? They harvest the thing and they sort of put it together and they do something to it and they could convert one thing to one form and produce bread from there. If you have read how in 1 Kings 19, remember the angel gave something to Elijah to eat when he was very discouraged, and he sat under a broom tree? Where did the angel get the flour from? The Spiritual world. What about the Manna in the Bible? It is different, it is something else. Manna came from a crystallisation of the life and the love of God. It is like a crystal. The food that the angel gave to Elijah was a cake. You know, that is Superman cake, right? He ate twice, no need to eat for forty days. Some of you will love it, if only you have that one at the beginning of the forty days fast.

In the spiritual world, they learn that everything that they eat, the true substance is love. God's love gives the energy. The people who make it do it because of love. It is a solidification of love upon love upon love. When they eat, it is love. Everything is actually love that is giving life and it is love that continues to increase the quality of life.

### *Higher dimension of life*

There you have it; the second level is Life. You see how hard it is to illustrate the higher level of understanding this love? This is because when you walk in this dimension of life, you realise that even the air you breathe in, you do not breathe in oxygen alone, you are breathing in God's love. You know why we say grace? Because we are taking in life, either the life that comes from the plant or the life that comes from the animal. We are giving thanks to God for life. Didn't the Lord's prayer include that? *Our Father in heaven, Hallowed be Your name. Your kingdom come. Your will be done On earth as it is in heaven. Give us this day our daily bread.* We are acknowledging that everything we have comes from God and the food that we are about to partake, though we have worked hard with our hands, if not for God's life, we have got no work to work. If God did not give us hands, we have got no hands to work. If God did not give us life, we cannot exist and be conscious of life. We thank God for life. We thank God for giving us food to sustain life and the food is actually the love of God.

Can you see the second level in the diagram, when you actually begin to see that all things come, that all life comes from love? The more you can see it, the more you live in that dimension, you actually need less and less real food. You can be like the song says, "All we need is love". Love is indeed enough.

### *Love is energising*

When you are actually deep in love, in any aspect of love, it is energising. Even psychologists have found that people who are in love, whether deeply in love with God, deeply in love with people, there is a higher level of energy. It is like suddenly all their pores are open, all their energy is flowing. Have you seen the opposite, people who have lost their love? They look at the building and want to commit suicide. They do not want to live anymore. Even if some of them are thirty years old, twenty-one years old, in actual fact, still have a lot of natural energy and life, but they do not want life, they choose death.

If you understand this second level, it is love that gives life. It is love that energises life. When you begin to see it, *bravo*, you will never have a tired day. You know, when you are tired, it is not because you lack food or vitamins, although that could be a natural cause, you just need love. Have you ever got up in the morning, getting ready to do something you love? Whether you have eaten your vitamins or not, whether you have enough sleep the day before, whether you have enough to eat that morning, you get up feeling very eager, you are an eager beaver, you know, like one of the businessmen who is working so hard and looking to go for his golf date, he is in love with golf. No, do not be in love with golf, be in love with God, change the “lf” to “d”.

It is because of love, something changes in your endocrine system, your body produces chemicals and they have tested this out. I think there are a lot of experiments. When a person is deeply in love, he does not get sick easily. His immunity level is high. *Woah*, so many side effects but when a person has lost love, *huh*, the germs one km away, he also could feel it and fall sick.

If you could understand this second level, there is a certain dimension where you appreciate a higher measure of love in the form of life. Thanksgiving, and then when you walk in that dimension, it is powerful (the church of Thyatira), because there is so much life flowing through you. It is what I call, the Obed-Edom effect but, of course, everyone has a different level of love. You need to be deeply in love with God. Let us not get over-spiritual because you cannot see God. You need to be deeply in love with the people of God. You need to love people, love the unlovable. When you are so motivated by this love, it flows into your veins and arteries. It changes you.

When you go to the second level “L3”, where love is life, and life is love, where truly you must find that love to live, and that propels your heartbeat, that becomes your heartbeat. You know, we have sung songs before. Let our heartbeat beat with God’s heartbeat, the heart of love.

*Love is equal to light*

Then you reach another level, at “L2”, where love is equal to light. Life, you can see in many forms. You people when they pray, they sometimes see lights and all that, but they see light as light, like a natural light, except it is a spiritual light. When you begin to see that that light

is the light of the knowledge of God (the knowledge of wisdom) and that that light is the personification of love and the two are one, that is why the personification of love and the personification of wisdom become one in the bride of Christ. The bride of Christ is both the personification of God's love and the personification of wisdom, which is Ephesians 3. Remember that the church is the personification of God's manifold wisdom. What is wisdom? Wisdom is light – *Your word is a lamp to my feet And a light to my path.* God's Word is light. So, you begin to see that the essence of all light is actually the substance of God's love.

In New Jerusalem, the Lamb is her light. There is no sun because of the Lamb's constant love for His bride. What is the Lamb of God is called? The bridegroom. What is New Jerusalem called? The bride. So, the bridegroom is now in the bride and the bridegroom who is Jesus loves His bride, correct? John saw New Jerusalem, "Come (said the angel), I will show you the bride, the Lamb's wife". She is prepared as a bride adorned for her husband. Who is her husband? Jesus. When the two become one, Jesus is constantly loving this bride of His and His love flows through every molecule of New Jerusalem. That light is the substance of His love. When you can see love as light and you can see that light is the substance of love, then the next time when the light comes to you, even one tiny ray, you can feel the love behind the light.

You say, "What is the difference between tonight and another day"? After you have seen this, the next time when you see the light. Last time when you saw light, in your mind you said, "Ah, that is the light". However, now when you see the light, especially it is the light of God, then you realise that that light is the substance of love. That is the day you begin to feel it. You begin to feel every atom and photon of God's love in the light. Before, you did not know that that was God saying I love you, through every photon of light, spiritual photon of course. Photons are smaller than atoms, in case you did not know that. I am going even finer. Through every photon of light is like every photon has a chop on it that says John 3:16. You know how many John 3:16's is flowing? Zillions of them, almost like neutrinos flowing through us.

Now, sometimes people cannot feel it or hear it. Let me illustrate. It is just like sometimes you are in the garden and you see the plants and flowers, but you do not see the plants and flowers because you do not smell them, and you do not see how intricate they are. They are

there but not there. When you are walking down the road, are you aware of the trees? Were you so aware that you went to them and said, “*Wah!*”, like someone from planet Mars (where there are no trees) who landed and loved the greenery. Of course not, right? Because we have lost our appreciation, although there were times when some of you quickly walked and did not even know that they existed. Okay, that is the difference. The ability to be aware of it increases your sense of love.

Let me illustrate with another. There are various ways to illustrate. Let us say you pick any song. You know how to compose new songs? In every song, there are sub-melodies flowing. You can find the sub-melodies and the sub-melodies will lead you to a new song. Of course, when you try to compose songs from who you are and who you are is who you are, so who you are will produce a certain type of song. To produce a different type of song, you must go to the song that is different from you, and then as you keep singing that song that is not in your same nature, as you find the sub-melody, then the sub-melody will become your new song. In every song, there is a sub-melody. Then from the sub-melody, you can go to the sub-sub-melody until you find something new inside.

For example, if you knock on hard wood, it’s a knock but plastic has a different sound. If you knock on the piano, it is the same kind of sound. If I use the same amount of energy as much as I can, but it is different from a knock on the piano, which is different from a knock on the pulpit, which is different from a knock on the organ. This is because the same energy vibrates through different things.

Whenever you sing any song, there are other melodies flowing, because it touches your nature differently. Somebody else might hear a different sound or melody. Take any song, it will come out differently. Remember the Bible says “*Oh, sing to the Lord a new song*”. You say, “*Wah, so tough, sing a new song; old song also cannot remember*”. That is because if you begin to walk, know that in this level of light “L2”, as you absorb every molecule of it and let it flow to you, you begin to hear and feel other things.

For example, did you know that the light in a room actually produces heat? If you switch off all the lights, it is going to be dark for a while. That is why in all-night prayer, after the lights are switched off, people feel a bit colder. Are they aware of it? Not until I say, it is already feeling a little bit colder, because based on scientific experiment (which I read a lot and now

experimenting with), there is a drop-in temperature when your eyes and your skin are no more in contact with light. It is a natural response state to darkness. You will immediately feel another level of cold. Then when the lights are back on, your body is heating up, you feel so warm, because part of cold and heat is produced psychologically. Without it, the Tibetan monks could not control their body temperature. They had experimented on the monks while they were meditating. Do you know what did they practice meditating on for twenty, thirty years? They just visualised a flame inside of them. It took them so long until they had, what I call, the psychological connection to their physiological temperature. When they measured the temperature on the monks' bodies, they found that it did not decrease, even though it was below zero temperatures and they were scantily clad. They were able to do it through years and decades of meditation. So, your lack of awareness can rob you of experiencing something that you did not know.

Do you know that a lot of architects like to design buildings to include the planting of flowers, trees, etc.? Do you know why? Because when you go there, even the design of the building, the colour of the building, it has a psychological impact on you. At one point in the psychological test, the same toilet (with the same temperature, same air-conditioning and everything) was painted differently, from a bright colour to a bluish colour, complaints were received that the toilet was too cold, but nothing was changed, only the colour. This is because blue to dark blue tends to have a psychological effect of making you feel colder. Reds and brighter colours make you feel warmer.

We have so much more influence of mind over our physiology than we realise. You could imagine, if you become more conscious of the micro-elements, it is like the "L4" level, like feeling love through a pair of gloves. You know, when someone touches you with a glove, how much of that plastic feeling conveys love? Of course, it might for people who like to be touched, at least this is a better touch than no touch. What happens if I convey that love with something cold, or what happens if I use some metal object, you know, metal tends to be cold, "oh, how I love you"? It is like a robot touching you. Although "L4" is wonderful, it is like hugging God after wearing ten layers of winter clothes. Of course, it is a nice hug, but you cannot feel the person much. I am talking about ten layers of winter clothes, not just ordinary clothes. You know, winter clothes are very thick. People have worn thick clothes before, twenty layers, and fainted. When you wear ten layers of winter clothes, you look like Santa Claus. Some kind of a hug, that is what "L4" love is like. It is too cold. The skin does

not like to contact metal. Would anyone of you want to wear metal clothes? Come to the airconditioned area, sit in front of the church where all the cool air blows on you. No, you like to feel something warm. None of you like clothes that are very rough, you like to wear clothing that is soft. By the third level, it is skin to skin. It feels nice, especially if you need a hug. That is what happened at the “L2” level - Light, when you begin to open your senses. It is like sensing it from the nerve fiber level to the atomic level to the photon level. You are more conscious of the dimension of that. When you are more conscious of that dimension, do you know the side effect?

*Sensitive to dimensions of love*

The side benefit of it is this: You become more sensitive to the flow of thoughts, more sensitive to the dimension where in Matthew 5:8 says, “*Blessed are the pure in heart, For they shall see God*”. At that level, you are very pure. Can you imagine, all you see is love? People say, “That person is a bad guy”. Then you can see: Why is that person a bad guy? Isn’t there any good in that person? You see, your heart is pure. To the pure, all things are pure. To the impure, even though it is pure, it looks impure. So, because your heart is so pure, your purity reaches a level of *Blessed are the pure in heart, For they shall see God*. At that dimension in God, the spiritual realm is so, if I can use this word “ethereal”. It is like a slight movement is like a tornado. When you are so sensitive to that level, God can actually speak to you very easily, it is a side benefit.

What I am teaching you is this: There are higher levels of love, higher levels that you have never experienced before. The highest level is mercy. You know, mercy, it does not just mean God’s unmerited favour and forgiveness to the guilty. There is so much more that I have no words for it. By the time I reach level 1, there are not many words that I can describe. I have got to use the Bible verse.

If you check the word “lovingkindness” in the Bible, in Psalm 17:7, it says, “*Show Your marvelous lovingkindness...*”. Now, there are a lot of verses that talk about His lovingkindness. Remember you have that song: *Thy lovingkindness is better than life...*? What exactly is lovingkindness? It is a simple Hebrew word “*checed*” (Strong’s H2617). Mercy does not just mean forgiveness to the guilty. That is what the English renders it. That is only a minute nano particle of mercy. Mercy, which is from the Hebrew word “*checed*”, has involved in it (there is not much research done here), it has inside it; beauty, favour,

tenderness, kindness, lovingness. They have got no way to describe it, that they need to coin a new English word called “lovingkindness”. The closest I can describe mercy is the word “so” in John 3:16 (*For God so loved the world...*). If we just say, “*For God loved the world*”, it sounds so different. It is that “so” part that is the heart of God beating. You can research the Hebrew word “lovingkindness” and you will realise that all the psalms are singing something more than mercy, like the sense of what God felt when He decided to create this universe, before the angels fell. What made God do what He did? That is the sense of *cheched*, that word that is there.

In John 3:16 (remember, we are talking about the width, length, depth and height of God’s love, and I am showing you all the 4 levels going upwards), the word “so” (in Greek is “*houto and houtos*”) which seems to be a simple word, but it is an adverb. It is translated as “so, thus, even so, in this manner”, but it conveys another level of love than just love, (“*agape*”). They have to put it in because there is an actual word “so” there. It says, “even so as God loved, so as God loved”. You see, the words “*houto and houtos*” can be translated as “in the manner” that God loved. It is a word that can be translated in many ways. There is no English equivalent. It can be translated as “even so, in such a manner, in such a way” that God loved. The English simplified it (*For God so loved...*). One little word, “so” but it helps to convey why God created this universe.

At “L1”, you are touching the essence of God’s love. Now that essence was shown by Jesus. Today we have many words to convey it. Thy lovingkindness or unconditional love. That God loved us because He loved us, for the pure essence of loving us He loved us. He loved us not because of what He could get from us, He loved us for the joy of just loving us. That is the word “*cheched*” that does not have an equivalent word in the English. That is the word for mercy, but I like the way the psalmist used it. Only in Psalms does it turn the word “*cheched*” to “lovingkindness” because there is no word that can be described in the English vocabulary, but it is the essence of His love, why He made us. It is the reason why Jesus gave His life. It is the reason why Jesus takes us as His bride because He loves for the sake of loving, for the joy of loving, for the honour of loving, for the unconditional desire to make us the object of His love. That is “L1” for you.

When you walk in all these dimensions of love, somewhere between “L4” and “L3”, all your tears dry up, but your love still increases to the sub-atomic level, to the photon level at “L2” where light is love.

## Chapter 25...

### Heavenly Faith

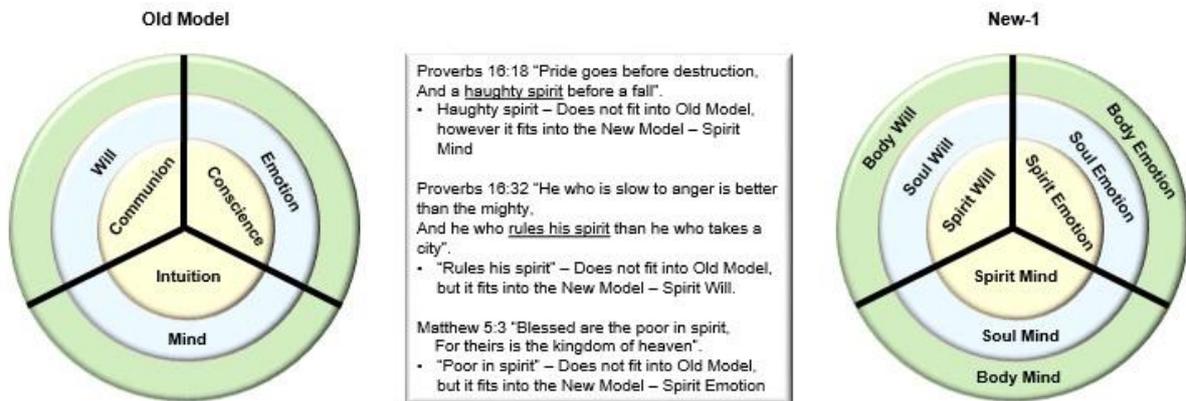


Diagram 1

If we look at Diagram 1 first to see where we have come from. In Watchman Nee's chart, you will always have just three circles, but we have a little tiny bit of a fourth circle inside and that is the New Jerusalem Glory. We have the spiritual man; harmony of spirit, soul and body. The soul is dominated by the spirit, and the body is a living sacrifice doing God's will. So, spirit, soul and body. That is what most people will progress through when they learn from Watchman Nee's chart and they want to progress. Most people will be happy with that but in this end time revival, even this is just normal, this is just standard, this should be where we are at.

Then we go to the Heavenly Man Diagram 2. This is what we are supposed to be. At this stage is where your body stops ageing. You see, when you are at the spiritual man diagram, you can be a spiritual man and you will still die. Notice the difference? You can be a spiritual man and you will still die. There were many spiritual people over the past two thousand years and they still died. They grew old and they died but this is the generation that sees our Lord Jesus Christ return.

As you learn to tap upon the Glory of God, your body actually becomes spiritualised and the world is your Outer Court. However, because of the New Jerusalem Glory that is inside us that grows, so notice, there is no more brown part (which is whatever sin nature that is left) that is there. To be the heavenly man, we require that the sin nature be eliminated, and that the desire for sin, the desire for the world and the desire for all the things of this life disappear

from your life. Your only desire is God and your DNA is changed. That is what God wants. You can be a spiritual man and still have sin nature in the physical body; it does not prevent you from being a spiritual man. Paul and all those people in the Bible and the Old Testament saints were all spiritual people and yet they died because they had sin nature in them.

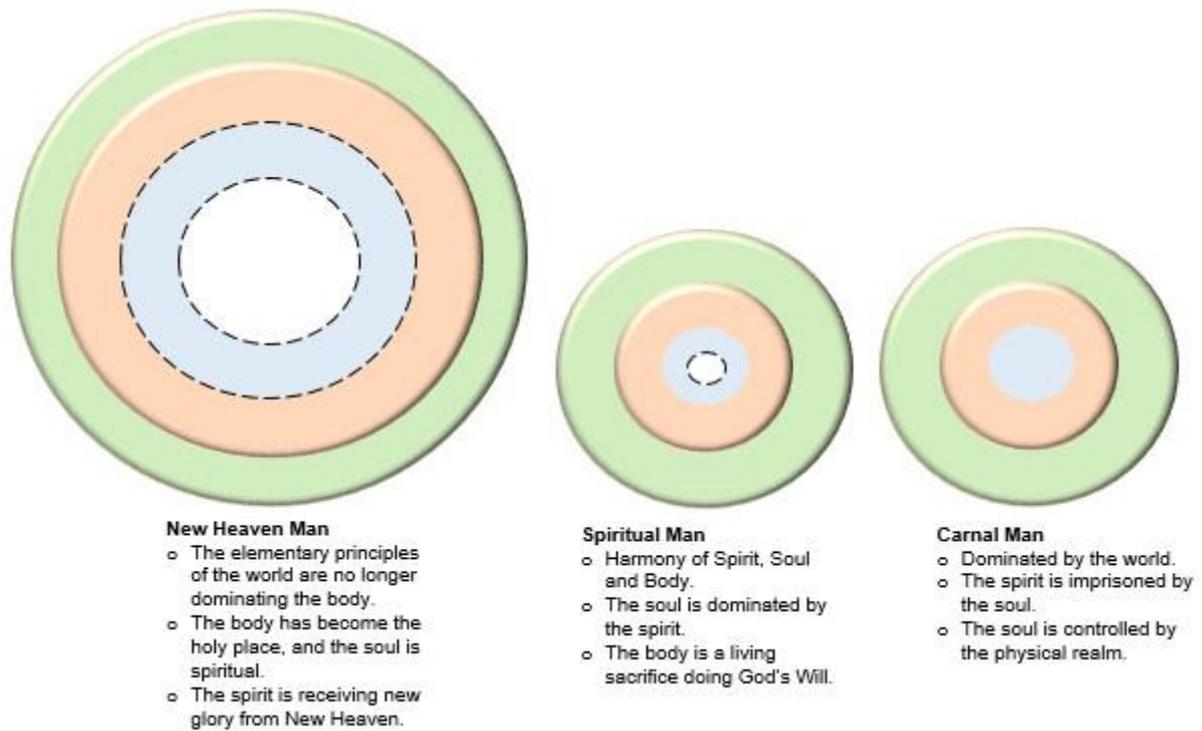


Diagram 2

Remember, humans were not made to die and in this end time, as we are restored back to the time of Adam and Eve, God is going to do something in which the elementary principles of the world are no longer dominating the body. This is something that *The Spiritual Man* (by Watchman Nee) does not cover. So, we are going to cover this area about how in the heavenly man, through heaven on earth, through the word of God energising, the elementary principles of the world are no longer dominating the body. We are in the process of entering into that in fullness more and more. Every day and every month and every year, as we progress, we are growing towards that fullness.

The body becomes the Holy Place and the soul becomes spiritualised. Even your soul is no more struggling to be renewed. Your soul is totally spiritualised, which is why the yellow part (which is originally in the Spiritual Man), your spiritual man has become part of your soul. Your spirit is now full of the Glory of God that God has released. This is God's perfect will in our lives. Notice, I drew a dotted line also between the soul and the body which means that the presence of God can flow right into your physical body. All this is in the Bible, as we

all learn in Romans 8 where it says that the Spirit that raised Jesus Christ from the dead gives life (or *zoe* life) to your physical body, except by how much and what is the percentage of it happening.

Since Paul wrote about it in Romans 8, it must be happening at his time. The percentage has increased. Up to this end time, it is possible for it to increase until it is 100% and then we become the Glorious Church, without spot, without wrinkle, completely transformed in God. So, that is the possibility that I am pointing to. That is why the rest of these chapters are more about the heavenly man, which is something that was not covered in *The Spiritual Man* (by Watchman Nee) because it was not yet the end time, but now it is the end time. That is where we are.

In heaven, do we still need faith? Okay, we still grow, therefore we still need faith maybe? So, do we still need faith? Is there a necessity for faith? What is the definition of faith? By the way, you all know Hebrews 11:1, right? “*Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen*”. Do we still need hope in heaven?

*Heaven has nothing to do with salvation*

To study is in order to get whatever work or job or understanding to do God’s work. Nothing to do with salvation. To study in heaven has nothing to do with salvation. To study in heaven has to do with equipping and giving skills to do things for God. They have to teach. You see, in heaven, people are taught how to create with their thoughts. So, there is a place where they teach how to create with their thoughts. There is a level on how to harness the energy of God and create with thoughts. In fact, that school is considered kindergarten. The children in paradise are learning to do that (the children who have died and gone home). In one section of the children’s paradise, the little children create with thoughts, but not so perfect. It is in a sheltered environment, they create some things, like they create an animal with their thoughts. So, it is kindergarten-style in heaven. So yes, we need hope and we need faith. We all need hope, we need faith in heaven.

Let me show some scriptures to see whether this is correct. In 1 Corinthians 13. Now, this has to do with heaven. Remember, we are bringing heaven on earth. Unless you know the nature of heaven, you cannot bring it here. How can you bring something to pass here of which its concept you have not received? If you have no idea of what it is, can you build a house

without a blueprint? Can you build a building without a blueprint? You cannot. You have to have a concept and even sometimes an architectural design or concept drawing, so that you can visualise it. Nowadays you can do it with a computer. They visualise what it can be before they actually produce it. It is the same way.

Now in 1 Corinthians 13, notice he says different things? He is talking about love. *Love never fails*. Then at the end in verse 13, “*And now abide faith, hope, love, these three; but the greatest of these is love*”. He says the greatest of these is love. In verses 9 and 10, “*For we know in part and we prophesy in part. But when that which is perfect has come, then that which is in part will be done away*”. Notice, when the perfect has come, that which is known in part is done away? Then he goes on to say in verses 11-13, “*When I was a child, I spoke as a child, I understood as a child, I thought as a child; but when I became a man, I put away childish things. For now we see in a mirror, dimly, but then face to face. Now I know in part, but then I shall know just as I also am known. And now abide faith, hope, love, these three; but the greatest of these is love*”. Remember that heaven is not mentioned here. The future is mentioned. Many scholars assume this is about heaven. He is talking about heaven, which is fair, because there is no other concept of perfection except in heaven. We say it also applies to the end time. The end time when the church becomes glorious and perfect, these scriptures apply.

I show that in verse 11, “*When I was a child, I spoke as a child...*”. In the end time, in Ephesians 4:13 (let us build it based on scriptures and you cannot argue with scriptures because scriptures are clear), it tells us that through the ministry of the five-fold offices that we all, the church, “*till we all come to the unity of the faith and of the knowledge of the Son of God, to a perfect man...*”. Notice in verse 13, the measure of the perfect man is not in heaven, it is on earth, the Glorious Church? He is not talking about when we reach heaven we become perfect, in Ephesians 4. He is talking about while on earth now we reach perfection.

For two thousand years we have not reached it, but now in this end time, God has allowed us to reach perfection. That is why the Bible says in Matthew 5:48, “*Therefore you shall be perfect, just as your Father in heaven is perfect*”. Jesus gave us the standard and He released it by faith, so that over two thousand years we can have that and reach perfection. Perfection, which requires perfection of spirit. The good thing is He has done some part for us. Our spirit is perfect. It is born perfect and it just needs to grow but our emotions must be perfect. Can

you imagine your emotions being perfect? Your thought life must be perfect. Your choice, your will, the exercise of your will must be perfect. Then you have perfection in your body. Unless your soul is perfect, the body cannot be perfect. Are you perfect yet? Are your thoughts perfect yet? This is why we are learning about this spiritual man and the heavenly man.

The Bible does say very clearly that the church will reach perfection, here in this verse but this is not the only verse. Ephesians points to a level of perfection, from Ephesians 1, 2 and 3. At the end of it, how do I know it talks about perfection? Because at the end of it, it talks about God inhabiting us, that God dwells in us (as a temple). He is building a temple. We become a perfect temple and God dwells in us. Ephesians 1, 2 and 3, at the end of it, it talks about God dwelling in us. Then chapter 4 speaks about how we grow to a full man. Now, this full-grown man is different from 1 Corinthians 13:11 speaking as a child, plus Ephesians 5 where it says that Christ is washing the church until the church becomes the Glorious Church, perfect in every way. Without one spot, without one wrinkle, that is perfection in Ephesians 5. There is an emphasis on the perfection that is to come.

### *Becoming heavenly people*

Now, this perfection, I propose to you, is actually heaven on earth because heaven is perfect, and when this perfection comes to the earth, it is heaven on earth. It is the nature of heaven successfully coming to become a part of our lives. We become heavenly people. We literally become heavenly people. We literally live in heaven and just visit the earth. Our avatars are controlled from heaven. Because of that understanding that we have, we go back to 1 Corinthians 13 where it says in verses 8-10, *“Love never fails. But whether there are prophecies, they will fail; whether there are tongues, they will cease; whether there is knowledge, it will vanish away. For we know in part and we prophesy in part. But when that which is perfect has come, then that which is in part will be done away”*. This comes back to the question that I asked whether faith is still necessary in heaven?

When you are perfect, do you need faith? Now, no answer yet. Remember, Jesus is perfect, but Jesus was perfect as a man and He required faith in the Father. He exercised faith in the Father. He had to exercise faith in the words that the Father gave to Him. All agree that Jesus is perfect? Would you agree that Jesus required faith in the thirty-three years on the earth? He

had to. He prayed, He exercised faith and He believed that the Father had heard Him, correct? So, that is Jesus.

Now that Jesus is risen from the dead, He is now with the Father, He is seated in the heavenly places with the Father. Is the Jesus who is risen from the dead different from the Jesus who was thirty-three years on earth? Definitely different. Okay, if He is different, then He is perfect there, He is perfect here; after all, He is perfect. None of us would dare say that He is imperfect. Even on the cross He perfectly received all the atonement and became sin for us. So, He was perfect before on earth, He is perfect now, risen and seated at the right hand of God, which means that there are two levels of perfection. Jesus' perfection in His 33 years on earth, and Jesus' perfection when He is risen from the dead and is seated at the right hand of God. Which level of perfection are you in, Jesus on earth or Jesus in heaven?

*Jesus on earth is temporary level*

Now, the ultimate perfection is in Diagram 2. The Jesus on earth is only a temporary level. We must reach His full level, because we do the works that He does and then we reach His full level. As we grow in perfection, we go through what He went through. It is like Jesus is a pattern. We become like Jesus. We become like Jesus on earth, then we become like Jesus in heaven. The thing is, when do we become like Jesus in heaven? If I talk about Jesus on earth, everyone will say, *ya, ya*, on earth but can we on the earth become like Jesus in heaven? Are we different from Jesus in His thirty-three years on earth? Or is our maximum level in this life like the thirty-three years? That is the question. You all agree that there are two levels of perfection. The thing is, we are not just reaching His perfection in heaven, nor are we reaching His perfection. We will definitely reach perfection in heaven, but the question is: Can we reach the perfection of Jesus who is seated at the right hand of God while we are on earth? When Jesus says that "you will do greater works than I do", He implies not that we can become greater than Him, no, it is because He has become greater. Can you see that? You all know John 14:12, "... *the works that I do he will do also; and greater works than these he will do, (notice the reason?) because I go to My Father*". Let us examine that verse again with this understanding.

In John 14, some of these verses we are very familiar with, but we have never examined it very closely, this is when He says in verse 12, because sometimes, you know, how a good speaker, a good teacher, like Jesus, He did a lot of things, we thought we caught it, until we

go back again, we say, “*Eh*, we did not actually catch what He was saying. We only caught what we wanted to hear from our perspective”. So, look at verse 12, “*Most assuredly, I say to you, he who believes in Me, the works that I do he will do also; and greater works than these he will do, because I go to My Father*”. Now, that is a different thing because this is the traditional understanding.

No scholar can deny that we can do the works of Jesus based on Jesus’ works. Although it is not manifest, we only see a bit of revival here and there. It is not fully manifest but we all agree that the Bible is true. The traditional teaching is that the reason we can do the greater works is because Jesus goes to the Father and then He sends the Holy Spirit (which is also true). However, have you looked at it carefully? If Jesus goes to the Father and then He sends the Holy Spirit (the same way the Holy Spirit came on Him), we can only do the same works that He did, not greater works.

*Ah*, we thought we understood Him, but we have not, because we did not see the two levels of perfection. Only when we see the two levels of perfection can we fully understand what Jesus is saying here. There is a level of Jesus’ perfection on the earth, that has staggered us, that has blown our minds, so that we cannot think beyond that, so that when we see Jesus in all His fullness, even in His thirty-three years on earth, before He died on the cross and rose from the dead and is seated at the right hand of God, even before all these, He has already blown our minds. We are mindless, we cannot think. I mean, we just are stunned. We say, *wow*, just to be like what He was before He went to the cross is good enough. We settled for it. We cannot see more because whatever there is, already, *wow*, it is so good.

Just like some of you are saying, you know, “I am quite happy where I am, as long as I do not get sick anymore”. *Huh?* There are still some more. We interpret the Scripture based on our perception, not based on what Jesus is trying to tell us because we do not understand what He is trying to tell us. We have no concept or comparison but when we have this concept that there are two levels of perfection, that Jesus when He went to the Father has entered a new level of perfection, that is what I call “greater”, a greater perfection, using the word “greater” that Jesus used. The Greek word is simple (it is exactly like the English, most probably close to the word “mega”): “*meizon*” which means larger (literally or figuratively, specially, in age), something greater (in a progression). That is why it is used for the word “elder”, like it is grown, something is added to it. It is not the normal word “mega”.

It is like Jesus using the word “greater” in Luke 7:28, “*For I say to you, among those born of women there is not a greater prophet than John the Baptist; but he who is least in the kingdom of God is greater than he*”. That is a general usage of the Greek word “*meizon*” meaning something added, something greater. We do not have the English concept for “greater” because we use the word “greater” for plurality. Something “greater” can be more powerful, more in mass, more in different areas but this is like “greater” in progress. There is “mega”, which is translated as bigger and greater, where we have got “megatons” and “megabytes”, but here it is “*meizon*” (some sort of progression).

So, Jesus was perfect in His thirty-three years on earth. Jesus is greater in perfection. When He is seated at the right hand of God, something is established. Now, when Jesus says “... *the works that I do he will do also; and greater works than these he will do, because...*”. There are several Greek words for “because”. Let us see which one it is. “*Hoti*”, neuter of *hostis* as conjunction; as concerning that, as though, because (that), why. The reason is, “... *because I go to My Father.*”. Then He talks about a glory in John 14:13, “*And whatever you ask in My name, that I will do, that the Father may be glorified in the Son*”. This is “*doxazo*” meaning *glorified in the Son*.

#### *Different levels of light*

There is a level of glory that was not there before. Jesus is glorified. We know that Jesus’ glory, once He rose from the dead, is greater than Adam’s glory, is greater than any glory that we have ever seen. The resurrection of Christ (when Jesus rose from the dead), the Universe has never seen it before. I know that there is already a bright light in heaven. However, there are different levels of light.

Throughout the whole existence of this Universe, even during the time before the angels fell, they saw the different levels of glory and light. After all, everything is bright, bright, bright. It is only different types of brightness and then when Satan fell, for the first time they saw darkness versus light. When God re-created this part of the Universe with the creation of Adam and Eve, they saw again the light of God. God said: “Let there be light”. They had seen those lights before, but there was one light that they had never seen before in the Universe, not just on earth, and that was when Jesus rose from the dead. Up to that point, no spirit being / angel / archangel has ever seen how a light can be so strong and powerful that it literally absorbed the darkness. They had seen the darkness when God judged the Universe

and one-third of the angels fell. This part of all the galaxies, which we call the war zone, warfare area, when God stopped His light from flowing, all the stars and galaxies stopped lighting too. These powerful stars that were using fusion in our natural world, but all stopped shining. They started shining again when God re-created this part of the Universe with the creation of Adam and Eve. That shows how powerful God is. When God said: “Let there...”, the sun, the moon and all these came back to shine. Of course, we know that the moonlight comes from the sunlight, which means that the sun was not even shining anymore when God stopped the fusion process in all the galaxies and stars. God restarted the fusion process all over. So, that was already very great, but nothing was as great as when Jesus rose from the dead. This super (I would say “superior”; I have run out of superlatives to describe) light that came forth was so strong that all the darkest darkness was just wiped away when He rose from the dead.

When Jesus rose from the dead and is now seated at the right hand of God, actually another level of glory was given. This glory was so great that the Universe had to be renamed. You know, when God named something, it is very powerful. When the animals were named, something changed. In fact, if you see how Adam named the animals, at first the animals were in spirit form, then when Adam named them, they took on another layer of life, and then they became male and female, and then the angels took them away to different places. It was not just to populate this earth, it was to populate all of the fallen Universe and only about 30% was forbidden, so another 70% more. Even today, we have lost some of the 30% that has to be restored.

All this background is very important to see what happened when Jesus Christ rose from the dead. In Philippians 2:9 it says, “*Therefore God also has highly exalted Him and given Him the name (not just a name, the name) which is above every name,*”. Now you know that the whole Universe has to be renamed. In other words, every name. There are different names that are high. You read the book of Enoch, there are certain phrases, that all these are names of certain height. There is one called the *Secret Mystery*, and all that. All the names, and whatever name that they know of God.

Of course, in our English language, in our known language we call Him “Jesus”. However, there is another name for Jesus in the heavenly tongue and that name for Jesus is the name that God has established. Why, you think that God told the whole Universe, “All of you now

have to speak English”? No, no, no, this verse is not talking about God officially. Remember when Paul wrote this, this was not in English, it was in Greek. So, what do you think Paul was saying? He looked at all of them and said, “*Oh*, all of you now have to speak Greek”. No, no but today, our human understanding is only that much. What Paul was saying is that when Jesus rose from the dead, that nature (because the name and the nature are one), that nature of Christ which is above every nature that has never before been manifest, that now at that name that belongs to that nature, the resurrected Christ. That is why Christ is called “firstborn”. Now you know, the title “firstborn”.

For us, “born again” has been so used that we see it as, you know, “born again, yes, born again”, we do not realise how powerful being “born again” is. That “born again” is “coming out from the kingdom of darkness into the kingdom of light”, as Colossians put it. Something is changed on the nature. Now, how does the Bible use the word that Jesus was “born again”? It points to the time of His resurrection.

*Confess that Jesus Christ is Lord,*

Let us look again in Philippians 2:10-11. God says that the name of Jesus, now in the heavenly language, not in Greek, not in English, that name that is of Jesus, the whole Universe shall now worship that name. That name is going to be the highest of all the Universe, even from the past, whatever knowledge that they had, and “*that at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of those in heaven (you see, that includes all of heaven), and of those on earth, and of those under the earth, and that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory (you see the word “glory”) of God the Father*”. The glorious name that God has.

Something took place that we call “born again”. That is where we have the word that Jesus is the “firstborn”. In Hebrews 1:6, “*But when He again brings the firstborn into the world, He says, ‘Let all the angels of God worship Him’*”. You didn’t know there was a worship ceremony? They had never seen that glory and of all things, it broke forth on the planet earth. It is like the fabric of the Universe, you know, the earth is one dot, and Jesus comes to that one dot, and then from that one dot, suddenly something appears from another dimension, like another dimension of God. From the uncreated dimension comes forth Christ’s resurrection, and it covers all. God says, “Let it cover the whole Universe”. So, the planet earth became important, the place where God originally determined that the fabric of the

Universe shall be broken. Another glory came forth, Jesus, firstborn; the firstborn from the dead. It is not talking about just our human physical death. It is talking about absorbing (we see Jesus dying on the cross as absorbing all the sins of mankind), included, He absorbed all the darkness that were around millions of years before Adam and Eve, that nothing could be done. They were like in a “hold” position. The fallen angels were defeated and they all were imprisoned but evil cannot be removed, it can only be conquered, suppressed and placed in prison.

When this glory of Christ came forth and broke the fabric of the Universe, that shows this planet earth came forth. Notice the word “firstborn” is not tied to the day Jesus came to the planet earth? No, it is not talking about Christmas Day. It is talking about Resurrection Day. It says in Hebrews 1:5, *“For to which of the angels did He ever say: ‘You are My Son, Today (the word “today” is the resurrection day) I have begotten You’? And again: ‘I will be to Him a Father, And He shall be to Me a Son’?”*. “Today...”, and in Paul’s preaching (in Acts 13), he talks about the same thing and this verse was quoted. It is talking about the resurrection of Jesus. Jesus’ title as the “firstborn”, also in several other verses. Let us look at some of them.

Romans 8:29, *“For whom He foreknew, He also predestined to be conformed to the image of His Son, (we have always seen His image as the first perfection, which is the perfection of His thirty-three years, included, but if you look carefully) that He might be the firstborn among many brethren”*. Paul is talking about the second perfection that He wants to bring us in, to a higher level.

In Colossians 1, Paul had a revelation. Look at how many words he used from verses 15 to 18 to talk about this. It is a whole mouthful, all scientific words. Verses 15 to 18, *“He is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn over all creation. For by Him all things were created that are in heaven and that are on earth, visible and invisible (very scientific), whether thrones (I will include galaxies) or dominions or principalities or powers. All things were created through Him and for Him. And He is before all things (the word “before” talks about pre-eminence), and in Him all things consist. And He is the head of the body, the church, who is the beginning, the firstborn from the dead, that in all things He may have the pre-eminence”*. That is a whole mouthful there.

Each verse is trying to convey what we are trying to say, that the fabric of the Universe was torn when He rose from the dead. All the fallen angels were in horror because they had never seen that glory before. All the angels who were serving God were in wonder, *wow!* If angels were humans, there was a big *wow*, in the Universe when Jesus rose from the dead. They had not seen that before, the glory, that put Christ all the way up there. Of course, do you know that there are many other verses? Revelation 1:5, “... *the firstborn from the dead...*”. You can look at all the different verses, but it is sufficient. We have more than sufficient verses to show that the level of perfection that Jesus rose to is way above all.

In that light, in John 14:12, He says, “... *the works that I do he will do also; and greater works...*”. Jesus is now greater. He is the revelation of God. Now He is the greater revelation of God because God can reveal more and because He is greater, we do greater works. So, it is still Jesus doing it, not us. We do greater works because Jesus is greater. The servant cannot be greater than the Master but because the Master is greater, the servant can do greater works, that greater perfection that is there. Based on all these verses you can conclude, even in John 14:12, He is talking about while on this earth, we reach the greater perfection. How can you do greater works? Unless you are still on the earth. What works do you want to do in heaven? While on the earth, based on Ephesians 2 (as has been answered), we are supposed to bring forth this greater, greater Jesus, greater revelation.

We have been stuck for two thousand years of Christianity and for two thousand years of Christianity, sometimes the teaching that we have is a ticket to heaven. That is all and the Christianity that we have been taught is the Christianity, you know, it does not matter, you die in sickness, you die in defeat, you die in poverty, you die in all those things, you will still go to heaven. Then through the years, we have been restored to messages on healing, prosperity, although some of these have been abused. Humans are like children. When we discover that prosperity is part of the gospel, like kids we run around, like a kid running wild in a candy store. We eat all the candies we want, and we forget, *eh*, all these are meant for something else. The prosperity message has been abused. So, preachers and Christians, you know, take the prosperity message, run around the world, like running wild in a candy store, and use it for buying expensive things, doing things that are unnecessary and are a waste of money.

Do you know Jesus could have had anything He wanted? However, He did not want anything that was more than necessary. In the same way, those messages are true, but put them back in balance. The prosperity and healing are side effects. The greatest thing is, you can have heaven on earth. In heaven, there is no poverty. In heaven, there is no sickness. The greatest message is actually you can have heaven on earth, you can experience heaven on earth. We restore all those things. That is the higher perfection that God wants to bring.

Now, how do we bring this to pass? So, do we need faith? We know love is obvious. It is obvious that love is necessary, but do we need faith and hope in heaven? Like I illustrated, in the Millennium, we still have the new heaven and the new earth. Now, what happens when you reach the new heaven and the new earth?

Let us look at the definition of faith. In Hebrews 11:1, *“Now faith is the substance of things hoped for (that is why the two are related), the evidence of things not seen”*. (We know some things can be seen). In Verse 2, *“For by it the elders obtained a good testimony”*. Then we jump to verse 6, *“But without faith it is impossible to please Him, for he who comes to God must believe that He is, and that He is a rewarder of those who diligently seek Him”*.

We sort of use the illustration that the people who are in the Millennium, let us say in the Millennium, there is no more sin, no more devil, no more fallen angels, no more demons, so there are children born in the Millennium. Many of you will be going to all the worlds preaching about Christ because Christ has come. Remember, the Millennium takes place after Jesus' second coming. In all the other worlds, there are many beings also and they need preachers, not for salvation, but for knowledge and education. Some of you will be going to them to preach about Christ and to teach them about God because all creations want to know more about God. There are planets and worlds that have not fallen, that want to know more about God. This planet earth is the training ground for the messengers of God, for the whole galaxies and Universe. The planet earth that we see is one part of what is happening in the Millennium.

#### *Born in the Millennium*

There are those born in the Millennium, they do not see any devil, they do not see any sin, there are no more demons in the Universe, everything has been thrown in the lake of fire (which has been put in the section outside the Universe), and the devil is locked up also

outside the Universe. So, within the Universe there is nothing evil. The children who are growing up have to know about God. They do need to believe in God. They need to choose God. There will be a time, at the end of the Millennium, the devil is let out for a while. When the devil is let out for a while, he does not have fallen angels anymore, he is just alone. All the other fallen angels have already been thrown in the lake of fire. Only the devil alone is left, and he is let out in the Millennium. He goes throughout all this planet earth, he is limited still to the planet earth, he is not allowed to roam the Universe, and he will still succeed in gathering some, not those of us who have been through this, those born in the Millennium (the children that are born in the Millennium). They will be taught, and they will say, “What is the devil”? Then we will show them the archives. When they see, *Ah*, that to them is like a movie. “What are demons”? Then we will show them the archives. “What is sin like”? We will show them the story in the Bible. They have to choose to believe. They still have to choose to believe. People can exist with the whole crowd but in different levels of belief.

When the devil is released at the end of one thousand years, there are those whose hearts are already not believing, and they will find an excuse not to believe and side with the devil. There are still a remnant and they are tested. That is the final test. After that, the new heaven and the new earth. So, all those who side with the devil and choose not to believe God, they are taken and thrown back in time to the three years at the end of the Tribulation where Satan is allowed to do his worst. They get thrown back in time over there. Everything is clean after that.

Then God uses quantum time to clean up the Universe. Otherwise without quantum time, there are many periods of rebellion. God takes all the rebellion parts, the days of Noah, from the time that Noah went into the Ark to the second half of Tribulation years, and also through the nanosecond after the rebellion, when the rebellion has taken place, very quickly, all are taken and confined to a place in time. It happens to cross into the Tribulation years of the planet earth, called quantum time. So, that is where it is, faith, hope and love. The answer is yes.

*We can progress faster*

Then my next question. Is faith in the perfect world different from faith in the imperfect world? Different in what way? When we can get that principle across, then we can progress faster to become the heavenly man. How is that different? In the imperfect world, I

summarise for you, the answer is there is a block of things that we need to get perfected in order to receive. On top of that, we seek God. Then in heaven, the faith exercised is just to know God.

How do you exercise faith in heaven? We have to have a new definition of faith. Obviously, the definition that we have in Hebrews 11:1 is good but it is a first definition. There is another layer above it. We have to have a new definition that will cover everything, including the old definition.

Is there a difference between faith in the Old Testament and faith in the New Testament? In the Old Testament, to help you with that one, remember how we were all kept under the law until faith was revealed? It looks like in the Old Testament, what they called “faith” is not faith. I can prove it to you. There is no word for faith in the Old Testament, even the one in Habakkuk.

Let us look at the actual Hebrew word for faith as translated as “faith”, “faithfulness”. One, for example, is in Deuteronomy 32:20, *“And He said: ‘I will hide My face from them, I will see what their end will be, For they are a perverse generation, Children in whom is no faith’”*. It comes from the Hebrew word “*emun*”. The Arabic translation is “*iman*”. However, *iman* and *emun* have two meanings. It actually means “trust”, it actually means “truth”. So, the *iman* is supposed to be a teacher of truth (from the Arabic), they call him a truth teacher. It is derived from the original word “*emun*” in Hebrew, which is actually a trustee of truth, the root word. Of course, you have got many words there like faithful messenger, etc. Same Hebrew word “*emun*” in Isaiah 26:2, *“Open the gates, That the righteous nation which keeps the truth may enter in”*. It actually means “trust” or “truth”. To trust is to trust in the truth. They have got the same derivation which is *emun*.

Then Habakkuk 2:4 says, *“Behold the proud, His soul is not upright in him; But the just shall live by his faith”*. It is the shortened word, “*emunah*”. Notice the “e” before it, *emuwناه*, so it is still the same root word, shortened into *emunah*, it still means truth and *emunah* has been used quite often. It is used in Deuteronomy 32:4, *“... A God of truth and without injustice...”*. It is saying “A God of faith and without injustice”, if you want to translate it consistently. If you translate it as “faith” there in Habakkuk 2:4, you might as well translate it as “A God of faith”. So, there is a difference between the Old Testament and the New Testament definition

of faith. The Old Testament is more like “trust”. The English word “faith” is the same. We use the English word “faith” to mean “trust”. I have faith in you. I have trust in you. We use it almost like a synonym. You have faith in a person, you trust the person.

Faith was never a gift in the Old Covenant. Never. First difference is that faith is a gift in the New Testament. Second difference is that faith is by grace. Third difference is that faith is in the person. Fourth difference is that faith is a substance. They could not receive some of these things. They were moved by the same spirit of faith. Here is where we need a new definition of faith to bring in the new heavenly man. We can reach this second perfection, the higher perfection of Christ. How do we do it? We need to understand the process. There is a difference between the Old Testament and the New Testament faith.

In the New Testament, Abraham is the father of faith, which is mentioned in Romans. In fact, Romans is one of those books that has the most usage of the word “faith”. Let us look at faith in Abraham. It did say that Abraham believed God and he was justified by faith in Romans 4:1-3, *“What then shall we say that Abraham our father has found according to the flesh? ... ‘Abraham believed God, and it was accounted to him for righteousness.’”*. Verse 12, *“and the father of circumcision to those who not only are of the circumcision, but who also walk in the steps of the faith which our father Abraham had while still uncircumcised”*. He had some measure of faith. David also had a measure of faith. In other words, he had a measure of faith, but you will not find that he is exactly called the father of faith. It is more “the faith of Abraham”. Verse 16, *“... who are of the faith of Abraham...”*. Can you see that?

Now, all these clues should give you the answer. How is faith different in heaven and on earth? We know it is different from the Old and the New Testaments. Then when you are in heaven, you receive the gift, you receive Christ, and you can really feel Christ’s nature inside you. In heaven, you can really feel Christ inside you. Actually, on earth you can feel Him too except you need to train your spiritual man to feel the feelings of Christ. That is why it is called the spiritual emotions and all those things.

Here is another clue. In Hebrews 11:1 is the definition that Paul gave, *“Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen”*. Obviously, God does not need that definition. Do you agree that God does exercise faith? Let us assume that God does exercise faith.

Jesus in heaven right now. He is the author and finisher of our faith. He is the personification of faith. Does the personification of faith exercise faith? He is faith. Obviously, He does exercise faith. That is why He is the personification of faith. He exercises faith in us. Does Jesus have faith in us? Obviously, because we also do not have faith in one another. We all give up on one another very fast. How many of us have faith in Paul before he was born again? You see, Jesus has faith in us. So, generally God exercises faith. We watch Jesus exercising faith.

Now, what is Jesus or God's definition of faith since He exercises faith? Hebrews 11:1 is not good enough for Him because He can see everything, He does not need evidence. We are the ones who cry for evidence, *show me, show me*, it is the substance in our heart. Now Hebrews 11:1 is good for us but a definition comes from different languages, different points of view. What is God's definition of faith? What is Jesus' definition of faith?

For us, faith comes by hearing and hearing by the Word of God. God does not have to hear to have faith. He is faith. Look at the difference. We all know this side in Hebrews 11:1. We cannot see, we believe. We use our heart to see rather than our natural eyes, so we believe. We hear the Word, so we believe. Abraham heard the Word and he believed. Whatever God speaks, we believe. So, faith is a good definition in Hebrews 11:1. Faith is the substance (spiritual substance) of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen, and you hang on to that until the other people around you can see it. However, you are the only one who can see it, feel it and believe it. After you believe for a while, everyone else can see it. God wants to see that you believe it first as a good testimony. Then when God is satisfied that you really believe, then it manifests. Everything is from our side.

#### *Need faith in His Word*

Now, God is the personification of faith, Jesus is the personification of faith. From His side, we need to have faith in His Word. Jesus has faith in His own Word. So, from Jesus' side, faith is not just the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen. He has faith in His own Word and from Jesus' side, He released the substance of faith and He continues to energise this substance of faith, because the energy has to be continuous. He energises this substance of faith until this substance of faith grows and produces all that it needs. Can you see from Jesus' side? It is totally different. Now, it is this definition that we need because this is how heaven works on the faith side. Does it mean that we are like Jesus?

Yes, the heavenly man is speaking now and add to that, Mark 11:22-24, which say, “*Have the faith of God*”. Remember that, the substance of God’s faith.

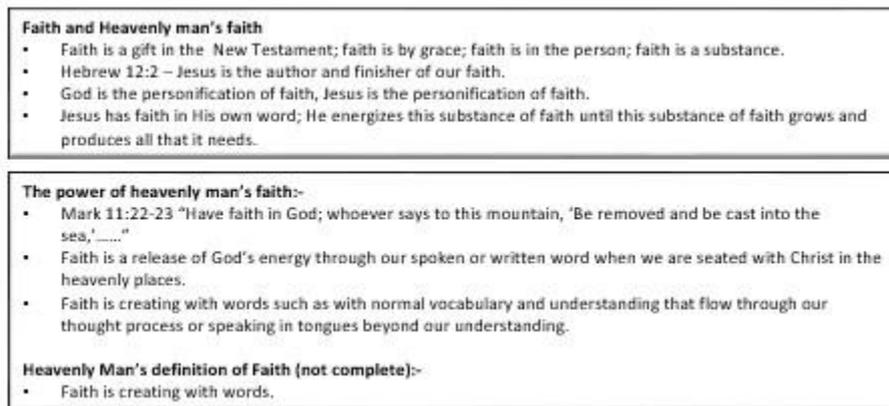


Diagram 3

In Mark 11:22, “*Have faith in God*”. The Greek words, *Exete pistin theou*, Have faith of or from God. Verse 23, “*For assuredly, I say to you, whoever says to this mountain, ‘Be removed and be cast into the sea,’ and does not doubt in his heart, but believes that those things he says...*”. Look carefully. Believe your own words, did you see that? It is actually believing your own words and do not doubt. In fact, these words will actually come to pass. When Elijah calls down fire and commands the removal of the attempt to build the second tower of Babel in the time of the Tribulation (Antichrist will attempt that) and the whole thing is the mountain. Remember the mountain be cast into the sea? That is what we saw in visions, it is actually the second attempt to build the tower of Babel, and Elijah exercises faith, together with Enoch, and commands the thing to be cast into the sea. The whole thing is literally moved and thrown into the sea, fulfilling the Word. The one who speaks it must believe his own words. Now we are getting closer and closer to the definition.

The other definition of faith from God’s side is faith is a release of God’s energy in the form of Words to create everything. That is from God’s side. Nothing about trying to see. It is released from God’s side. Faith is a creation, faith is a creative process. Now we will come out with a very tightly formed phrase, but we will try to put all the definition on this side. Faith is the creative process of God’s energy released in words to create everything. I put two creations, but I have got to summarise that, to make it tighter. That is from God’s side. There was no Universe. God released His faith. When God released His faith, it was through His spoken Word that was released.

Now, why was Abraham called “the faith of our father Abraham”? You know what Abraham did? He believed in the seed and descendants before they existed. Can you see that? There was a similarity, that is why he was called it. He was literally “faith is creation in process and is a creative way”.

*Faith is a release of His energy*

We are being trained as “co-creators” with God. That is why it is this level of the heavenly man. To do that, you must first be one with God. You cannot do it on your own. You see, it presupposes that you will be one with God. Heaven is not heaven if you do not have Christ. Heaven is not heaven if you do not have God in you. So, we are one with God and we release that creative process. To God, faith is a release of His energy through Words to create. That is all, and He continues to sustain the energy.

Now, why is it important in the higher perfection? All these downloads that we have been having, the Seven Thunders glory, Pergamos glory, and all these things are only when from our side, receiving side, we believe in the Word, the Spirit bears witness with our spirit, and Jesus judges us by our spirit witness. He wants us to believe before it actually fully manifests.

To me, I have analysed everything. I chose to believe when this move started. I had to choose. Then along the process when I was transported 100 km, no doubt already and that happened during one of our earlier altar-building. We were building altars, of all places, it happened in Australia. When we were transported, *eh*, this is real. It has now affected the physical realm and we felt the energy of the transportation for 24 hours. Then we knew, *eh*, these angels are real. All the Words we are believing for and believing God and obeying are real.

Then more and more as we move in God, God will give, what I call, confirmation things. You cannot deny reality, but you begin to break into this physical world. The fact is, we will continue on that level of faith in believing. To progress into that, as we move, more and more downloads are coming into our lives and with more and more energy. That is why in the earlier days, God’s instruction was, “*be careful of your words, be careful of what you say*”. Now you have to be careful with what you say, *for every idle word*, you have got all those verses. Now, not just being careful more and more because to reach that point of “co-creation” with God, for God to entrust us with that, it has to be absolute that our thoughts are

perfect, our words are perfect, so that we will not think and say the wrong thing because it becomes a creative process.

It is just like Charles Capps or one of those Word of Faith preachers who used to say, “If God were to tell us from this very moment on, everything you say will come exactly to pass”, somebody might just exclaim, “Wow, this blows me unto death” and then he died on the spot. You see, careless words. So obviously, it needs a new level of understanding of this creative process. Do you notice how careful Jesus was with His Words? God is careful with His Words but not only careful, there needs to be a substance that is there.

There is a threefold process. One: The substance must be there. Faith is a release of God’s energy but is released through you, through your spoken word, which means that you must have the energy in you. Without the energy, it does not come. That energy, of course, we know comes from the Word. Everything is a substance of His love and that energy is obtained only when you are seated with Christ in heavenly places. When that part of energy flows through you, there will be certain words and declarations that you declare. When you declare, it is as good as the written and spoken Words. That is the level that God wants to bring us into.

Long, long ago, a few men of God had this vision. George Fox, the founder of the Quaker movement. He said that we must yield ourselves to the Holy Spirit of God to the same level in which the apostles and prophets wrote and spoke the Word, so that every word we speak becomes the living Word and the written Word. He got that revelation. So, throughout 2,000 years of Christianity, men and women had caught a glimpse of this process. This process is that we must catch on until we realise the energy that God is releasing in these days, as we become one with God, that we begin to release it in the power of the spoken Word. To meditate on the Word which is from the Bible, personalise those things, which I still do, and I enjoy doing. As we come more and more into this union with God, we will be releasing every day those spoken Words.

Now, does Jesus do devotion? I am talking about His thirty-three years on earth. Now, in heaven, does Jesus do devotion? Some of you say: “Wah, He is seated at the right hand of God and He is studying the Bible”? He is God. The number of things that God is storing in us, there will come a time when our nature becomes heavenly. Not to say you do not need

devotion but there comes a day when literally your devotion is at the throne room. Okay, I will not use the word “devotion”, because people are lazy, they catch those words and quickly say, “*Wah*, no need to do devotion, no need to fast, no need to pray”. Terrible. Your devotion becomes interactive in the throne room with God. Then as you interact in the throne room with God, you obtain the substance of God, you live in heaven, you come to the earth, and when you speak, heaven flows forth, the nature of heaven flows forth from God. Besides doing whatever devotion you want as a default, all you have to do is speak into this planet, like Jesus said: “Peace, be still!” and there was a great calm. Your declaration is what creates the process.

Remember Jesus’ Words were so powerful. When He blessed, He blessed. When He said to the fig tree, “*Let no one eat fruit from you ever again*”, it was done overnight. His Word is powerful because it remains the substance of faith. We become the personification of faith like Jesus. To become the personification, Jesus is the only personification, we become a part of His body. Then we begin to speak forth. At that level, when you speak to someone without an arm, you say, “Grow forth”, creation takes place. Healing becomes a creative process. The creative process supersedes everything. When you need fruit from a plant and if the plant on earth is not touched by heaven yet, when you speak “Be fruitful!”, like Jesus could curse the fig tree, you could bless, the plant might in twenty-four hours bear fruit and then you take from there.

#### *Heaven has no time dimension*

There is a creative process that God is allowing, coming to the earth. That is what the heavenly man is. The new definition for us is that faith is creating with words. That is part of it. Words become the creative process but before you can create, that is why we have got to add one part more to the definition, it is this union with God. I have come out with one shorter sentence, but we become the personification of faith. Jesus is the author and finisher of our faith, when He speaks, everything is a substance of faith and that substance goes forth. You have faith in the substance of God’s Word. God’s Word literally is spoken by you and as you are speaking forth, the time span, the time dimension is shortened until it disappears. The difference between faith in heaven and here is that in heaven there is no time dimension. On this earth the time dimension is pushed, squashed, where it might take a long time, because of the process of heaven’s nature is squashed, so it happens instantly.

Faith becomes a creative process with words. That is how God does it. You are not on the receiving end. You are on the creation side. Faith is a creative process, is creating with words. The simplest form is that faith is created with words. Take it that you are already one with God. So, having assumed all those things, faith is creating with words. We try to make it as simple as possible.

Now, that definition, you know, cannot be applied by everybody because a lot of people's words have no power. A lot of people's words are curse words. If they are endowed with the same power of these words, they will kill themselves. Although the Bible tells us that death and life are in the power of the tongue, you know, all this training about tongues and words and all that is to train us to be sons of God. When we grow up to be sons of God, exactly like Jesus, our words are powerful. Imagine in the Millennium, some of you will go to a planet, and at your spoken words, things can change. Remember, all substances come from God.

Let us talk about a room in heaven. You have got your mansion. You need an additional room, so you say, "Let it be so", but there is more to that process. You have got to speak. I have given you at least part of the definition that faith is creating with words. Obviously before you create, you must have the full image in you. When you say, like they do in the kindergarten in Paradise, they say "sheep" and the sheep is formed. However, what image of sheep do you have, *Baa baa* black sheep, polka-dotted sheep, speckled sheep? Can you see that? Although you say "sheep" and the sheep comes about, what comes about depends on what you see, what is the image that you have. When you create the room, let us say your mansion, a spiritual thing, and you say, "Let there be more rooms" but in your mind, you are thinking, "what type of room"? What is your image of the room? What does the room contain? Can you see all these details?

Here I give you a clue. By the time God speaks, the blueprint is inside His eyes. I give you another clue. The nine gifts of the Spirit are nine divided into three parts. *Revelation* gifts, *vocal* gifts and *power* gifts, the three areas, they work in harmony. *Revelation* gifts tie with love. *Vocal* gifts tie with faith. Every time when it comes to faith, it always has to do with speaking, speak to the mountain, all those are vocal. The *Power* gifts deal with hope and you have got to define what is hope. The creative process always involves these three: love, faith and hope and they are still working.

You see, on this side, although love is assumed and presumed, faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen. Obviously, people who are not in line with the Word, it does not work for them. Obviously, people with selfish motives, like a robber believing in hope that he can rob the biggest bank, he applies that principle, it does not work. It is obviously an undercurrent. You cannot visualise to rob a bank, you cannot, it just goes against the whole nature, although you say faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen. However, there are laws inside.

*DNA is intricately formed*

Now, obviously in this definition, there has to be love, faith and hope working. By the time God says, God sees it clearly, when God says, “Let there be light”, His Word “Let there be light” contains the image and the DNA. All the DNA is intricately formed, and He just releases the energy and the energy flows forth.

Now, we have found what the heavenly man is supposed to be, the power of the heavenly man and all that the heavenly man is supposed to be and the level of what sons of God are supposed to be.

So, be more careful with your words. How much of this is working now, right, you are wondering, how much of this? Obviously, in the Bible, it talks about the power of the tongue all the time. Death and life are in the power of tongue (which is in Proverbs). Also, you have Matthew 12, that for every idle word you will be judged. Obviously, there is an aspect of that, but not the full percentage. The difference is, not this side where you have 0%, this side where you have some percentages that are affecting us, but when you reach this stage is 100%! It is 100% of the power of the spoken Word. However, on this side, it cannot be 100%. Obviously, it is not 100% of the spoken word because many people confess, confess, confess, they still die; believe, believe, believe, they still die. So, obviously, something is going wrong somewhere, that the flow is not there, although some things you believe come to pass. There are percentages. On this side is 100% and the laws that govern this is 100% of the creative power of words.

**(Note: The recording stopped at this point, incomplete message)**

## Chapter 26...

### New Definition of Faith

We were defining faith from heaven's perspective, because the definition of faith has been defined from our earthly perspective. We looked at Hebrews 11:1 which says that faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen. Everyone knows that this is a Bible verse. Now, we half defined faith from heaven's perspective. So, I asked the question: Does God exercise faith? Yes, God has to exercise faith in us and He has faith in His own Word. Exercising the faith of God is believing the words and the power of the words released.

Just to show some of the ways the Bible phrases things, look at Hebrews 1:3 and it talks about Jesus being the express image of God. Hebrews 1:3 says Jesus *"who being the brightness of His glory and the express image of His person (person is the word "hupostasis"; the express image of His hupostasis or person or substance; "hupostasis" has been translated as "substance", so there is a substance of God; Jesus being the express image of His hupostasis or substance) and upholding all things by the word of His power..."*. Notice the word: not the power of His Word; *by the word of His power?* In other words, His power is encapsulated in the Word and He releases it forth. Then we receive it, we see the power of His Word. From His side, His power is released in His Word. Can you see the difference? There is so much power and then He puts the power into capsules and the capsules are released. Those capsules are the words and from our side, we see His Word coming and then His Word is released, then His Word releases the power. So, we call it the power of His Word. Can you see that for some things, they are different, depending on which perspective you are looking at it?

For example, of course, Singapore is in the middle of the planet earth. In the northern hemisphere, they are standing at the top of the hemisphere of the earth. It is not being the top, the top and bottom are perspectives. In Australia, we are standing down there, so actually we could be standing upside down to each other, relative but then we say, okay, our up is up, our down is down, so actually the north is down, we could say that. Perspective. Do you know that when you live in the northern hemisphere versus the southern hemisphere, if you fill up

your bath tub or your sink, and you plug it up, and then you pull out the plug, you look at the rotation of the water, it is exactly opposite? One will go this way, the other will go that way. You know why, the spin of the earth and the gravity. Do the experiment the next time. Do you notice that the water will turn in a certain direction, either clockwise or anti-clockwise? It is opposite. So, it is a matter of perspective because of the curvature of the earth and how the earth rotates, it affects how water moves. Water is affected by movement, gravity. You go into the bathtub, you move, and the water moves. So, you imagine that on a magnified sense. These are all observations. They are happening in your daily life; you did not notice it; why, you thought that water will flow the same way down the sink.

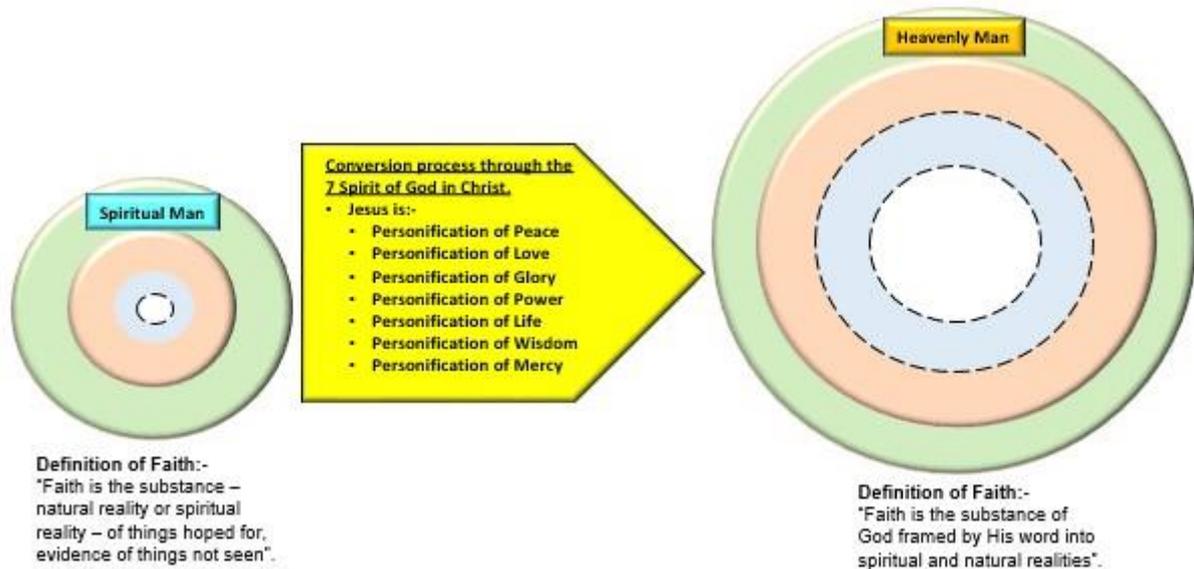
We came to define faith. What is faith from God's perspective? From God's perspective, this is the faith: *Faith is the substance of God...* I am trying to phrase it concisely. Okay, it could be light, life, love, whatever. It could be substance of love, substance of light, substance of life, but God covers everything. So, faith is the substance of God, knowing that God has substance, based on Hebrews 1:3. God has substance, Jesus is the image of God's substance, so there is an uncreated substance. *Faith is the substance of God framed by His Word into spiritual and natural realities.* Our reality. There is a reality of the spirit, there is a reality of the natural. That is the heavenly definition of faith.

#### *Faith is the substance of God*

You say, "What happened to hope"? You know, what hope? What is hope? There is no more time, time does not exist, events exist, but no more time. What is being done is that in the spiritual world, when you want to form another reality, whether the reality be a spiritual reality or a physical reality, faith takes the substance of God, frame it by God's Word, and, *bravo*, the reality comes but it has to be His Word. Although angels, redeemed men and spirit beings can speak words that are creative, it is creative because they take those words from God.

Let us say: *Faith is the substance of God*, okay, just stay there, faith is the substance of God. There are only 3 phrases inside, joined together. *Faith is the substance of God* (now, we keep that phrase) – *framed by His Word* (when you frame, you need to do something, right) – (then the last part is) *into spiritual and natural realities.* Then you put all the 3 sections together: *Faith is the substance of God framed by His Word into spiritual and natural realities.* Memorise that. That is a good one.

The reason we are looking at it is because we have talked about the heavenly man, how the heavenly man functions and how the heavenly man wants to bring heaven on earth. To bring heaven on earth, you must deal with the substance of God. That implies many things in this sentence; *Faith is the substance of God framed by His Word into spiritual and natural realities*. You see, we all live in realities. There is a reality of the spiritual and a reality of the natural, framed by His Word. Let me show where I got this from. This definition comes from 3 scriptures, so it is as good as the Word. This is the Word of God. I have taken 3 scriptures and joined them together and rephrased them in this manner. The first one was in Hebrews 1:3. To prove to you that God has substance. The fullness of God's substance is Jesus. Jesus is the expression of God's substance into our reality. It uses the word "substance". You can call it, faith is the *hupostasis*. I took it from the Word of God itself and it is perfectly in line with the Word.



*Diagram 1*

First verse that I took it from is Hebrews 1:3. Second place where I took it from is Hebrews 11:3, *"By faith we understand that the worlds were framed by the word of God, ..."*. Can you see that word: *"framed" by the Word of God? "Katartizo"*. To be in line with the Bible, I use the exact, same Greek word, except I have put the tenses in a different order. *Were framed by the "word" of God* – here is the word *"rhema"*, so to frame by the *"rhema"* of God. You can see the words – *framed by His word – framed by the word of God*. Then the other part: *"... so that the things which are seen were not made of things which are visible"*. This implies they are made from things which are invisible. There is a reality of the spiritual and a reality of the natural.

Those 2 verses would have been good enough but to strengthen the part about the two realities (the realities of the spiritual and the natural), I will throw in another scripture, which is 2 Corinthians 4:18, “*while we do not look at the things which are seen, but at the things which are not seen. (Can you see there are two realities? There is a visible realm and an invisible realm). For the things which are seen are temporary, but the things which are not seen are eternal*”.

I was pondering whether to put it as “framed by the Word of God into invisible and visible realities”. Still fine but I would rather use the words “spiritual” and “natural” because it is easier to understand. There are some things that are natural that are still invisible. Radio waves are natural, but they are invisible. So, the word “invisible” does not convey clarity, whereas the word “spiritual” is understood, it is a different dimension. Spiritual and natural worlds. So, *Faith is the substance of God framed by His Word into spiritual and natural realities.*

When something is in the natural, there is a time factor inside. When something is in the spiritual, it does not have a time factor because faith can create time. From God’s perspective, you can create a world which is operated by time, and so it is above and over time. The word “natural” includes the reality of XYZ & T which is time in natural reality. Based on scientific fact – XYZ & T – “T” is the Physics word for time in calculations so all realities include “T”. Therefore, natural reality is XYZ & T.

Those are the definitions that we have, and the reason is, we are talking about creating realities now. Can you see that definition helps you? Before that, all you are thinking about is: *Faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen.* It is based on your hope, correct? After that definition, there is a limit. It is limited by hope. Since faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen, it is based on the human definition that is human hope, human aspiration.

The definition that I give is creation itself. So, next time when you go to heaven, that definition will still operate because from heaven’s perspective, if you want to create a new world, that definition is there, and it depends on whether you want to create a spiritual world or a natural world. Then you know what you need to do, you have got to take the substance of

God, which is His life, His love, His light. Then you also need His Word, because His Word is the architectural framework in which you can form.

So now I have shown you the three verses by which I have come out with that definition, *Faith is the substance of God framed by His Word into spiritual and natural realities* (something that is real). Now, looking at this definition that is 100% from the Word, so I would say that this is the Word of God. It comes from the Word, nothing is added to the Word, everything is accepted pure as the Word. It is framed into a definition of what faith is from the spiritual realm, the spiritual dimension. When you look at it, you can see what you need to do to create something. You can see that there is a creative process.

In the previous chapter we left with that half definition, but this is now concise and precise. Instead of using the word “create”, I chose the word “framed” because what is creation without an architectural plan. You need to actually structure it. The Word is like the engineering part, “framed” by His Word.

As you look, if *Faith is the substance of God framed by His Word* (let us use the third part) *into spiritual and natural realities*, it is obvious that the word “framed” or “*katartizo*” by His Word is a very important point. That point, temporarily, I will look at the word again and that is from Hebrews 11:3, “*By faith we understand that the worlds (galaxies) were framed by the word of God...*”. The whole Universe was framed by the Word of God.

What exactly is the word “framed” (*katartizo*)? According to here: *Katartizo* is from *kata* and a derivative of *artios*; to complete thoroughly, i.e. repair (literally or figuratively) or adjust: - fit, frame, mend, (make) perfect (-ly join together), prepare, restore. Complete, equip, strengthen. Okay, let us look, forget about all those things, look at the Word of God at how it is used. It has been used in Matthew 21:16 and talks about how God has perfected praise. The word “perfected” is the word “*katartizo*”. So, you need to know the background of the word “framed”. This is how “*katartizo*” is used in the Bible and where we get the word “framed”. It is used in Mark 1:19 in a very physical way, “*When He had gone a little farther from there, He saw James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother, who also were in the boat mending (katartizo) their nets*”. Obviously, when you are a fisherman, and your nets get old, get holes, you have got to keep mending the nets. So, it is repairing. So “framed” (*katartizo*) is translated as “perfected”, “mending” or “repairing” which sometimes is necessary. You

know, when sin comes in, the Word has to keep coming in and repair. The Word is repairing, doing a lot of things.

*Everyone perfectly trained is like their teacher*

Again, it is used in Luke 6:40, “*A disciple is not above his teacher, but everyone who is perfectly trained will be like his teacher*”. The word “perfectly” is “*katartizo*”. Not just trained, perfectly trained. In other words, it is like the *kungfu* master. When the *kungfu* master teaches (he has ten powers or ten tricks), he teaches nine. The disciple looks perfect, but actually it is nine over ten. Nine over ten is not perfect, correct? Perfect is ten over ten but the master keeps one, so that when the disciple rebels, then the master comes out with his special trick and defeats his student. So, the student is not perfect. To be perfect means he completely learns exactly ten over ten, if the master only has ten. One hundred percent is perfect, ninety percent is not perfect. Even 99.9% is not perfect. Of course, not considering fifty percent but 99.999% is also not perfect. In the eyes of man, it is perfect but with God, God knows the difference between 100% and 99.999...% and it is not perfect. Do you know God does not accept that? The only perfection God accepts is one hundred percent. So, that is “*katartizo*”, that *everyone who is perfectly trained will be like his teacher*.

Then you have another usage. This is an interesting usage in Romans 9:22. You see how many words have been translated? “*What if God, wanting to show His wrath and to make His power known, endured with much longsuffering the vessels of wrath prepared (kept aside) ...*”. The word “prepared” is “*katartizo*”. You see, “*katartizo*” means “perfect”, “mend” or “repair”. It also means “prepare”.

Just like before you learn to play the piano, and you want to play a song or an item on Christmas Day, at home you are preparing secretly so no one knows. Then because you want to surprise everyone, you really play and play to master the song. For some people, they only learn to play one song. Actually, you can only learn one song. When I was first learning to play piano, one of the things that I loved was to memorise the notes, so I liked tunes. One of the tunes: *For Alice*, I could memorise it up to about several bars, I could play it without looking but for too long I have not gone back into playing, now not enough time, playing only gospel songs. Then a certain part, I got stuck a little bit but with a little bit of practice, I could just go and play a classical piece. So, it would be interesting. I am not a classical pianist but if I have got enough practice, practice, practice, then I suddenly come and play a

whole classical piece, you would think that I must be very good. No, I am not classically trained, I cannot read notes. I might even put the notes in front of me and pretend to read it but if you practice and prepare at home, you can do it. So, “*katartizo*” means “prepare”. Hiding behind, preparing, preparing, preparing, and then suddenly it is unveiled. It is an interesting meaning. Can you see how hard it is to translate the word “*katartizo*”? It means that there is a lot of behind-the-scenes work.

The is also like, some of you might play games or whatever. Sometime ago I invented a game called *Greener Game*. It involves buying countries, it is like *Monopoly*. In *Monopoly*, you buy streets, build houses, build hotels, and then you tax the other players until you win. It is very simple. My game is exactly the same as *Monopoly* but instead of buying streets, you buy countries, and then you develop countries. How do you develop countries? You have got to develop roads, mass transit systems, airports, and you must plant trees. That is why it is called *Greener Game* because if you keep chopping down trees and develop, your whole country is also gone. I made it that you have to plant trees. As you plant trees, you develop, you can tax more and more and more. On top of that, I divide the whole world into four zones and you start playing with international money. Then as you develop, you have Asian currency, Euro currency, African currency and American currency. Then while the world is developing, the currency goes up. So, suddenly you have got so many currencies (which are colour coded): red for Asia, blue for Africa, green for America and yellow for Euro. There are also international currencies. The banker really has to calculate when people start changing their money and some of them, if they are very good players, sometimes you can look over there and see how much money the person has and look over there and see how many countries the person has, right, when they display their cards. Also, we had school competitions. When they were competing, the good players were playing to win because the prize was \$1,000.

So far, we had played the game in our fellowships and I sometimes put out \$50, just to keep the competition there. *Wah*, sometimes for \$50 they almost behaved like non-Christians. When some people came to play the game, you could see their true character. When husband and wife playing together, when they were playing the game, in the competition there was no husband or wife. I can never play the game like that, but some will really go out for the kill and win. In that game, you could see that the good players hide their cards and their money, and the amateurs display theirs. Sometimes when I look at them playing, I could see what

countries they have but all the good players will stack up their cards, like a poker player. You do not know what money they have, how much money they have, whatever they have, all their money is placed together in just one pile. So secretly, you do not know which country they own, you have got to remember who is owning which one. This is a competitive level of playing.

I was not giving too many tips and some of them began to play very well but they still lacked certain skills. They have never played to that level where I have seen competitive players play. There are still a few strategies. Only when I play, then they will all see how the strategies work but if they think carefully, they could have come out with their own strategy. Some of them will hide, hide, hide and then invest their money because you can play currency, hide, hide, hide, then suddenly at the end of the game, *wah*, you have got so much money.

I remember in one of the games that we played in Sydney, suddenly somebody got \$1,000. Everybody said, “*Wah*, how did he get so rich”? He did not rob the bank, he was a Christian player, so he could not be robbing the bank. You know what I did, I let the young people play and I watched them. After they had played the game, I analysed all their characters. I said, “Based on how you play the game, this is your character”.

So, there is what I call in certain things, like you hide, you do not let people know, that is preparing, preparing. Then suddenly you come out, *wah*, you know, you can win the game suddenly. These are called preparations. I use games as illustration, that the word “*katartizo*” (“prepare”) means preparing in secret, preparing and keeping aside for something, then suddenly it comes out.

“*Katartizo*” is a very interesting word. Here is another place where it is used, also differently. The word “framed” has so many meanings. It says in 2 Corinthians 13:11, “*Finally, brethren, farewell. Become complete...*”. So that is close to the word “perfect”, but it is the word “complete”, that is the word “*katartizo*”.

#### *Substance comes first*

Here is another one in Galatians 6:1, “*Brethren, if a man is overtaken in any trespass, you who are spiritual restore (katartizo)...*”. “Restore” sounds like “mending”. The same Greek

word for mending nets is the same word used for restoring someone. To restore a person is to “*katartizo* a person”. That means the thing could be broken down, then when you want to frame like in, *Faith is the substance of God framed by His Word into spiritual and natural realities*. The thing could be all toppled down or half gone, you can, through the Word, create the missing part, restore it, make it perfect again. The word “*katartizo*” is to restore, make it complete, make it perfect. When you look at this sentence, there are 3 parts to the sentence, 3 phrases in *Faith is the substance of God framed by His Word into spiritual and natural realities*. The last part is *into spiritual and natural realities* so that one is the last part. Now, between *Faith is the substance of God* and *framed by His Word*, which one comes first, *framed by His word* or *the substance of God*, comes first? Remember when you say hope in *Faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen*, it is easy to see that hope comes first, then faith makes that hope into the substance, correct? You could analyse that verse in Hebrews 11:1. Now, let us analyse this. Can we see that *substance* comes first or *framed* comes first? You know that, *into spiritual and natural realities*, comes last.

Now, it is in line with Hebrews 12:2, *Jesus is the author and finisher of our faith*. Since the substance of God is Jesus, so it is still in line with Hebrews 12:2. You see, when something is in line with the Word, it has to be in line with every word. So, the substance of God, based on Hebrews 1:3, is Jesus. Jesus is the substance of God, He is the *hupostasis* of God, He is actually faith personified and so obviously, you need the energy of Jesus, the substance of Jesus to frame. Can you see the difference now between this sentence and Hebrews 11:1? Analyse the two sentences.

Just for the fun of it: This one, *Faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen* is taken from Hebrews 11:1. This one, *Faith is the substance of God framed by His Word into spiritual and natural realities* is basically taken from Hebrews 1:3 and it is also taken from Hebrews 11:3. You can also say that it is taken from 2 Corinthians 4:18. If you like, you can throw in Hebrews 12:2. So you have a few Bible verses but what is the difference between the two substances?

The first sentence, *Faith is the substance of God framed by His word into spiritual and natural realities* is the main sentence. This whole sentence, *Faith is the substance of things hoped for; the evidence of things not seen*, is coming to only talk about the “natural realities”.

*Faith is the substance of God framed by His word into spiritual and natural realities.* It is a tiny little bit of the first sentence because this substance, *Faith is the substance of things hoped for; the evidence of things not seen*, is the substance of things hoped for. It is talking about natural substance.

To clarify, *natural reality or spiritual reality* is, *Faith is the substance* (natural reality or spiritual reality) *of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen*. Can you see that? The substance is talking about natural and spiritual realities. It is talking about faith being the natural reality or spiritual reality of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen. That whole thing *natural reality or spiritual reality* is talking about this part *spiritual and natural realities*. The whole sentence here, *Faith is the substance* (natural reality or spiritual reality) *of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen*, is talking about this one, *spiritual and natural realities*. The faith that Hebrews 11:3 is talking about is creating something on the earth. It is the substance of the reality. Whereas this one, *Faith is the substance of God framed by His Word into spiritual and natural realities*, is the substance of God. Can you see? The words “of God” is the substance of God in the uncreated reality. God cannot be created. God’s substance is not a created substance, God’s substance is the creative substance. Can you see the difference? There is a difference between the substance of things not seen or hoped for and the substance of God. You must be able to see this.

This one, *Faith is the substance* (natural reality or spiritual reality) *of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen*, is a created reality. It is a created substance. This is a substance like wood is a substance. You are a substance, it is real, it is created, it is a substance made from God’s substance, but it is its own substance. It is a substance of the reality (*spiritual and natural realities*) which was already created. Whereas this one, *Faith is the substance of God framed by His Word into spiritual and natural realities*, is the substance of God! Uncreated. Who can create the substance of God? No need to create. How dare you! How dare you try to create God! He is the uncreated dimension. The substance from the uncreated dimension is energising into our dimension.

When you have got this sentence, *Faith is the substance of God framed by His Word into spiritual and natural realities*, you live at a higher level than this one, *Faith is the substance* (natural reality or spiritual reality) *of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen*. The people of the world are struggling to create something natural from their hope. Their hope

might be for a guitar, for \$1,000, for an HDB apartment, for a house, for a car or for a condominium. Okay, let us leave aside the natural things. Getting too materialistic here. They hope for wisdom, success in ministry, bringing one hundred souls. That is hope.

*Is reality creating reality*

Can you see that those are still realities, confined into realities? It is reality creating reality. It is moving something to and fro, from the spiritual reality to the natural reality. Actually, this verse, *Faith is the substance (natural reality or spiritual reality) of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen*, is talking about the unseen realm to the seen realm. It is more like what we call “transfer”.

You know, there is another way we can define “dying” or “death”. When a person is dying on earth, before he knows Christ, many people are frightened about death because they do not know what happens after that. Remember, before you know the truth, before you know about what happens after death and the assurance of salvation, death is frightening. It is frightening because nobody knows what happens after death but when you know what happens after death, it is not frightening. We can call it transferring (living in one realm to the other), or graduation ceremony (graduate from the earth to heaven) or changing address for living (from living on earth, your address, what your post code is, 215789 or whatever, and then you transfer your post code to heaven). You are changing address, correct? It is not so frightening when you know it is from one dimension to another, one realm to another.

This verse, *Faith is the substance (natural reality or spiritual reality) of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen*, is just one realm to another, it is just transferring. It is teaching you how to transfer from this realm to the other. That is all. This verse is basically talking about transportation.

You know, Singapore does not have strawberries grown here. You have got to transport the strawberries from Korea, Australia or South America. Actually, you can grow strawberries in Cameron Highlands. You cannot grow it here, so you grow somewhere and then you transport it here. Basically, it is a transportation principle. You just transport what you need from that realm to here. However, transportation has its own law. How you must do, where you must go, where you must find, all those things. Hope and faith and then you must believe it is coming. It is transportation but this law, *Faith is the substance of God framed by His*

*Word into spiritual and natural realities*, is the real law of creation. You can create something from nothing because it is the substance of God. The uncreated dimension can create time. It can create a whole Universe. It can create twenty universes if you want, a million galaxies if you want, zillions of stars, quintillion universes, there is no limit.

What happens if the *kungfu* master teaches you the ten tricks? You are a really good disciple, so you learn the nine tricks until one day the *sifu* trusts you. The *sifu* is about to die, let us say he is not dying yet, about to retire, passes on the things to the best disciple, so he teaches his last and final trick, right, the *iron palm* or whatever it is. Finally, the disciple learns the final trick, so he is equal to the *sifu*. There are many different schools of *kungfu*. Every other student who is being taught can only learn the ten. What must he do to better himself? Learn more than ten. Find the number eleven, find the number twelve, find the number thirteen, find the number fourteen, then he can surpass the *sifu*. However, do not be proud, honour your *sifu*. Without your *sifu*, the four that you learn would not surpass the ten. So, you go all over to learn. If you did not learn the ten from *sifu*, you only have the four, you fight with the *sifu*, the *sifu* still wins.

We stand on the shoulders of those before us and the reason is this. Sometimes some skills are harder to learn, and you need the basics. You need the basics before you can master other skills. For instance, let us talk about music. There are many ways you can play piano based on notes, or you can play piano as a guitar, so you play the chords differently. There are so many ways to play the chords. You can play in a flowing stream. You can play the basic chords that people learn. Then when you mix everything together, you learn one skill. However, how can you learn to play the chords unless you make your fingers flexible to learn to play the chords? Can you see that? At first it is very difficult because the hands do not know how to move. I remember learning to play the chords, *wah*, every day I must practice. After a while the hands got used to it. I closed my eyes and played, because my hands knew the positions but when you are learning, then your hands must know how to move to the next one. So, you slowly move, after your hands get used to moving, then it becomes second nature, and then you move.

When you learn to drive a car, even though in today's cars you can learn to drive an automatic because some of us used to learn to drive a manual. Remember those days of the manual cars? Every time you changed gear, you pressed on the clutch. How many of you

when learning to change gears, the engine died? Those old manual cars but when you were very good, you learned to press both the clutch and accelerator as needed. Then on the hill you were playing with the gears, so you have to have the basic skills. Then you might learn using an automatic. You still need to learn the basic skills though.

What is the difference between an ordinary driver and a race-car driver? The race-car driver learns above the normal driving, correct? He must go through that one before the next one. He must have the basics, then from the basics, he learns the extras. Just like some of you might have taken defensive driving courses. Defensive driving courses are not compulsory, but they have defensive driving courses. Then they actually have race-car driving courses, not that you want to apply it to your roads here but there are different skills of driving. You learn totally different skills. There are more advanced skills that are on top of the basic skills.

Like, when I was learning how to drive, I had to have someone who was more experienced teaching me in these areas. It is like when you are learning to take corners. Most of the time when you are a new driver, when you are taking corners, you are always slowing down. Even when you are coming out of the curve, you are still slowing down but then when you learn from a good driver, and this comes from the race-car drivers, that actually when you go into the corner, you slow down, but when you pull out of the corner, you slowly accelerate. That is the smoothest way to handle the corners. You can read and check the Physics. The law of Physics is the same. Now, do not take this information and go around the corner at speed. Please. I do not mean accelerate that much. Little, you know what is little?

You see, when you are a new driver, you just learn to slow down when taking corners. That is what you learn. They do not teach you to speed up at the end of the corner. Of course, they do not teach you those things, but you know, based on Physics, based on the law of velocity, when you go in, you must slowly slow down, but there is a right amount of speed. Each different corner takes a different speed. You cannot speed into the corner, you will go out of control. The main thing about driving is to have full control. If you do not have full control and you lose the ten percent control, then you get yourself into danger. You have to hold on to maximum control at all times of your car, no matter what the speed is, and race-car drivers travel very fast. Do not forget, they are taking corners all the time. Why, you think for race-car drivers, just one straight line? No, they are handling corners. They must be expert at taking corners and it is the corner that can kill you.

### *Develop higher skills*

Remember, even some of you when driving on the simulator, you have already gone out of control. How many accidents have you got into? How many times have you died on the simulator, on those driving games? The corners are the most difficult, not the straight line but the key is the same. You always slow down at a certain speed, and as you come out of the corner, you must accelerate at least a little bit. They do not teach you that in driving school. You learn that from those skills that are higher. So, that is an example of how you need basic skills and then on top of the basic skills you develop higher skills from there.

As we look at “*the substance of God framed by His Word*”, we realise that the first sentence, *Faith is the substance of God framed by His word into spiritual and natural realities*, covers the second sentence, *Faith is the substance (natural reality or spiritual reality) of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen*. Why didn't Paul give that first one? It is because he was so busy doing the foundation. Put it this way: Do you think it is easy to do the foundation? It takes a lifetime.

Remember, when the first car was invented, it had no bumper and no air-conditioner? Today, for people to invent cars, it is easy, because there are so many cars on the road. They know what type of car it can be but for the first person to invent a car, he would have to think about how to do the wheels, how to do this, everything was new. He had to actually invent everything. Today's cars have thousands of parts. Long ago, the first car had a few hundred parts, then more parts were added, until finally the cars can now travel faster and faster. They say, *hey*, now the shape needs to be looked into, to go faster, take the corners smoother. Long ago, people were very happy when their cars could travel at 30 kph. Today, travelling at 30 kph, you will be fined for being too slow and called a road hog. When new cars are travelling at high speed, you will realise the shape of the car is important, because the shape does affect the wind factor, called aerodynamics. Can you see that we do not think about those things because we are too busy inventing? Getting the car to go faster than the horse was already an achievement. Before the first car was invented, everyone went by horse or horse and carriage. Imagine ten years later, thirty years later, do not want the horse, buy the car. There was a time when cars became faster than horses and nobody wanted a horse. Now horses are for horse-riding, as a hobby, not really for travelling.

The second one, *Faith is the substance* (natural reality or spiritual reality) *of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen*, is still God's faith, faith that comes from God, but it is the faith that is used to change from spiritual reality to natural reality. So, it's called transportation.

Now, the reason I show that it is of a different dimension altogether is you create by speaking God's Word. As long as it is God's Word, you can speak forth and create. The Bible has a key for that. Jesus was trying to move us into this reality, *Faith is the substance of God framed by His Word into spiritual and natural realities*, when He gave us Mark 11:22-23. You look at it carefully. He says, "*Have faith in God. For assuredly, I say to you, whoever says to this mountain, 'Be removed and be cast into the sea,' and does not doubt in his heart, but believes that those things he says will be done, he will have whatever he says*". Look at verse 23, "believes". Believes what? What do you actually believe in? Is it 'believe in God'?

When Jesus says something, He believes His Own Words. To believe in the power of your words, *he will have whatever he says*, not whatever he believes. Did it say whatever he believes? So, that means Jesus is teaching point one. How to be functioning like Him, like God. You believe in your words and you will have what your words say. Isn't that right? Analyse it upside down, sideways, every way, you will come to the same conclusion. It is in your Bible.

How come we thought that it is believing in the heart? Because believing in the heart is important also but the heart believes in the power of your words. That is what the heart is believing and do not doubt. Then we twist it until it is believing in the heart, but the heart believes that what you say will come to pass and you will have what you say. Then we remove all those things and we say that the heart believes it is done. *Huh?* Because of verse 24 of course, *believe that you receive them*. If you look at the context, if this is verse 24 and this is verse 23, that means the "believe" is still believing the words that you say. This is still the same principle over the power of words. Remember this, not all words are equal. What is our first definition? *Faith is the substance of God framed by His word*, so your word will only have as much power if it is in line with His Word.

Now, remember, this is not a *Faith* lesson, this is *The Spiritual Man II*. I am teaching actually about the spiritual man and how the spiritual man can function, so I am coming to that. We

have just made a new definition. I take time to explain and tie it all together, because this is how we study the Bible.

In the Greek, it is *rhema*, following Hebrews 11:3, because the word “*rhema*” implies His spoken Word. The substance of God itself is the *logos*. In the beginning was the *logos*. The Word (*logos*) is Jesus. That is why I used the word “*rhema*”. It is like saying, *Faith is the logos of God framed by His rhema*, if you love those Greek words. The substance of God is the *logos* and I can easily prove it. Jesus is the Word, right? In John 1:1, “*In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God*”. You take John 1:1 plus Hebrews 1:3 (Jesus is the express *hypostasis* or the substance of God). You look, Jesus is the *logos*, correct? Then the other sentence that says that Jesus is the substance of God, correct? Now, Jesus is the Word, Jesus is the substance, therefore the Word and the substance are the same. If  $a = b$ ,  $b = c$ ,  $a = c$ . Simple logic, right? So, the substance is the *logos*. That is why in the Greek sentence, for this one is *rhema*.

You see, this, *Faith is the substance (natural reality or spiritual reality) of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen*, is the transportation process, correct? This one, *Faith is the substance of God framed by His Word into spiritual and natural realities*, is the conversion process. To convert the substance to *rhema* and convert the *rhema* into reality. There are two conversions. This, *Faith is the substance (natural reality or spiritual reality) of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen*, is transportation. We transport from the invisible realm to the visible realm. Between transportation and conversion, which is more powerful? I want strawberries, I have got to find transport. However, if I want strawberries, I can convert anything into strawberries and have strawberries. Therefore, conversion is more powerful than transportation. You have got the power of conversion. Converting anything into anything is more powerful than transportation. Here is where the spiritual man has the ability (or rather, the heavenly man) on how to bring heaven to earth, because “the substance of God” is talking about heaven. Without the substance of God, heaven does not exist. It is the substance of God that creates everything. This, *Faith is the substance of God framed by His Word into spiritual and natural realities*, is the faith of the heavenly man. This, *Faith is the substance (natural reality or spiritual reality) of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen*, is the faith of the spiritual man.

Now, you begin to see what I am teaching. Remember, I am showing the difference between the spiritual man and the heavenly man. The heavenly man has to be spiritual (includes spirituality), but the spiritual man might not necessarily be the heavenly man. He can be a superman who can do natural things with spiritual power. He understands how to convert spiritual power into something natural, how to neutralise spiritual law, but he might not be the heavenly man. The heavenly man supersedes.

So, the same way, we depend on Paul and all that he had learned, but that shows that we have learned. Can you see that? What is the purpose of the Bible? From generation to generation, what is the purpose of the apostles and prophets? What is the purpose? That they take what is there, absorb it, continue to hear from God and He adds the *kungfu* skills. In my illustration, the *kungfu* is God's *kungfu*, okay? Not *Panda kungfu*. You learn from whatever.

The first disciple has ten skills. So, you must learn all ten. Then here is what you do, you must find out where your master learned from. You have not learned until you learn where your master learned from, correct? After all, your master did not instantly get the ten things, he must learn from somebody else. Then if you can find the source of where your master learned from, and you find a few sources similar to your master's, you might add four more, then you have improved. Life is short, by the time you have learned, it is time to go home, the next one must learn all fourteen. Then after learning all fourteen, he must learn where the source of the original learning came from. Then he taxes on it, adds another six, he reaches twenty skills. Can you see how he improves?

We must absorb from our predecessors and understand where they got their revelations from. Remember how I taught, I made the statement that you cannot get this point except by revelation. No way you can get to that point. I said you need the direct speaking of God to see the connection. I said, that one, no matter how you do it, you cannot make the connection. You need God to show it to you and reveal it to you. The seven Spirits of God because I asked the question: Why the seven Spirits are the seven Spirits, and how are the connections? That one, you have to go direct to heaven. How did Paul get all his revelations? He went to the third heaven. He met God, spoke with God, God taught him these things. So, you must learn everything that Paul learned and if you really learn everything that Paul learned, you will get the same access. Then you go to the same access and you learn and you build upon

the revelation. If it is truly a good revelation, it will be in harmony with all the other revelations. It cannot contradict.

So, the first sentence, *Faith is the substance of God framed by His Word into spiritual and natural realities*, is faith as defined by the heavenly man. The second sentence, *Faith is the substance (natural reality or spiritual reality) of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen*, is faith as defined by the spiritual man. How to convert it, this is the key. It starts with how to obtain “the substance of God”. Then after you have obtained the substance of God, you must learn how to get it framed, “framed by His Word”. You must understand these two processes before you understand how to change that into reality, from *logos* to *rhema* to a physical reality. If the physical reality is growing a new arm, so be it. God can grow a new arm in a nanosecond. I realise a nanosecond is actually a billionth of a second. That is very fast, which means one second divided by one billion times, faster than anyone of us could ever measure.

How to bring the spiritual reality into the natural reality? Here is where only the heavenly man can do it, because the heavenly man contains “the substance of God” and has the same frequency to access that substance of God. There is a celestial and there is a terrestrial. Let me point to 1 Corinthians 15. We have in 1 Corinthians 15, where it talks about the resurrection and you look at the different types of substances that are available there. Of course, those are spiritual realities. It is talking about the glorious body. It says in verse 40, *“There are also celestial bodies (“epouranios”, comes from the word “ouranos” [heaven], so it is actually heavenly bodies) and terrestrial bodies; but the glory of the celestial is one, and the glory of the terrestrial is another”*. Can you see the words “glory of the celestial” and “glory of the terrestrial”? “Terrestrial” means earthly, belongs to the earth, yet it is glorious because it is spiritual, but it is still lower than the heavenly.

In verse 41, *“There is one glory of the sun, another glory of the moon, and another glory of the stars; for one star differs from another star in glory”*. Then look at verse 44, *“It is sown a natural body, it is raised a spiritual body...”*. Verses 46-47, *“However, the spiritual is not first, but the natural, and afterward the spiritual. The first man was of the earth, and of dust; the second Man is the Lord from heaven”*. So, you know who the first heavenly Man is? The Lord from heaven.

Now, who is he comparing in verse 47? Look at who he is comparing. He is comparing Adam with Jesus, correct? Adam, before he fell, was a spiritual man. Then he became a natural man after he fell but Jesus is the heavenly Man, He comes from heaven. He is many, many notches higher than the spiritual man. He includes being spiritual but that is the first heavenly Man.

Look at verse 48, “*As was the man of dust, so also are those who are made of dust; and as is the heavenly Man, so also are those who are heavenly*”. Hallelujah! Jesus did not come to make us a “spiritual man” alone. Jesus did not come to make us like Adam alone. He takes us beyond Adam! That is the vision you must see. That is why this is *The Spiritual Man II*, but you say, “Pastor, why did you call it *The Spiritual Man II*”? Because the ending of the spiritual man is the heavenly man. Then maybe we might have a third book called *The Heavenly Man*.

You see here, it says of Jesus, “... *and as is the heavenly Man, so also are those who are heavenly*”. Paul had some visions of that. We are different. We have heaven inside of us. Adam did not have that. There is something different. If you cannot see it, it is not yours. If you see it, it is yours. Such is the nature of faith.

The heavenly Man, it says in verse 49, “*And as we have borne the image of the man of dust (which we have), we shall also bear the image of the heavenly Man*”. Do you notice when he speaks about this thing, he is speaking about the resurrection and the rapture? Then in the very next few verses, he talks about the rapture.

### *The Heavenly Man*

It is because we are the generation that is in the end time, and the revelation of the heavenly Man is released. Today, people use the words “heavenly man” commonly. I know there are some books called *The Heavenly Man*. When you read them, they are not about the heavenly man, they are about the spiritual man. The spiritual man is so spiritual, the earthly, carnal people look at him, *wah*, so heavenly. Wait until you meet Jesus, the true heavenly Man. Then you will realise all those are beaten by far.

The heavenly man has a nature of heaven, has access to heaven and is able to tap upon the substance of God. There is the substance of God flowing into them, *the manifestation of the*

*sons of God*, that is there rising from within them. It surpasses Adam and Eve. It is the very nature of God. Jesus brought something new when Jesus rose from the dead, that something new is added into us. Now, I have shown that the substance of God is made available for us. We can tap upon this substance of God. *Faith is the substance of God...* You have to start from there. Who can contain the substance of God? Why are we talking about the heavenly Man? What can contain the substance of God? The substance of God.

You know, today they are trying to create a fusion reactor. In case those of you who are not familiar with nuclear Physics, fission is when they split the atom and then energy is released. To do that, they get the heaviest possible element, uranium-238, plutonium-239. Actually U-235 is “fissile”, so it breaks easier because it is very heavy, or sometimes plutonium which is a by-product of a nuclear reactor. They get the heaviest atom because it is easier to split it. When they split it, you get the atomic explosion called the fission bomb.

Then the other bomb is called the fusion bomb. So, to fuse two things together, it is very difficult to push the atoms, remember. No matter how you push everything, you cannot even touch the atoms and molecules. You need a lot of energy to push tiny little atoms together. Remember, you are pushing into the plutons itself and beyond the electrons that are circling it. When you touch anything, you are touching the surface of the atoms and molecules, which is just the electron layer. You have got to go beyond the electron layer into the plutons and push the plutons and neutrons together to create a new element. To do that, they get the smallest but heaviest possible, so what they have is the hydrogen atom which has normally one pluton and one electron, but that one is very hard because it is too light to push. So, they get what we call “heavy hydrogen” (which has a name on it). Heavy hydrogen has like one proton and one neutron, or one proton and two neutrons, so it is heavier. It is still hydrogen, because the number of neutrons does not change the element. It is the number of protons that changes the element. When you have got two protons, it becomes helium. You can have one proton and you can have whatever number of neutrons you want, it is still hydrogen. It is the proton that changes. One proton and one electron, it is hydrogen.

You can have one proton and one electron, and many, many neutrons but normally you do not have that many because they cannot cling together. So, you have what you call the one with two, from the word “neuter” (of two), they call that hydrogen deuterium. Then when you have got hydrogen with three neutrons, they call it tritium, but it is still hydrogen. You know

what they do, they try to take deuterium and tritium. How do they do it? They will take hydrogen and they will spin and spin and spin and do all kinds of things. When you spin something, what happens? The heavier thing goes down, the lighter thing goes up, correct? They spin and spin, then after they have finished spinning, then they take the little bottom one. They must spin a lot to get enough, then they take all that and if it is still not enough, because still not pure enough, they will spin, and spin and spin again, and then take the tiniest bottom one. They do it many, many times, thousands of times until they get pure deuterium and pure tritium. Then after that, they need something to push it together. The only way to push it together is it must have pressure and tremendous high temperature. That is why today they can do it with plasma or lasers. Lasers can create those high temperatures.

Long ago, they did not know how to produce the high temperatures needed, so they put it into the atomic bomb (fission bomb) but they did not just put it in. It has a certain construction, and that is where technology comes in, because they cannot just simply do it together. There is a technology to do it, so that it is hidden in such a way or put in such a way that when the explosion happens with the fission bomb, it will compress the deuterium. What you have is two explosions, the first is a fission, but then part of the energy goes, pushing the deuterium and the tritium together, and when you combine, there is a second explosion. That is called the hydrogen bomb, more powerful than the bomb that was dropped at Nagasaki and Hiroshima.

Then when they were experimenting, some scientists said, “Okay, why not we do a fission fusion bomb”? There are two ways to make it more powerful. To make a bigger fission and a bigger fusion, correct? You have got to make a bigger, bigger bomb. So, somebody said, “Why not we keep it small, while we make a fission, fusion, fusion bomb”. Three explosions. They made bigger and bigger bombs. Then another scientist said, “Well, if you can do three, we can do five”. So, they have got a fission, fusion, fusion, fusion, fusion bomb.

They measure the explosion by megatons, something that was never done before. Now one of those big bombs can destroy an entire city. More powerful. Last time, those bombs that were dropped at Nagasaki and Hiroshima, probably were measured in kilotons. Now it is measured in megatons. They were actually going to go into bigger and bigger, you know, the biggest that was ever produced, with the “mushroom cloud” and all that, was by the Russians. Finally, they decided, okay, let us stop doing this game, because the earth is getting more and

more polluted. They stopped it because they had enough research. It was a dangerous time because it is like humans could destroy each other and countries were frightened of nuclear war.

As they build on all these, one bomb after the other, and make it stronger and fuse things together, today, there are nuclear reactors that produce electricity. Those are actually fission nuclear reactors. That means they are using the splitting of atoms but small little parts, hot enough to boil water. The water becomes steam and then the steam turns the turbine (the turbine has magnets). As it turns, it produces electricity. Actually, it is based on hot water, you do not need any power because they just put the radioactive material there and it produces heat. It is like a free source of heat. Today's one is like a very simple mechanical principle, with just getting a very constant source of heat. To produce heat, you have to burn a lot of things but there is no need for this one. You just put the fission material there and you just have to monitor it.

Today, I think somewhere in Europe, they are trying, I think it cost billions of dollars, to build the first fusion reactor. Do you know why it was so difficult to build? Number one: How to get the temperature to fuse, correctly? Number two: If you fuse, how can you contain it? Who can contain that energy of it coming together? What can contain that energy when it fuses and explodes? They can reduce it by making it into a smaller sample. It must be constant explosions, otherwise it is useless. One explosion is not enough, it must be constant. Then you have got enough heat and energy. What we want is heat energy. Then we can use heat energy to produce electricity, or whatever we need. What can contain such a tiny, little fusion? It is so complicated. No material on earth can keep that thing. You know what they use? Magnets because every atom is a magnet. So, they create this powerful magnet. That is why if you look on the internet at the fusion reactor that they are creating, it is so huge, all to produce this powerful magnetic force, that the atoms will flow inside. When it explodes, it is held by this powerful magnetic force because electron's energy, all have electrical components. Finally, they said, "Okay, I think we can contain this one, so let us see whether it will explode". I am sure they have done their calculations.

In fact, I saw some visions of the future, that they succeeded in building fusion reactors. Just down the line, that is something new, and it is clean, no radiation. They use lasers to produce the heat and electricity. The greater an energy source is, it is just like asking you what can

contain the sun? The sun burns up everything. If the sun and the earth come together, the earth will be gone. The sun probably just swallows up the earth. You know, Jupiter is huge, the earth is like one tiny dot, correct? I think a few years ago, there was a piece of asteroid that hit Jupiter and all the scientists were excited because it was the first time that they could observe the phenomenon of what happened. They saw it going in because it is partly of gas, they saw the reaction, like there was a big hole for a moment, and then it closed up. Do you know that sort of impact and that phenomenon? That phenomenon was the size of the earth and Jupiter just swallowed the whole thing. Now when you look at Jupiter, it is like nothing has happened. So, you can imagine the sun, it can easily swallow the earth and it will still be shining like before. What can contain the sun? Nothing.

### *What can contain the substance of God*

What can contain the substance of God? Nothing. Only the substance of God, which is Jesus. Where is Jesus? At the right hand of God. Jesus is also inside us. Jesus can contain Jesus because Jesus is the substance of God. So, the nature of Jesus inside us is already there. That is why we are not just a “spiritual man”. We have to realise that we are a “heavenly man”. There is a part of us that belongs to heaven and the only way you can remain and develop the heavenly man is to remember that you do not belong to this earth.

However, 99.9% of people out there are earth-bound and guess what, over 90% of Christians are earth-bound. Isn't that a shame? It is just like you have got the energy of the sun inside you and all you want is a candlelight. That is what we have all the time.

The first thing to change is your thinking, your theology and your understanding based on the Word. We are bound by what we believe because faith is needed. What is faith? *Faith is the substance of God framed by His Word into spiritual and natural realities.* When you begin to exercise that faith is the substance of God, the second is the framing. So, how do we get the substance of God? From Jesus. Jesus is the author and finisher of our faith. Do you know that Jesus can be in us at different levels? There are different levels of the heavenly man, some are half-past-six, some are a quarter, some are three-quarters. So, there are different degrees.

In Ephesians 3:14-19, (in Paul's prayer), *“For this reason I bow my knees to the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, from whom the whole family in heaven and earth is named, that He would grant you, according to the riches of His glory, to be strengthened with might through*

*His Spirit in the inner man (your spiritual man), that Christ may dwell in your hearts through faith; that you, being rooted and grounded in love, may be able to comprehend with all the saints what is the width and length and depth and height, to know the love of Christ which passes knowledge; that you may be filled with all the fullness of God*". Can you see that he was praying for the Christians? He prayed for the Christians to have Jesus dwelling in them. They already had Jesus, but to have more of Jesus, more of Jesus.

How much more of Jesus? The strength of your inner man, how much your inner man can contain. That is what it means to grow. To grow is to be able to contain more and more of Jesus. We are all nothing without Jesus. We can do nothing without Jesus. Only Jesus is good within us. If we do anything or whatever things are good, it is because Jesus is in us. If we are separated from Jesus, we become evil. It is all of Jesus in us. Here is the thing, there are different degrees of Jesus in us.

If *Faith is the substance of God framed by His Word* then the more substance of God, the more you can frame. Just like the other definition in Hebrews 11:1, *Faith is the substance of things hoped for*, the more hope, the more material to form, correct? The law of proportion. The limit is subject to your original source. If you have got more of it, you can do more. The same way, like the more electricity, the more you can do things, the less you have you cannot. The more substance of God, the more you can do, the less substance of God, the less you can do. It is limited by the amount of substance that we need to increase in our lives, which is why meditation is important.

**Building blocks of Heavenly man's definition of Faith:-**

- The fullness of God's substance is Jesus. Jesus is the expression of God's substance into our reality. **Hebrews 1:3**
- "By faith we understand that the worlds were framed (katartizo) by the word (rhema) of God, so that the things which are seen were not made of things which are visible". **Hebrews 11:3**
- "While we do not look at the things which are seen, but at the things which are not seen. ...". **2Corinthians 4:18**

**Heavenly Man's definition of Faith:-**

- "Faith is the substance of God framed by His word into spiritual and natural realities".

Diagram 2

Now, the framing part is the second part, because you can have a lot of substance, but you do not know how to frame. You do not know how to bring into the framing part. Remember "framing"? You studied "*katartizo*" just now, which is to mend, to frame, to repair, to perfect, to complete, to restore. To frame is how do we convert the frame? Between the substance and the frame, you must be able to have the blueprint because if I say, "Can you draw a frame?",

you say, “What type of frame do you want? Square, pentagon, octagon”? Can you see? There are many types of things you can frame. What actually do you want to frame? A frame talks about construction and blueprint. Where do we get the blueprint? How do we get the blueprint? What is a blueprint?

So, I ask you this question to help you, which comes first? Your thoughts or your words? All agree, thoughts? Your thoughts come first, right? You need to know what to say. I mean we are not talking about somebody stepping on your toes, *arrgh!* Even then, it comes from deep inside you. Why is it sometimes, you know, if you are from Malaysia or wherever, and then somebody just steps on your toes, *alamak!* Malaysian influence. Even the words, we get from our culture. You see, our culture has influenced our words. So, there is something else going on before the words. That is what I am trying to show you. Not necessarily even a thought. Beyond the flow of thoughts is the influencer of thoughts. I call it the thought before the thought. I will give you the scripture for that, Hebrews 4:12. Hebrews 4:12, “*For the word of God (logos) is living (full of zoe) and powerful (full of energy), ...*”. So, the substance of God is full of life and full of energy, it is ready to create, “*... and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart*”. That is the thought before the thought. That is why you could analyse the thought before the thought because it has to do with the thought before the thought. Have you understood now what is the thought before the thought? You are thinking about the thought before the thought.

Now, when you think about the thought before the thought, what is the thought? *Haha*, you are lost in your thoughts. Or you thought so. You know the thought behind the thought, or the thought before the thought, is some part of your inner being, your inner being that is flowing forth. This word is in line with faith is the substance of God. It is so creative, full of energy, life, wanting to create, wanting to be framed. All you need is His Word. His Word is the architectural frame. His Word is the frame. His Word is equal to His Will. His Will is revealed in His Word. So, if you try to frame anything not in line with God’s Word, goodbye. Will not work. It has to be in line with His will.

What is His Will? His desire, His plan, His purpose, which is similar to things hoped for but here is a higher realm, the depth of what God’s desire / Will is. We pray, in the Lord’s prayer in Matthew 6:9-13, “*Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdom*

*come, Thy will be done in earth, as it is in heaven... ”.* The most important thing in life is to do God’s Will. The safest place in the whole planet earth is His Will. If you are not doing His Will, you are in danger. You can go to the safest place in the world and if you are not in His Will, you are in danger. You will either be killed by external circumstances or be killed by internal disharmony in your own being. To do God’s Will is the most important thing in life. Whether you enjoy His Will or do not enjoy His Will, it does not matter. Let the joy come later.

### *Choosing to suffer*

Do you think that Jesus Christ enjoyed going to the cross? He suffered, He died, but He saw the joy that would come after. Do you think that Paul enjoyed doing God’s Will? Yes, inner joy, outwardly a lot of crying. Do you realise that Paul cried a lot? He cried a lot. He said in Acts 20, that every day he was preaching with tears. Do you think that Paul cried when he was given thirty-nine stripes times five, beaten with rods three times? Why, you think Paul was laughing *uh*? Of course, sometimes in Acts 16 you see him singing, correct? However, he was doing God’s Will.

God’s Will is sometimes the cross, the cross you choose to take. That is why a lot of Christians do not dare to do God’s Will. I have seen some visions of a path, and this is like a spiritual allegory. A lot of people do not want to go through it because it is tough. It causes suffering. It will cause them to go through a lot of difficulties but those who go through it, on the other side, they get a better reward. It is important for us to choose God’s Will. Once you choose God’s Will and you are a bond servant and you are married to God’s Will, that seals it.

My life is pledged to do God’s Will, no matter what. Above my happiness, above my feelings, above everything, His Will comes first. It is important. Above money, above fame, above popularity, above whether you get applauses or jeers, above whether you get persecutions or pleasures, God’s Will comes first.

Thy will is Thy Word, correct? How do you know God’s Will? How do you discern God’s Will? The key is this, you must be able to perceive and receive. To perceive is to see with your heart. To receive is to receive. Sometimes you can see it in visions, dreams, inner voice, all those things are receiving His Will, which is why in the end it talks about your spiritual

eyes. Have you noticed that Jesus talked about the eyes a lot? He says if your eye is good, your whole body is full of light. If your eye is corrupted, your whole body is full of darkness. That is in the gospel of Matthew, in His Sermon on the Mount.

*Enter into fullness*

Then, have you noticed another thing? Heaven, which is the seven Spirits of God, Spirits of peace, love, glory, joy, power, life, wisdom, mercy. These are spiritual attributes that have their counterparts in your emotions, right? They strike more of your emotions or your spiritual emotions. You have already learned that you have got your spiritual emotions. The discerning of God's Will is based on your spiritual emotions, your understanding comes later. To enter into fullness of that, you need to be able to have peace, love, joy, starting with these three. Then the others will start to come. Love, joy, peace, all these are connected, and these are part of the conversion into the reality that God wants us to have.

The eyes. Well, look at the word "eyes" for a moment. Look at the gospel of Matthew as we come to the conclusion. The word "eyes". Let me do the singular first. Matthew 6:22-23, *"The lamp of the body is the eye. If therefore your eye is good, your whole body will be full of light. But if your eye is bad, your whole body will be full of darkness. If therefore the light that is in you is darkness, how great is that darkness"*! Interesting? The eye relates to light, correct? The eye produces light. What other things produce light? The Word. Psalm 119:105, *"Thy word is a lamp unto my feet, and a light unto my path"*.

So, we know that, *Faith is the substance of God framed by His Word*. Thy word is a light unto my path. This eye that He is talking about has to do with something about the Word. Has to, because the Word contains light, and life of course but there is another thing about light.

Turn to 1 John 1:6-7, *"If we say that we have fellowship with Him, and walk in darkness, we lie and do not practice the truth. But if we walk in the light as He is in the light, we have fellowship with one another..."*. Then in 1 John 2:9-11, *"He who says he is in the light, and hates his brother, is in darkness (he is talking about darkness again) until now. He who loves his brother abides in the light, and there is no cause for stumbling in him. But he who hates his brother is in darkness..."*. So, what is he talking about? Darkness and light, darkness and light. Love. Can you see love coming in? He wrote the epistle not just about love though.

You know why he wrote this? Look at 1 John 1:4, the reason why he wrote this epistle, “*And these things we write to you that your joy may be full*”. Can you see the word “joy” there?

Now, I bring all these to show that the seven Spirits of God are working to be part of the conversion process between the *logos* and the *rhema*. Without the love, without the peace, without the joy, without the power of God, without the life of God, without the wisdom of God (all these are framed by wisdom), without the mercy of God, when you speak, your words are not framing anything, because they are not in line with God’s Word.

Now, isn’t it true that when our God speaks, He contains love, peace, joy, life, power? Jesus says in John 6:63, “My words are life”. His words contain life and light. Life contains light. There is something there, that the conversion process from *logos* to *rhema* is this abundance of Jesus. Isn’t it true if you really contain Jesus, what is Jesus? The personification of love, the personification of the Word, the personification of life, the personification of peace (His name is Prince of Peace), the personification of power, the personification of glory, the personification of wisdom (we all receive the wisdom of God). Jesus contains all the seven Spirits of God. The key is in conversion (the factory), the seven Spirits of God.

So, between phase one (*Faith is the substance of God*) and the second phase (*framed by His Word*), for the framing process, you need the seven Spirits of God. How much you have will determine your ability to convert.

The eyes are to see, to perceive; to receive on your inside the Will and the plan of God. I found one thing, that vision is related to the emotion, just as wisdom is related to the intellect. You see, each frequency affects different parts of our soul. People who are able to see visions have tapped upon their inner emotions, but your emotions must be love, peace, joy, all those areas. If you are not touched, you cannot see visions much, which explains why a highly intellectual person and a rational person do not see visions. Then the people who are not so rational, all the time see visions, but you need both because one can see but cannot interpret, one can analyse but has nothing to analyse. So, you need both to develop your emotion and your intellect.

If you are over-developed in one, you know what happens? Go to the seaside where you can see a crab with one very big claw and one very small claw. You know, this type of crab can

never walk straight. Have you seen how it walks? Sideways. Then once in a while, you have got a left-handed crab, maybe representing the emotion that is not developed, or the intellect is like a tiny little hand, also not balanced, also walks sideways. The only way is for the two sides to be properly developed, then it can walk properly.

*Develop both emotion and intellect*

You need to develop both your emotion and your intellect, to tap on wisdom and to tap on vision. Wisdom is the ability, line upon line, precept upon precept. The other is to be able to get downloads of visions. That is important. I found one thing that the eyesight, even in the physical, you have got what I call a parallel resonance, just like the eyes are important. Eyes see pictures, I have noticed that.

One of the things you will notice in the book of Genesis and you look into the life of Isaac, in Genesis 27:1, *“Now it came to pass, when Isaac was old and his eyes were so dim that he could not see...”*. If you look in the verse before that, in Genesis 26:35, Esau married unbelievers, idol worshippers, *“And they were a grief of mind to Isaac and Rebekah”*. A grief of mind to Isaac. So, when sadness is always in your eyes, the light of your eyes goes out. That is why when a person has joy with a lot of life and love, there is a sparkle in the eyes. In Job 17:7, a statement by Job says, *“My eye has also grown dim because of sorrow...”*.

So poor eyesight, sometimes genetic of course, so much sorrow in your parents, so much sadness in this life and all those things, the eyes slowly grow dim. You might not realise it because some of the sorrows are so deep, you do not feel them, they are buried so deeply. Sorrow is part of the curse. Any part of the curse will always end up with some physical ailment. In the end, the curse will affect your emotions and your soul, then will affect your physical body. If you want healing in your eyes, I mean there can be gradual healing, besides instant healing that God can give, get back your joy. Do not worry so much. Be a happy person. Do not worry. Jesus says, *“Worry not, worry not”*. The more you worry, you are affecting your eyes. Get back into the Word. I give you a few scriptures. Psalm 19, *The Word of God enlightens your eyes*. I have got many scriptures on the eyes, it is all related to joy, or rather the lack of joy.

How is your thinking? How happy are your thoughts? Or how sad are your thoughts? What is the thought behind your thought? Is it a sad one or a happy one? It is important, and I am not

just talking about happiness of course. I am talking about the need to have love, joy peace. Peace, love, joy, the beginning of the seven Spirits of God working. That is also one of the reasons why people cannot convert from *logos* to *rhema*, to frame anything, because their words contain too much sorrow.

Sorrow is a curse. We have lived in a fallen world for so long, that it is normal. Just like people who lived in Sodom and Gomorrah, that was normal for them but that was not normal. That was an abomination. There are lots of things that are not right in this world that we accept as normal. Go back and look at the Bible.

So, remember, the heavenly man's perspective is different from the spiritual man's perspective. Remember, you are the factory, you are the speaker of God's Word. If your factory is defective, your goods are defective. How do we check the help of your factory? By checking whether the seven Spirits of God are full in you. The more the seven Spirits of God are in fullness in you and functioning, then the creative process just flows easily. Jesus has the whole full seven Spirits without measure, thus He can do the great things of God without measure.

## Chapter 27...

### New Jerusalem Glory

The very interesting thing about this move of God is that vessels have come and gone, and new vessels have continued. We saw how the revelations started in this move, in 2012 but the revelations have been consistent. A prophet comes, a prophet goes. Then a new prophet comes, new revelations, new signs and wonders, new visions. More people are seeing visions and having revelations today. All these revelations that they have, you know one thing, they have been very consistent. That tells you they come from a higher source, that tells you they are not from humans and the tsunami revelation was revealed previously. Then we had a new Seven Thunders prophet and he saw more details of the same event.

If you look at all the downloads that we have had so far, they have been very, very consistent. Do not make this mistake that many people always make. They assume that what we reveal is 100%, then when some Tom, Dick or Harry sees a bit here and a bit there, he thinks he has got something that we have never seen.

God had already prepared this move from 2006 when He took me to heaven. He showed me about some things about heaven. What I wrote in the book about heaven and what I shared about heaven so far is only about 5-10%, because it is not time to share about the other parts. So, that is very important, to have the right attitude as we get into all these areas. Silence does not mean that we do not know. It just means that it is not time to talk about those things yet. There is a time and a place for everything.

In Diagram 1 for the heavenly man, now, this diagram for the carnal man that shows the carnal man is dominated by the world. He always looks at things from the world's perspective. Unfortunately, there are a lot of Christians there too. Remember, Paul scolded the Corinthians, he said these guys were carnal because they were still playing politics. Remember, they had different groups. Some said, "*We are of Cephas; we are of Apollos.*" Another group said, "*We are neither here nor there and we are of Paul*". Then another group said, "*We do not want to join you all, we are with Jesus*", implying that the other 3 groups were not with Jesus. So, you think about silliness and all those things. One day when we all

get to heaven, you will realise how silly the little things were that we went through, or that we thought were giants. It is just silly.

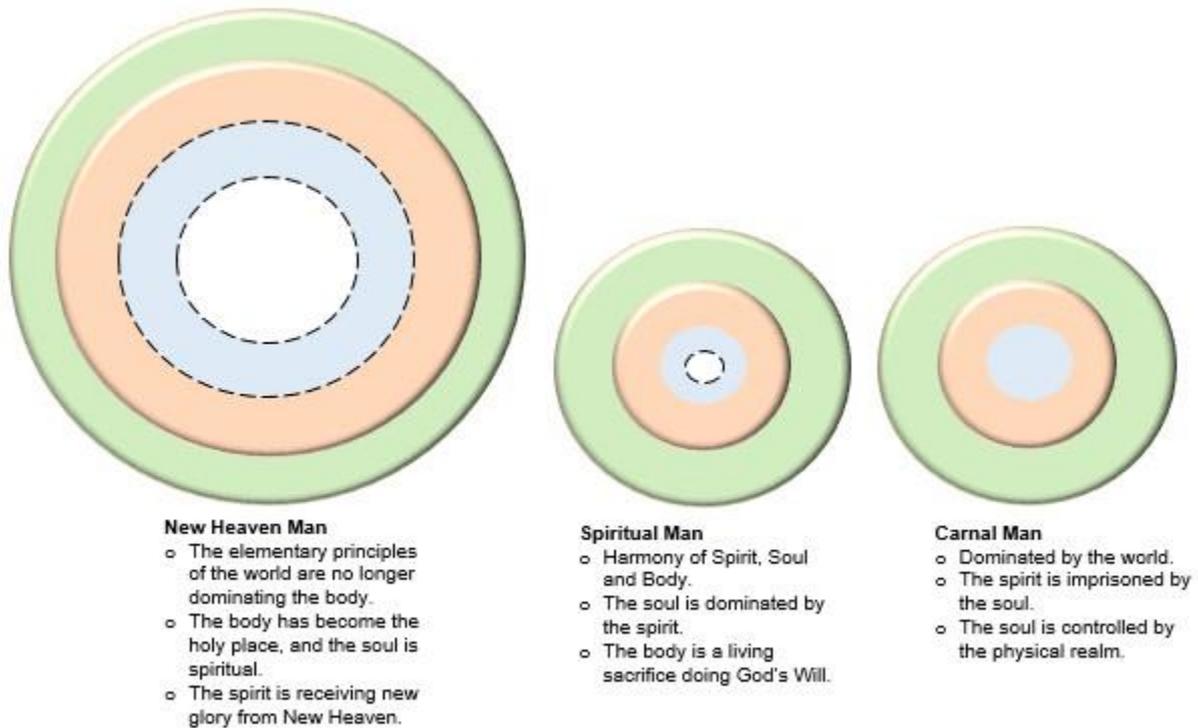


Diagram 1

As long as you are still worldly, you are carnal. Sorry. Of course, we apologise for scolding you, we apologise for telling you all these things, but you are carnal. So repent, because you are dominated by the world. If somebody does not tell you, you might never change, because all the churches that you go to say that it is all right to have success in the world, and you are doing well in the world. No, it is not all right. It is okay to do well in the world, which you will, based on Matthew 6:33. When you seek first the kingdom of God, God will bless you and you will do well, you will succeed in this life, but the spiritual man is what God came to produce.

When a king dies, a president dies, and a homeless man dies, they all go to the same place. They all go to the waiting room. I call that the spiritual world. All your worldly things of title, power and position are nothing. You are as good as the homeless man. It is only what you do for the Lord, in the Lord, and the spiritual things that are worth it. Remember 1 Corinthians 3? Some people are saved but will receive no rewards. You say, “*Wah*, at least they are saved”. *Hey*, actually being saved is not just a ticket to heaven. You do not actually need a ticket to heaven.

*Is in your DNA to know the Lord*

You are supposed to have known the Lord. It is in your DNA. You were chosen before you chose Him, He chose you before the foundation of the world. Do you know where the ticket is? It is not in your hand, it is stamped into your DNA. You belong to Jesus and that it is given to you. It is supposed to be your natural state of you coming to this earth and going back but if 1 Corinthians 3 takes place and you go back without any rewards, it is like your whole life on earth was wasted. You make no difference to coming here.

We all come here for something. We come here to grow and improve in a certain manner that we could not improve if we were to remain in the spiritual world. Of course, bearing in mind the doctrine of pre-existence. We pre-existed before we came. So, it is as if all your time spent on earth was wasted. It is like you are coming makes no difference at all! Please, I beg of you, do something that earns a reward. Rewards are based on works energised by the Holy Spirit of course, not by our own strength. The source of strength to do the works comes from God of course. I am not talking about works of our own strength, but by the Holy Spirit and by the Will of God. Yet our will is involved, our obedience is involved, to do the right thing. So, those who do not do it have zero rewards. Salvation is based on grace, but rewards are based on works. You have that in 2 Corinthians 5 and 1 Corinthians 3. So, let us all go back to heaven with rewards. Do not waste your time on earth and then this whole trip here (which is a perilous trip), is of no consequence.

Another question I get asked is; How will people forget all the things that they have done and all the things that God has given? Painful memories and all those things. I give them a glimpse of what it is like. I said, "Remember the things you did when you were between 1 and 5 years old"? Can you remember? I have got no memory. I can remember a little bit. I was very young, and my elder sister took me to the library and I was always reading books. You know, the little things you did when you were young.

When you graduate from this earth and you are looking from heaven at what had happened back here, you know why it is not painful, because all the pain has been removed. The question was; "Can we still remember? After all, it was painful". God removes them, but we will remember the incident. How do you remember without pain? Okay, I will tell you what, because once you go there, you look at your whole life on earth, even if you live to be one hundred or one hundred and twenty years old, your whole life on earth was like, you look

back and you will be laughing because you will say, “I was a toddler”. Have you ever felt any agony because you knocked away the marble of a playmate when you were 5 years old? Or you kicked the marble, or you did something, or you pinched the person? You might remember it and you will be laughing at your own mistakes. You will laugh at your own silliness, correct?

This whole planet, even if you live as a king, or you live as a president, or you live as a homeless man, when you go to heaven and you look back at this life, it is like we were all toddlers. That is why it is no more painful. Can you imagine, this life compared to eternity? It is really like we were all toddlers. Even the worst thing, so big to us, earth-shaking news, should be on the headlines of every newspaper of the whole planet. It is all like we were all toddlers playing marbles. *Ya, ya*, somebody cracked somebody’s marbles, or somebody knocked off somebody’s marbles, or somebody accidentally cut the other guy, or somebody purposely kicked the other guy because he was angry when they were playing marbles. That is how this life will seem like.

So, you can see that I give you a sense of how you can look back at this life without regret and remember it, because we were only kids here. This life, when you look back from that side, the heavenly side, we were just kids. Then you will be laughing; “*Hey*, remember that time when we talked to that guy”? Maybe one murderer is talking to the victim, “Remember when I killed you? *Ho, ho, ho*. Remember I killed you with a hammer? *Ho, ho, ho*”. They will remember that incident. All the pains are removed, because it is all “toddlers”, all kindergarten stuff.

So, the carnal man is no good. In the spiritual man diagram in Diagram 1, this is what Watchman Nee was aiming for, minus the little New Jerusalem glory that I put inside, is a life dominated by the spirit. For Watchman Nee, he differentiated between the spirit man and the soul man. He used the word “carnal” man as well, but he used the word “soul” man (soulish man) and he was trying to differentiate between the two. He was trying to emphasise on the spiritual man. Incidentally Watchman Nee wrote his book when he was in his early twenties. Do not underestimate the power of youth. I think he was only about twenty-one or twenty-two years old, when he wrote the book, *The Spiritual Man*. It shows his intellectual capacity. When it is your destiny, it is just your destiny, the abilities are there, given to you, stamped into your DNA. So, we all know that is what we are supposed to be.

Then in the heavenly man diagram in Diagram 1 shows this is our ultimate goal. This one is the revelation that comes in this end time. This one is Romans 8 (the manifest sons of God) and Hebrews 2 (Jesus, the Captain of the sons of glory). This one is the perfect church, not just the spiritual man. What is the difference between the spiritual man and the heavenly man, in your understanding? Now, notice the heavenly man includes the spiritual man. If you are heavenly, it implies you are already spiritual, but you could be spiritual without being heavenly. Can you see the difference? Because the heavenly man has the soul functioning like the spirit and the body is already glorified. That is why I put these little broken lines into the diagram. The glory of God has now come into the physical body. These are the manifest sons of God.

### *The manifest sons of God*

Do you know how many manifest sons of God there are at the moment, at this time? The first batch that went to Pergamos on the 11 to 14 January 2016. There was an impartation to the manifest sons of God. There was the combination of the spirit beings on the earth and they rose up and said, “Have the sons of glory come forth”? The beginning of it has come forth but we are supposed to make it 500. We are supposed to make it 500 and the enemy is fighting tooth and nail because he is very, very afraid. Only the four from the 2nd generation, plus myself and we are supposed to spread it forth, but everyone has been attacked by distractions here and there because the enemy does not want the transfiguration anointing to be passed on. It has to be imparted. In this transfiguration glory something happens in your DNA and it is supposed to be imparted. The enemy is afraid of the manifest sons of glory, something that is in the Bible all the time, but it has only in this end time begun to be revealed.

Put it this way, it has to start somewhere, correct? Sometimes I tell people that I am the voice that cries at midnight, I am the man that the Bible prophesied, who comes from the east. This being in the Bible tells you something else that I am also the person that has been predestined from long ago to be seated at the right hand of Jesus. You can look at all the seven billion people on the planet right now, or all the one, two, three billion Christians, not a single man of God throughout two thousand years of Christianity would dare to say that. You know why, if he says that without God’s sanction, he will be struck down straightaway, but I know that has been where I am, and I will tell you that it is not a position of, I try to soften it to say that it is not a high and mighty kind of thing. The greatest among you must be the servant of all.

So, I am not talking about it in the sense of dominance but trying to show that it is from a position of humility.

Put it this way, you know from the Bible that there is such a position, correct? Remember the request of James and John, they wanted to sit, one on His right hand and the other on His left? Remember what was Jesus' answered? Jesus did not say that there is no such position. Jesus said that this has been determined by the Father, which means that none of them was there and use your logic for a moment. If you cannot hear the Spirit, use your logic, and this is Paul reasoning with you. Wouldn't it be most likely that such a person will appear only towards the end time to prepare for the rapture? Wouldn't it be the most logical place to bring the person? Can you see the logic of it? However, as always, it is not always the person you like, although I think I am quite a likeable person. Somebody has to fill that vacancy, correct? If it is not me, it might be Tan Ah Ter or Sarabat Singh or some funny name like Habakkuk Taohu. It has to be a human being, correct? That human being must be an apostle. It is from the apostles and he must have that revelation. Another logic al thinking is, whoever that person is, must reveal all the mysteries of God, if he is that close to God. So, like Paul, I can take myself out of that picture and put here. Vacancy equals these are the qualifications. Once I have listed out all the qualifications, you will find a lot of people are disqualified and it is not so easy to get qualified, but it is important as we come to this revelation of the heavenly man, that we need to understand.

I know that my life has a chronology. I know when my life will end. Isn't it funny that it happens that this is the only guy in the Bible, because Enoch and Elijah are going to come back and then die, whereas this guy is not going to die? Is he different? Yes, and I have said in the audio recording, because there was one of the questions that said, "So, you are one of those who are not going to die"? You know what my answer was? I said, "Ya, I am the guinea pig". I put it this way because if it happens to me means it can happen to you. Can you understand that now? Somebody must absorb whatever thing first, and if it works, then must pass it down. If it is not me, it has to be Tan Ah Ter, Sarabat Singh or Habakkuk Taohu, correct? It just has to be somebody.

*Jesus appeared to me*

There is a reason. There is always the first to receive. The first to receive and understand gets into that and, you know, my life has exactly been ten years of the Word, ten years of the

Spirit. At the beginning of the ten years of Spirit, Jesus appeared to me in 1986. Then ten years of the Blood where it was supposed to be 1996. I missed that one because at that time I did not realise that I had a ten-year by ten-year timeline. Then when I realised that my life was ten years, ten years, ten years, etcetera, I was ready for 2006. I did not know what was going to happen in 2006. There was something new. I knew I had moved from Word to Spirit to Blood and then it was a decade of Glory. We moved out of the decade of Glory from 2006 to 2016. Then we entered into the beginning of the decade of Power in 2017 (because it coincides, these six to six kinds of thing to the decade of Power). Look at the timing. It was only in 2016 that the Lord said now I can preach the message worldwide, now I can go and do crusades, but I am concentrating on church planting first. Then when I start going out to accept invitations and do healing services, you can see the beginning of the decade of Power. It is exactly ten years and ten years. It is just like Moses' life of forty years then forty years then forty years. Then King David also reigned for forty years.

You see, when a person is a calendar and an icon, there is something strange about his life. "Peculiar" is the word, right? It is not so nice a word. *Peculiar* is a song composed by David Ingles. Actually, that is in the Old King James translation but definitely it has to be different. Now, what is the difference between the heavenly man and the spiritual man? I need to touch on the *New Jerusalem* teachings because I cannot cover it in this topic. It is not to be covered under *The Spiritual Man II* teachings. Remember, the title of this book: *The Spiritual Man Book II*. Now, we are going to move into something further. *The Spiritual Man Book II* ends with the maximum, the spiritual man looking into the heavenly man. The next teaching is called the *New Jerusalem*, which completes the *Heavenly Man*.

I summarise it for you, it is linked to the Trinity. Remember John 17 when Jesus says, "*I in them, and You in Me*"? There is some sort of Trinity oneness coming into us. Like Jesus said, "If you see Me, you see the Father". We will be able to say, "If you see Me, you see Jesus". You see, sometimes I use the title for myself, that I am the personification of Christ. Some people say, "Aren't we all the personification of Christ"?

#### *The first guinea pig*

Here is the understanding, you need a guinea pig first. Do not forget about the guinea pig story. Let us call it the parable of the guinea pig. In the parable of the guinea pig, a guinea pig must sacrifice its life first and the guinea pig must come from the created universe, not the

uncreated universe. I mean Jesus is uncreated, of course He can be anything He wants but a created being coming out, that is the guinea pig we want. So, we need guinea pigs to volunteer themselves, but the guinea pigs need to qualify themselves also because a lot of people desire but they do not pay the price. They do not have enough of the Word, do not have enough fasting, do not have enough praying in the Spirit.

Look at what the guinea pig has to do to be qualified. The guinea pig fasts forty days every year, since the year of 1976. That is a lot of forty-day fasts. Even if you fast for the next ten years, three times a year, you are only just catching up. Then the guinea pig has read the whole Bible so many times that the guinea pig has lost count, and this Bible is actually now inside of him. I could close my eyes and read the Bible. This guinea pig, long ago, prayed in the Spirit like no other person. Who else has prayed forty-eight hours in tongues, seventy-two hours in tongues, or spent a whole week of prayer in tongues? Nobody has pushed the boundaries, correct? So, some guinea pig has to push the boundaries. God is a fair God. Predestination might be there, but the guinea pig on earth must push the boundaries. Although some of you say, “Pastor, please *lah*, not guinea pigs. A lot of guinea pigs have died, drowned, been squashed and eaten by owls”. All right, “sheep”, but I have got to use “guinea pigs” because you all know that guinea pigs are used in experiments. Now, the heavenly man does not need to eat and sleep. Amen. Some of us will reach that stage earlier but all of us will reach that stage on 19 September 2060. This is the day that I am translated.

Now you know why the guinea pig has to go first? Because when the experiment is finished on the guinea pig, now the medicine that has been pumped into the guinea pig and the guinea pig is sometimes being pushed to the extreme, half dead sometimes, then it gets up again, because all the things that God is infusing, and the DNA of the guinea pig is reacting, then finally it works, extract the vaccine from the guinea pig, then duplicate it and spread it to everyone. Can you see what is happening? At the time when I am translated, all that the guinea pig has absorbed into the body is extracted as a vaccine, of some impartation, spread out and pass on to all the glorious Church but for the guinea pig, it must work first. So, if it does not work and it is delayed, everything is delayed. Can you see the purpose? It is all based on the parable of the guinea pig.

So, the next time you hear me calling myself, “I am the personification of Christ”, remember, it is all in the context of the parable of the guinea pig. It is not told in order to have dominance. I do not need to claim authority over people. I can sit down and argue and reason with you at the human level or I can sit down and argue and reason with you from the Bible perspective if you are willing to listen. I have never in my life needed to use my position or authority to do anything.

You see, how a person brings up his own children is the same way you will bring up the church. My children were brought up by reasoning. When they were young, of course they had their own discipline but the day they can start thinking, they know daddy always reasons. I told them, “If I tell you to do something and you can find a better reason than what I am telling you, your way will be the way”. Which is what my son did, because I wanted all my children to go to university as a normal thing and parents love this kind of thing when I keep reminding everyone. “Pastor, remind them to study hard”. Okay, I have done it for you. Those of you who are young, university should be just like high school, just go through it as part of your training. Then my son (when he was at his first year at university) said, “I want to be a sportsman. If I have finished university, by the time I come out, I might be twenty-five years old and in sports, that is too old”. This is correct. In fact, in sports, thirty is already considered retirement age. So, he said, “To excel, I must go in now”. In Australia, you can defer university, you have got your credits, you leave it, at any time you can still go back and study. So, I said, “Fine, you have my full support”. Because he reasoned a good reason that beat my reasoning. I have never needed to tell my children, “Listen, because I am your father”. I never did that. As they grew up, although there was respect, I treated them as adults and they could reason with me. If their reasoning is good and they can see something that I cannot see, then that is the way they are.

The same way, in the church, in anything, we always use persuasion and reasoning. You know, sometimes in a crisis, people are frightened of me. You know why, they say, “Do not let him talk. If he talks, he will persuade us”, which is a strange thing. I am supposed to be persuaded, you know. If you are wrong or you are right, you should have a reason for being wrong or right, correct? You just have to see clearly. It is important that we never throw our weight around, we never throw our authority around. We sit at a round table where everyone is equal. I would say, “Okay, what do you have to say”? Let the evidence speak. That is a fair system.

In time to come, you will appreciate what I am saying right now. You have seen how the glory of God is revealed from 2006 to 2016. You have seen it. It has ended with the transfiguration, although in secret, only five witnesses but this beginning of glory (decade of Power) will end in 2026/2027 which is coming to the war years. By that time there will be so many miracles, so many signs and wonders, that people will say, “*Wah*”! By that time one look from me is like so authoritative, that people will be so scared, but I will never use a position of authority. I will still come down to reason and persuasion and logic. That is why God appointed this guinea pig because this guinea pig refuses to use the weapons of our warfare against the sheep. The weapons of our warfare are not to be used against the sheep, they are to be used against the enemy, not the sheep.

When I confront the enemy, the devil, you know why sometimes I declare (like Paul) that “I am an apostle of God, I am the right hand of God”? It is not for human ears, it is for demons who are surrounding people’s hearts and minds. Do not forget, I have open vision and I can see some things. Sometimes I speak because I see forces of darkness and I say, “This is who I am, stay where you are”! People who cannot see the spiritual realm do not know who I am speaking to. The weapons of our warfare are used against the enemy, but with the sheep, I come down to their level. We all say “*mehhhh*”, let us reason together. I do not even call myself the Red Indian Chief sheep, because it must be by reasoning.

So now you know that I have seventeen principles of leadership, right? The reason I came out with that is this: For instance, if let us say I am gone, and then Jehudah takes my place, he will have his own style. Everyone has their own style and you will always want to know what this leader’s style is. I am so detailed that I say if you want to know my style, this is my style. I put it down in point form. In those seventeen points on leadership, you can predict how I will react in any crisis, in any challenge, in any situation, and I will always react based on those points. It is very predictable. Then I also judge every other leader by those points. Like when we have this episode: several times before the blow-up on September 23, 2013, before that, there were many corrections that I had to do on some of the things that were happening in prayer walks, here and there. I wrote an email and I said, “Whatever is happening has violated at least five of my seventeen points”. Any other leader I would have removed already, but my tolerance was still there. Can you see that I am a predictable leader? If you want to know how I would react, read those points. I will also measure you based on those same points. If I promote one leader and not the other leader, you can tell, it is based on those

points. It will always be based on those points. I will never make a decision outside of those points and those are interesting points, seventeen points on how I would react in every situation, leadership principles.

You see the word “heaven” in the diagram, it implies that you have got some sort of connection in heaven, correct? There are actually many points. I am adding the sixth point. The sixth point is that the heavenly man has reconnected 100% with his pre-existent self, that is the part that is only reserved for this end time. You will regain all your memories, not when you die. You already saw the five points, like you are already in heaven and part of heaven is, you will recall all the memories.

We know that by 19 September 2060, the whole church will reach the heavenly man level. Between now and that time, some people will progress faster than others. Some people will reach that level even before that. I pray that the 12, the 30 and the 500 will all reach that level before that because when you reach that level, the devil cannot come near. He is hell, you are heaven, the two cannot exist in the same continuity; one will push the other aside. At that stage, between now and then, many of you will be recovering. In the *Predestination* series and then the *New Jerusalem* series, it will start triggering your DNA. You know why I teach certain messages, it is not just for intellectual knowledge because the time for truth has come and when it is taught, it will create a new outpouring in that area, or a new river that flows.

*Every revival is based on revelation*

Remember that the baptism in the Spirit was only taught after Azusa Street and not before that. Then it created this outpouring because behind every move must be a doctrine. It is the Word that prepares the way for the Spirit and remember, before Martin Luther came out with justification by faith, the church had lost all of the doctrines. They did not even know the way of salvation. Then Martin Luther came back with the just shall live by faith. They rediscovered the truth and that truth became so well known, that everyone who knew accepted Christ. Simple. That is why a lot of people accepted Christ. The truth that was fought for in Martin Luther’s time and opposed became common knowledge and he made it easy to bring people to Christ.

Every revival is based on revelation and the Word of God. So, now you know why I cannot cover all of it. It needs a new series, and so this ending of it will lead to the series on *New*

*Jerusalem* (which will cover part of it) and the other series which will be *Predestination* (where I talk about principles, but on Biblical basis, of pre-existence and all that). Then it is the right time to trigger the DNA for that.

When you look at the spiritual man and the heavenly man, the spiritual man basically still has what we call, our DNA being a double helix DNA. The double helix DNA basically has the joints that are there and is based on four chemical structures which are A, C, G and T, and they create all of the DNA, strands of DNA. You all know the double helix DNA? So, the spiritual man still has the double helix DNA.

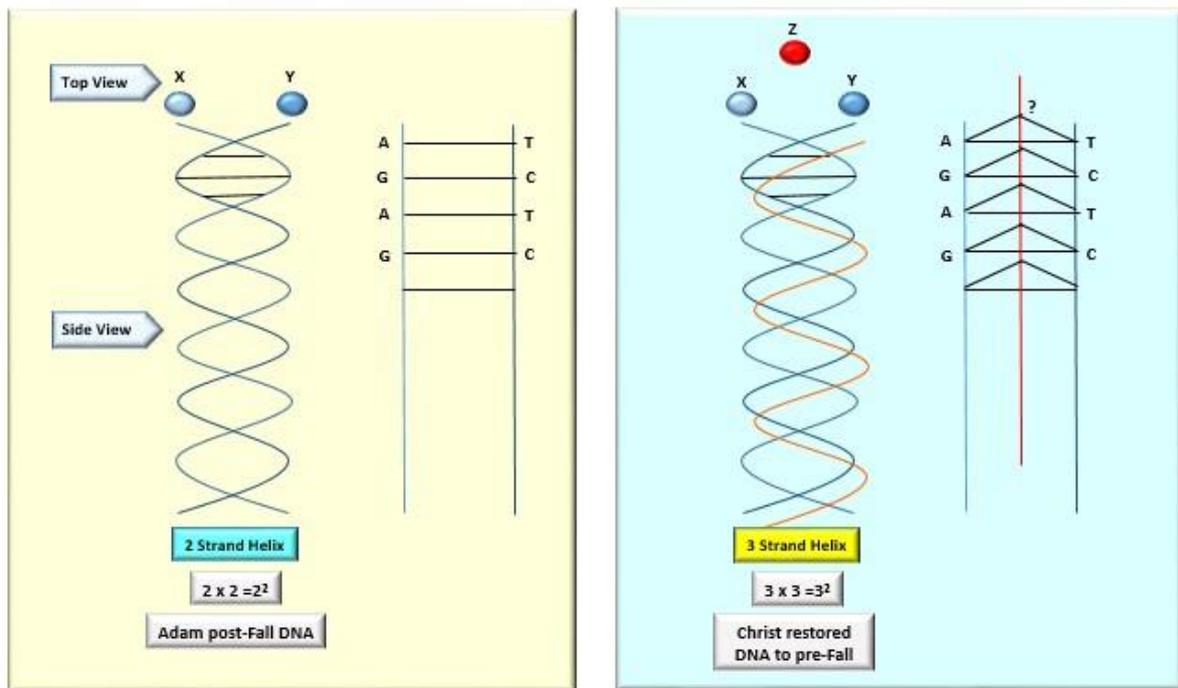


Diagram 2

So, how is Christ's DNA added into us? Okay, there is another layer of DNA. You see, the five of us who received the transfiguration anointing have a layer of DNA imparted and it is growing. It is at the fundamental DNA level that is triggered. There is a third strand of DNA, which means that there is one strand, another strand, and then another strand that is still in it. Now, it looks difficult from the side profile, so I have drawn it from the top profile. Let us say the dot for the top view of the double helix diagram will be two dots. This is because you see it from the top and the two dots just curve in. It is twisted, that is why you see the double helix. So, you see two dots from the top view and the dots are made by both strands. If there are three strands, you will see three dots, right from the top, and see how the three dots curve in. So, what happens is the three curved in? You see the two dots, basically when you

straighten it out, the two strands are like a twisted ladder. It is a twisted thing, but it is joined together and then there are so many joints that are there.

Now, if there are three, that means they are like in the shape of a triangle, because they need to contact each other. That is how the structure is. From the top, it is like a triangle. Then you twist the triangle, you still see the double helix, except it has a third dimension added to it. It is a three-dimensional thing. Here you have got just X and Y but in the next diagram you have got X, Y and Z. You have got three dimensions, and then you twist it after it is joined, which means that it needs a certain joining that is there.

Then you might wonder: Are there only four chemical signatures or joints which are A, C, G and T? There are actually more. To me, it is based on the Law of the Squares. Here, there are two, so two squares [  $2^2$  ] equals four. Then because there are three strands, for it to join with all the number of combinations, it actually needs three squares [  $3^2$  ], which is three times three, which is nine. So, you have the number nine.

Therefore, you would have, like A, C, G and T, those are short forms for chemical names (long names), they are the first alphabets of some of the chemicals. So, here you have another type of chemicals that are added, that your body absorbs, and that which we originally possessed. Adam's DNA was different from the Adam's DNA after the fall. Pre-fall and post-fall, definitely different. Something was lost.

We know because in one of the downloads, long, long ago, we met with the twenty-four elders and the twenty-four elders are connected to the twenty-four spirit beings in charge of the twenty-four energies. It takes twenty-four energies to create this whole Universe, that is why the twenty-four elders are there. They look like colours, the range of rainbow colours, including the various degrees of white and various degrees of black (it looks black to us because it is beyond our colours and ability to see). To those with open vision, they also see them like colours. Then the download was given to us that not all the energies could be absorbed in our normal body now, because if all of their energies are absorbed, our body will right now become semi-transparent-like, of a higher type of body, not so opaque and rough as in this fallen state. Adam did lose some DNA energy because the third strand was lost. Now the third strand is added back to fulfil what Christ has done for us. You all know the legal basis. Jesus did it for us. Jesus paid the legal price, now we inherit the blessings.

Remember the words “heirs” and “joint heirs”? The word “heirs” implies an inheritance. What did we inherit back? We inherited something that belonged to Adam. Jesus is the last Adam and the second Man. Jesus could restore that and bring it forth to us. Jesus paid the legal price for that and the question is not so much whether we are going to be restored, the question is “when”. Check 1 Corinthians 15.

*Jesus paid the price to restore us*

The third strand is that which was originally with Adam. Jesus paid the price to restore us and He has to bring it back. So, the question is not whether He will restore us, the question is “when” he will restore us. Based on 1 Corinthians 15, we always assume that the restoration takes place in the twinkling of an eye when Jesus comes, and we get a new body. Then we are changed and transformed but then we ask the question: If that is that, then what is Romans 8, the sons of glory that creation is waiting for? What is the planet earth waiting for? It is waiting for the restoration to its former state before the fall, correct?

We now know that the DNA of Adam was restored by Christ. Now, we bring it into the dimension where we must reach that level. Now we know that based on Romans 8, it has to take place in the Church Age, but since the Church Age has been going on for nearly two thousand years, it has not happened yet, then it must come in this present age. You notice that, even though it is nearly two thousand years, it has only been called the last days. It has been a long “last days”, nearly two thousand years long. So now, we can answer some of these questions.

Why in Romans 8, the Spirit is giving life to the body, which is *zoe* life? Why in Acts 2 when the Holy Spirit fell down, it didn't say fell on their spirit, it came on their flesh? Any Bible scholar will tell you, if you check the Greek word, flesh refers to the physical body. Yet we are quickened in our spirit with the gifts and in our soul with wisdom. What is the Holy Spirit doing to the body? The Holy Spirit has always wanted to come and regenerate the body. We need to receive that revelation so that faith can work and then it can be changed. So, the restoration is this third strand of DNA, it is like a triangle and it needs nine chemical components. That is why the body is changing.

Like now I do not need as much sleep. I have only what I call a sit-down meditative sleep, which means I meditate and then I close my eyes for a while, in a sitting position, then get up

one hour later. Yes, sometimes I never sleep at night and I am as fresh as the morning dew. In fact, I probably look younger than 11 January 2016. I would say that I have reversed it since that time and I find that I still love duck rice, so the appetite is still there but I do not need as much food, I do not need as much sleep. Out of my habit, I still take vitamins and all those things, but I could sense that I need less and less of those things as the body changes. So, there is a chemical change that is there. I told you that I am a guinea pig. *Eh*, now I have got four little guinea pigs. Jehudah probably has imparted it to his wife, Ishani. A lot have received that also in the Singapore Church. That is why I also talk about the holiness of God because that is also important and necessary.

So, notice the triangle of XYZ? It is basically, if I were to draw it in a three-dimensional way, and the bottom would have to be synchronised, it is a solid triangle, so you would have all the ladder connections there and, on that side, and the other side which you cannot see. Then it is twisted again to be a three-dimensional double helix, with one extra angle. That is the DNA that is supposed to be there. Now, that is the Adamic DNA that God wants to do and the number nine is important.

In the Bible where it talks about the altars, when they sprinkled the blood, why seven times? Then Balaam built seven altars and why the number seven comes out so often. The body actually has twelve altars. It is true that our body has twelve altars or twelve things to dedicate to God. It is divided into seven plus five. I know what the seven are and what the five.

Do you know what sub-points are? It is like points one, two, three, four. Then under point one, you have got 1(a), 1(b), 1(c), 1(d). Then under point two, you have got 2(a), 2(b), 2(c), 2(d). Then under point three, you have got 3(a), 3(b), 3(c), 3(d). For example, we understand the word “heart” includes the soul and the spirit. If you have got a point called the spirit and the soul, it is actually a sub-set of the heart.

You see, when you look into a doctrine, you must be precise. Doctrine is like Physics. Theology is like Physics, very precise; like Math, you cannot go wrong; like Accountancy, you must balance both sides of the books. If you are missing ten cents (like anyone who does accounts), you say, “*Eh*, where did I miss the ten cents”? You have got to go back three, four places and you say, “*Ah*, I forgot to type in the 10 cents somewhere”. Or something could be

eighty cents and you typed ninety cents. You have got to trace back where you are missing it because it must be exactly balanced. If it does not balance, it is your mistake.

However, here is the answer. Do you remember the seven Spirits of God? The seven Spirits of God are to be absorbed into our body which has twelve gates, and these are how they function. I will go back to the DNA afterwards to show how it relates. The seven Spirits of God has peace, love, glory or joy, power, life, wisdom and mercy. These are the seven Spirits. The seven Spirits represent the seven heavens. Incidentally, that is why I teach on *New Jerusalem*.

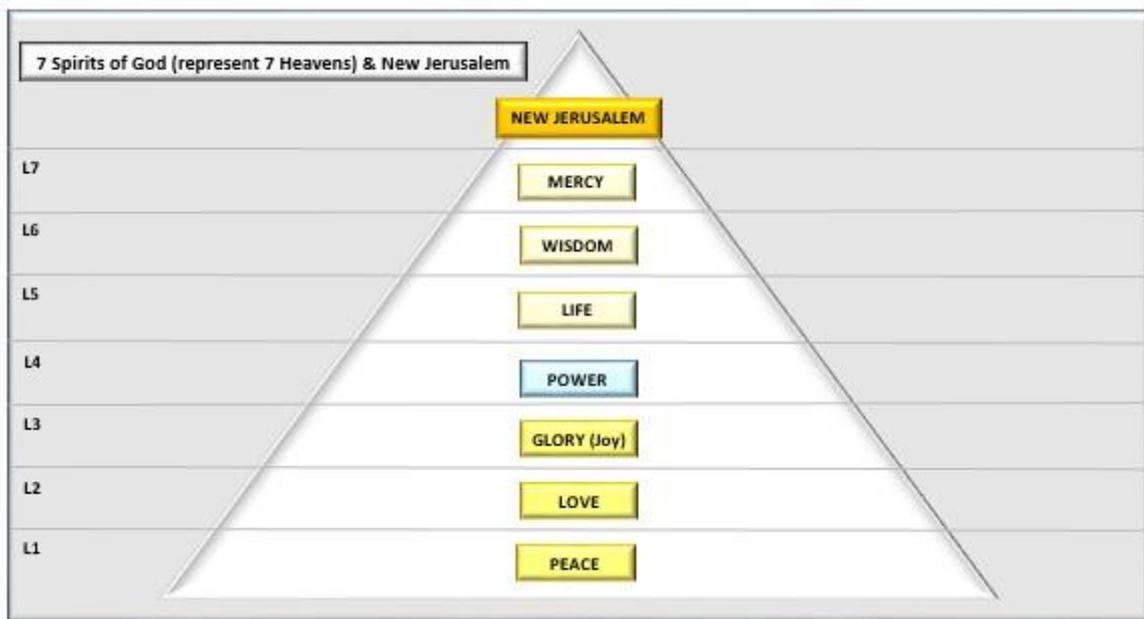


Diagram 3

Someone sent me an email who shared with me that, “*Oh*, I have got this vision: I went to New Jerusalem, and there is this room with spare parts”. Long ago, I talked about a spare parts room, human spare parts and all that. Then the angel told him that all the things in this room must be emptied. The revelation is correct: spare parts, all the things that God has created. Spare parts are for instant healing, some of them are for instant miracles, some of them are for creative miracles. All the things were created and reserved for this revival for this end time. So, that part of the revelation is correct but there is another part of the revelation which is not correct. I said, “That spare parts room is not in New Jerusalem; it is in our present heaven”. By definition, New Jerusalem is complete. If you have a spare parts room, then it shows it is incomplete. By pure logic, you could reason yourself out and see that the logic of it is wrong. So, I said, “That part is an addition”.

Now, the thing about seeing visions is this: Your sub-conscious mind can interpret even when you never want to interpret. How do you know that the impression that you have of that place is correct? Because your sub-conscious mind does not tell you what it is. How well your sub-conscious mind is going to work and instantly know depends on how much Word you have, how much training you have in the Word. Because of so much training in the Word, when I look at something, I can say, “This is not that, this is not that, and this is not that”.

The other thing is this: I know of everyone who can go to New Jerusalem. Just because I talk about New Jerusalem, everybody wants to claim that they have been there. I will know if they have been there or not. In one of the interesting downloads that Jehudah had is this, and I have confirmed with him that it is true. He said, “Jesus is the door to New Jerusalem”. He saw that I was the doorkeeper, which means I know every one of us. You know, the cartoon: the pearly gates, when you go to heaven, who do you see there? St Peter, right? Because of Matthew 16. It is not actually true, but everyone knows that St Peter is always at the pearly gates. Now if there are twelve gates, how does he divide himself?

#### *The seven heavens*

The doorway to New Jerusalem is now a dimensional door. Although it has twelve gates and it exists in God’s time in the spiritual world, you can see New Jerusalem, just like John could see it. You might have visions of New Jerusalem but entering in is a different thing. Put it this way, it is just like a house alarm. Anyone who goes there, my buzzer goes beep, beep, beep; someone near the door wants to go right in but does not have permission from God. Of course, it does not work that way, but it works in a nanosecond kind of thing. I know everyone who has been and everyone who has not been. In part of this training, yes, indeed, God will show more of that.

Some of you have not even been to all of the seven heavens. Do you know where New Jerusalem is? Beyond the seven heavens and sometimes we put ourselves spiritually higher than what we should be. It is better to think humbly than to think highly. It is just like Jesus says when you take a seat in any place, do not go to the highest seat, then in front of everybody you are told, “*Eh*, this is not your seat, the other place is your seat”. He says you are to take the lowest seat and then you can be exalted, rather than take the highest seat and then get demoted. Whenever you see something, or you think of answering, take the humble

position and say, “You mean this is not exactly that, but please tell me what you think on your side”.

Have you actually seen the seven heavens? Do you know that, unless you have absorbed all of the seven heavens, you cannot even go to New Jerusalem? Do you know what the seven heavens are like? Have you been there? Let me describe it to you. Now I can share. As I said, I had been to heaven every night in 2006 and because of that, I have the ability to go there at any time.

### *God's love for His creation*

The first heaven is peace, the second heaven is love, then glory or joy is the third heaven. The church is at the third heaven. There is a dimension of power in the fourth heaven. Now, what happens, it is like the population is almost like that a big triangle with the seven levels. There are more inhabitants in the first heaven than there are in the higher heavens. In the first heaven upwards we have one, two, three, four, five, six, seven, above that level is the eighth level, which is New Jerusalem. It crosses the dimension, the pinnacle, it crosses the dimension. Now, here is where the galaxies and all our present universe are contained, in the first heaven. We only see a fringe of it. It is all still the first heaven. Then the spiritual world, the parallel world where humans die, and all go there, also in this first dimension, across dimensions. The Spiritual world is still part of the first heaven.

At the second heaven is a different type of galactic system, not necessarily in spiral pattern, you know, all the different astronomy-types of galaxies. Things function differently. Still have planets and galaxies, but they are all perfect, almost all of them move in perfect circulars, all the stars are perfect, every planet is perfect. That perfection will come to this galaxy too, the first heaven, in the Millennium. From the first heaven you can hear some music. Then in the second heaven the music gets louder. You could actually put your ear next to a planet and you could hear the planet singing as it moves around its stars. It is music everywhere and it is like when all the planets and galaxies are moving over a certain order, they are producing a symphonic sound. The sounds are of higher frequencies. They are the sounds of love, God's love for His creation.

At the third heaven is where there is glory or joy, then something changes. You know, between planets, and even between the earth and the moon, it is like an empty space. Of

course, astronomically, we know that there could be loose particles like quartz, anti-metal and metal, and there are different things like energy, dark energy, all that exist there but generally no atmosphere. Atmosphere is contained only within certain gravitational pulls of the planets. The moon itself has not enough gravity to contain any atmosphere but by the time you reach the third heaven, between galaxies, it also has atmosphere. So, you realise that it is a different whole thing, it is a different concept, and there are different types of inhabitants. As you go higher, for example, you can have a horse here in the first heaven, a horse here in the second heaven and a horse here in the third heaven. You can see the different types of horses, like the animals have a finer glory, a greater development, a greater knowledge of God. The atmosphere starts from the third heaven.

Then as you go higher and higher, it is no more in arranged star systems. It is like the whole Universe is one giant planet kind of thing, as you go higher and higher. By the time you go to the highest point of God's throne, God's throne dominates the whole Universe and then there is another difference, not only in population. The reason I am talking about this now is because now I have got other revelations of New Jerusalem to give, so I will give more of this.

Then as you progress to the fourth heaven, you will notice this. The higher you go, the less, for lack of a better word, "movement" there is. You do not need to move to be there. The lowest point is the first heaven. Here is the fallen Earth and it is in this dimension below the first heaven. Whereas in the first heaven, let us say the pristine universe and all that that are there too, there is a lot of movement.

The second point is, I call it "movement". That means the higher you go up, "being" becomes greater than "movement". You do not have to move to be there; you just are there and so there are less and less movements, but more and more of the being energies. In a sense, if you want to measure in human terms, because movement produces sounds and frictions, which up there will be like producing music. There is a quietness as you go higher and higher, but yet it is like music is no more sounds. Music is like a crystallised breath, like you breathe music, you do not hear music anymore; like it has to exist because music is part of the DNA.

Remember, the second heaven contains the first state, so the seven heavens contain all seven qualities. By the time you reach the highest, it is almost like very still, which is why I again

say, if you do not enter into God's rest, you actually cannot ascend into all of the heavens. The only path to New Jerusalem is this way. Why do you think that there is a short cut? Sometimes everyone wants to go to New Jerusalem, and they think they can jump there. The path is always that way.

We can still send human beings to the moon, right? Probably the next group of people who go there will be from China. The other countries are not planning to go at the moment. So, they might succeed by another five to ten years. You still must go through the atmosphere. You still must shoot the rocket up to escape the gravitational pull of the Earth, which needs a lot of power. You still need this big energetic rocket to shoot you all the way up and there are several ways you could have done that, besides this rocket. The other way is just, you know, no human beings or countries have spent the money on, is that they could have built a type of magnetic system, like the train system, the magnetic train. Here is what I imagine could be invented.

When the astronauts want to go to the moon, you build what I call a railway track to the moon. You have a round thing, then you have a lever that releases it and it goes like a trajectory, and then it goes *zoom*. You see, it requires so much energy to escape the Earth's gravity. Once you escape, you need very little energy. The other thing they could have built is a big circular thing. Remember how they built the cyclotron and this thing that crashed the atoms, smashed the atoms together? So, they could build this track by using magnets. Remember, with magnets you can actually, theoretically push it close to the speed of light if you go many, many rounds. Superconductors. It will move until it reaches near escape velocity and then it opens up or joins together. As one moves then the other one starts joining, by the time it reaches the trajectory, it zooms, and it goes, no wastage. It would have been cheaper. Then, you say next, next. You could build the velocity by keeping it in a circle until it is built enough to escape, then you switch it, push it up, *zoom*, it goes off. It would have made space travel environmentally friendly, but it is expensive. They have the technology to do it actually, engineering-wise. It is whether people want to take the road of generating electricity or take the road of burning fossil fuels. They are burning fossil fuels, instead of using electricity. That is the electrical way to go. You still need to escape the velocity. Then you need to carry oxygen. You cannot escape all those steps that you need in order to get to the moon. Then when you get to the moon, you must have enough fuel and

energy to bring you back. So, you must have all the basic things and the communication tools.

### *Ascend into New Jerusalem*

In the same way, when you want to ascend into New Jerusalem, you must have all these steps. In other words, here is the thing: Peace, love, glory/joy, power, life, wisdom and mercy. If you do not have enough “love”, you cannot go to the next step of glory / joy. Not enough “joy”, you cannot go to power. Not enough tasting of God’s power of the Age to come, you cannot go to “life”. If you do not have “wisdom”, you are stuck at wisdom], you cannot go on. Can you see that you cannot escape the growth in your normal Christian life? Just because you can see visions, it does not mean you can go further on. It is not whether you can see, then you can go.

Let me tell you this: A lot of people who do not see visions have gone. I met many of them in my mansion, except they did not know they had gone there. This is because you have not had one of the consciousness, which is what I am teaching about: how to have that consciousness. You see, the only way you can have your consciousness is to be connected back to your pre-existence. That connection will give you some consciousness and then the degrees of connection.

So sometimes when I look at a person, I know where he/she is. I just do not say anything, but I know where a person is spiritually, they cannot hide it. It is my job to know so that I can put people in the right place. Unfortunately, this guinea pig is born with X-ray eyes. I could tell by looking at a person, like this is a blood sample, instead of looking for all the different components, I could tell how many percentage of mercy he has, how much wisdom he has, how much life of God he has. I could look at the person and could roughly tell when he is going to die. I might not know the day, but my accuracy now could be plus and minus two or three years for any person. I could sense how much life he has left. One day we can narrow it to the day, okay, narrow it to the hour and say, *oh*, you are going to go home by 12.15 tonight or whatever. Here is the thing: You all are able to sense it too, just to a different degree. So, here is the good news: All of you also have X-ray eyes, so now join the peculiar crowd.

Everyone, of us has a percentage of life, a percentage of power and a percentage of joy/glory. That one is easy to tell. Look into someone’s eyes, you can tell whether he has joy or whether

he has got things in his life not yet healed. Some of you could sense it. Then how much love and you already know, if you sit side by side with me, or you deal with any issues, you know, my love might outlast your love when dealing with people or crisis.

So, when you do not have enough of all these; peace, love, glory (joy), power, life, wisdom and mercy, or how much peace do you have. I am not saying we are all 100% yet, nobody is yet, but you definitely need a fair degree of these seven things to go into New Jerusalem. Sometimes you have got extra help. How? By impartation. Sometimes I push the twelve, the four, into a certain place by impartation, by praying for them. There are different ways. I will know how to help push a person to grow faster, if he is willing to be led. I mentor different people, but I let each one grow at his/her level. Now over three years, I have seen some people grow, you know, *zoom*. I have seen some people grow horizontally. I have seen some people grow at another level. People might think that a new believer needs to know all the things he needs to know first. No, a new believer, fresh, just absorbs everything, might grow faster than some of us because he does not have so much traditions, he just overtakes.

The funny thing is this: You and I decide how fast we grow. Isn't it true? Look, you are already good compared to the average Christians, right? Some of you fast forty days, three times a year and some of you pray all-night regularly. Compared to a lot of other Christians, it is already very good, but we still must reach higher. This is what I call the select group of guinea pigs. First batch. Join the club. Remember this; peace, love, glory (joy), power, life, wisdom and mercy, is the only way to New Jerusalem.

Now, all the seven Spirits were linked to our DNA originally. We have remnants of them. The remnants in this physical body are found in the endocrine glands which can be seen in Diagram 4. The New Age people call it the chakras, the meridian points. Now, your endocrine glands produce chemicals that control your whole body.

In fact, you all know the pituitary gland controls the growth hormone and all that, and some people have growth disorders, they keep growing taller and taller. Inside there somewhere is the gland that controls your ageing, correct? Some part of your body must be telling you to age or not to age, so it must cross into, although this is not the perfect, this is a fallen illustration from our biological side.

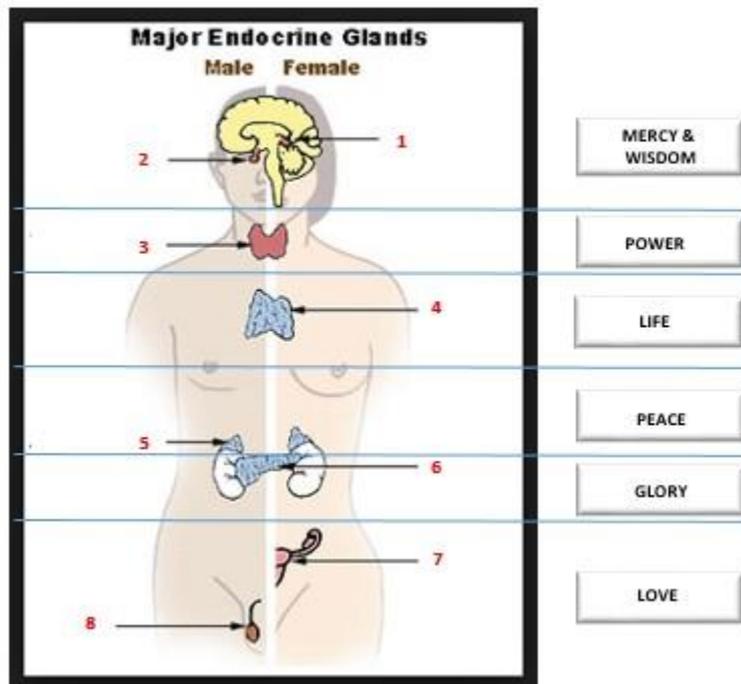


Diagram 4

Now, notice there are eight points in diagram, but actually there are seven. I have done this teaching before. The reproductive system for seven and eight, are just male and female which represents the spirit of love. You would think it is the spirit of life because it produces life, but it is love because it takes two. Love always takes a minimum of two to produce a relationship.

Then you have the adrenal glands and the pancreatic system. The adrenal glands which are sitting on top of your kidneys, there are two, working together and they represent the spirit of peace. Why double? Peace, every time it is mentioned is double because peace in the heart and peace in the mind. They are situated in the place, like cleansing your system all the time. That is why peace needs to be working. That is why you wear the shoes of the gospel of peace, at a point when you contact the earth. If your kidneys do not function well, you will die. People have died of kidney failure. Although people say you do not need two, one is the spare; no, no, if God puts two there, you most likely need both. You can survive with one, but do not say that the other is a spare part. God does not make it a spare part, God makes both to work for the optimum life. Thank God for people who sacrifice to help their loved ones to live. The pancreatic system has to do with digestion where it secretes certain things and all that. It is linked to the Word of God and glory. It says the Word became flesh and we beheld His glory. You see, everything spiritual can be pictured inside. Remember the body has

twelve gates? Here are the seven plus five. I will finish the seven, then I will talk about the five.

Then you have the thymus, it is situated near the heart. I should go to where your thyroid area is first. There is another section of the thyroid where your voice is connected to that. Your voice always represents the source of power, the spoken Word is powerful. There are the written Word and the spoken Word; the living Word and the spoken Word. The living Word is what it absorbs; it is connected. Actually, you have glory, then you have power. Power is always demonstrated from the voice. That is why it is situated there. The thymus is situated near the heart and represents the spirit of life. Then, of course, the others which represent the spirit of wisdom and the spirit of mercy are inside the brain. So, the seven chakra points are actually tied to the endocrine system.

Here is the interesting thing: Sometimes when you meditate or pray, it can quicken your endocrine glands. As you know, there is a feedback loop. When you love, it produces oxytocin, your body produces all the hormones and all those things. These are all commands coming from your endocrine glands. It is a feedback loop. It is both a cause and an effect. Of course, scientists try to create those areas. I am just illustrating that from the biological point of view. In the end these are the seven main areas that control all the other organs, all your living systems that are there. These are, like they produce the structure of your body. There is a chemical secreted to tell your body to grow here, grow there and all the functions.

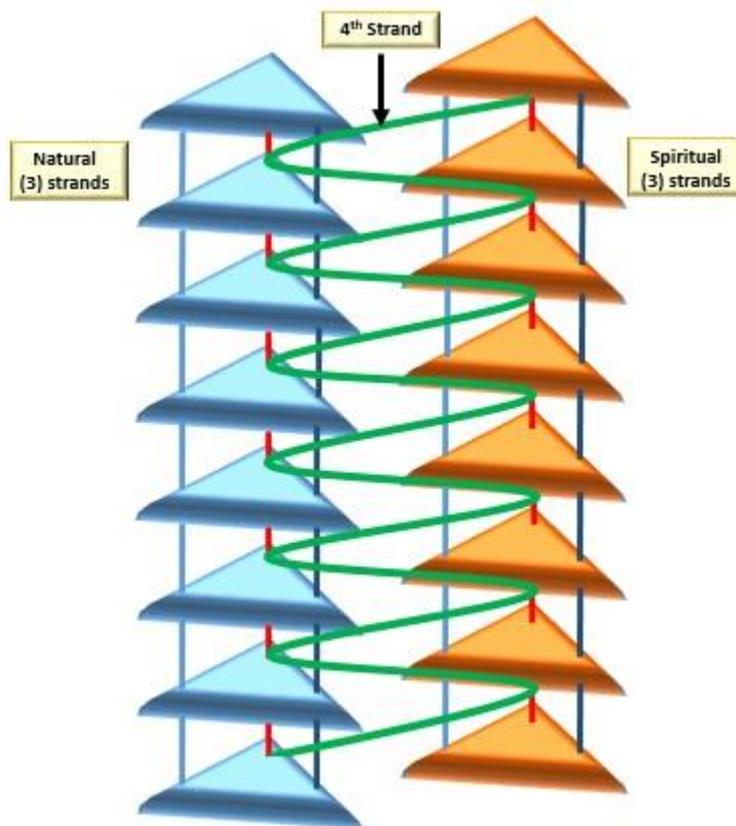
Once the body is structured, the body has a function. The body's function is to experience. Touch, see, hear, smell, taste, which are the five senses. So, you have got five senses plus seven endocrine system glands. That is the physical typology of the twelve gates, the seven altars and the five, what I call experiential power, the way your body is structured.

Let me go back to your DNA first. All these numbers are repeated again in your DNA. In the DNA, the number nine is also sealed inside, like nine fruit of the Spirit, because the nine is like within the three. It is just like, remember, the candlestick is part of your system. In fact, the Tabernacle of Moses has six pieces of furniture. In heaven, it is supposed to be  $2 + 2 + 2$ , but it has  $2 + 3 + 1$ , because the altar of incense was moved out from the Most Holy Place, since they have to attend to it every day. Otherwise it is  $2 + 2 + 2$ . By moving it out, (it was supposed to be inside), they created a double of it, which means it becomes a "seven". So, all

the furniture of the Tabernacle of Moses and the Temple of Solomon, if you count the altar of incense twice, you will have a “seven”, which again represents the seven Spirits of God. I am going to show you where the seven occur in our DNA. Remember we only have two left, the present physical body only has two strands of DNA.

### *The spiritual DNA*

The Adamic one has three strands, and then you twist it into a helix. Within it is the number nine ( $3^2$ ) where there are nine little constructions. It takes nine chemical things to construct it, but there are actually three. What happens is, there is another parallel dimension because we are supposed to exist in this physical realm and the spiritual realm, and to transpose between them. There is what I call a ‘spiritual DNA’ that holds your spirit together.



*Diagram 5*

There is another dimension of the spirit, also in three strands. Now, it is in red because there is a Christ-nature added. There is something added into it and this is the thing that was there, that Adam was not yet ready for it. Notice, there are also three, the  $3 + 3$ , so you still have six, but the fourth strand is the one that connects both sides. There is another one that connects, that exists between the spiritual and the natural realms. The fourth strand is going to become strong in this end time because it transposes, it is like half comprised of the

spiritual material and half comprised of the natural material. By natural, I mean perfect natural world. So, it makes seven.

How does it work? I have drawn it in this manner, but if you get rid of all those things that are there, it can be constructed in a different manner, you have one strand, two strands that are there, but you could have, like a one strand and two strands and then the fourth strand. So, you become one and we become a seven-strand creature perfectly.

The seven Spirits are to be absorbed by the church. That is why they are sent as “angel of the church”, in Revelation 2 and 3. They are sent as “angel of the church” because they are supposed to be part and parcel of the church. We need all the seven Spirits of God to be absorbed by not just the leaders, but by every single member of the church, where your peace will be full, love will be full, joy and glory will be full, you have got a tick for everything, and it is good. So, we are supposed to absorb all the seven Spirits of God until they become a part of our DNA.

#### *Jesus has all seven Spirits*

Jesus has all the seven Spirits. Remember He has them in His hand? In one hand, if you remember which hand, left hand or right hand? Let us look at the book of Revelation. John described the vision. There are seven Spirits before His throne. In Revelation 1:16 it says, “*He had in His right hand seven stars...*”.

Now you know why the guinea pig has to also be at the right hand of God? Because he is supposed to impart all of the powers of the right hand, not to keep it for himself of course. If you want to learn something about heaven, learn this: Everything that God gives to you is never for yourself. If you have not learnt that, you have not learnt about heaven. Everything that God gives to you is supposed to flow through you for someone else. Nobody in heaven exists for himself. God seems to exist for us, correct? We are the beneficiaries of every single thing. When we are close to God, we learn this truth. We exist so that others can live. Everything that God gives to you, whether it is a position or whatever. That is why you can see why this guinea pig does not see himself being at the right hand of God as a big thing, because if God makes me to be at His right hand, it is so that I can help people. A position is given in order to impart, not to lord it over because we have been living too long in this fallen world, we tend to forget that.

If God gives you a gift to be an apostle, it is again to help others. Or to be a prophet, it is again to help people with prophecy. The end result is love, to edify, to build up, to help. No doubt in the Bible God does bring forth Words of rebuke, correct? He tells people to repent, He tells the church to repent, He even warns them of what will happen. He says if you do not get back to your first love, you will lose your lampstand. In fact, He does not say lose; He says I will take it from you. So, God also does judge us.

It is better to be judged on the planet earth now in this life than to be judged in the judgment because for that one you have got no more chances. If we are judged now, there is still a chance for us to do something about it, or change our lifestyles, or change our ways. So, in every prophecy of judgment, there will always be an ability to help turn us around if we want to until it becomes dry cement. Now, it is possible for something to become dry cement. Pharaoh did it, remember? God said, "I will now use him for judgment". Only judgment but you notice, it was after the blood, the frogs, the lice and all those things that God then said, before he was completely given up.

You saw that the body has twelve gates, which are the seven and the five, that are inside of us. The more you have the DNA of Christ and let us say as all these develop in you, remember, the controllers of the seven strands of DNA are in this dimension.

Now, you can see that it is divided by three and three with one in the middle. Even when, you know, Jesus speaks, and it is always divided; the three are divided. Because these three are peace, love and joy which are in the section of love. Life, wisdom and mercy are in the section of life. Then power is here, although related in between them and then you have life, you have love, it gives out light in the middle. Of course, wisdom is light too, but the wisdom light is the light that shines in you; power light is the light that shines from you. So, you can see the three "L's" that are life, light and love. When Jesus says that He is the way, the truth and the life, He is actually talking about these three sections of life, light and love. Life where He has already got it there. So, you have just got to figure it out, out of these two sets of light and love, which one is the way, and which one is the truth? Since truth and love are related, I solve the problem for you, truth is covered by peace, love and joy.

Whenever you are walking in truth, you will have peace, love and joy. When you are telling a lie, you will immediately lose peace, love and joy. Simple, isn't it? Truth is a vibration from

love and a vibration of intellectual understanding, a vibration of perfect laws, a vibration of perfect harmony. A lie is a vibration of disharmony. So, truth is the music of love. So, when Jesus says He is the way, the truth and the life, He is talking about these three sets of life, light and love. The three sets always keep coming up, even in the nine fruit of the Spirit in Galatians 5:22-23.

Remember the power set is the middle section? Remember how did I draw the seven? The power set contains the other two of life and love. Peace, love and joy are in the love section already. Then there is faith and then there is hope. Faith, hope and love. Again, the three that are there, come back to life, light and love.

### *Train yourself to see visions*

You never run from life, light and love, they are always God is life, God is light, God is love. These are all the attributes of God that come to three strands, from our perspective. So, you always have the number three as God reveals Himself. When you have seven, it is because of  $3 + 3 + 1$ . That is how you get the seven there. What is life for? To experience. If you lose your sight, a part of the world does not exist anymore. If you lose your hearing, a part of the world does not exist to you. You only know of its existence by someone else who could hear that realm. So, the five senses are given to experience God's creation, experience life, but the five senses translate differently as the DNA grows. Okay, first one: "See". Then "Hear". These are the most common ones. Then "Touch", "Taste" and "Smell". Now, I did say about the spirit man, that the spirit man has these senses. You can find verses for these.

There are spiritual seeing, spiritual hearing and spiritual touching. Like your heart is warm, that is a feeling, like in Luke 24:32. Seeing: you can throw in 2 Corinthians 4:18 and we see the things that are invisible, not the things that are visible. Hearing: Revelation 2:17, *he who has an ear, let him hear*, obviously hearing in the spirit. Tasting: Psalm 34:8, *Oh, taste and see that the Lord is good*. Smelling: Philippians 4:18, the sacrifice is a sweet-smelling aroma to God, so there is a sense of spiritual smell going to God and all these fragrances that go to God.

When the sense translates into the other dimension, it is different. Hearing is more thinking; when your thoughts are actually hearing the sounds of the spirit. There is another way to put it. What are thoughts? Electrical signals. What is causing those signals? It is contacting

another dimension. When angels speak, thoughts flow. When demons tempt you, thoughts flow. You are hearing the sounds of another dimension. Thinking is related to hearing and here is a big difference, seeing is related to feeling. At the end of the day, your spiritual man is so developed, you can have five senses. I am actually giving you the secret on how to train yourselves to see visions and how to hear God.

In John 10:27 Jesus says, *My sheep hear My voice*. These are the two important things to do, if you can hear God for yourself; if you can see God for yourself. Matthew 5:8 says, *Blessed are the pure in heart, For they shall see God*. That is a promise. Remember, that is a promise. If that is not enough then John 14:21 says, *“If you love Me, love My word and I will manifest Myself to you”*. The word “manifest” means He will have an interaction with you.



Diagram 6

Now, people who are emotional see easily. People who are intellectual (and you could be like me, intellectual), their sense of hearing develops first in the spiritual realm. However, you need to tune into that realm so that it is not your own thoughts, not your own intellect. Do not worry if you cannot see but can hear and then some people can see but cannot hear clearly because they keep on having their own interpretation. They think they hear but they are not hearing clearly because they can superimpose upon that. Do you know when I look at a person, my X-ray eyes can tell me which angle they lay on? Very few people are equal on both sides. You usually develop one side first before you develop the other side. I developed the hearing side first before I developed the seeing side. Now I understand about seeing.

Here is where some of you could feel the presence of angels and your feeling has developed to the stage when you even sense where they are standing or the rough direction where the energy is coming from. Isn't that almost like seeing? You learn to see it by feeling first and if

you want to learn to be more open to visions, allow your emotions to flow. Be more aware of your emotions. As you are more aware of them, and there must be a free flow, then you can see easily one day. To hear God clearly, you must learn how to have a free flow of thoughts. I use the words “free flow” because a lot of people’s thinking are stiff, perverted, constricted, handicapped, perplexed, confused, oppressed, and all those things that prevent their thoughts from flowing freely. On both sides, the Word of God helps. Meditation on the Word of God helps, and meditation will help clean it up. Remember “*katharizo*”? “*My word has made you clean*”, John 15:3. It will clean up your internal system. The Word will act on your inside and on your DNA.

If you remember that in the spiritual dimension, feeling is seeing. Can you feel in the spirit? Remember what the two disciples on the way to Emmaus said? “*Did not our heart burn within us*”? Now, that warmth was not heartburn (a physical condition). They sensed something; they felt something different. It was that Jesus was present. Now, some of you might say, “Wouldn’t touch actually be under feeling”? A bit different. The other senses end up slightly different in their relationship.

Let us start with the sense of taste in Psalm 34:8, *Oh, taste and see that the Lord is good*. Then when it comes to tasting and eating, the Bible also says in Matthew 5:6, *Blessed are those who hunger and thirst for righteousness, For they shall be filled*. What is this taste like? Some of you think in a very natural way. If you translate it, what I call a literal translation then “Here on earth I eat durian or apple, then I go to the spiritual world, I just taste something in the spiritual world”. That is all you think. You do not realise that there is a different element, a dimension. It is actually not just taste but it is desire. The reason why I point this out to you is that you might not know that your desire is your sense of taste. Desire is hunger. It is your sense of taste working.

Your sense of smell is actually related to discernment. How do you know that your chicken rice has gone bad? It tastes different but if you have studied and analysed as much as I do, it is not just the taste, it is the smell. The smell passes on to the taste and it tastes like “taste”. However, if you block your sense of smell, you cannot actually taste whether it has gone bad. It is the smell that it gives away. It contains toxins. Okay, take a guess what it is. Remember how “taste” becomes “desire”, and actually is desire? So, what actually is “smell” in the other

realm? That would be the literal translation. Conscience, being the sense of right and wrong. Isn't discernment sensing right and wrong?

### *Why Christians always fight*

Do you know that Christians always fight? Do you know why they fight? Because some say this is right and that is wrong. In Romans 14 it says that they were fighting about whether to eat all things or only vegetables; they were fighting about whether to keep one day holy or seven days holy. In 1 Corinthians 8, they were talking about idol food, whether they could or could not eat it. What about the market? You see, it is like in the book of Judges that every man did what was right in his own eyes. In your own eyes it is right, but it might be wrong for another person. When it comes to what is right and what is wrong, there will always be what I call the general right and wrong. The moral laws, correct?

Then there is what I call the situational ethics, which means, like Paul said, "An idol is nothing, I can eat the food, no problem with me". You see, for him, it was okay, but for the weak person, it was wrong. Can you see that the same act of eating is okay for one but not okay for the other? That is called situational ethics. In his situation, because he was stronger, it did not affect him; the other person was weaker, so it affected him. Situational ethics are perceptions, perceptions of what is right and what is wrong. Remember, until you really know the motive of a person, you cannot say it is right and it is wrong, unless what he does is directly breaking the moral laws.

Who knows the heart, correct? We all presume to know a person's heart, we always do that. We say, "Oh, based on all these things, I think I know what", based on what ten people are saying. Okay, there were a lot of people who were against Jesus and saying nonsense about Him. They were saying things about Jesus, even in His time that He did not do. What happens, if you never went to His meeting, and somebody says to you, "This man said that He will in three days destroy this temple and build it up again". Misquotation. He was talking about His body, not the physical temple. You would think Jesus was a political revolutionary! Only God can see the heart.

To judge by moral laws and the commandments, yes but outside of that when it comes to judging the heart, judge not and you shall not be judged. As much as possible, give the benefit of the doubt. You know what is in the law of court, you know what they say? A

person can only be convicted where there is no reasonable doubt. If you have got one doubt, you cannot convict the person. Intention is important because the intention can be classified as a murder or an accidental homicide, there is a big difference.

A sense of smell is your sense of righteousness, or conscience: the sense of right and wrong. Every one of us has an inner sense of that. Remember Paul talks about some people whose conscience are seared? The most important thing is, everyone must walk in the light that they see and remember the words in Titus that Paul said, *“To the pure, all things are pure. To the defiled, even that which is pure is defiled”*. There is always a context to it.

The sense of touch. Of course, you say, *“Oh, I can touch things spiritually”*. *Ya*, that is a literal translation. Now, you can see that they are totally different from your physical senses, but I have just given you a clue of how strong you are spiritually. Look at yourself. Are you able to feel the dimension of the spirit? That means even if you cannot see them. Remember 2 Corinthians 4:18 where Paul says we look at the things that are invisible? Here is my question: Did he really see the invisible? He did. It was real to him.

First you see through your feelings. Whether you have seen what your angels look like, or have not even seen them, you accept that they are there. With your feeling, you can feel that they are there. You learn to sense their presence. As you sense their presence and allow yourself to sense, your vision will develop. Your thinking is there and then your sense of touch relates to how intense you are about something, slightly different from desire.

## Chapter 28...

### New Heaven / Transfiguration DNA

This last chapter concludes *The Spiritual Man II*. I want to teach you some of the things that the Lord has been showing me. Isn't it wonderful to live our lives in heaven so that we can live in heaven and we work on the earth? Sometimes though, that is easier said than done because most people cannot see heaven and they do not know what is happening. This life looks like the only life that people have. In heaven, things are very different. All your relationships with one another and all the different things look very different.

We have always been emphasising in this revival, that you live in heaven and you work on the earth but when you live in heaven and work on earth, there are some dynamics that are different from the planet earth. The main thing is, like Paul said in 2 Corinthians 4:18, he always sees the invisible, then he always works based on the invisible. As you work along that line, God will confirm His Word, God will show forth His Word.

Not everybody might believe the visions, the downloads and everything but that is everybody's prerogative. However, do not hinder those who want to believe the visions and revelations. In time, the visions and revelations will be proven true in themselves. Not only are we just waiting for them to be proven true, they are already happening if you really notice them in your daily life. They are already transforming how you think, how you read the Bible and how you see things.

You see, believing is an important part to receiving all that God has for each one of our lives. Remember where will you be in the next three or five years? I can guarantee you, however slow or fast this move moves, we will still be around, and we will still be walking closer with God. So, always make all your decisions based on heaven and never ever make your decisions based on just this planet earth because you will lose out in the long run. We have track records of various things that had happened so far. It is always at the end of the day when the dust has settled, it is God revealing Himself as to what is correct and what is wrong.

In Diagram 1 you will notice that we have moved on the heavenly man. The heavenly man has a New Jerusalem glory inside and that is what takes place in this dispensation. The elementary principles of the world are no longer dominating the body. The body has become the Holy Place and the soul has become spiritualised. Your spirit is receiving a new glory from heaven.

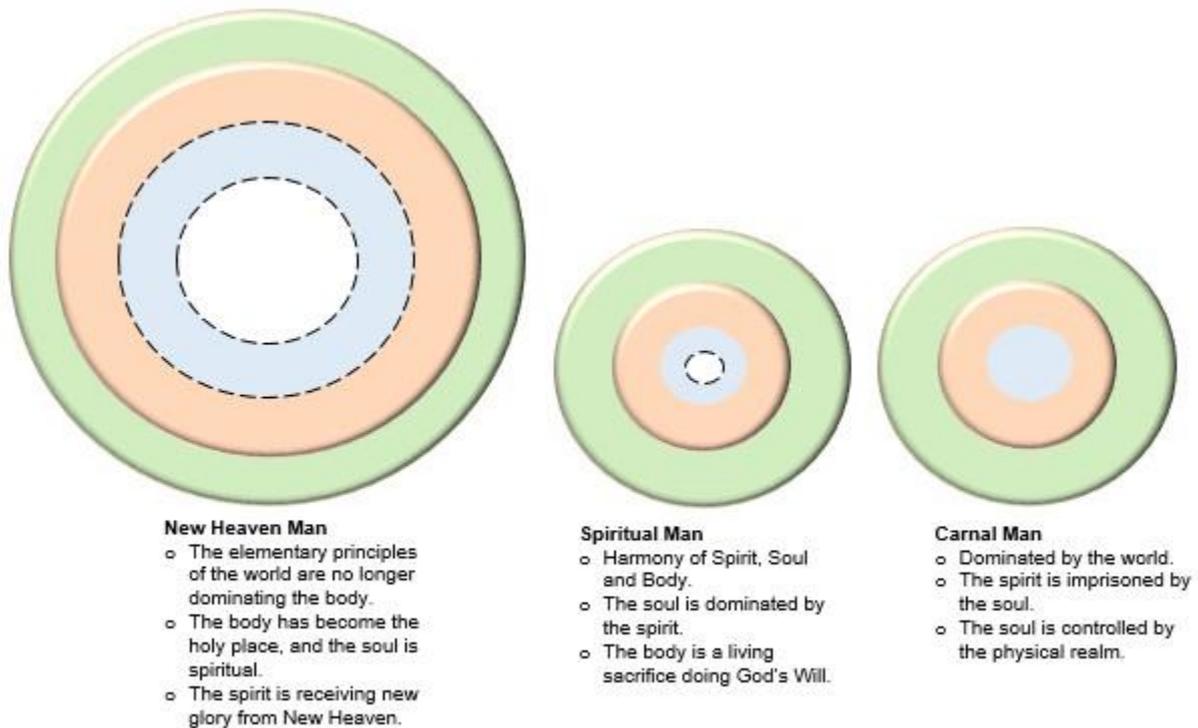


Diagram 1

Some of the COG congregation saw in some of the downloads, the tremendous things that are going to take place, mass transportation and different things that are going to take place. For example, in the tsunami, there are times when we have to transport groups of people, we will appear to them, that presumes the fact that we already could transport ourselves and we will be able to move in the spiritual dimension. It is going to work very fast.

Do you know that God has already begun the process and it is going to be passed on to various people? On 11 to 14 January 2016, five people received the transfiguration anointing. They were four of the second generation, plus myself. Since then, there have been an impartation of transfiguration anointing. So, there will be many impartations.

Now, as this transfiguration anointing works and changes our DNA, our DNA will be able to live above the laws of Physics that bind us. We will then be used to living above the laws of

Physics. Remember, how did Jesus walk on the water? Remember the story in Matthew 14? There will be a time that we will be walking on air.

There was one download that that was revealed when we were in America, where someone saw me preaching on a high platform. I was walking across the part where the solid platform was, and as I continued walking, I did not drop down and the people were looking, “Hey, what is happening”? At that time, as I was preaching, I said, “I am your sign and wonder”. I became a sign and a wonder. As I was walking on the air, after some time, I called the people to come forward. While they were all coming and kneeling before God, I was still walking on the air, above them.

Some of you say, “Wah, this kind of vision, no one has ever had before, sounds really sci-fi and all those things”. The Chinese *kongfu* talks about it, you know, but those are using ropes and that is in the movie. We are talking about things that are impossible.

Now, if you see all these downloads and visions, wouldn't you say to yourself; “All these things do not happen by accident”. Correct? We should know. There are some inventions in our modern time, if you bring them back to one thousand or two thousand years ago, imagine the Roman Empire, as they are fighting, they see all these planes coming by, it would be a sign and wonder to them because they have not tapped on the laws of electricity, the laws of turbo dynamics, the principles of flight, the concept of jet propulsion and all those things, which are there in the natural. All the materials are there, but human ingenuity has not tapped on the forces of nature to go into those things, so it looks marvelous.

*Laws of the Spirit are very logical*

In the same way, the laws of the Spirit are very logical. The only reason why we can do those things is because we discover, and we tap upon those higher spiritual laws. That is why I am teaching the higher spiritual laws. The higher spiritual laws would involve, as I say, your thought life, your belief system and everything. We need to open ourselves to the Word of God to be able to receive those things. Live in heaven and work on earth.

Among the things we saw was mass transportation. Already people are marveling at the fact that you can be transported, and people can be transported, but the fact is that we can become in control of these facts, which means we are like Adam and Eve before the fall, like Jesus. In

fact, in our downloads and visions of Jesus, when the disciples were not around, Jesus travelled in the spirit or He transported Himself. So, He would go from one place to another and He used His full power, and at will. It is obvious that in some of these visions, some of us have developed the ability to be transported at will. For example, this is most likely before the tsunami and during the exodus.

**(Edits for Ps Johann – people’s names)** In one of the visions, AC said: *“I saw, I couldn’t tell the time, there were many transportations and there was a loading dock. I saw that many hundreds were gathered with belongings and they were carrying their belongings. (These are the very poor people. They could not afford anything. So, they were there waiting.) And I came and said, ‘Are you ready? What we are going to do is just to worship the Lord. So, lift up your hands, praise and worship with me’. (This is AC talking). I began to lead them in a song. As we worshipped, like in a flash, we were transported to the church campus in Australia. (That was one of the mass transportations that were hundreds of people at the same time). I then saw there were a mix of people and they seemed like the poor and needy who tried to get out but could not afford to. The impression I received was that most of these people were this type of people and God wanted them to know He will not forsake those who did everything they could to leave but could not because they did not have enough (not enough money, not enough ability). And I saw others who changed their minds at the last minute (this is before the tsunami) and they met at the appointed place. (And then God had mercy on them.) I saw there was a group of us doing this. I saw Jehudah going to a place, then you Pastor Johann, LN, Abraham, and having people meet at appointed places to leave. I saw that we had them lift up their hands to God and worship. And in an instant, hundreds or more were transported in groups to the place of refuge”*. Don’t you think that there are no such recorded miracles ever? Now, remember, what I just related of this vision, all these things are in the very near future, because the tsunami is taking place in 2029 and that is not very far away.

Now, since 11 to 14 January 2016, the Lord says that the transfiguration has begun. As much as we have, we have begun to deposit into some of us, and they have received accordingly. This transfiguration, which is a DNA change, I say that over the next seven years (and for some of us it would be faster), that the age reversal process has begun, and we will be growing younger and younger and younger. Deborah sent me an SMS yesterday. She said, *“Oh, in the morning I saw you with a small group of people. You looked like you were in*

*your twenties*". That is probably in about four or five years' time and down the road a bit further. This has to do with the laws of the Bible and how they work into our lives. As you know, I am a very scientific person. I believe that miracles are not accidents. Miracles are the consistent applications of spiritual laws but that makes them wonderful. That means God does not practice favouritism. As long as anyone anywhere will practice those laws, the result should be the same and we should obtain those results.

Here is one that I like very much; (AC said) *"I then saw, before the tsunami, a large cargo ship that had been used to save people. It had broken down in the ocean. It was in the path of the tsunami and it was trying to get back to Australia. I saw that the five of us went to this massive ship. It looked like we had all the people come down because they were on the top decks. Then I heard you Pastor Johann say, 'Come down, let us lift our hands and worship the Lord'. Then you sang a song. I saw all of the 1 + 1 + 3 (which is actually the five of us), where it looked like we positioned ourselves around the ship. So, we all took our positions. Then when we sang, the next second, the whole ship was transported with the people to the dock in Australia"*.

*Wah*, that is wonderful, isn't it? I can say that this type of vision, I can challenge you, you can go to any church group on the whole planet earth, you do not have it. Some of them are still saying, *wah*, transportation, *wah* this and all those things but none of these things that I read to you are going to happen by accident. They happen because of the consistent application of spiritual laws. One of the things is how it is tied to the new heaven and the new earth.

You see, the problem that we are having on this planet earth and why we are not doing the works of Jesus and why we cannot do the works of Jesus is primarily because of sin nature. Sin came in. In the book of Romans, Paul tells us that sin nature actually dwells in the physical body. Romans 7:8-12 says, *"But sin, taking opportunity by the commandment, produced in me all manner of evil desire. For apart from the law sin was dead. I was alive once without the law, but when the commandment came, sin revived and I died. And the commandment, which was to bring life, I found to bring death. For sin, taking occasion by the commandment, deceived me, and by it killed me. Therefore the law is holy, and the commandment holy and just and good"*. Then he goes on to say in verse 15, *"For what I am doing, I do not understand. For what I will to do, that I do not practice"*. Paul is struggling with that sin nature. Then he says in verses 17 and 18, *"But now, it is no longer I who do it,*

*but sin that dwells in me. For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh) (Can you see the words “in my flesh”?) nothing good dwells”.* So, let me tell you where sin nature is. It is in your physical body.

If sin nature is not in your physical body, you can live one hundred years and you will still look the same. If sin did not come into Adam’s body and Eve’s body, they could have lived one thousand years and they will look exactly the same as the day God made them. When God says, “*if you eat of this fruit, dying you shall die*”, that means you die spiritually first. Now, notice, two things happen. Firstly, you are cut off spiritually. Then your physical is also cut off.

Let us go back to the original verse when sin nature came in Genesis 2:16-17, “*And the LORD God commanded the man, saying, ‘Of every tree of the garden you may freely eat; but of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil you shall not eat, for in the day that you eat of it you shall surely die’.*” In the English translation, there is only one word for “die”. In the Hebrew, two words for that are, one being future tense and one is in the past tense. In Young’s Literal Translation (of course in those days, the English was very olden), it says, “... *for in the day of thine eating of it, dying thou dost die*”. They still use the word “thou”. In other words, dying you shall die. Notice that one is in the present tense and one is in the future tense? There are two Hebrew words for “die”. The present tense says; in the day that you eat of it, you will die spiritually, and then you will die physically.

We all know that Adam died at the age of nine hundred and thirty years. Of course, in those days, the measurement of time might be slightly different. How old was Adam, you know, roughly on the day when he fell into sin? Most likely it was around the third day kind of thing, not counting the seven days. Remember, God created everything in seven days. The third day is about the tenth day, altogether, including the original days of God’s creation. Adam was basically still very fresh and young, and he lived nine hundred and thirty years but the moment he sinned, spiritually he was cut off. All sin cuts off your supply of spiritual life. By the way, that is one of the ways you can detect whether someone is living in sin. The spiritual life was cut off, but the natural life continued because there was some energy (latent energy), and it continued for nine hundred and thirty years before he died.

*Sin nature has to be dealt with*

Now, as sin progresses, life shortens because of the act of sin and sin begins to, until today, if a person lives for one hundred and twenty years, people celebrate. How many birthday celebrations have you gone to that you are able to say, “Happy one hundredth Birthday!”? Very few. That is what it was like in the Bible days.

So, sin nature has to be dealt with. The question is; Did God give us something to deal with sin nature? Yes, He did. In Romans 8, Paul begins to tell us of this Spirit of life that comes to us. He says in verses 1 and 2 (the solution), *“There is therefore now no condemnation to those who are in Christ Jesus, who do not walk according to the flesh, but according to the Spirit. For* (here it is, it is not an accident, it is a law. A law means that God has to honour it. It is as strong as the law of gravity. When you take an object and you drop it, the law of gravity tells you it must go down. Of course, if you are in outer space, in the microgravity, it will just float but you know that the law works in any country of the world, whatever culture, whatever language you speak, that law works. The law of the Spirit is the law that works, no matter what culture you are from, what tradition you are from, what denomination you are from, it works. We must learn how that law of the Spirit works). He says in verse 2, *the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus has made me free from the law of sin and death”*. So, there is a law and that is how it works.

Now notice, in verse 3, God did not just take care of sin legally. Paul says, *“For what the law could not do in that it was weak through the flesh, God did by sending His own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, on account of sin: He condemned sin in the flesh,”*. God wants to deal with sin in the flesh. It is the will of God that He wants to eradicate sin nature. You cannot run from this fact.

When you read Romans, the purpose of God is not just to save us and give us a ticket to heaven, and then you die, and then you go to heaven. The purpose of God has always been the eradication of sin nature, inside our spirit, soul and body. Our spirit has by being born again. Our soul by the Word of God cleansing us, teaching us, and renewing our mind so that we begin to see and believe things in accordance with the Word and the spiritual world. Remember that the written Word and the spoken Word are one. Sometimes the written Word does not explain everything, and you need the spoken Word which God has and He gives

explanation to that which the written Word cannot explain clearly. Then sometimes it looks contradictory but if you look at it carefully, it is not. There is a context to it.

What did the Pharisees call Jesus? They called him a winebibber, remember that? They called him a sinner, remember that? They also called him demon possessed. Can you think of anyone calling Jesus like that? You cannot dream that that will happen, correct? What kind of a mind would call Jesus that? Okay, you can guess, which group called Him that? The Pharisees, the experts in the written Word. None of the publicans and sinners called Him a sinner, a winebibber, or demon possessed. The clever people, too smart for their own good, who know enough scriptures to cripple life, they called Jesus a sinner, demon possessed. They were the lawyers and the Pharisees, supposedly experts of the written Word. Do you know what was wrong? The simple people could see it. This group did not have love, Jesus had love. None of the publicans went to the Pharisees. They all went to Jesus and regarded Jesus as the holy man.

You see, love is life and love is light. If anyone has the life of God, they will have the love of God. You can tell who is wrong and right, not by their fancy arguments or quotations of scriptures alone. Remember, if people want to debate right and wrong, and put aside their emotions, I am willing to debate right and wrong, at any time, from the scriptures. Then it will always come out with this; you will have two interpretations and two applications, and you still have to choose.

How did the anti-Charismatics argue against tongues? They used scriptures. How did the Charismatics argue (of course, some of the Charismatics did not even have scriptures) for tongues? They used scriptures. Today, a lot of people have different views of the second coming of Christ. Some believe they will go in the rapture. Some believe there is mid-tribulation rapture. Some believe there is pre-tribulation rapture (like ourselves, which we know also by revelation).

Without revelation, we cannot settle the debate of whether there is pre-tribulation rapture, mid-tribulation rapture or post-tribulation rapture. Do you realise that? Very difficult, because everyone has some scriptures. It takes revelation to settle that question, which is why the spoken Word is important. So here, we need the written Word, the spoken Word, and you

can tell straightaway who is right and who is wrong by how they behave. Your instinct tells you.

In Romans 8:5-7 it says, *“For those who live according to the flesh set their minds on the things of the flesh, but those who live according to the Spirit, the things of the Spirit. For to be carnally minded is death, but to be spiritually minded is life and peace. Because the carnal mind is enmity against God; for it is not subject to the law of God, nor indeed can be”*. Do you notice that the carnal mind cannot be subject to the law of God? There is no way you can convert it, there is no way you can outdebate it, there is no way you can try to renew it; it just looks at things wrongly. You must look at things from the heavenly perspective, where understanding comes. That is what we will touch on.

Then he says in verse 10, *“And if Christ is in you, the body is dead because of sin, but the Spirit is life because of righteousness”*. First, he tells us there is a law of the Spirit that has set us free. Secondly, he says there is a law of the spiritual mind, that will be a channel, from the word *“phroneo”*, you continue to channel; it is a channel of the life of God. Then in verse 11 he confirms, *“But if the Spirit of Him who raised Jesus from the dead dwells in you, He who raised Christ from the dead will also give life to your mortal bodies”*. There you have it, it is not your spirit, not your soul, it is your mortal body, because it is God’s perfect will to get rid of all sin nature.

#### *Accounts of our transfiguration*

For two thousand years we have been waiting for that. Then the transfiguration happened. Here are some accounts of the transfiguration. This is AC’s version. I have got Jehuda’s version on that too. Remember, in this transfiguration, each one of us see visions. We did not compare notes, we only wrote down what we saw, because it was taking place simultaneously and we prayed about that. On that day we did not take the cable car, the cable car was not in operation because of the strong wind. It took us about an hour. So, let us say about 10:00 am we prayed and then we prayed until about 4:00 pm, I think, around there. It was a long time. We spent the time praying up there and a lot of things took place. We did not compare our visions at all. We just came down and then everyone shared what they saw. There was no one producing because somebody said something. No, everybody saw differently. I saw slightly different from everyone else. I saw everything tie up to New Jerusalem. AC saw the DNA part. Jehudah saw the DNA part also, in the sports, right? I also saw the DNA part.

However, one of the first things that took place in the transfiguration, which was this, from AC's side, which was important to happen. He said, "*As we were praying on the mountain (on 12 January 2016), I saw Jesus came and smiled. He reached His right hand out to me and I saw this black mist leave my body. It was sucked out from me and Jesus absorbed it. Then I felt a change*". Of course, there was thunder, lightning and the wind, and everything else was going on.

Here is my question; What do you think was the dark mist? You can analyse the vision. Jesus took something out. Jehudah also saw Jesus taking something out from him. He said that it was like, "Flushing out". Flushing out something, okay, a slightly different vision. What was the black mist? Sin nature. Too easy, this one is too easy. Sin nature, which comes to my second question, since the first question is a bit too easy. Could the transfiguration have taken place if sin nature was present?

*The glory of God has different effects*

Let us first show that there is a difference between Moses and the New Testament, from the scriptures. In Exodus 33:18, it was Moses who said to God, "*Please, show me Your glory*". Now, we know that the glory of God had appeared in Exodus 40, on the mountain, in the Temple of Solomon. The people had seen the glory of God in Ezekiel and Isaiah, but they were not transfigured. You couldn't say that Isaiah was transfigured. No, he was touched by the glory of God, that is not transfiguration. The glory of God has different effects. Moses did not ask for transfiguration. He could not because he was not born again. Moses had sin nature. That is why in Deuteronomy 34, he died. The Bible says he died. Here is the thing, what causes a person to die? Sin nature.

We can take a physical body and slowly freeze it to the right temperature and keep it for two thousand years. With our human technology, today it is possible. We have the technology to preserve bodies today better than the mummies, by using temperature control. Since we know what causes decay, if we bring it to the point where the bacteria cannot attack, all frozen, the body is preserved. Remember the iceman that they found? He was very well preserved. Then there were some Russians who had gone near the Arctic Circle, the Siberian area, and they had found a dead mammoth. You know, mammoth (furry, hairy, big giant) was the original elephant before the elephant. The mammoth was so fresh, that (in one of the stories) they cut the meat and ate. *Wah*, that is a pity, such a well-preserved specimen.

The Holy Spirit has the ability to transport, even people who had sin nature, like Elijah, but they were still not transfigured. This is because they come back in Revelation 11 and they die. It would have been impossible to kill one who has no sin nature. If you shoot a bullet, the body will heal. This sounds like some sci-fi movie, whatever there is because the body repairs itself. It has a different thing altogether; the DNA has changed. In some of the downloads, AC saw an extra strand of DNA. We are all coming together to bring to this conclusion.

Now, Moses said, *“Please, show me Your glory”*. God told him in Exodus 33:20, *“You cannot see My face; for no man shall see Me, and live”*. You know why, because of sin nature. Before sin nature, we can see God face to face. After sin nature, you cannot, because of the tolerance level. However, let me remind you. Tolerance level from the glory of God is different for each person, according to their walk with God. Some people, like Elijah, had merged with some of the angels, so tolerance level was different. If you look at Elijah in the spirit, inside him was some sort of a white glow, because there was a spirit being merged into him.

I remember the old Seven Thunders prophet said that when he looked at me, he saw something merged inside me. That was *Archguraelyal*, the spirit being of wisdom merged inside me, not standing with me, but merged inside me. The merging process changes you. I can assure you, it changes you. If I think back at the time when he merged, I believe he merged with me in 1979, during the year when I spent the whole year meditating on the Word of God. Something happened to my mind, like some switch was turned on and it was different. I believe that was when he came inside. It was a very tangible change.

Now, God said to Moses, *“I will hide you in the cleft of the rock and will cover you with My hand. Then when I am about to go off, right at the tail end part, I will lift My hand, and you can see the back part of My glory”*. Just the back part of His glory. So, it took place in Exodus 34. After it had taken place in verse 29 it says, *“Now it was so, when Moses came down from Mount Sinai (he had seen God’s glory) (and the two tablets of the Testimony were in Moses’ hand when he came down from the mountain), that Moses did not know that the skin of his face shone...”*. Can you see that? The skin of his face shone and that was as much as he could get.

To prove it, we look at 2 Corinthians 4:18. When Paul was writing all these things, it was downloads, and nobody dared to say what Paul said. You know what Paul said? “*Oh, the glory that we have is greater than Moses*”. Paul said it because he knew by revelation. Just like today, I believe I can hear God’s voice very clearly and when I see some of the visions, I will act according to that. I am like a child. He shows me that and I will act accordingly. My mind might not understand but I will flow accordingly because we live in heaven and we work on earth. We have the time when we are hearing God’s voice and seeing God’s vision. The most important thing is to be sure that you are hearing God. I am 1,000% sure that I am right in the perfect will of God, doing what God wants me to do. We need that kind of assurance for each one of our lives too.

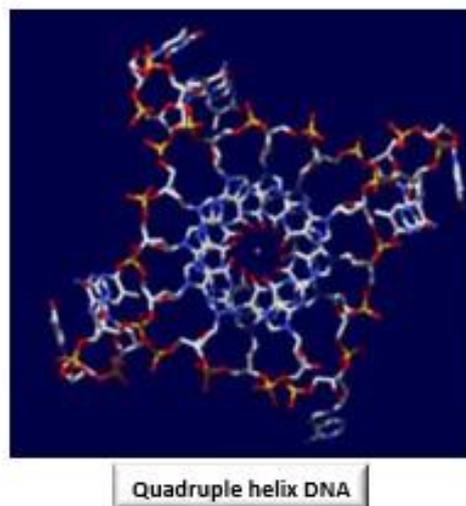
Now, this is what Paul said in 2 Corinthians 3. He dared to say this thing. He called Moses’ glory in verses 7-10, “*But if the ministry of death, written and engraved on stones, was glorious, so that the children of Israel could not look steadily at the face of Moses because of the glory of his countenance, which glory was passing away,* (That means it did not last long. I mean it must have lasted for some time, but after some time, that was in Exodus 34, and Moses lived on, right on to Deuteronomy. I have looked at it in the spirit. It lasted for months, so it is less than a year. You know, that skin glowing, lasted for months. I tell you, for months, his wife could not sleep. Do you know why? Because she could not turn off the light! She says, “Dear, can you turn off that light-switch”? Moses says, “Where? I do not have an *off* switch here”. For months, every day there was this bright light. If they had an eye mask, she would have worn it. In the morning she thought, “*Wah, daylight*”. She looked, “*Huh, it is still 3:00 am. You uh. I thought it is sunlight*”. It lasted for months), *how will the ministry of the Spirit not be more glorious? For if the ministry of condemnation had glory, the ministry of righteousness exceeds much more in glory. For even what was made glorious had no glory in this respect, because of the glory that excels*”. In other words, he says the glory of the New Testament is greater than the glory of the Old Testament.

#### *Impartations are so special*

That concludes this matter, based on 2 Corinthians 3, Moses was not transfigured. Neither were anyone else, right up to Jesus’ transfiguration, you see, he walked on water, so did Peter with Jesus. However, in Jesus’ transfiguration, He could not share it (when He was on the mountain, Luke 9, Mark 9, Matthew 17, these are all the cross-references on the transfiguration), because all of them had sin nature. No one was born again.

Sometimes when something special has occurred, we do not realise it or we take it lightly. For those of you (and the four who had been) inside this move, you do not know how special this time is. Those of you who have received impartations, it is so special.

From Jesus' transfiguration, He has never allowed any human beings to be transfigured until 11 to 14 January 2016 because it was time. It is important to understand what took place because if transfiguration happens with sin nature, all four would have died and I would have to conduct four funeral services. God has to take out that sin nature first and then He puts in the new DNA. Now, AC saw one strand of DNA and I have described the multiple strands before but now I show you, so that you know that I am a man of Science and I do my own research.



*Diagram 2*

In Diagram 2 is a drawing of a quadruple helix. There is a double helix. A double helix is two strands and they have the combination of the DNA of A, C, G and T. This was published in Nature Chemistry. I believe it was in 2013 that they managed to use chemicals to colour certain molecules and take pictures. Then they discovered what we call the quadruple helix inside the human. We all have that, but it is not exactly what I am talking about. What is happening is that when you have a double helix, for it to duplicate, it must first duplicate, then after duplicating, it separates out. Then before it separates out, you actually have a quadruple helix, if you catch it at the point before it separates out. What they discovered is that this quadruple helix occurs at the time when they were creating new cells. It is there in your body all the time, the quadruple helix but what the scientists did, they sent the chemical code to stop the process so that they could take pictures. A snapshot came out, around 2013,

after several researches, and then it began to be discussed among the scientists and the researchers.

Then if you do research on the triple helix, some are really weird stuff. We know facts, so do not trust those researches. There are no facts and no scientific evidences, and some claimed to have discovered the blood of Jesus in some old cross somewhere, they analysed it and then found the triple helix. Nice story, no fact and all rubbish but there exists inside each of us a quadruple helix at the time before your cells divide and are being produced. I would like to bring this to the fact that, scientifically, quadruple helix is in the realm of creation. That is what I taught about how one strand is invisible and how our DNA is changing and only in this end time.

Do you know how we are able to be transported easily? Because normally transportation depends on 3 things. It depends on an angel opening a portal; it depends on the Holy Spirit energising the whole process; and it depends on the specific will of God with a task to perform. Then you could go into the portal and disappear. Outside of all those things is when your body is no more bound by the natural laws. You see, natural laws require more heavy stuff and weightlifting to do the transportation. In the early days before Adam fell, this is how (we saw) he was transported. All he had to do was he formed in his mind where he was going, and he was transported. So, that level of transportation was different from the fallen transportation.

When our bodies are changed, and the DNA is changed permanently, it is in the process of change. The change has begun. Let the process continue. As it continues to change, we will experience more. Remember how Jesus ties the creative miracles and a lot of things to the transfiguration? Now we know because the transfiguration will release more connections to the spiritual realm. The blockages that are there by our sin nature, which impede the connection to the spirit, soul and body from flowing through, the transfiguration will bring your body as the perfect channel. Of course, it has a feedback loop where it will cause your mind to think differently. That is what I call a feedback loop. As your body is changed, your mind thinks differently.

Let me give you an example. Today's scientists have discovered hormones in our body and so in mental cases or psychiatric cases, they try to give chemicals to dull certain sensations

because they affect our emotions. Emotions are both soul qualities and physical chemical qualities. For example, when you lack certain chemicals, you can actually have a natural depression. A lot of mothers after giving birth, it does not happen to all, their bodies suddenly have a full chemical change. It is like upside down, everything in their physical body is going through a chemical change and they might experience what we call a state of depression, naturally caused. For some, because they are very positive, they might not feel it, or they are very spiritual, that they do not feel it. It is there in the natural, it is just something to overcome, what I call a low valley of chemicals where so many things are happening. During that time, if they are surrounded by spiritual things and the Word of God, then they will just go through it smoothly but otherwise, it is an easy place to get depressed.

#### *Emotions can be a feedback loop*

Some of our emotions can be a feedback loop from the physical. For example, if you do not balance your diet, and you constantly eat certain junk food and all those things, your chemical nature will be on the depressive side. However, when you begin to balance your body with proper exercise, sunlight etc., your body's chemicals will also be in balance. Do you know that sunlight cheers people up? Having proper exercise, proper sunlight and proper food / nutrition, you will have a proper balance in you and you will become naturally chemically more positive. It is possible. Of course, today, people just treat it from the chemical side, but there is a so-called spiritual side, which we recognise in the spiritual dimension.

I illustrate that to show that there is a feedback loop. When your DNA is being changed, it can have a positive feedback loop into your soul. In other words, your soul is already being helped by the spirit. Imagine your soul being helped by your physical body. Suddenly there is this energising, and your soul, emotions and mind, all function at a different level, let us call it quantum level (you know, good level, normal level, then quantum level), where it just flows like the mind of Christ.

So, having seen that there is a necessity of changing of the spirit, soul and body, the spirit is already changed; the soul is in the process of change; the body is in the process of change, so these two things are taking place. We need to understand how our DNA is being affected and changed, which brings us back to where we have been touching on this point.

In the Heavenly man, the sin nature is all gone, sucked out, which is why the heavenly man is higher than the spiritual man. We end this book *The Spiritual Man II*, with the potential for the heavenly man that is possible.

Remember how the seven Spirits of God flow into us and build a structure? We sort of reach out to experience life and we experience life through six dimensions. Why six? Six is actually not the number of Antichrist, it is the number of man, (3 + 3). The Antichrist's number is "666", because it is the multiplication or glorification of man without God. That is the Antichrist, he tries to be God. There are six things we have, like we are able to see, hear, touch, taste and smell. One thing we have above the animals, we have a sense of God. Animals sense God's presence, but they do not go higher than us to pray to God or worship God. They are aware of God's presence.

Then in the spiritual world, seeing is like feeling. Actually, seeing is seeing. There is seeing in the spirit but why I call it "feeling" is because I want to help each one of you to see in the spirit. You will notice that those who have more emotions see visions. Watch and see. Next time, if you see people who have a lot of visions, read their character, whether they are emotional. If you find that they are, they express their emotions easily while they are looking at you. They might be quiet but have emotions. Intellectual people, you know,  $1 + 1 = 2$ ,  $2 \times 2 = 4$ ,  $4 \times 4 = 16$ ,  $8 \times 8 = 64$ , and the logic:  $A + B = C$ ,  $B + C = D$ , or whatever, then jump into conclusion and link different things. If you have a mind like that, you hear more than you see. It is something like how your soul is set, when you are strong in one thing, all your energy goes into that thing and it makes you weaker on the other side.

That is why when I started seeing visions, my default mode is I am highly intellectual, and my emotions were not fully developed. I would say that my emotions only started developing very, very late in life, but from age one to twenty-one, no emotions, hardly. I was always playing chess, and an intellectual. Until I went to the seminary, I never went to parties, never danced, never had a girlfriend, never was interested. Intellectual, so it is a different life. That is the default.

The thing about this default mode is, it is not a disadvantage, it is the way God trains us. You have to train at one thing at a time. When you try to be everything, it is very difficult. That is why when you study a subject (even today, people specialize in one particular field), you

might start with a general group, like Chemistry, Biology and Physics, but as you go higher and higher, you have got to choose. It is too much knowledge to absorb to do everything. You have only 24 hours in a day. Even if mentally you have a greater capacity, you only have 24 hours and you have to choose what to specialize in.

### *Our training in the pre-existence*

So, in that sense, if you are specializing in a certain area and you are born strong in a certain area, once we go into the *Pre-existence* teaching, you will understand this. It will explain a lot about why some people when they are born, they are geniuses and gifted in music, etc. You know why, they had been training very hard before they came. So, of course, when they were born, at two or three years old, they start playing the piano. You would know how long they had been playing piano up there, how many musical instruments, so all the training that was there. Each person was trained before they came. We went through a sort of training before we came.

By the way, this is a different series of teaching ("*Pre-existence*"), just in case someone reads this for the first time. In the Bible, it mentions that we were chosen before the foundation of the world in Ephesians 1:3-5. In Jeremiah 1:5, God says He knew you before you were formed in the womb; He sanctified you before you were born. Psalm 139:13-16 says before you were formed, God already knew you and saw you. All these are verses on pre-existence.

Whereas the traditional Christian view of existence coming to your life when you were in the womb, it follows natural biology but has no scripture. Funny, isn't it, the most popular view has no scripture! Something new, has scripture, but no one wants to look at it. It is like one thousand years ago, the church preached that the world was flat, one or two humans said no, no, the world was round, the church tried to kill them. There is no scripture that says the earth is flat, but there is scripture to say that the earth is round. You say, "There is *uh*"? Isaiah 40:22 says, *He who sits above the circle of the earth*. "*Huh, circle*"? Nobody checked the Bible. It is strange. So be challenged. You see, in this end time, every mystery will be solved. I repeat, every mystery will be solved in all areas and there are some mysteries that will be taught in the fullness of time. Do not panic if you cannot see. You will see.

In fact, in one of the downloads that we have, after 2029, with the things that have changed, humans will begin to go back to open visions, so open visions will be quite normal.

Something in the atmosphere, something in the radiation of the sun that affects all of our DNA. So, you just have to live long enough to see open visions. It will be back literally to Noah's time. In Noah's time, they could see fallen angels, they could see real angels. That will be an interesting time. It will be like a different world. You see, the world is going to change so much in 2029. I do not hear anybody else talking about and preparing people for that. Why do you think it is the same old, same old? That the tsunami comes, tsunami goes, so same old, same old. No, it is not the same old. The Antichrist was born in 2015. Why do you think everything will still be the same? As he grows up, there will be different things. As we grow up, you see, God is merciful, we are also growing up. You have got to see that all of us are like sheep growing up. We are like sons of God growing up. We discover who we are. We discover things that have not been discovered long ago. Of course, we thank God for all those who had lived before us and people like Paul who established this foundation but remember, downloads reveal the spoken Word.

In the spiritual realm, if you are intellectual and you want to see, feel first. Feel and be sensitive to your feeling. That is how I developed that ability to see visions as well as the ability to hear God. Now I would consider that my emotions are as developed as my intellect, but I have to develop my intellect first, then I have to allow my emotions to develop. Those of you who have developed your emotions, you must learn to develop your intellect, then you can hear clearly as well. Then when you have got both developed, you have got these two senses; (1) your seeing which comes from your feelings and (2) your hearing which comes from your thinking. The more you develop, the more accurate you can be.

For example, when went to Sarawak. In fact, I had never been to Sarawak, that was my first time and first time to the town of Miri. Everything is first time. I was a Malaysian long ago, but I had never been there. I could look into the spirit and I could see it. Okay, there is a Chinese man who was at the meeting and he is wore a white shirt and he had some sort of a heart thing that the Lord wants to heal. This is what I saw in the spirit before we went there. Time travels, whatever it is. Ability to see, ability to know and ability to hear but in the meeting, I would see and look, and I depend on hearing and seeing.

#### *Triangulate with the senses*

The more senses you have, the more you can, let me use a scientific word, "triangulate". You know what triangulation is, right? Triangulation is how they can find where you are, just by

your mobile phone, not just the GPS, because two points meet and where they meet, that is where you are. So, triangulation is where they can locate where you are, which is why sometimes you see in movies, you know, when they get your mobile phone, they destroy their mobile phone, so nobody can find them. Your mobile phone is giving out signals and they can tell where you are, just by where your it is located today.

When I talk, because I am tuned into that area, I could sense straightaway some backbone or back problem and I could triangulate it coming from a certain direction. I have got to triangulate who is it and where that person is, if I give it some time, not really a pain but some sort of a numbness, right in the curve of the back. So that is by one of the senses. There is also the sense of touch, when God transmits to you, and you sense what somebody is feeling. That is how I demonstrate to you about triangulation. Now, I can sense, I can feel, but when I can hear, I can even tell people's name. Sometimes I would spell people's name out. Can you see that the more you can hear and see, the more you can triangulate, right? It is important that the more you develop in this area, now this should be second nature to us, as you grow, and you detect things in the spirit and you see things in the spirit.

Practically, I would say that at this point in my life, I actually live in heaven and work on earth. Some of the things I do, I write, might puzzle people, but I can guarantee you one thing, I will do it as according to heaven's instructions. If you look at everything that is done from heaven's perspective, you will be perfectly fine. If you look from the earth's side, you know, how many earthly men can get along with the heavenly man? It is obvious that there will be something and they say, "Eh, this guy is slightly different and does things differently and see things differently in everything".

Once you enter the heavenly stage, all this nature [see, hear, touch, taste, smell], I have to describe it so that you know what it is. Whenever you think, you are already tuning to the hearing. Whenever you feel, you are already seeing, without realising you are seeing. Now, you will be surprised why I call it "feeling". Because feelings can have colours. Like right now, if I want to tune to the position where the angels are, I can.

You could triangulate, you could see, you could feel. This is how you start. When you feel an angel, you might not see him yet. When you feel an angel, you just know his presence. Then when your feeling is strong, you will know whether he is on your left side or on your right

side. Now, remember this, you do not see all angels because all angels have different frequencies. Unless you rotate your sensor into different frequencies, you cannot see all of them. Once you feel your angel, you will be able to locate. Then there is an added factor to feeling, a picture starts to appear, deep in your imagination.

Now, here is the part where sometimes you have got to be careful, your own imagination wants to colour it, wants to add onto it. For example, AC, when he was new in visions, when he started seeing visions, he saw Elijah for the first time, he kept wanting to see Elijah bald, but Elijah was not bald, he had a lot of hair. Elijah was a very hairy man, he was not bald. The bald one was Elisha. For some reason, in AC's first few downloads, when he was new, he was trying, then he knew that his mind was trying to project something. Then he had to hold back his mind from trying to project something. Later on, after that, I think it was LC or somebody who told him that the Bible never said Elijah was bald. Then he read, *ya*, Elijah was not bald. In fact, from what I know, Elijah was a pretty hairy man, with really thick hair. The next time when he saw Elijah, it became clearer because he was not trying to put a picture on top of that vision.



Diagram 3

Then there are times when the angels themselves do not let you see clearly. They might say, “Do not try to see me clearly because your frequency is not there yet”. Just know and they can hear, and you can see some light. That is, it! First, you feel, then when you're feeling grows strong, you will be able to see some images. Then without you trying to add to it, the image will appear by itself, clearer and clearer. Then sometimes you begin to see the code, the colour, the detail but remember, it all grows. Even in the natural, a baby's eyesight develops and grows. Do you know a baby cannot see clearly? Over a year or two, when he

begins to have his eyesight develop, he will be able to focus and see things. Same with the spiritual dimension.

Then the sense of touch. I changed it to “pleasure” because all of these are for us to enjoy, for us to experience God. Then the sense of taste is like a desire. Sometimes when you go near to certain things, let us say you go near *Famous Amos* cookie. The smell produces some sort of taste. *McDonald's* has a smell. *Kentucky Fried Chicken* has a smell. Coffee smells in the morning, for those who love coffee. The smell and the taste flow together. It is possible to smell and taste the presence of God as you get closer to Him.

Do you notice that you could detect demons in a meeting even without seeing them? Demons are like flies. They carry a certain stink and you could detect a certain stink when demons are present. Even all the fallen angels, including the Antichrist and Satan, they might outwardly try to make their form like an angel of light, but you say, “*Hmm*, something smells wrong,” because no matter how much they bathe, still they cannot get rid of that stink, if they bathe, which they do not. It is like the smell of that rottenness is always on them.

#### *The smell of holiness*

Then you can smell holiness. If you have spent a lot of time with God and God's presence is on you, there is a fragrance, even if you are a blind person (of course God will heal your blindness) and you cannot see because normally you can see people's eyes and face radiate with the presence of God. Let us say your eyesight is not healed yet and you cannot see, you could smell the presence of God on people, not a natural smell, but something refreshing. Remember how Paul used to write to them saying that his spirit was being refreshed by the fellowship? Then you know that the fellowship is really good in the things of God. So, all these 5 senses must be fully developed.

I try also to show the opposite view. Now, knowing the positive, you must know the negative. Every truth is a two-edged sword. I have showed you about good smell and good taste, the fragrance of the Lord that is there and that pleasure is opposite from pain. Whenever your inner being is pained, you know you are going in the wrong direction and if you keep going in the wrong direction, the spiritual pain will become a soul pain and the soul pain will become an actual physical pain. In the presence of the Lord is fullness of joy. The absence of the presence of the Lord is pain and darkness, becomes more and more painful, more

suffering. I am not talking about suffering for the Lord, I am talking about spiritual experiences. So, be aware of that and be more sensitive to the spiritual laws.

When you apply the law of God or the law of electricity, you must know how to connect the power. You know how electricity, one is a plug point, one is the other side, you must know how to connect some things together to get the electrical power to flow. These are all things, the five senses, that help you connect properly. It is like a five-pin plug to draw on the things of God. You have got all five channels turned on. When you have got all five channels turned on, then you know you have got five rivers flowing into your life and the flow will be stronger.

If you want to be transformed more and more every day, make sure all of your five senses are in the positive dimension. Then you know you have got a lot of life. By living that way, you might add an extra two to five years in your life, maybe more. The negative part takes away two to five years of your life, without you knowing it. Some people, when they move into a negative state of mind, without any judgment, without any curse, without anything pronounced on them, they have already shortened their lives by five years because all life comes from God.

#### *Need correct voltage*

For example, regarding phone charging. This is a natural thing. I found that the cell phones that you buy in US, because I bought a second-hand one when my old phone was dying, you need to charge them with a US charger because they are based on 110 volts. The phones that you buy in Asia are based on 230 volts. I know, the diagram tells you 110 or 230 volts. Both are the same, both can be used. Yes, you can, but somehow the ampere is different. I actually tested it because now I have got a US-based cell phone, an Australian-based cell phone, a Singapore-based cell phone, and another Australian-based cell phone, so I have got four phones now to charge. By the way, all my cell phones are Samsung cell phones, so I use the same charger. When I went to the US, I used the Singapore charger to charge my US-based cell phone, somehow the battery did not last long. I blamed the weather at first, maybe cold, that is why there was no battery. Within a day it was all used up. Normally in Singapore, it would be three days, if I hardly use the cell phone. I say how can it be. Something is very different now. Then I tested charging it, since it is the same Samsung connection, with the US charger, it lasted longer. Then I took the US-based cell phone and I charged it using a

Samsung charger here, within a day, gone. I say *huh*, opposite also works. Then I used the US charger for the US-based cell phone, it lasted five days, no need to charge, especially no phone calls, standby was very long. The other time, standby itself, also within one day, finished. It said, "Please charge your phone". *Huh?* Because there is something about the coils in the wiring. Remember, 230 volts, 110 volts, it is very different. You will still get some voltage; your phone will be charged by any charger that can fit it but apparently the USBs are not the same. Nowadays you charge to USB, correct? So, you know what is the secret? In US, buy a US model USB. I mean, USB plug. Then it is actually converting the 110 volts into the correct voltage and current. Then it draws the USB from there, which is the correct one. Then in Singapore or a country that is using 230 volts, you get the USB from the local one and then it draws the exact power. That has worked so far, nicely because I have been charging my iPad using different ones, I noticed the length of time. So, there is some electrical thing in terms of the current that is also affecting the device, the hertz and all that is affected.

When you turn on all five senses, in your connection on your inside, you are able to have more of the flow. Hear is thinking; Negative thinking, you shortchange yourself. Think about it, why do we want to shortchange ourselves? Make no sense, correct? Yet people do that. Thinking is a choice. See, feeling is a choice. Why do we choose, or rather sometimes we did not choose? We allow circumstances to choose for us, we allow people to choose for us, which is why I like to stay away from negative people. When people are super-angry or super-negative, and all that, I say okay, let us have a break. In an atmosphere of anger or grievances, in the atmosphere of negative things, there is too much negative energy flowing. If you could see in the spirit, you will realise, *eh*, that is not the atmosphere to solve problems. Rewind it to the correct atmosphere and then you have got the life of God flowing.

#### *River of water of life*

Aren't we supposed to be specialists of life, not specialists of condemnation? We are supposed to be a life specialist, life givers. Jesus says *I am the way, the truth, and the life*. We are servants of Jesus, we are servants of the Giver of the life, the truth and the way. We should be like Jesus. So, watch out for negative feelings because they are going to stop you from seeing completely. Watch out for negative thinking, watch out for internal pains. If you have internal pains, please cure it, please heal it. You know bitterness? Bitterness comes from accumulation of pain, until you cannot feel the pain anymore, you just feel bitter. Remember,

Simon, in Acts 8, it was the root of bitterness. The root of bitterness affected his thoughts and he wanted the gift of God in a carnal way. All these are important. Of course, number six is the sense of the presence of God, which is most important. Even if I put it by itself, it is tied to all this area.

Now, I will show you how it ties to all of the twelve. River of water of life that flows, the twelve fruits. This is Revelation 21, the New Jerusalem glory. Why do we need all twelve? It is in Revelation 21 and 22. There is a new heaven and a new earth in chapter 21. Let us look at chapter 22. There are actually twelve gates. Remember how I mentioned twelve gates in the human body and how I mentioned that the twelve gates are divided into 7 + 5? The seven is in line with what the New Age people call the seven Chakras but actually it has to do with your endocrine glands. The seven plus your endocrine glands and then the five relates to your gates of experience, being touch, sight, hearing and all those things. Each one is like a gate. In chapter 21:12-13 it says, *“Also she had a great and high wall with twelve gates, and twelve angels at the gates, and names written on them, which are the names of the twelve tribes of the children of Israel: three gates on the east, three gates on the north, three gates on the south, and three gates on the west”*. Notice, it is 3 + 3 + 3 + 3? All twelve gates lead into New Jerusalem, from all directions.

The twelve gates today in our planet earth are like the structure of the Universe, points of entrance into each area, like a pathway that is there. Each one of us individually is a mini New Jerusalem, that is the ultimate, with twelve energies and gates flowing through you and it is tied to the twelve fruits of the tree of life, in chapter 22, verses 1 and 2, *“And he showed me a pure river of water of life, clear as crystal, proceeding from the throne of God and of the Lamb. In the middle of its street, and on either side of the river, was the tree of life, which bore twelve fruits, each tree yielding its fruit every month. The leaves of the tree were for the healing of the nations”*. Now, as I mentioned, in New Jerusalem, there is nothing to heal, so what is this healing of the nations? It is for New Jerusalem glory to flow into this present dimension.

I shared Jehudah’s vision of the transfiguration of AC. Now, let me share mine. During the transfiguration, I was taken into New Jerusalem and I was spending time there and watching all the events from New Jerusalem. Then I saw this mystery. I saw that every time when the glory of God was manifest throughout the whole Bible, it actually was an iteration from New

Jerusalem glory. All glories were flowing from New Jerusalem. Then I saw that when Jesus was transfigured, what many people could not see is that it was part of the New Jerusalem glory going into Him. It iterated into that level that He wanted it to manifest at that time, because the fullness could only be manifest after He had resurrected from the dead. Then Jesus' transfiguration was also linked to our transfiguration. It was like the two-time events became one. When we were transfigured, it was like Jesus was transfigured. It was the same light that came forth because there was no time dimension. Then I saw that there was like a ray of light that flowed, and it depended on how many gates were shining through. It looked like the twelve gates could control the intensity and twelve was the maximum intensity. For all intents and purposes, let us say the gates in the east were like the "lion" gates, the gates in the south were like the "face of the man" gates, the gates in the west were like the "ox" gates and the gates in the north were like the "eagle" gates. So, there were three, three, three and three. Each one was producing a different energy level. Why three? Because when you combine the three's, you have four faces. The faces of all the four, but the three gives it a three-tier heavenly dimension. Then the three-tier heavenly dimension, here is what it is like in New Jerusalem. Do you know that what we could do in New Jerusalem that we could not do before? If you look in chapter 20, before New Jerusalem came, in chapter 20, in the great white throne judgment, in verse 11, "*Then I saw a great white throne (this is before New Jerusalem) and Him who sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away...*". Remember God said to Moses in Exodus 33:20, "*You cannot see My face; for no man shall see Me, and live*"? You do not realise how powerful God's face is. Even the heaven and the earth, our present heaven and present earth cannot see the face of God. If God were to really reveal His full face, heaven and earth will run away. Too powerful.

Then you go to Revelation 22:4, "*They shall see His face, (There was one prayer, also among those things that I had prayed. I wanted to be the first to see the fullness of the face of God. Sorry, it has already been taken. You should have added that in your prayer about thirty years ago. You can be the second, third, fourth etc. You see, spiritual desires are very important. When I read the Bible, I also wanted to be the first to go into the uncreated section of the Universe. Sorry, it has already been taken. You can be the second, third, fourth etc. It says here that they shall see His face) and His name shall be on their foreheads*".

You see, this mystery was given to me back in 1986 when Jesus appeared to me in January. I saw a ball of light appear in front of me. Then the light formed the word "Holiness unto The

Lord”. Then when it came towards me, it touched me on my forehead. When it touched me on my forehead, I was taken into the place where it was God’s love. There was so much love of God that if one tiny little bird was to fall to the ground and died on the earth, it was like a big thump in God’s heart. It was so much, very painful to take also. It was great, but it was painful to take because there was so much evil happening on the earth. Each time sin and death occurred, it was like a slice upon God’s heart, like a slap upon God’s heart, like a punch upon God’s heart. So, you can imagine what God’s love is like.

Isn’t it true that it is only when you love that you can be hurt? Like I could point to you a stranger in the supermarket right now, “*Eh*, do you hate that person”? You cannot say you hate that person because you do not know that person. It is the person whom you know, and you love that you can also feel hate, especially when he disappoints you, or when he does things not to your expectation, or you interpret his actions wrongly. You see, it can be two ways. It is always. Every truth has two sides.

*Never judge wrongly*

You know the most important thing people should do? Hear two sides before they judge. Most people will never hear two sides and I tend not to be bothered. If people want to hear one side, they hear one side. If they want to hear my side, then I will tell it. If not, then they hear one side. You can hear both sides, and then judge. You can still judge wrongly because when you hear both sides, you still are hearing from your own mind and ears. Who can actually go into the heart of a person and actually feel what is in their heart? Love is still important and even if love hurts you, it is still better to love because there is a greater thing that can come out from it. So, God still loves us so much.

When God took me to that realm, I saw and desired things. I saw and desired some of the love even though I said it was so painful and I wanted to come back quickly because to love the world was so painful. I literally knew what it was like for John 3:16 to occur. I do not just know John 3:16. I felt John 3:16 and it was more than my little heart could take at that time in 1986 but ever since then, I want to grow to be able to have that, and I desire to have that. As I said, at that time I was not ready for that level of love, but I wanted that level of love, to be able to love like God loves, *wah*, what else could that be. So, it was important and I realised that something must touch our forehead.

Do you notice that the ability to see His face is also proportional to His name being on your forehead? That is what protects you. That is what Moses did not have. Remember one of the gifts to the overcomers is He writes His name? You know how many things He will write? Look at Revelation 3:12, “*He who overcomes, I will make him a pillar in the temple of My God, and he shall go out no more. I will write on him* (Look at how many things He will write, as if there is space on your forehead. Of course, in the spirit, there is no limit. I will write on him) *the name of My God* (What is the name of *My God*? Our Father God. Now, why is God interested to write on your forehead? Why not on your hand? Why not on your palm? Why not on your thigh, more writing space? Why on your forehead? Because it is right between your eyes. When God writes the name of the Father on your forehead, you know what it means? You can see the Father. Protects you. Then He says) *and the name of the city of My God, the New Jerusalem* (second name; then you can see New Jerusalem and go in), *which comes down out of heaven from My God. And I will write on him My new name* (third name: The Lamb of God)”. Then you can see Jesus in all His fullness. Jesus, the Word (Old Covenant). Jesus, the Christ (New Testament). Jesus, the Lamb (New Heaven and New Earth).

That name on your forehead is three names. This helps you to see into that. By the way, your forehead is only one of the gates. I am trying to show you now the gates. Remember, the seven endocrine glands? The seven gates. Then you have the eye gate, the mouth, the nose, and all these. Add the other twelve. Every one of them is a gate and each gate brings the leaves that are the twelve fruits from the tree of life. You know, twelve means if you eat eleven, you are still short of one. Life in New Jerusalem is not just life in order to live, it is life to experience God. Which is why sometimes I ask this question; The tree of life in the garden of Eden and the tree of life in New Jerusalem, are they the same tree? Does the tree of life in the garden of Eden have twelve fruits? It was not touched, and it was in the garden of Eden and this tree of life is in the holy city, the New Jerusalem.

#### *The twelve gates*

Number one; These are the differences. Similarity, both are trees of life. Dissimilarity, one is in the garden, one is in the city. Number two; It looks like only one fruit was revealed; the other has twelve fruits. Number three; It is like a tree with fruits all year round; the other takes twelve months and can only have one fruit per month, but twelve different fruits. There

is a time dimension to it, because there is no time in heaven, and yet there is a time dimension to it.

Remember that all the twelve gates are; “ox” gates, “lion” gates, “eagle” gates, “face of the man” gates? Each of them is like different speeds of worship, like you might start with the ox, and then you move into the face of the lion, move into the face of the man, move into the face of the eagle kind of things. Then when they come down, also the same: face of the ox, face of the lion, face of the man, then the face of the eagle. It is like first gear, second gear, third gear and fourth gear. There is that dimension. However, when we go into the new heaven and the new earth, that one is even more specialised, such that in a particular month, because now there are twelve, that demonstration of a certain type of light, there are twelve different variations of the knowledge of the life of God. *Wow!* Twelve different variations of that. Someone asked me once; Is there anything after the new heaven and the new earth? Guess. Of course, there is.

God wants to bring us into the uncreated level. *Wow!* However, do not be in a hurry, just master where you are today in this end time. Master New Jerusalem when you go there. Of course, before that, master the new Millennium. Master New Jerusalem. Then when we are in New Jerusalem, when the time is right, I will be giving you the signal and say, “Everyone, it is time”. Then there will be a new phase, because God wants to reveal Himself but with each new dimension, we need to grow and absorb. Our DNA needs to expand and change. Just as in this end time, our DNA is already being changed. That is what God was wanting to do in this transfiguration to impart things into your life, so that you will experience some physical change in your life and it has a feedback loop from your body to your soul and from your spirit to your soul. Your soul can be entering into a different dimension.

Now, the twelve represent pathways and I saw in the vision of the transfiguration that it was a combination of the twelve different lights because the lights went out through the gates. There were also real gates but there were also pathways that went into the fabric of the Universe, and that all glories proceeded trans-dimensionally into this Universe. This Universe was like a shadow of the New Jerusalem. The New Jerusalem was ultimate. God had already planned all those things. The Lamb of God, and all those things were sealed from the foundation of the world. All the Lamb of God did was to open the scroll and reveal it. It flowed forth. During our transfiguration, I was seeing it from New Jerusalem perspective, I

saw that the glory was also shining simultaneously with the Snowy Mountains. It looked like the places were superimposed on one another. I saw the rapture take place from the Snowy Mountains, where the people were gathered in Australia. I saw the final rapture of the church. I also saw the energies that were flowing from New Jerusalem, but they had to be stepped down, like a step-down transformer. Even then, it was still very powerful.

Then I saw and here is the thing (exactly what AC also saw), that inside each one of our DNA is a little bit of New Jerusalem glory that was merged into it. *“After we rebuilt and added to the altar (we rebuilt the altar in Pergamos, to make it bigger), I saw the four living creatures there praising God and open a portal to the throne room and glory coming down on us. (You see, all the New Jerusalem glory flows through the throne room, and then from the throne room, it flows down to us). I saw myself again but when I saw into myself, I saw my DNA change. The helix got fused with something else, you see the structure changed to something different, like a spiritual third strand was added. It was just a flash, but when I went back into it, this is what I saw. A third strand, but it was joined like a spiritual manifestation into where the DNA had like a triple helix. It looks like the double helix created a mini spear at every point (that means inside every DNA). The new strand created a triple helix structure in my DNA. This new structure created a framework and inside this framework was a mini spear and that mini spear was linked to the throne room. It was like the space in the mini spear canopy was shared and one and the same with the four living creatures around the throne and the Ancient of Days. The area of the throne room was in this mini spear canopy (that means, in every strand of DNA), and I saw in the throne room the four living creatures and the Ancient of Days on the throne, all in the spear. I saw every strand of DNA, multiple of these mini spears. Then I saw myself change to this and the glory of God came and started to change myself into something that looked like the canopy of God”.*

That means, every single strand of DNA has a mini space created. Instead of that single strand, let us look at the four strands. Do you notice that when you have four strands of DNA, there is little space? If there are three strands, there is a mini space created in the middle. I am showing you four strands because I saw four strands. Can you see the space created inside? So, inside every strand, this space contains the throne room glory but what I saw was that this throne room glory was surrounded by the New Jerusalem glory. Inside each one of our strands, we all were like miniaturised New Jerusalem. Every single one of us. That is why when the Lord says we are the bride of Christ, we are indeed the bride of Christ. It is the

building coming down in Revelation 21. That building was actually made from humans, not literally kind of thing.

Some of you think, “*Wah*, now I become a brick? I go to heaven, I just go. When they say the twelve gates were named after the twelve Apostles, you mean the twelve Apostles were there and then the gates *poomped*”. You say, “*Ho*, what a life”! No, *I will make you a pillar in the temple of My God* kind of thing. No, what happens is each of the twelve Apostles and everyone can still walk about freely. However, your energy that you energised are taken and then formed as a brick or a wall or a gate, and then it becomes a material. That part of you and that material are one. Your energy is simultaneously part of the new city and also you. So, it adorns.

#### *New Jerusalem made up of energy*

The whole New Jerusalem is made up “of energy” that flows from every single human being who is part of the bride of Christ. That is why we cannot have any person missing, because then when you look at New Jerusalem, you say, “*Eh*, what is that big gap there? *Oh*, that person did not make it”. Cannot, everyone must make it. You say, “Do you want to see where my spot is on the wall? There. Did you see my name? Did you hear my name being called”? You see, even the bricks will call out your name. Now you know what New Jerusalem is made up of? From the energy collected from you and the two are linked. That when I touch this brick, somebody will feel it, “*Wah*, somebody is touching me”!

So now, each one of you has a brick and all those things. You know, the four in the second generation, they are the four corners of New Jerusalem. Not bad *eh*? There is one corner with Jehuda’s name, there is one corner with Someone’s name, there is one corner with Abraham’s name. In fact, after that, when they discovered that they were the four corners, I told Abraham, “That one does not have your name now”. He said, “*Huh*”? “Because you are supposed to have a new name”. I told Kenneth, “No, I did not see the name Kenneth there”. He said, “What did you see”? “I see your new name”. So, he has his new name in one of the four corners. Every one of us has a special place. Remember the twelve patriarchs? They looked so ordinary, right? Joseph was extraordinary, but all the rest were just like normal brothers, but yet in the new heaven and the new earth, the twelve tribes are there. A special place.

So, do not lose your position on earth, treasure it, and things are still evolving. All of you are part of the five hundred. God has chosen you. Even being one of the seventy, one of the one hundred and twenty, and all these, has a special place. It might sound little to you now, but do you know how big New Jerusalem is? It is bigger than the planet earth. It is massive when you see it.

You all know how you would feel, like in an official ceremony? Like when I went back to Australia, I had a graduation, so I had to wear the funny hat. When I looked around, I saw, *wah*, of all the hundreds of students, I was the first one. I had to check where to walk, how to go because everyone was going to follow me. If I do wrongly, everyone is going to move wrongly. It was so grand in a sense, and this was just a small little human thing because we had it in the Parliament of Australia. You know how you would feel when you are being awarded? All the attention, whether it is for a few seconds or minutes, it is just on you because you are being awarded, you are being recognised. Of course, all the other professors were in their academic regalia and they all looked so different. After that we took photos with some of them. I had a special photo taken because I was one of the few education students who graduated. I was standing with these two elderly men and this was the official photo that they wanted to take. So, I told them, “I feel like a mouse standing before these two mighty men”. They said, “No, no, no, it is your work, you have done a lot of work”.

### *Live righteously*

Imagine what it is like when the Universe is paying attention on the day when God rewards you for your work on earth. All the angels in the Universe and all of creation are watching, as one by one you receive your reward. It does not matter what you suffer on earth, it does not matter how you are ostracised, it does not matter how you are misunderstood. One thing I know, up to this present time, I am in the perfect will of God. One thing I know, at this time, I have not sinned against God, I have lived my life righteously and as holy as can be. I long for the day when this life is finished, when they all look back at all that we have done, and then God starts the roll call. Imagine when God says your name? For a moment the Universe is giving you the attention and you become one of the energising bricks on the wall or station or place and foundation of New Jerusalem.

One of the downloads that I was sharing, that the Father and Jesus were talking about how the decisions people made in this life were affecting New Jerusalem. I end this book with that.

Please be careful of your little choices because little choices become big choices and big choices become heavenly destiny and heavenly destiny becomes New Jerusalem, new heaven, new earth, and it is a big thing.

I encourage you to love God with all your heart, mind, soul and strength. I encourage you to be more passionate than anyone that you know. Your greatest enemy is not the devil, it is yourself. It depends on how much you want to pursue God. I want to pursue God even if the world does not understand me. I want to pursue and walk as close to every revelation of God. I do not care how controversial it is. As I see in heaven, like Paul says, I see the invisible, I will walk accordingly. I pray that every one of you will desire that. That you want to be this mighty. The top five hundred are tremendous in that place. You know where the five hundred are? Very close to the throne of God. Do not take your five hundred positions lightly. Do not take any position given to you lightly. Take it as something that belongs to the new heaven and the new earth. How fragile, isn't it? Just a small human choice, you can be out or in.

Once somebody takes your place, you can cry all you want, you cannot get it back. It is important to press in. If there is one thing that I want to encourage and to stir one another up, you know what we should do, stir one another up to love God, forgetting all those things that are behind, press forward to the high calling of God, and finish this life, finish this race, do not let the worldly things come in. Now, I know what this world would think. You know, three years, five years, year by year, month by month, week by week, it sounds a lot, but this whole earthly life is but a mist and a smoke. Choose the things of God even if it costs you your life. If it costs you every penny, if it costs you every earthly treasure and all your Isaacs in your life, choose God, so that when you stand at the throne of God, I will be there smiling and encouraging you because I will be so happy that you have got your reward and I have been a help to you to reach your fullness. That is my goal.